



# MMORPG: REBIRTH OF THE LEGENDARY GUARDIAN

BOOK 05

*Flying Alone*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# MMORPG: Rebirth of the Legendary Guardian

(Wǎngyóu zhī zhàn yù tiānxià)

(网游之战御天下)

by

**Flying Alone**

(孤单地飞)

# Synopsis

---

The phoenix is a creature of legends, a wonder of the world, an imagery of life and destruction. This fabled creature signifies the rise of a hero in a virtual world where battles occur for the sake of honor and glory!

Zhang Yang was a professional gamer in the first and most fantastic game that revolutionized the world: God's Miracle. A game where traditional knowledge in RPGs did not matter anymore, players would have to manually target and evade attacks, giving rise to a significant gap in skill between a professional and an amateur gamer.

Zhang Yang's downfall came a little too soon. His girlfriend was snatched, his guild was harassed and disbanded, and he was even driven to commit suicide! Jumping off the top floor of a hotel, Zhang Yang seemed as though he was soaring like a phoenix. Little did he know that the end of his life also signified his rise from the ashes!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 401: The King of Vampire

---

"Look here!" cried Han Ying Xue as she displayed three bottles of potions for Zhang Yang to see.

[Blood Potion] (Usable)

Use: Restore 10% HP every second, for 10 seconds. Cool down: 10 Minutes. All potions will share same cooldown duration after consuming this potion.

Level Requirement: 80

The potion was a mirror image for the vampire bloodsucking skill. Rather than sinking one's teeth into someone's else's neck, one could easily heal the same amount by just consuming a bottle of potion. However, there was a problem with the potion. The 10 minutes long cool down time. To put it in comparison with other potions in the game, a normal potion would only have a 1 minute cooldown time. In 10 minutes, one could already consume 10 bottles. For a [Level 3 Healing Potion], one could heal over 40,000 HP. [Level 4 Healing Potions] would only be available for players after Level 90. The recovery amount reached up to 10,000 HP a bottle. If the battle could drag as long as 10 minutes, the bottle of [Level 4 Healing Potion] would be efficient. On the contrary, if the battle would only last for 4 to 5 minutes, the [Blood Potion] would be a game changer.

It was sad that Zhang Yang had only picked up 3 bottles. If they



could be mass produced, half of potions in the market would lose their value.

"Well, d\*mn. Bosses these days sure are stingy!" Zhang Yang picked up the loot and kept it. Equipment that was farmed in the fields would automatically end up in Zhang Yang's inventory is no one else would want to claim them. Since no one else would want it, Zhang Yang would be the one to place the items in the Little Merchandise Shop.

Constance had dropped two counts of Yellow-Gold and seven counts of Gray-Silver equipment. Neither of them piqued any interest from Zhang Yang nor Han Ying Xue. Naturally, they were all fated to be sold.

"Let's go. It's time to kick the final boss' \*ss!" said Zhang Yang. He tried to share the quest to Han Ying Xue, but failed. It was to be expected since the end of this chain quest would reward the player with an Inheritance Fragment. It was considered to be a Unique item and could only be completed by one person at a time.

Han Ying Xue shrugged it off and the both of them continued moving to the end of the hall. After a large door, a narrow little corridor revealed itself. Unlike the rest of the castle wall, the material that made the corridor wall was different, for it was as white as snow. It was after a long walk before Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue were greeted with another color. At the end of the corridor was a red door. The door was so old and gave off some sort of magical vibe, since there were many strange symbols and runes carved into the surface of the door. With the color of snow on the wall and the cold temperature of the surroundings, it gave the both

of them cold eerie shivers.

Han Ying Xue sneaked behind Zhang Yang and cowered behind him.

Zhang Yang gritted his teeth uncomfortably and said, "Are you... perhaps...scared?"

"N-No! I'm soooo not afraid!"

"Woman, you do realize that you're holding my right arm! Loosen up and let me go! If you don't, I might be able to react in time if something jumps out!" said Zhang Yang as she stuck out her tongue.

Han Ying Xue scoffed and gave Zhang Yang a cold shoulder before releasing his arm.

Zhang Yang snickered a little and opened the red door. "You know? When you're younger, there is always a fear of monsters lurking in the closet or under the bed. I realized that the best way to tackle the problem is to open the closet or look under the bed yourself!"

"Oh Hell No!" cried Han Ying Xue loudly as she shook her head.

"What a pansy!" said Zhang Yang. He then gave a large push, and the door answered with a loud creaking noise. Behind it was another large room, that was decorated just like a church! The only

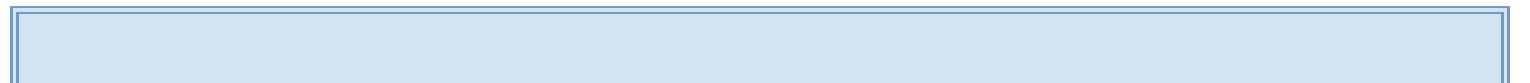
missing piece to make it a real church was the image of Jesus at the end of the aisle. Although there were paintings of flying angel babies like the Sistine Chapel, and stained glass windows, with no real light source, this "church" seems to have been abandoned for a long time. Beneath their feet, there was a large magic circle etched into the ground. Without chairs and benches around, the place was instead filled with sacrificial items at each corner of the pentagram. In the center of the magic circle was an unconscious young woman, wearing a beautiful white wedding dress.

Zhang Yang narrowed his gaze and confirmed it was Sherryl. She still alive was Zhang Yang could clearly observe her breast—chest was moving with life.

"Welcome...Welcome..." A deep husky voice came echoing from an unknown source.

"Madros?" said Zhang Yang as he tried to trace the source of the voice.

"It is I! Madros!" From the corner of the room, a shadowy tall figure walked out. He was dressed in a deep crimson cloak. His entire outfit was adorned with many gold accessories which Zhang Yang would refer to as blings. The man had the appearance of a man in his 30s. He had a full head of thick hair which had been combed all the way back his head. Perhaps, the man was using Gatsby hair gel, since his hair was all shiny. With a monocle hanging on his right eye, the man gave off the vibe of a noble man, and a proud one at that!





[Madros, King of Vampires] (Platinum-Gold, Spectre)

Level: 89

HP: 8,900,000

Defense: 2,500

Madros carried an Invincibility effect on him, even though he was not a green name tagged NPC.

"Hot d\*mn that boss is handsome~" said Han Ying Xue as she swallowed a mouthful of saliva.

"Hmm. That's new."

"What is?"

"That you're into mature old men. You must have an exquisite taste for men."

"Jealous?"

"Is that even possible?" Zhang Yang gave his comeback.

Madros walked gracefully towards the both of them with both his

hands crossed behind his back. He had a long saber which hung at his hip. It clinked slightly with his steps. Still crossing his hands behind his back, Madros gazed at Zhang Yang and rubbed his chin. "Hmm. For you to step in my presence, I assume that you have met my two brides. Could it be that you have already defeated them?"

"I beg your pardon, sir. For I must hereby announce you a widower!" said Zhang Yang as he shrugged. "Well...sorry for your loss!"

Madros eyebrows twitched a little. He laughed immediately. "All is well! All is well. For I have here, a third wife!"

Zhang Yang frowned. "Why must you have her and not anyone else as your bride? What is so special about the girl?"

Madros raised an eyebrow and stopped walking. He turned to look at Sherryl and spoke without looking at Zhang Yang. "What makes you think that I will tell you?"

"You can keep it a secret for all I care. But know this. No one will know why you did it in the first place. And if you succeed, there would nothing for you to enjoy about it. So you can keep it a secret, kill both of us, and the world will not know what had you done." Zhang Yang tried a reverse psychology attack. Instead of threatening, he played the verbal game.

"Or could it be that you want to keep it a secret since you're afraid of two lowly humans. Aren't you the king of vampires? So much for your immortality, huh?"

"Jest all you want human, but you have killed two of my wives. That is not something a regular lowly human could do. But, you're right about one thing. I do wish to have the world know my power. I have kept this secret too long for time to tell."

Madros laughed with a chuckle. He then reached his hand out, causing a huge, gold-framed throne to hover from its original position, and towards him. The vampire sat down and crossed his legs proudly. "16 years ago, this castle once belonged to Drauders Martin, the previous king of vampires."

Madros chuckled for a while and turned to Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue. "The father of Sherryl!"

Zhang Yang flinched. "You're saying that Sherryl is also a vampire?!"

"Oh no! Heavens no! If she was a vampire, I wouldn't have paid any attention to her!" Madros laughed. "On the contrary, Sherryl was the only human child of Martin! The only living vampire that was born from a biological mother!"

Madros stood up and his fist clenched tight. "I would complete the vampire's wedding ceremony and take her powers for myself! Only then, I would be the first vampire to walk under the sun!"

"Why now?" Zhang Yang interjected quickly.

Madros smiled. "Why? Because after defeating Drauders Martin for the past 16 years, only now have I known about the existence of Sheryl! I was completely oblivious to the fact that he had a daughter! A human daughter! I had sent my minions to fetch her for me, but little did I know that she had put up a fight. I had to take her for myself!"

Zhang Yang frowned. Only now, did he know about Sherryl? It was all crap talk. Sherryl would have lived and died of old age if Zhang Yang had not stumble her in the first place!

Still, he was worried about the quest. "You seek to kill Sherryl?"

"As long as I could obtain the power to walk under the sun, the minions that I would create would have no need to cower in the dark! They can march with me, under the sun, boldly and proudly!" said Madros with a smirk. "For the glory of the vampire clan, I'm sure Sherryl would be delighted to offer her life!"

"Delighted? I wouldn't be too sure about that." Zhang Yang had already had the Mythical Turtle on standby. Even though the boss could not attack nor be attacked, Zhang Yang was free to conduct any action! He then leaped as far as he could towards Sherryl!

"Stay away!" Madros slightly raised his voice and created a violent wind that slit Zhang Yang's back.

‘-11,623!’

Zhang Yang immediately received a strong damage. The boss' name tag was no longer green. After attacking, he had become an enemy. Zhang Yang turned around and grinned. With quick reflex, Zhang Yang threw a {Spear of Obliteration} to him.

"You dare!? Insects! Vermin!" cried Madros. He then spread his giant black wings and shot towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang hurriedly withdrew back and kited the boss a little further so that the turtle could attack!

"I was hoping that I could treat you as a guest, but since you refuse to behave, I'll have you removed from this world!" Madros landed, cracking the tiles beneath him, and immediately slashed at Zhang Yang with a sword drawing technique.

Kang!

Zhang Yang raised his shield in time. There was a loud metal clashing sound, followed with one straight, glowing scratch on his shield. No bosses had ever done something like that to him before!

"Or perhaps, I should do something with you instead of ending your life. Maybe, a blood sacrifice as a wedding gift! That would be marvelous!' Madros wielded his blade in an odd manner. Instead of slicing, Madros had struck Zhang Yang in the same manner of hammering instead. Even though the weapon handling was wrong, Zhang Yang was sent back a few meters, even though he had blocked the strike with his shield.

Both Zhang Yang and the Mythical Turtle started their attacks. After the Mythical Turtle had learned the skill {Spirit of the Flame}, each of his physical attacks had been turned into fire elements which would ignore the boss' defense value! Each of its attacks would be at the highest value, around 4,300! Paired with Zhang Yang's own 4,700 damage value, both of their attacks had reached almost 9,000!

"Hey, dummy? Should I summon my servant?" Han Ying Xue asked.

"No. Not yet!" said Zhang Yang immediately to stop her. "We do not know the boss might enter a berserk state at 10% HP. You can summon it after the boss has less than 20% HP!"

"Hmm. Ok..." Han Ying Xue nodded.

'19,123!'

While talking, Zhang Yang had taken another heavy blow which had taken away close to a quarter of his HP.

"Hey, dummy? Why is the boss so strong?" Han Ying Xue complained as she had to heal Zhang Yang immediately after the attack.

Zhang Yang dodged one incoming attack and opened the battle log. The damage was indeed oddly high for his level and tier. "I think it's the boss' sword effect. Something that says, "Light of the



Blood Race". It has a chance of triggering 150% damage!"

Again, Han Ying Xue nodded obediently and healed Zhang Yang. While they were fighting and healing busily, Han Ying Xue suddenly popped up another question. "Hey, dummy? If I were to be lost in the woods someday, what would you do?"

"...Why the f\*ck would you go to the woods? You know that you're a directional idiot!"

Han Ying Xue frowned and gritted her teeth. "I did say IF! What IF! Stupid! Now answer the question!"

"Sigh...First, I would call the police, and have a nice big meal after that."

"What?! I get the police part, but why a meal?"

"After eating, I would be ready to search for your sorry \*ss in the woods for a long time!"

Han Ying Xue smiled happily. "Well...at least you know what you're doing."

"Vile vermins! Surrender to the power of the darkness!" Madros bellowed and pointed one of his boney fingers at Han Ying Xue. "Bind!"

"Crap! Dummy! I can't move!" Han Ying Xue cried.

"How long!?"

"30 seconds!"

"DAMMIT!" Zhang Yang shouted with much frustration. Without her, Zhang Yang would have to fight the boss on his own for 30 seconds!

"HEHEHEHE! Let's play, vermin!" This time, Madros used his saber as a saber should be used, and sliced Zhang Yang at such a high speed. Without Han Ying Xue healing him, Zhang Yang had suffered great damage and was in danger! The main headache for Zhang Yang was the sword's special skill! It seemed to have a high proc rate! On average, every 10th strike would trigger the high damage attack. To make things worse, it was by chance. It would occasionally trigger the burst damage twice in a row! When that occurs, Zhang Yang would lose 50% of his HP!

If Zhang Yang had not had such a large HP pool, in this case, any other tank would have been dead when the sword's skill, "Light of the Blood Race" procced twice in a row.

To survive the entire ordeal, Zhang Yang had used {Berserker's Heal}, a bottle of {Blood Potion}, and {Shield Wall}.

"Dummy, I think that you're the only person in the entire game that could endure the boss for 30 seconds without a healer! If some

other tank were to switch places with you, I think they would have already died in the first half of the battle!" said Han Ying Xue as she sighed heavily.

"Well, of course!"

"...Please. Don't let it get over your head."

Zhang Yang laughed and continued laying more devastating attacks on the boss. Even though the boss' attacks were strong, Zhang Yang had not been slacking off. With the turtle attacking together, both of them had taken around 17 minutes to would the boss until he was left with only 52% of his HP.

50%...

"Ah..." A screamed was heard. Zhang Yang turned and saw that Sherryl had woke up. What an inappropriate timing to suddenly interfere with the battle!

"Wonderful! You have awakened, my bride to be!" With speed, Madros sheathed his sabre and flew towards Sherrly.

"Stay away from me, demon!" Sherryl, despite being bound in an elegant dress, did an acrobatic jump and dodged Madros.

"Do not be bashful, my bride. Be good, and complete the final ceremony! We shall re-create a bright future for the vampire clan!" Madros reached out his arms to grabbed Sherryl, but was

immediately stopped with an attack in the air. The boss puffed with anger and turned to glare at Zhang Yang who had just thrown a {Spear of Obliteration}.

# Chapter 402: Lost Love

---

Zhang Yang laughed manically and bellowed. "Old man vampire! If you want to marry my woman, you would have to go through me first!"

"ahem" Han Ying Xue coughed a little and glared at him.

What a woman! She would even be jealous of a fictional character!

Zhang Yang's attempt to piss off Madros was a huge success when he snarled and bared his fangs at Zhang Yang. Madros flew away from Sherryl and approached Zhang Yang with a strong killing intent that would scare off any weak-willed fighter. "You're nothing, but a being that triumphs over the apes in the forests. Don't get cocky, boy! Your species are but food for the vampire clan! You'd dare raise your voice in the presence of the King of Vampire? You dare to threaten me?! You dare take away my wife-to-be!? When I'm done with you, you'll pray that death would be the only thing you know!" Madros raised a hand at Zhang Yang and snapped his fingers. A shot of compressed air burst out and tore through the air at a speed faster than sound. That was the same skill that Madros had used to attack Zhang Yang in the beginning.

The skill was something like Zhang Yang's {Spear of Obliteration}, a type of range skill which required a fix distance from the target, before activation. If not, the boss would have continued using it from the beginning till the end. The attack was fast and quick, not to mention, the color of air itself. There was no way Zhang Yang could have dodged the attack. Within a fraction of

a second, after Madros had snapped his fingers, Zhang Yang took a huge damage.

Sherryl took the opportunity to run away from the table and to Zhang Yang's side.

"Warrior! You must not let Madros get to me!" said Sherryl with a determined expression. "In the worst-case scenario, I want you to kill me! If the vampire gains the power to walk under the sun, all of the humans in the world will perish!"

Zhang Yang went silent for a good 30 seconds before speaking. "You...knew about your heritage?"

Sherryl nodded her head lightly and hummed without saying anything else. There was a glint of sadness in her eyes that Zhang Yang did not miss. Zhang Yang would have praised her if the character was a real person and the situation she was in was real. The shock of realizing that the people you have been living with for 16 years were not your real parents would have shaken anyone psychologically. The girl was brave.

Zhang Yang sheathed his sword and grabbed Sherryl with his right hand. With the shield in his left arm raised up, Zhang Yang pushed Sherryl behind him and said, "Relax, I've seen the future. You would live and have grandchildren singing your birthday song when you're 80! The only person who is going to die tonight is Madros!"

"Insect!" Madros brandished his saber. His eyes glowed with an



intense crimson red of rage and bellowed. "Return my rightful bride to me!"

"Screw you. Old pervert!" Zhang Yang jabbed.

"So be it. Death shall be of you!" Madros walked, instead of dashing towards Zhang Yang, and he understood why. There was a visible aura emitted around him. Something about it spelled incredible trouble for Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue.

‘Ding! Madros has gained the effect {Lost Love}. Madros has gained a 10% increase in attack power! For every minute Sherryl refuses to go back to his side, Madros will continue to gain 10% attack power every minute!’

That was not something Zhang Yang could take lightly. An attack buff on a boss is something Zhang Yang hated the most in a boss fight. Madros had a strong basic attack. The stronger he becomes, the weaker Zhang Yang would be. His Defense value, damage absorption and damage reduction would be rendered useless if the battle is dragged on.

Shing! Crack!

Madros had only taken out his saber and swung his blade to the ground. It seemed effortless and harmless on sight, but the sheer power he held created a clean cut in the earth they stood on. It was as if someone had just run a huge cutter through the floor! Furthermore, his powers were clearly shown with each step he took. Gravel and pebbles floated, resonating with his aura and

breaking into fine dust after he walked past them.

With nowhere to run from, Zhang Yang braced for the worse. Madros swung his sword hard and had even proc the sword's {Light of the Blood Race}. With lightning speed reflex, Zhang Yang blocked the sword's attack, sparing himself from taking the hit. "Ayy! Snowy, summon your servant now! The boss still has over 50% HP and he has already gone berserk!"

Han Ying Xue nodded her head and summoned the servant [Money-Greed Florick] out. A sly old man appeared in the field and proceeded to sneak behind the boss. With a quick hand movement, there was a bag which seemed to be a money bag appearing in his hands. It was Florick's {Stealing} skill.

"Bring it!" Han Ying Xue summoned her servant back to her and reached her hand out, demanding the booty that he had just stolen. With a saddened face, as if Florick's mother had just passed away, the servant lowered his head and surrendered the bag to Han Yang Xue.

Zhang Yang laughed and asked, "How much did he steal?"

"Sigh...Hard to tell, the chance of failing the steal is rather high, you know?" said Han Ying Xue with a heavy sigh.

From back when Zhang Yang had known Han Ying Xue, he had already guessed that she was a money hoarder. When it comes to money, she would bend over backward just to make sure no one would get their hands on her money. There were times that when

he had not noticed, the woman would do some sleight of hand! That probably was happening now. Zhang Yang was at a loss of words and merely laughed at her comment.

With his own sleight of hand, Zhang Yang summoned his own servant, the gigantic, Decepticon transformer, Devastator!

As its name implies, the servant was even bigger than the building there were in! Right at the second it appeared on the battlefield, the servant had already demolished the entire ceiling. Half of its body was outside the room as it used its bulldozer parts to completely trash the entire roof, making room for itself to move around and maneuver freely.

"What are you doing!?" Madros was furious, and he had every right to be. The room was built as the most sacred ceremonial station, but it was wrecked into pieces by some person who had completely ruined his plans! Enraged, the vampire had no need to rush to the massive, over-sized servant and delivered a god-like blow to it, dealing 17,234 damage to Devastator.

Zhang Yang commanded the machine to attack Madros as soon as it could get free of the building's top. Even though the Devastator was powerful, it was merely similar to a player at the same level with a full Yellow-Gold equipment set. Its HP was merely a thin sheet of paper, ready to be pulverized by the boss!

Once Devastator had made a hole big enough for it to move around freely, it then clenched its fist together and clobbered Madros! While taking the attack, Zhang Yang, the Mythical Turtle, and Florick had surrounded Madros and launched their attacks at

the same time.

Since the boss would gain 10% attack bonus every minute, Zhang Yang could not spare any second to waste! He had to make sure that the attack DPS would be at its maximum if he wants to survive and win this fight. Luckily, the servants that were summoned had 5 minutes active time before they disappear. At least, within the 5 minutes duration, Zhang Yang felt confident that they would have time to defeat the boss before he defeats them.

"Demon! I will kill you myself!" cried Sherryl as she slid out her silver dagger and joined the battle.

‘-10,000!’

Zhang Yang was puzzled. The dagger in her hands no longer had the ability to deal 100,000 damage. However, it was obvious that the dagger could be used for more than three uses as long as it was in Sherryl's hands. Each slice would deal strong, consistent damage which had made the boss lose his elegance as his HP dropped.

"Bind!" screamed Madros. He was already fighting for his life before this, and when Sherryl joined the fight, it made it worse. Sherryl was obviously an important person for him and he had to somehow keep her alive, but at the same time, he could not afford to ignore her attacks. In a desperate situation, he had used "Bind", and immobilized her for 30 seconds.

46%, 38%, 30%...

Though the Violet-Platinum boss had a long HP gauge, under the focused fire of everyone, he would still be receiving a great deal of damage. The problem started to form when the {Spirit of the Flame} on the Mythical Turtle had ended after its 10 minutes active duration. It was when the boss was only left with 27%. With the turtle's magical attack capabilities removed, the overall DPS had dropped significantly.

By the time the boss had less than 7% HP left, both Devastator and Florick had disappeared. Zhang Yang and the Mythical Turtle were the only attackers left in the field.

5%...

"Death...is...not possible! I'm immortal! I AM IMMORTAL!" Madros had suddenly gone mad. With a sudden flash, his entire character had turned into countless of actual bats which flocked and attached themselves to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was suddenly rendered immobile by the bats. Even his vision was covered by the hairy mammals! All he could feel then was a prickly sensation that had penetrated his metal armor and his skin. Besides that, there was a strong urge to just fall to the ground and sleep.

‘Ding! You have received the effect: {Bat's Attack}! Fatigue will overwhelm you! Lasts for 10 seconds!’

Screw that! {Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang immediately regained his senses and vigor. However,

he was still being covered by bats! The skill was still ongoing! Obviously, the boss' skill had two effects. One was to immobilize the target, and the other was to heal himself!

Right then, Zhang Yang had just removed the immobility on him, but the boss was still recovering himself nonetheless.

"Dummy! That's actually quite gross! Are you actually enjoying that? I thought you have already used {Warrior's Will} to dispel the skill!"

"You think I enjoy this?!" Zhang Yang was too busy to think of a smarter jab than that. He quickly activated the skill {Heart of the Death Knight} and gained 10 seconds Invincibility. If he had known earlier, he would have just used the accessory instead of his skill! A complete waste of an OP skill!

The bat was instantly repelled off his character and reformed back into Madros himself. The boss had already recovered 17% HP!

'Ding! Madros has gained {Lost Love} (Stack 7). Gained 170% attack bonus!'

Wham!

With more than 1,500,000 HP still on the boss, it was proving to be an impossible fight! A 170% attack bonus, Violet-Platinum tier boss was not something Zhang Yang could take a hit from!



Even though Zhang Yang still had the {Dance of Heaven and Earth}, and the {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}, accounting the {Dance of Heaven and Earth} on Han Ying Xue, they would only deal 300,000 damage! There's still the problem of 1,200,000 HP!

‘-22,218!’

Zhang Yang's quickly took a strong blow from the boss the second when the Invincibility effect on Zhang Yang had worn off.

"Quickly, think of something, dummy! If this goes on, we cannot defeat him!" said Han Ying Xue as she started to panic. The boss' current attack power had already exceeded her healing capabilities.

Zhang Yang had used {Rearm} to reset all his skills. While consuming potions, using skills, his eyes were constantly scanning the field to search for a viable location to have the battle. The problem was, the entire field was flat! There were no walls, no pillars, no desks nor wardrobes for him to cower behind, for even a second!

"Hahahah! Vile vermins! Give your blood up to me!" Madros laughed sinisterly and thrust his saber at Zhang Yang.

"You would have to go through me first!" Sherryl screamed. Her character suddenly appeared in front of Zhang Yang, protecting him by becoming his meat shield.

"Curses!" Madros cried. Before the final ceremony was completed, Sherry must not die! Without her, he could never gain the power to walk under the sun! With great force, Madros pulled his saber back and stopped his movement by extending his wings. With a strong push, Madros had flown into the ceiling and had tried to attack Zhang Yang from another angle.

With the sudden interruption, Han Ying Xue was able to finish her chanting, just in the nick of time to heal Zhang Yang. Madros shot down from the sky and tried to slice Zhang Yang head. This time, the rage in him was so great that it created a pressure that could be felt from a distance.

However, all was well. Zhang Yang laughed. Sherryl had not bought time for Han Ying Xue, but had also allowed Zhang Yang's {Block} to finish its cooldown, just in time.

He waited for Madros to reach him and blocked his attack with his shield.

Sparks burst and filled the environment around Zhang Yang and Madros, announcing the successful blocking of Madros' attack.

## Chapter 403: Reborn Anew

---

Sherryl had jumped and shielded Zhang Yang for a second time. Having to pull back at the last minute again, Madros had finally given up trying to maintain his composure. Madros had been screaming in an incomprehensible language ever since Sherryl and stepped into the field and had blocked Madros' attack for the second time.

Because of Sherryl, Zhang Yang was able to endure longer and had successfully hack away freely. It was only a matter of time before the boss was truly defeated.

"Traitor! Since you wish to die that badly, I shall grant your wish then!" Madros bellowed. He thrust his saber towards Zhang Yang and did not show any signs of stopping even when Sherryl was protecting Zhang Yang. The blade pierced through the air, giving out a whistle like sound as it plunged into Sherryl's abdomen. Madros had finally resort to this mean for if he had not, not only he would be losing Sherryl's ability to walk under the sun, he would be defeated by Zhang Yang!

‘-33,300!’

Sherryl took a massive damage and had lost more than half of her original HP.

"That's enough!" Zhang Yang screamed and pushed Sherryl away. "I can't ask you do shield me anymore. You have done your part, it's time for me to do mine."

With 6% left, the boss had still over 549,000 HP.

"Snowy! Take a bottle of Power Potion. Time for us the use {Dance of Heaven and Earth}." Zhang Yang screamed.

"Got it!"

Both of them immediately consumed a bottle of [Grade 10 Transmutation Beginner Power Potion] and gained 40% increase in attack power.

"Here goes nothing!"

{Dance of Heaven and Earth}!

{Dance of Heaven and Earth}!

{Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}!

Two skills and one [Ring of Beastman's Ancestor] was unleashed. A great display of power was unleashed and depleted the boss HP down like an open hydrant. After merely 10 seconds, the boss was left with over 30,000 HP. His face and appearance had drastically changed to become extremely battered. His bat wings were broken had half and could no longer flap. All it could do was hanged limply behind the back of the boss.

Madros falls down at such speed and crashed into the ground. Madros got up to his feet, holding himself up with just a little bit of strength left. Before he knew it, Zhang Yang witness the boss turned tails and ran away!"

"You can't escape!" Sherryl jumped to her feet and threw the dagger towards the boss.

‘-10,000!’

Although the strike had done the same damage from before, it was proven to be lethal only now. With only 20,000 HP or less, Madros ran faster. Pride and honor had nothing to do for him then.

He was running away like a beaten dog!

Without wasting any second, Zhang Yang gave chase and threw a {Spear of Obliteration}, dealing around 4,000 damage to the boss. The boss responded with a loud growl of pain but kept his distance away from Zhang Yang. No matter how, the distance between them will always maintain at 20 meters.

"Curses!" Madros growled again. Knowing that he was being beaten down like a wild dog, and was chased by none other than his lowly attacker, Madros' pride of being the king of vampire was at stakes. Luckily, being a vampire grants him a superhuman regeneration ability. With limited time, his wound would have already closed and the wings behind his back had already reattached properly.

"Warrior! You must not let him escape!" Sherrly was chasing with all her might cried loudly behind Zhang Yang.

"Trust me!"

‘-3,982!’

Zhang Yang tossed another {Spear of Obliteration}, dealing another clean attack on the wounds that had just closed up. The wings on his back were clearly ready to fly when Zhang Yang's attack had crippled him again.

"ARGH! If I die, I'd be dragging you down with me!" Madros turned around when he knows that escape was not an option for him any longer. He unsheathed his sword and begun to charge at Zhang Yang on foot.

"Hmph! I'm too early for hell!" Zhang Yang scoffed and activated {Killing Cleave}.

Wham! -16,724! A critical strike!

"Ack! ARGH! Ahhh!" Madros falls to the floor with his chest up. A scorched mark appeared on his chest, which slowly expands and turned into burning amber. The glowing amber spread all over his character and killed the vampire, turning him into a pile of ash with a few bones remaining.



Sherryl sighed in relief and pants. "The wretched vampire king finally dies!"

Zhang Yang nodded. "Looks like eternal peace is finally at hand!"

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Rescue Sherryl. Obtained 5,000,000 Experience Points. Time Taken: 2 hours 11 minutes. Quest Score: Perfect!’

Sherryl walked over to the boss’ ash remains and picked up a small, black shard. It was a sharp object which was probably one of the bones that had not disintegrated. She removed part of her wedding dress and revealed her entire left shoulders. She took a deep breath and stabbed the shard into her heart.

"Owph!" She groaned as the fresh river of blood started to flow out of her chest.

"What are you doing!?" Zhang Yang screamed.

With a pale face, Sherryl called for Zhang Yang to come closer. "I have the blood of the vampire in my veins. This piece of bone that belonged to the vampire king should remove them from me. I can finally be human! A pure human!"

The blood flows out of her chest which part of them had dyed her white wedding dress with the red color of blood. The black shard had absorbed the blood and started to glow in a red hue. There was a silver thread that had swirled magically in the bones.

After some time, Sherryl had pulled the shard out of her chest and gave it to Zhang Yang. "Warrior, I shall entrust you with this Vampire's King Bone Shard."

‘Ding! You have obtained the first piece of Inheritance Fragment!’

At the moment Zhang Yang had picked the bone out of Sherryl's bloodied hands, he received the system notification instantly.

"Warrior. I must return to town now and inform every one of the good news! I trust that after you had finished with your business here, you'll come to town and pay me a visit! I'm sure that everyone in town would like to thank you for everything that you had done!" Sherryl helped herself up to her feet. She bowed weakly and walked away.

[Vampire Inheritance Fragment (1)] (Inheritance Tier: B)

Description: Gather all six pieces of Vampire Inheritance Fragment and complete the Vampire Inheritance Keepsake. Activate the Keepsake to initiate the final Inheritance quest. Complete the quest to obtain the Vampire Inheritance. Apart from the class skill, you will also obtain the special Vampire original skills. Be advised, all Vampire Inheritance Fragment will resonate with each other. If you were killed by other players that possess the Vampire Inheritance Fragment, the Fragment in your inventory will drop. All Fragments can only be carried in a player's inventory and cannot be stored.

Finally!

Han Ying Xue took her time to pick up all the money on the ground before heading over to Zhang Yang to see the fragment. After reading it, Han Ying Xue asked, "So, what are you going to do with it?"

"Hm...I think I'm going to give it to Yan Er. The Vampire Inheritance is a good way to heal oneself. It's really useful for the little brat which could solve her survivability."

"But it's just a B tier!"

"So? B is good enough!" said Zhang Yang with a stern expression. "The best S tier Inheritance for every class is limited to only one. That's 6 classes. Which means there are only 6 players in the entire region of China could have the S tier players. Beneath that would be the A tier Inheritance. Now, A tier Inheritance is not a Unique type, it is a General type which means everyone could get their hands on it. However, keep in mind that an A tier Inheritance is extremely tough. Just like the S tier Inheritance, A tier is so difficult to farm that it is considered to be a super-ultra hidden quest! It's close to impossible to even trigger the starting point!"

Zhang Yang was speaking the truth, the total players that had S tier and A tier Inheritance were only 17 players! The scarce number of players that had inherited the S and A tier Inheritance had proven that it was extremely difficult to complete. Luckily for Zhang Yang, the person who had obtained the Inheritance "God of

War" was too show-body about it, that he had posted the steps to the last details in the forums. As for the rest of the 16 players, there were completely silent about it.

That being said, if someone had already triggered the quest to obtain the Inheritance Fragment, no one could repeat the same quest again. That means that no one could trigger the Sherryl route anymore!

"You know what? I'm too lazy to argue with you. That's stuff for when we reached Level 100." Said Han Ying Xue lazily as she returned the Fragment back to Zhang Yang. In turn, however, she quickly paced towards the pile of battle loots and started to pick them up.

"Haha!" She laughed abruptly. She turned to Zhang Yang and showed him a pair of Violet-Platinum boots. "Dummy, I guess you owe me another red packet! Guess what have I found?"

"Is it the Titan Boots?" Zhang Yang was excited.

"That's right! Am I lucky or what?"

"Lucky! The queen of luck!"

Han Ying Xue grinned happily and pass the boots to Zhang Yang.

[Titan Battle Boots] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +282

Strength: +81

Dexterity: +40

Equip Effect: Absorb 162 damage on attack.

<Unidentified>

Class Requirement: Guardian

Level Requirement: 80

With the boots in hand, Zhang Yang would need one last piece of Titan's equipment to unlock the full set equipment set effect!

Han Ying Xue continued to reveal more battle loots. She started to sulk disgruntledly when there was no more equipment left. Madros had only dropped three Violet-Platinum equipment. Besides the boots, there were two other Cloth Armor class equipment which was a glove and a magic staff.

Han Ying Xue had already a Violet-Platinum magic staff in hand and she took the glove with a grin. The magic staff will be given to either Daffodil Daydream or Fantasy Sweetheart.

After a while, she pulled out another item. It was a skill book called {Reborn Anew}.

[Skill Book: Reborn Anew]

Use: Teaches the skill {Reborn Anew}

Class Requirement: Priest, Sacred Knight

Level Requirement: 80

"Hey, dummy? What is this skill called {Reborn Anew}? Is it the same as {Redemption}?" Han Ying Xue asked. {Redemption} was the skill that Han Ying Xue used to revive players after the boss fight. The new skill {Reborn Anew} sounds about the same as {Redemption}. She had guessed it since the skill class requirement was a Priest or a Sacred Knight.

Zhang Yang was stunned. With wide opened eyes, he cried out, "You say {Reborn Anew}?"

"Yeah. What about it?" She asked.

"Well, we had just hit the jackpot again!" Zhang Yang smiled from ear to ear. "Well? What are you waiting for? Learn it!"

Han Ying Xue pouted and learned the skill. However, her cocky expression immediately faded away when she read the skill description.

[Reborn Anew] (Level 1): Cast the skill on a player. For 1 hour, the player will be revived on the same spot with full HP on death. Players that revive with this skill shall not receive any experience death penalty.

Cool Down Time: 1 Hour.

"D-D-Dummy...This is...too OP!" cried Han Ying Xue with hoy. She was so happy that she leaped towards Zhang Yang and planted her lips on his.

"Bleh!" Zhang Yang pushed her away. "You sow! Watch it! You got your saliva all over my face!"

# Chapter 404: Collecting Skeleton Bones

---

Han Ying Xue quickly activated a {Rise Anew} on Zhang Yang.

The effect of the skill is very grand and pretty to see. A stream of white light blanketed over Zhang Yang, while tiny sized angels, looking a little like cupids, appeared dazzlingly all around Zhang Yang, singing and dancing for 10 seconds long before everything vanished.

"This skill can be upgraded, and I'm guessing it either increases the duration or decreases the cooldown time period!" Han Ying Xue felt very satisfied with the skill.

"Yes, after you upgrade it up to Level 10, it should give you a 30 minute cooldown time period, and the duration will most probably stay at 1 hour!" Zhang Yang nodded and said.

"So if you no longer need me here, I better get back to Wei Yan Er. I've kept her waiting for long enough, she might get mad and go hulk on me!" Han Ying Xue asked for a [Teleportation Scroll] from Zhang Yang, because saving up whenever it's possible was the one rule that she would never break!

However, after taking over the scroll, she did not use it, instead, she went out of the place and summoned her [Crimson Flaming Horse]. Zhang Yang was confused, as she smiled and told him, "I forgot, Wei Yan Er is still on this map somewhere. If I use the scroll to travel back first before looking for her, I'll be traveling even further!"



Zhang Yang frowned with sweat all over his head and said, "You took one of my [Teleportation Scrolls]!"

"Don't be stingy, just treat this as the payment for my hard work!"

After Han Ying Xue left, Zhang Yang went back to Silent Hail Town to make sure that Sherryl was safe. When he arrived at the town, the people of the town were celebrating, singing songs and dancing over the news brought back by Sherryl, for the entire vampire race had been eliminated.

The moment he stepped into the sight of the people, they welcomed him with cheers and passionate hugs. Then, they lifted him up and threw him into the air repeatedly, bringing him into the middle of the celebration.

After celebrating with them, Zhang Yang tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and went straight back to Thunderstorm Castle. After settling some unimportant stuff, he went straight to the White Jade Castle to identify the [Titan Battle Boots]. After inserting the [Gemstones] into the empty sockets, his health points had finally exceeded 80,000, reaching up to 81,870 in total!

As for the [Fragment of Vampiric Inheritance] he just acquired, this item could only be equipped, so Zhang Yang could not just throw it into the guild's warehouse or the bank. And he can just give it to anyone on his party who wants it later on. Everyone has only one chance of obtaining one inheritance, that is why everyone

will definitely be focusing on getting S-Rank or at least A-rank Inheritances. Players that only seek for the highest attainments are considered to be single-minded, and they will not turn around before they bang into walls. Since that most of his party members will not look back at those Inheritances that are lower than A-rank, this piece of [Fragment of Vampiric Inheritance] will most probably be staying in Zhang Yang 's backpack for a while.

Zhang Yang had only managed to rest for a few seconds before he received Wei Yan Er's invitation to join her party. Her voice was loud and clear, "Noob tank! Come help me tank against some monsters!"

"Hmm, so you and Han Ying Xue can't take care of them?"

"If they are just normal monsters, we wouldn't need to contact and ask for your help right? These are all elite monsters! Attacking one drew another four or five of them in! Even cousin snow cannot heal me up for much longer! Come quickly!" Wei Yan Er was breathing heavily.

"Fine! Fine! I'm on my way already!" Zhang Yang equipped the [Lover's Charm: Yang] and activated its teleportation function.

Shoof!

A white light flashed before his eyes and Zhang Yang was teleported to the middle of a dark and lifeless canyon. All he could see were countless skeleton monsters lurking around in the surroundings. Whether these low-grade undead monsters were

low or high in levels, they lacked intelligence. So they are only capable of wandering around without any sense or purposes.

[Black-Rock Skeleton Soldier] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 85

HP: 85,000

Defense: 450

"So, you girls are required to defeat these skeleton soldiers?" Zhang Yang switched his [Lover's Charm] away and turned towards the two ladies.

"Yes, the quest requires us to collect 100 Skeleton Bones!" Wei Yan Er replied.

Zhang Yang was curious, "Which NPC has such heavy taste, asking two pretty ladies to collect bones!"

"A weird old man, living in a cottage, made of twitch-grasses, over that direction!" Han Ying Xue said, "The reward for completing this quest is great! Players can get 5,000,000 experience points, 200 gold pieces, and one piece of Gray-Silver equipment!"

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "You should mention the 200 gold pieces first! Haha!"

He brought up the world map and looked at it. So this place is called Black-Rock Canyon. It was a desolate location among a bunch of high mountains. Zhang Yang could not help but to frown with sweat all over his head, "So let me guess, it must be a person with no sense of direction who wandered around until she stumbled upon this NPC."

"Hahahaha!" Wei Yan Er began to laugh, and she was laughing without any sense of remorse!

Han Ying Xue attempted to share the quest with Wei Yan Er so that they can do the quest together. She thought that it might not be possible, but it turned out to be the opposite!

### [Collecting Skeleton Bone] (Difficulty: C)

Description: Grave Keeper - Kyle Dylan wants you to collect 100 Skeleton Bones to prove that you have the courage and strength to battle against the monsters. Any player on the same party who manages to collect 100 Skeleton Bones will complete the quest for the rest of the party members.

Completion: Collect Skeleton Bones 0/100

Reward: Experience Points +5,000,000, Gold +200, Skeleton

So this is the ring that Han Ying Xue was talking about, the Skeleton Ring, a Gray-Silver grade ring. Although it is not appealing to the three of them at all, rings are hard to come by in the game, so even if it's just gray-silver grade, it would still be very popular among normal players.

Zhang Yang raised up his sword and shield and aimed a {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the Black-Rock Skeleton Soldiers. He launched it flawlessly at the monster.

"Rawgh!"

The skeleton soldier let out a roar and charged towards Zhang Yang and the two ladies. As it was charging at them, 4 other skeleton soldiers were attracted due to the chained aggro system in the game, and all of them followed and charged towards Zhang Yang and the two ladies as well!

When 5 elite monsters attack together, their combined damage output gets really high. No wonder little girl couldn't hold her ground against them all at the same time.

Zhang Yang activated {Blood Rage} and boosted his rage points up to 30 points. Standing his ground until the monsters entered his attack range of the {Charge}, he swayed his body and ran forward.

With one swing from the [Sword of Purging Devourer] on his hands, the monster right before him was inflicted with a damage value of ‘-3,980’, and his rage gauge was increased by 37 points.

{Horizontal Sweep}!

That sweep had inflicted all 5 monsters with approximately 7,000 to 8,000 damage. But, the special effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] did not trigger.

"Owh!" the monsters were roaring with rage, and they attempted to reach out with their large skeletal hands.

‘-474!’

‘-492!’

‘-456!’

‘-489!’

‘-477!’

All of the damage they delivered upon Zhang Yang did not exceed 500.

Wei Yan Er was stunned by what he just witnessed, "These stinky

monsters can damage me by 5,000 with every single hit! They're not even getting past 500 on yours! It's just not fair!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "It's pointless to cry, even when your life is miserable! Hahaha!" He wielded his sword, as if he was dancing around in style, while unleashing the damage of his {Blast Wave} upon the monsters, inflicting each of them with a damage of '-1,088', and at the same time, stunned all five of them for 4 seconds.

The number of the monsters he engaged with was too small, so the special effect of his [Sword of Purging Devourer] was very hard to trigger, as there was only 2% rate that the special effect would trigger when hitting the monsters.

"Humph!" Wei Yan Er charged into the monsters to release her temper. With a powerful swing of her giant axe, she accumulated enough rage points and it was time to unleash her worst with her {Tornado Cleave}!

'-15732!'

'-15248!'

'-14873!'

'-15567!'

'-16212!'

As she inflicted those great number of damages to the monsters, the damages that Zhang Yang previously inflicted upon the 5 monsters appeared to be inferior, in comparison to Wei Yan Er's. In just an instant, 20% health points of the monsters were swiped away cleanly!

"Little girl, those are some nasty damage points over there!" Zhang Yang was admiring. If they talked about DPS, Zhang Yang would not lose too much to Wei Yan Er, but to compare their damage in one single hit, it would be unwise to compare the damage of a one-handed weapon with 2.8 seconds interval attack with a two-handed weapon with 3.8 seconds interval attack!

Wei Yan Er was laughing proudly. But, other than {Tornado Cleave}, she did not have other AOE skills, so she could only continue fighting the monsters with her {Destructive Smash}.

With Zhang Yang kiting the monsters, Han Ying Xue became much more relieved. All she had to do was to cast a {Regeneration} when either of the two needed it, and she would just yawn in boredom the rest of the time.

In less than a minute, the monsters had fallen to the two monster slayers. But no Skeleton Bones were dropped!

Zhang Yang could not help but ask, "What kind of quest is this? We did not get any of the quest item even after we defeated 5 elite monsters!"



"That's right! We have been here, slaying these monsters for half a day already. But we could only collect about 20 of the Skeleton Bones! So, take your own sweet time!"

Slaying monsters would still give players experience points.

So, after Zhang Yang got over his reluctance, he shot out another {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the skeleton soldiers, and drew the second wave towards them.

Cling clang cling clang! After a moment of slashing and chopping, the 4 Black-Rock Skeleton Soldiers were smashed into pieces of white bones, scattering all over the floor. Fortunate for them, this time, they had finally acquired one [Skeleton Bone] for their efforts.

"We have slain so many of these skeletons, what if a Skeleton King or something spawns out later on? Will it be pursuing us around the area?" Wei Yan Er smiled.

"... If it does, that thing will only attack you two, I won't aid you two in attack it, or do anything about it!" Han Ying Xue drew a line between her and the two of them quickly.

"Humph! Han Ying Xue! You're so unfaithful!" Wei Yan Er looked at her cousin sister with disdain.

"Oh, right! Didn't you both say that you would help me buy a new house? How's the progress now? I haven't heard any news from

you yet!" Zhang Yang was kiting the monsters, while turning his head towards the two ladies, asking about it.

Han Ying Xue sighed and said, "Silly Yu, do you think it's really that easy to find a house in a place with good environment, good air, good neighbors, and good security?"

Zhang Yang frowned and said, "I just need a place to live, why are you guys making it into something very complicated and serious?"

"Noob tank! You're selfish!" Wei Yan Er began to blame Zhang Yang, "You only think for yourself, but not for others around you! I despise you!"

Zhang Yang was at the brink of puking blood, "I'm just a guy living alone! What's there around me? Or are you saying there are ghosts around me?"

"Wow, you really are one unbelievable boy, noob tank... So you are saying that my cousin and I are ghosts to you?" Wei Yan Er was enraged.

"... are you saying...that you two are moving in with me?! Are you?"

"That's for certain!" Wei Yan Er said it out like it's meant to happen. "Or else why would we put so much effort into helping you!"

Zhang Yang let out a sigh in surrender, "Oh please, you're the one, the two who wanted to help me search for my new house! Besides, if you two are coming along, why should I move out then?"

"Noob tank, you're the worst! Not going to cook for us, are you?" Wei Yan Er stared at Zhang Yang with hate, as though Zhang Yang had just committed an act that would put him on death row.

"Hmm, so now that he has a new love, he forgets the old ones already! You better watch yourself before I cut your 'brother' off!" Han Ying Xue was staring at the sacred part in between Zhang Yang's legs and made a threatening gesture with her hands.

Well, an ancient wise old man once said, only women and small-minded men are hard to please!

Zhang Yang could not win this battle against the two, and he lost. So he could only let go of his steam on the elite monsters that roamed around him, slashing and chopping without pausing!

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er walked up together and posed their victory fingers at Zhang Yang.

The drop rate of the quest item was extremely low, but it was fortunate that any one of them who collects the quest item will raise the counters in all of their quest objectives. So, after one night of continuous farming, the three of them had finally collected 100 Skeleton Bones.

But before they could go and turn the quest in for the rewards, Zhang Yang had been forced by the two ladies to log out of the game and buy them some breakfast!

What a miserable life!

Zhang Yang changed into his sportswear and began his training in the morning. After a long jog around the neighborhood, he went on and bought the usual breakfast, fried dough, and soya bean. Then he went back to the house straight. By that time, the two ladies had left their beds, and were powdering their faces, making ready for their day with some make-up.

"What's all the make-up for? It's just a breakfast, in your own house! Don't you think it's a waste of time? A waste of your own life?" Zhang Yang laughed.

"Humph!" The two ladies snorted at Zhang Yang.

After finishing up with their breakfasts, Zhang Yang went on to the company as usual. As he was taking the elevator up to his office, he could feel that everyone was giving him a strange look, and all of them were showing weird expressions on their faces. He was not aware of it at first, but the moment he stepped into his office, his secretaries started laughing at him. That was the moment he knew that something was amiss.

"Mr. Zhang, who made fun of you?" one of the secretaries walked up to Zhang Yang and took down a paper that was pasted to his back. There was a Snoopy drawn on it, and a phrase 'I'm an idiot'

written clearly right below the Snoopy.

"That brat!" Zhang Yang crunched his teeth tightly. No wonder she was so nice to him this morning, being so passionate and caring. All her gentle words that had warmed his heart in a cold morning like this. So, this was her plan all along this morning! He had actually felt touched by her!

After shutting the door of his office, Zhang Yang put on his game helmet and logged back into the game. Right after he spawned in the game, he saw that Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were standing right beside him.

"Little brat!" Zhang Yang roared in anger.

"Hahaha!" Wei Yan Er could not hold it anymore and burst into laughter.

Later, the three of them went back to the Grave Keeper - Kyle Dylan to turn in the quest for their rewards, after going through hell. Following down a path of a small road, they arrived at the cottage made of twitch-grasses. A seemingly 60-year-old man was standing outside the cottage, with a cane in his hand. When he saw the three of them walking towards him, he revealed a hopeful expression on his face, "Adventurers, have you completed the quest?"

"Yes, my respected old man!" Wei Yan Er was the one in charge of handing over the quest items. The [Skeleton Bones] were all in her backpack. The little girl quickly took out all of the quest items and

placed them nicely in front of the NPC.

"Not bad! Not bad at all! You have completed the quest, outstanding!" Kyle Dylan praised the three of them with his deepest sincerity.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Collecting Skeleton Bones, acquired 5,000,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! You have acquired 200 gold!’

‘Ding! You have acquired an item: Skeleton Ring!’

This quest rewarded players with the most gold among all of the quests that anyone has ever come across. Zhang Yang could not help but to wonder, how could this old man, living in the middle of nowhere, be so rich!

"Adventurers, you have proven your courage and strength, and a heart of justice to battle against the darkness!" Kyle Dylan kept all the [Skeleton Bones], "Do you wish to continue to serve under the name of justice?"

"Yes, my respected old man!"

"Good, very good!" Kyle Dylan nodded and looked at the three of them, "This time, I need you to eliminate the Brainless Zombies in another area and bring back 50 [Tooth of a Zombie] as proof!"

'Ding! Kyle Dylan has given you a quest: Tooth of a Zombie, accept or decline?'

Accept.

After that, Zhang Yang and the two ladies summoned their [Mounts] and departed towards the direction of the quest area.

The quest area was just nearby. It only took them a brief moment to reach the location of that area. What they saw before them was a mass grave, with damaged gravestones all around the area. And there were countless zombies, rotten to the core, wandering around the area, without any sense of aim. And they would randomly moan, 'Ooo...'. It made the atmosphere of the place spooky and weird, it was uneasy for the living to stay there for long.

# Chapter 405: Zombie Dental Extraction

[Brainless Zombie] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 86

HP: 86,000

Defense: 450

Although these Brainless Zombies were named ‘Brainless’, their brains were still very much intact. Only their flesh and bones were rotten to the core, with visible maggots creeping all around their flesh. It was disgusting as hell!

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had twitches on their faces, looking as if they had been hit in the balls the moment they saw the zombies.

"Why do I have a feeling that we're watching some zombie flicks?" Wei Yan Er complained.

Zhang Yang took up his shield and sword, and then he flung a {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the Brainless Zombies, as per his regular routine, to throw a {Spear of Obliteration} to attract monsters from afar to get everything under control so that monsters wouldn't swarm up on him.



"Owh!" The Brainless Zombie let out an outburst of angry moans and began to lumber towards the direction of Zhang Yang. While it was at it, pieces of rotten flesh were falling from its body. Right behind that zombie, two other Brainless Zombies were attracted, as their aggro was affected as well. The two zombies joined the first zombie and charged towards the three of them.

The Brainless Zombies may have looked slow when they were wandering around, but once there's a target to pursue, an enemy presence within their aggro sighting, they would become vicious, and their movement speed would suddenly increase! They could move faster than a champion in a 100-meter run! Well, it made sense. If their movement speed wasn't fast, then they would definitely be kited around and tortured to death easily by spellcasters, hunters and other ranged professions. Then, it will become unfair to the melee professions in such regard.

Zhang Yang engaged the zombies with the first swing of his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. There and then, Zhang Yang had their aggro all set on him. Well, it's time to kite them!

"Stinky monsters, really! Why were you born so ugly! I don't mind ugly, but they scare people by rushing like creeps! And their numbers! Argh! Their numbers are really big!" Wei Yan Er used a {Charge} and rammed into the zombies, while she lost it and started complaining.

Zhang Yang laughed as he kited the monsters closely, swinging his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. Unfortunately, the number of the monsters were too little, so the special effect of the sword did not

trigger, leading him to use his own skills to inflict heavy damage onto the monsters.

"Noob tank, will you pick my cousin over sister Sun?" Wei Yan Er suddenly turned her head around and asked Zhang Yang in a low voice while she was slicing up the monsters.

Zhang Yang frowned at the question and said, "Little girl, just focus on your studies and stop poking around in adult business!"

"Pui! You're just 5 years older than me, and you're already nagging like an old man!" Wei Yan Er let out a heavy sigh from her nose.

"Hey, what are you two babbling about!" Han Ying Xue grew curious, as she was a distance away from them, and could not hear what they were saying.

"Cousin is such a jealous girl! You don't even let your cousin talk to her future sister's husband-in-law! Sigh!" Wei Yan Er was shrugging on purpose, acting like she was helpless.

As Zhang Yang was fighting the monsters, he could not help but wonder, deep into his thoughts, like peeling his own layers of onions in.

Ever since Han Ying Xue revealed her love to him, he had not given her his true answer yet. He would only get through by joking or changing subjects. Because he wasn't sure yet, if he's just into

her sexy hot body, or if he is really falling for this witchy snow. Not to mention that he still had Sun Xin Yu and Yu Li, clearly, he still had some attachment to them. No matter how hard he tried, he could not just forget about those two beautiful women.

It was fortunate enough that up until now, Han Ying Xue had not been forcing him to give her a clear answer yet. She was only teasing him out of habit. Recently, the weather was changing and the temperature began to rise back according to the season. This witchy snow had begun to show her super sexy hot body, only wearing a thin layer shirt in front of Zhang Yang. She was not worried at all, that Zhang Yang might just lose it and push her onto a surface, and finish her!

Zhang Yang had confronted her about it before in frustration, but this woman was really something! She actually said that things would eventually happen when one man stays with two pretty ladies, and so to prevent Zhang Yang from doing some 'animalistic' stuff on the little girl, she better sacrifice herself by luring him with her sexy body, to save that little girl from being 'eaten' by him! By then, she can also help Zhang Yang 'unleash' his evil thoughts.

For that, Zhang Yang would be left speechless and frowning.

Witchy Snow was being so ambiguous. So, does she like it or does she not?

Zhang Yang had this thought to himself as doing his job with slaying the monsters while maintaining his rhythm in battle. By only swinging his sword around and activating some of his skills,

he slew the zombies one after another.

"Strange, these monsters are already rotten to the core, but they can drop items such as clothing? It's actually better for them to wrap themselves with the clothing, you know? So that they won't terrify other people to death!" Wei Yan Er spoke as she was picking up the loot dropped from the zombies.

"Why are you so talkative today, little girl? Haha! Well, this is just a game, if they made it too realistic, and you don't get a thing after you kill the monsters, and you would still be complaining as well, wouldn't you?" Zhang Yang teased her.

Wei Yan Er wrinkled her small little nose, "Sigh, I was just saying it for fun, why would you take it so seriously? What a stiff \*ss!"

Speaking to this little girl required a certain level of a psychological constitution, or else, one might burst a vein in the brain by just speaking to her!

Zhang Yang laughed and ignored her for the moment, and then he turned his attention to luring the next wave of the zombies with his {Spear of Obliteration}.

The drop rate of [Tooth of a Zombie] was extremely low as well, maybe even lower than the drop rate of those [Skeleton Bones]! The three of them had already cleared through half of the area and they had only managed to collect approximately 30 of the quest items. It looks like they will need to clear the entire area to collect all 50 [Tooth of a Zombie]!

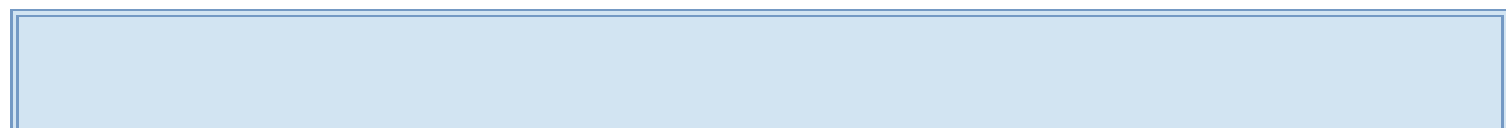
Boom!

Suddenly, the ground got broke through from beneath, and a gigantic rotten hand emerged from the ground, and slowly, the hand clenched into a gigantic fist. Another gigantic hand followed, emerging from the beneath the ground just like the first one, then the third, and the forth... until there were a total of 8 gigantic hands emerging from beneath the ground! Then, one ugly \*ss motherf\*cking monster emerged from the ground and stood right before Zhang Yang and the two ladies.

It was a super-sized zombie monster that was at least 10 meters tall. Well, this was something new! The wounds all around the giant monster were leaking out some sort of putrid pus, it was really disgusting! It had two wide and thick legs, thicker and larger than a leg of an elephant!

If the lower body was deemed to be just like an ordinary individual human, only a little "bigger", then the upper body was completely out of the conventions of a normal human! Eight arms! Anyone would get the idea!

Other than the two arms that were attached to its shoulders like a normal human, there was a second pair of arms attached to the ribs, and a third pair of arms attached to the abdomen, and last but not least, the fourth and final pair of arms attached right on the back of the gigantic zombie, like a pair of wings!



[Black-Rock Zombie Lord] (Yellow-Gold, Undead)

Level: 87

HP: 1,740,000

Defense: 1,500

The face of the boss was almost completely rotten already, only one-half of its face were the remnants of something that remotely resembled a human. There were also maggots wiggling around the holes on the face, the eye sockets, and the nostrils! It was too disgusting to even look at! Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue did not even dare to look straight at it!

"No matter how ugly the boss is, it still is a Yellow-Gold boss! So the items and equipment the boss would drop can be sold for gold!" Zhang Yang smiled.

The moment the zombie lord was 'activated', it looked around with its empty, hollow eye sockets to scan for targets. As soon as it detected the three of them, it locked it's target onto the three of them immediately, and began to charge towards them with large steps!

Zhang Yang shot out a {Spear of Obliteration} to get the boss's attention and drew it's aggro over to him.

"Rawgh!" the boss gave an outburst of raging roars, and it reached Zhang Yang with only two to three steps. The boss slammed Zhang Yang with its gigantic palm.

Zhang Yang raised up his shield and activated {Block}.

Boom!

The gigantic hand of the boss was reflected back, while Zhang Yang did not even move an inch from where he stood! He was currently equipped with almost a full set of Violet-Platinum [Armor Set], so his strength was already as powerful as a Yellow-Gold boss!

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er recovered from the horror of that hideous visage and raised her axe. With her giant axe, she began to slash and hack, "This boss is even more 'capable' than Prince Nezha! Even [Shotalo](#) only has six arms, while this boss has eight arms!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Then why didn't you mention that [Nezha](#) also has three brains!"

"It's pointless to have so many brains. One on the left and one on the right, and one in the middle, it would only mean war for the three brains!" Wei Yan Er curled up her lips.

Well, this girl's thoughts were really intriguing, so 'different' from regular people.

Zhang Yang purposely teased her, "Then, the centipede must be the greatest being in the entire world! You can't count how many hands it has, right?"

"Haha! Stop making a fool of me!" Wei Yan Er rolled her eyeballs at Zhang Yang and said, "Those are legs, not hands! You're dumb!"

Zhang Yang, "..."

"Rawgh! Rawgh! Rawgh!" The boss began to roar continuously. Although it had eight arms, all eight arms could not attack at the same time. There was a cool down period for each attack. After one slam, the boss had to wait for 2 full seconds before it could slam again. So basically, this boss is basically just like the Cyclop boss that they encountered before.

Shoof! A stream of red light suddenly surged throughout the body of the zombie lord.

"Argh! Why can't I move!" Wei Yan Er suddenly panicked and cried.

As Zhang Yang was smashing his sword onto the boss, he felt numbness across his entire body, and he too became frozen in motion! They were paralyzed!

[Paralytic Poison]: Paralyze for 5 seconds. Players will not be able to move at all during this period of time.



Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Warrior's Will} and deactivated the {Paralytic Poison}. Then, he looked at the boss and realized that there was an additional beneficial effect on the boss: 30% chance of causing paralysis to the attacker when being hit, lasts for 2 minutes.

God damn it!

Although this did not pose much of a threat to Zhang Yang and the two ladies, it would greatly reduce the efficiency of their damage output, slowing down the process of the entire battle. They could have taken the boss down in one or two minutes, but now, it would require about three to four minutes to do so!

As Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er were mounted on their [Mount], so the moment they were 'poisoned', they could feel that their asses were numb even when they were trying to unmount! They were just like wooden sculptures, frozen the moment they were 'poisoned', and they remained in the same pose for the next 5 seconds.

Wei Yan Er had a low threshold when it comes to humor. The slightest feather would set her off. So, when she saw Zhang Yang trying to slash the boss, but got 'poisoned' because Whitey went on to bite the boss and triggered the effect, their movements stopped and Zhang Yang was stuck with a silly pose in mid-slash, with a facial expression that looked like he had been hit in the balls, the little girl laughed very hard.

Right after he was freed from the poison effect, Zhang Yang quickly dismounted from Whitey. He knew, because when he was

mounted on Whitey, he was at the disadvantage, as the two of them hitting the boss would mean more attacks, which was likely to increase the chance of triggering the boss's skill. The rate of this passive skill triggering was just too high!

Wei Yan Er followed Zhang Yang's lead and dismounted from her Chocobo pet as well.

Because she was wielding a two-handed giant axe, she struck more sporadically than Zhang Yang, but her damage was sky high, so the rate of her triggering the poison skill would be much lower, compared to Zhang Yang.

Of course, one Yellow-Gold boss was like a free gift to Zhang Yang and the two ladies. They were now strong enough to take on higher grade bosses already! Although the Black-Rock Zombie Lord was giving them a hard time, it was more of an annoyance than anything else. About 3 minutes later, the zombie lord let out a loud roar and collapsed onto the ground, causing a tremor across the surroundings. Then, everything became quiet.

"Oh! Time to split the loots!" Wei Yan Er cheered and ran up to the loots.

The Black-Rock Zombie Lord dropped 3 Yellow-Gold equipment, and 7 other Gray-Silver equipment. And also, this was a boss after all, so it actually dropped a total of 3 [Tooth of a Zombie], giving a joyous surprise to Zhang Yang and the two ladies. It would have required them to slay at least twenty to thirty elite zombies just to acquire this number of [Tooth of a Zombie]!

After slaying the boss, they continued on to slay more zombie monsters. And about 3 hours later, they had cleared out most of the area, and finally, they had collected all 50 [Tooth of a Zombie]!

The three of them quickly rushed back to the old man by the cottage to turn in the quest for the rewards.

After going through some mountains and forests, they were finally back at the cottage. The old man, Kyle Dylan was there as always, waiting for their return with his eyes full of hope.

Nezha - A deity in Journey to the west, a general that fought the Monkey King, Sun Wukong, when the latter rebelled against the Jade Emperor.

Shotalo - Believed to be one of the random anime character that Wei Yan Er watched and quoted.

# Chapter 406: Eliminating the Necromancer!

---

Wei Yan Er placed all the [Tooth of a Zombie] onto the floor as if they were presenting treasures to him. "Respected Elder, take a look. We're good, aren't we? To be able to complete the quest in such short time! You must not be stingy, please give us more rewards!"

Oh my god, this little girl has been thinking all about the money and gold, she even tries to negotiate with an NPC!

Kyle Dylan smiled awkwardly, "Little girl, you are fighting in the name of justice, so it would be rude to judge your courage with gold pieces!"

"Don't you worry about it!" both of her eyes began to glitter as she spoke, "You can just throw tens of thousands of gold on me!"

Kyle Dylan burst into laughter, then he continued, "Little girl, you're funny! Alright, jokes aside. Adventurers, you have done it again, completing the quest perfectly!"

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Tooth of a Zombie, acquired 5,000,000 experience points!"

Wei Yan Er filled her eyes and cheeks with tears, staring at the NPC with a spiteful glare and having thoughts to herself in silent --  
- Did she really look like she was joking at all?

Kyle Dylan kept all the [Tooth of a Zombie] and turned to Zhang Yang and the ladies, "You have cleared out the nest of these skeleton soldiers and zombies, but there are still other undead creatures existing in this area! So, my young and brave adventurers, are you willing to carry on the will of justice and proceed with a new quest?"

"You stinky old man, you think can get us to work without paying me? No chance!" Wei Yan Er put up a sour face.

Zhang Yang quickly pulled Wei Yan Er to the side and smiled, "Respected elder, this little girl just loves to joke around, so don't take it too seriously! Haha! As adventurers of justice, we are willing to fight on against the undead, so you can count on us for any upcoming quests!"

Although the second quest did not reward them with any gold and equipment, the experience points given from this single quest were substantial, like the amount of experience points earned from main quests and hidden quests! And for that amount of experience points from each single quest completed, Zhang Yang would complete the remaining chained quests! Furthermore, this was a series of Story Linking Quests, the final quest would more often than not, give good rewards. There might even be some sort of [Armor Set] being part of the rewards!

"Hahaha! I can tell that this little girl loves to joke around!" Kyle Dylan laughed.

Wei Yan Er continued to fill her eyes and cheeks with tears, as she wasn't joking at all about the gold!

Kyle Dylan coughed gently and said, "Other than the skeleton soldiers and the zombies, there is the necromancer of the undead! These foul creatures are hidden by the Tomb of Lune. Every time the blood moon rises, they will attack the villages outside the canyon, causing chaos and unnecessary losses! So my fellow adventurers, please investigate the Tomb of Lune and eliminate these foul necromancers, and bring back 30 [Bone of the Necromancer] back as proof!"

‘Ding! The Grave Keeper Kyle Dylan has given you a quest: Eliminate the Necromancers, accept or decline?’

After accepting the quest, the three of them made haste over to the Tomb of Lune. The location was not far from the cottage as well. It was just around the middle area of the canyon.

The entrance of the tomb was rather obscure. The metallic door by the entrance had rusted thoroughly, due to years of exposure to rain and frost without any repairs, causing them to be broken and permanently open. With the doors half open, revealing part of the view behind them, they could see a dark path before them.

A cold breeze was felt, and they could hear the howling of the wind across the dark path that lay before them.

Han Ying Xue went to the back of Zhang Yang and hugged him from behind, as Wei Yan Er walked in casually like it was nothing. It was as if she did not know fear!

"Let's move!" Zhang Yang said, but he did not move at all.

"Yes! Let's move!" Han Ying Xue said in a haste.

"... how can I move when you're hugging me so tightly?" Zhang Yang sighed.

"Oh, I'm just too nervous." Han Ying Xue let go of Zhang Yang and went on to grab hold of Wei Yan Er.

Boom!

Zhang Yang kicked down a metallic door and shouted, "I'm home!"

The tomb was exceptionally spacious, and repetitive heavy echoes of Zhang Yang's voice immediately echoed back repeatedly, 'I'm home', 'I'm home'. Han Ying Xue got even more cowed until she began to babble in some non-human language and her two arms grabbed on tighter until the little girl could not breathe, her tongue sticking out and asking for help.

"Don't scare me! You moronic Zhang Yang!" Han Ying Xue scolded in a trembling voice.

The path by the entrance of the tomb was very dark and spooky, but after walking forward for about 50 meters, the path started getting brighter as they walked in deeper, because there were lit-up torches on the walls on two sides of the path, illuminating the

remaining long path that lay before them.

"How do these necromancers know how to light up torches? Are these torches burning on infinite fuel?" Wei Yan Er was bored, and she began to feel curious again.

"You'll lose if you take it too seriously!"

Shoof!

They walked in deeper and realized that the surroundings were beginning to change. There were rooms on both sides, coffin chambers! Zhang Yang led the ladies and slowly approaching the first door of the coffin chambers. As they were approaching it somewhat comfortably, a skull that was surging with a dark light shot right in the face of Zhang Yang!

‘-2,010!’

Zhang Yang was inflicted with damage! He was caught off guard and let out a surprising yell. Then, he activated {Charge} and rammed into a necromancer in a black robe, interrupting the second enchantment of the {Shadow Bomb}.

[Black-Rock Necromancer] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 87



HP: 87,000

Defense: 450

These undead necromancers were just skeletons wrapped in skin, and they were extremely skinny and dry! Their two eye sockets had evil flames dancing within them, just like a ghastly flame.

"Spellcasters are truly different!" Zhang Yang sighed lightly. Regular elites that were Level 80 and above, such as skeleton soldiers and zombies could only inflict damage ranging from 500 to 600, but this necromancer can damage him by more than 2000 damage points!

Fortunately, although their damage on Zhang Yang was rather high, but these necromancers did not gather around in a group. They were all scattered around the place. Therefore, they could only be eliminated one by one! As this area was an indoor environment, only Zhang Yang could bring along Whitey, while Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had to dismount from their pets and carry on by foot.

For the three of them, it would be more efficient to lure the monsters into one place and kill them all at once! Zhang Yang took advantage of the special terrain of the passage that lay before them. He lured in tens of necromancers and got a solid hold on their aggro, and then he used the wall to run out of their view, gathering the monsters at the entrance of a coffin chamber. There,

he began his killing streak with his AOE skills.

Kiting so many monsters at a time, especially when his defense was useless against these spellcaster type monsters, gave a lot of pressure to Han Ying Xue! The good thing was that Zhang Yang had many life-saving skills like {Berserker's Heal}, {Shield Wall}, {Blood of Life}. He could just activate the skills in turns to stay alive while killing the monsters because these skills had short cooldown duration! So it would be a waste to not use them!

As they passed by, the coffin chambers were cleansed of the foul monsters, and Zhang Yang had picked up two pieces of [Zombie Moss] along the way. Unfortunately, there was no sign of the recipe for [Zombie Potions]. Zhang Yang could only let out a breath of sigh and wait for another chance.

There was no telling how many floors there were in the Tomb of Lune. Since they had only managed to collect 10 pieces of [Bone of the Necromancer], which was only one-third of the amount they were supposed to collect. So, they ventured deeper on into the area.

After just a while, the three of them had arrived at the deepest floor of the bottom area. A set of stairs that was made of stone led them down deeper, but they could only see as far as 20 steps before the passage turned down a corner, out of their sight. Only God knows what was waiting at the other side of that corner.

Zhang Yang and the ladies followed the stairs down to the corner. After just a while, they had arrived at a new floor of the tomb cave, the second floor. The view remained the same, being the same one

long passage, with many coffin chambers at the two sides.

"Let's begin clearing out the monsters and wrap this up!"

An hour later, the second floor of the monsters had been cleaned out thoroughly. But they were treated far worse this time. They managed to get only 9 pieces of the item quest. Going deeper down the tomb cave, the three of them arrived at the third floor of the area and began their 'wiping operation'. Slowly, the number of [Bone of the Necromancer] had finally increased from 19 pieces up to 20, then 25, and finally, 29!

"So, now what? This is the last coffin chamber. If we can't get the final piece of the quest item, then we will have to wait until the monsters respawn!" Wei Yan Er stared into the endless darkness of the passage and sighed.

As they had already hit the end of the passage, there was only one last coffin chamber that had yet to be cleaned, so if they fail to get the last piece of the quest item, they will have to go back all the way up to the first floor of the tomb cave and wait for the monsters to respawn.

"Hey! Humans! Fantastic! It's just marvelous to see a few humans down here!" Right down the corner of the coffin chamber, there was a red-bearded dwarf battling seven necromancers at once. His health points were low. He was so delighted to see Zhang Yang and the ladies, that he immediately cried out for help in joy!

It's... it's that Rhine Wildhammer! Rhine Wildhammer the same

tomb raider, who is always getting himself in trouble! He was the one dwarf who will give players a necklace that would grant them immunity to skill effects!

This dwarf was really loving his job a little too much. He had just survived the Tomb of Despair, and now here he was, digging up trouble in the Tomb of Lune! Well, he was indeed a passionate ‘archeologist’! It’s just like Merlinda and her knack of getting captured, this NPC here is always in danger of being hacked to death by the undead!

Zhang Yang activated {Charge} and rammed into the necromancers, and then he activated his {Blood Rage}, increasing his rage point by 30 points, followed by a {Blast Wave}, boom! A shockwave was emitted across the monsters, stunning the seven necromancers while inflicting every one of them with damage values of ‘-1,088’.

The special effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] kicked in and did it’s job, inflicting more damage to the necromancers! And again!

After the 4-second stun effect, the necromancers were left with not more than 3,000 health points. All of them were crying in rage and turned to Zhang Yang as they began to cast their {Shadow Bombs}.

"Thank goodness!" Rhine Wildhammer quickly took out a bandage and patched himself up. The way he patched himself out showed that he had already been doing this for so many times that he could do it in his sleep!

Wei Yan Er charged in and joined the battle. She went up to the monsters and began her hacking and slashing on the necromancers like a mad girl.

After just a brief moment, the seven necromancers were reduced to dust, and fortunately, the final piece of the [Bone of the Necromancer] finally appeared!

"Wow --- you guys really are good!" Rhine Wildhammer did not hold back on thanking Zhang Yang and the ladies, and then he turned over and cursed the monsters, "These impenetrably, thickheaded, mindless piece of... Necromancers! They are already dead, but they seemed to be still guarding some sort of precious treasures here! It's not like they can eat it or anything!"

After spitting and cursing for a bit, Rhine Wildhammer turned to Zhang Yang and the ladies, "Hey, do you want to do some trading? I will give you 10, no, 20 pieces of gold!"

This red-bearded dwarf said it out like he was about to break his wallet.

"No can do! 20 pieces of gold are too little! You must give us at least 15 pieces of gold!" Wei Yan Er was shaking her head around and said.

"Deal!" Rhine Wildhammer quickly replied.

Zhang Yang, "..."

Han Ying Xue, "..."

‘Ding! Rhine Wildhammer has given you a quest: Hey! You’re hired! Accept or decline?’

The three of them accepted the quest at the same time.

[Hey! You’re hired!] (Difficulty: C)

Description: Escort Rhine Wildhammer out of the tomb. If Rhine Wildhammer dies, the quest will be deemed as failed.

Completion: Escort Rhine Wildhammer out of the tomb 0/1

"Wait just a second!" Rhine Wildhammer ran to the back of a coffin and took out a backpack that was larger than himself. He then put the backpack on his back slowly with care, and said, "Alright, let’s move!"

# Chapter 407: The Spartan Warriors

---

Rhine Wildhammer was following closely behind the group with his large backpack on his back. Every time when they passed by a coffin chamber, he would look around intensely as if he was worried that monsters might suddenly leap out from the room and take away his precious backpack.

As they did not have to battle any other monsters along the way, they arrived at the second floor of the tomb cave in just a short time.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

Footsteps were heard from the front. Zhang Yang and the ladies exchanged looks and halted abruptly.

In just a while, a party of five appeared right before Zhang Yang and the ladies. They had one tanker, one healer, and three attackers, it was a standard party formed, to complete a quest.

Seeing Zhang Yang and the ladies, the five of them halted as well. They were clearly wary, as they slowly drew their weapons and readied themselves. In open world maps, it was a normal occasion where bad players kill and rob weaker parties. So it was actually wise for them to be so careful.

"Why are we stopping!" Rhine Wildhammer was looking down on the road while walking, and he banged into the little girl's ass. Wei Yan Er was enraged and kicked him aside like a ball. There, Rhine

Wildhammer fell right in the middle of Zhang Yang and the party of five.

"Huh? That's is the NPC!" the five of them were shouting at the same time, and they were waving around their weapons ready to charge at Rhine Wildhammer.

Of course, Zhang Yang would not let them chop up the NPC as this NPC is part of their quest! He ran to the front of the NPC and pulled out his sword, preparing himself.

"Hey, brother. We mean you no harm." said one of the Spartan Warriors by the name of Spartan Warrior, a guardian. He seemed like the leader of the party. With one hand raised, he stopped his party members from attacking, "This NPC is the target we need to slay to complete our quest, please step aside and let us do our job."

Spartan Warrior then said, "Look, brother. This NPC will respawn in just a while more. You can just retake the quest later!"

Han Ying Xue was provoked by the idea, "Then why don't you let us complete our quest first, and then come back for the NPC after he has respawned? How about that?"

"Spartan Warrior, don't waste our time with them, just kill them all!" one of The Spartan Warriors by the name 'Freezing With Heart', a thief, snapped impatiently.

Spartan Warrior waved his hand around and said, "Freezing With



Heart, violence isn't the answer to all things, so don't always say the word 'kill'."

Although he said it, he still looked at Zhang Yang with a deadly glare.

Zhang Yang then said, "Fellow friends, I have a proposition. Why don't you come with us? Our quest is to escort the NPC out of the tomb. So after we have completed our quest, you can go ahead and slay the NPC and complete your quest as well. You guys won't be staying around here, right? It won't only save your time, but also, we all get what we want. Doesn't it sound good?"

He was very sincere while he was giving the proposal, trying to make everyone happy. Well, his proposal was indeed a perfect solution to both parties, because Zhang Yang did not want to stir things up.

But his sincerity became an act of showing weakness to the party of five. So one of them by the name of 'Ten-Times-Of-Grass', a spellcaster said, "So, you want us to help you escort the NPC out of the tomb for free? Dream on!"

Spartan Warrior burst into laughter and said, "I say, we have five over here, and there are only three of you. There's no way you can win, so just hand over the NPC, and no harm will come to you! So, don't do anything stupid that you will regret, you will end up losing all the experience points that you have on hand!"

"Humph! They have wasted so much of our time here! It won't be

so easy for them to back off now!" another one by the name 'Invincible Mouth-Sacrificer', a Holy Knight turned his attention over to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, and he began to 'scan' their bodies, "At the least, these two pretty ladies must show us some skills of theirs to entertain us! By performing a striptease!"

Zhang Yang was enraged by the words, but he tried to calm himself down and keep his expression neutral. Although he unintentionally had become a king who currently ruled the game, he would never let anyone humiliate or curse his party members, especially the girls and women!

He pulled out his sword and warned, "Beware, words are the cause of a tragedy!"

"Haha!" the five of them were laughing, and the last member of their party by the name 'Sloppy Sloth', a hunter, said, "I'd say, brother. You're really fun, as in funny! Do you really think that you three stand a chance against us five? Who do you think you are? One Sword Stroke? Or are you Zhan Yu? Hahaha!"

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er could not help but smile, as they heard what Sloppy Sloth just said.

Zhang Yang let out a breath of loud sigh and said, "I'm Zhan Yu! Not One Sword Stroke!"

The five members of The Spartan Warriors were looking at each other in silence, and then they burst into laughter, pressing their hands against their stomach. It was obvious that they did not

believe Zhang Yang, having the thought that Zhang Yang was just boasting! Well, it was understandable. Because the number of players in China server is increasing lately, and it had already reached up to 10 million players for now. So to be able to run into a famous player, especially the Number One player in the entire China server, it's like winning a lottery worth 5 million dollars!

Wei Yan Er took up her giant axe and said, "Why are we still wasting our precious saliva with them? Just f\*ck them up!"

"Little lady is fired up! But I like it!" Ten-Times-of-Grass was looking at the little girl with his perverted eyes.

"Bastard!" Wei Yan Er let out a roar in anger and activated her {Charge} and rammed into Ten-Times-of-Grass. With a full power swing of her giant axe, she slashed at that pervert without showing any remorse.

‘-9,471!’

One moment later as the axe swung by, blood oozed out like a pretty little fountain from Ten-Times-of-Grass's body! His total health points were only about 20,000, so after this slash of attack, he was only left with two-thirds of his health bar!

"Oh mama! This girl is crazily strong!" The five of them began to panic as they saw the damage value that appeared right on top of their party member. The damage value was just terrifying!

Zhang Yang rammed into them with a {Charge} as well. He then activated {Blood Rage} and sliced them up with his [Sword of Purging Devourer], boosting up his rage points with his assault. The next thing the five of them noticed was Zhang Yang activating his {Horizontal Sweep} over them!

In that instant, all five of them were inflicted with damage values ranging from 7,000 to 8,000!

Unfortunately, there were only 5 targets, so the special effect of Zhang Yang's sword did not trigger.

Wei Yan Er laughed like a mad girl and activated her {Blood Rage} as well, followed by a powerful {Tornado Cleave}! The Spartan Warriors were all inflicted with damage values of 17,000 in that instant, right after they were assaulted by Zhang Yang!

After suffering the damage from the combination of {Horizontal Sweep} and {Tornado Cleave}, other than Spartan Warrior the guardian tanker, the remaining four of his party members were wiped out in an instant! Just like that!

It couldn't be helped. The passage was too narrow for The Spartan Warriors to carry out any formations or tactics. Plus, Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er had put so much pressure, so swiftly in their assaults, they could not even process what had just happened to them! The two attacks were happening almost at the same instant, giving no chance at all for them to react!

Spartan Warrior looked around and realized that he was the only

one in his entire party who was still breathing, and his facial expression became very interesting to look at! Very entertaining to look, at the very best! What a painful poke in the ass! This was just ironic and outrageous! They were still swaggering and making jokes before Zhang Yang and the ladies, and now, things suddenly changed in just one split second! In short, weathers can change fast!

The brief battle ended when [Gold-Eared Bear King] letting out a roar and plunged it's paw right through the Spartan Warrior's chest, inflicting that poor soul with a damage of about 4,000, and with another activation of a skill, poor Spartan Warrior was sent straight back to the graveyard.

Later on, Spartan Warrior and his other four party members stared blankly at each other with their helpless expression on their faces.

"Oh, right. Now I remember. That Guardian has a familiar face, he really does looks like Zhan Yu!" Suddenly, Sloppy Sloth slapped his own lap and said.

"What a bad luck, man. We actually ran into the Number One Tanker in the entire China Server while trying to complete one quest!"

"... so are we going to complete the quest or not?"

"Complete you ass! Didn't you see the videos of the competition or whatsoever? Zhan Yu has an overpowering 'forbidden' skill that

can bombard anyone within the radius of two miles from where he stands! This skill can damage all the targets within range by 20,000 damage points! How powerful is that! And what can we do against him? Take your 'little brother'?"

"Holy cow, even my 'little brother' is not that strong! Let's use yours!"

"Haih, just forget about it for the moment, we should just wait for a little while. After they have completed their quest, they should leave. We shall go back to slay that stupid NPC!"

Well, the strength of the paired skills {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew} were exaggerated how many times by only-god-knows how many players who do not know the truth behind them! But there are still advantages over this. At least normal people won't dare to attempt to blunt the edge of Zhang Yang's advance and saves him from a lot of trouble.

Zhang Yang kept his sword and shield and turned to Rhine Wildhammer, "Stop pretending to be dead, and get up now."

Only then, the red-bearded dwarf crawled and stood back up on his feet. Then he smiled guiltily and said, "I was just too nervous just now! You should know, we dwarf are natural warriors, fearless warriors across all the lands. We won't blink even danger comes to us! Be it a tidal wave of swords or a sea of volcanoes, or whatever tsunami they claim to be..."

He kept on babbling on as he followed Zhang Yang from behind.

After just a while, the four of them had arrived at the entrance of the tomb, and they walked right out. Finally, sunlight --- although the day was a gloomy day.

"Hey, great work!" Rhine Wildhammer tightened the opening of his backpack and said, "May the gods of Titans bless you!"

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Hey! You’re Hired! Acquired 4,000,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! You have acquired 15 gold coins!’

Right after the red-bearded dwarf finished his words, he began to run in a hurry, and only God knows how he can run so fast with that huge backpack on his back!

"Alright, time to turn over the quest items to Kyle Dylan for the rewards!"

The three of them summoned out their [Mounts], and traced back the way they came from.

"My respected old man! We’re back!" Wei Yan Er took out all the [Bone of the Necromancer] and threw it right in front of Kyle Dylan.

"Very good! Marvelous! You have completed another quest

without flaws!" Kyle Dylan smiled with joy and said, "The gods have been watching, you are indeed brave and fearless adventurers, spears of justice itself!"

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Eliminating the Necromancers, acquired 4,000,000 experience points!’

After completing two quests in a roll, they had already acquired a total of 8,000,000 experience points! Immediately, the three of them filled up one big chunk of their experience point bar!

Kyle Dylan kept all the [Bone of the Necromancer] and said, "Adventurers, you have eliminated most of the undead in this area! However, as long as Shaman Mordoro lives, his endless creation of the undead will doom this land once again! 3 months, 3 more months and this land that you worked so hard to cleanse will be swarmed by these undead creatures once more, and break the peace that you have built upon this land for now! Adventurers, you must rid the source of it all, slay Shaman Mordoro to ensure the peace of this land!"

‘Ding! Grave Keeper Kyle Dylan has given you a quest: Eliminate Shaman Mordoro, accept or decline?’

Accept.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Mr Kyle Dylan, rest assured that we will eliminate this Shaman Mordoro and bring true peace to this land!"



"Then, I am counting on you, my brave adventurers!" Kyle Dylan bowed to Zhang Yang and the ladies as tears began to fall from his eyes.

### [Eliminate Shaman Mordoro] (Difficulty: A)

Description: Grave Keeper Kyle Dylan requested that you slay the evil Shaman Mordoro and bring the wicked heart back to him as proof that you have slain the evil shaman! Warriors, Mordoro is very powerful, please bring along more friends.

Hint: Shaman Mordoro can be located at the Undead Palace in the deepest site of the Black-Rock Canyon.

Completion: Return to Kyle Dylan with Mordoro's heart 0/1

Reward: Gauntlet of Glory

### [Gauntlet of Glory] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +134

Strength: +54

Agility: +27

Equip: Absorbs 104 damage when hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

This pair of gauntlets had a set of attributes similar to the Earth Spirit Gauntlet that Zhang Yang had on him now! This should be the best set of gauntlets there was, before Zhang Yang can get his hands on the [Titan Gaunlets]. Although these [Gauntlets of Glory] had no use for Zhang Yang, but he can sell it out and definitely get a good price for it!

Although equipment can be sold for gold coins, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were not interested in such kind of way of earning gold coins. They preferred to take gold coins hands on and count them one by one in their bare hands! They savored that kind of sensation!

The three of them got onto their own [Mounts] and departed to the deepest area of the Black-Rock Canyon.

And coincidentally, they actually met The Spartan Warriors once again! The sight of seeing Zhang Yang and the ladies had them running in the opposite direction without even looking at them,

not even once, and they disappeared in just a short moment. Their faces showed it all, they were scared, and they did not want to die again.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Little girl, look at what you've done to them with your ugly face! They did not even dare to look at you before they ran away, not even once! Hahaha!"

"Pui! They were afraid of you! Not me! Alright?" Wei Yan Er was not willing to be teased by Zhang Yang and made a funny face at Zhang Yang, "You ugly horse!"

Black-Rock Canyon was a vast area. As the three of them rushed forward for nearly one hour without stopping, they finally arrived at the bottom of the canyon. What they saw before their eyes, was a large palace made of metallic materials. The palace towered tall, with a magnificent view of it, giving off such a holy impression that they felt sacrilegious.

Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were curious, such a sacred palace is actually the lair for the undead? Is this what they call [a sparrow's nest occupied by pigeons?](#)

The answer was very obvious, right in front of their eyes.

There were many undead creatures wandering around the entrance of the palace. There were bleached bone skeletons, rotten zombies, and some necromancers in black robes. And they would moan with spooky low voices randomly as they wandered. The number of the bleached bone skeletons were the highest among all,

while the number of the necromancers in black robes were the least, looking lesser than 1% of the monsters that were wandering around.

Zhang Yang patted Whitey and charged towards the monsters near the entrance of the palace, "Time to work!". By throwing a {Spear of Obliteration} over at one zombie near to him, he attracted the zombie over to him.

"Rawgh!" The zombie let out a raging roar the moment it was hit, and then it raised up its arms and charged towards Zhang Yang madly. And, due to the effect of the chaining aggro of the system, two skeleton soldiers nearest to that zombie were pulled into the battle as well, and together, they pattered towards Zhang Yang with their skeletal feet.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Little girl, lure a few more monsters over to me!"

"Alright!" Wei Yan Er replied, and she also threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the skeleton soldiers.

"Rawgh!" the skeleton soldiers let out a roar and began to charge towards Wei Yan Er from afar.

But it was really unfortunate for the little girl, as one of the monsters the skeleton soldier had invited along was a Necromancer! Right after that, the necromancer targeted the little girl and began to chant the spell of {Shadow Bomb}!

Zhang Yang unleashed his {Thunder Strike} on the three monsters that were after Wei Yan Er and pulled them over to him. But, he couldn't do anything against the Necromancer which was very far away from him.

Shoof!

The necromancer shot a {Shadow Bomb} at Wei Yan Er, inflicting her with a damage of '-5,127'.

"Oi! Noob tank! Quickly, kite the monster properly!" Although the little girl was mounted on her pet, boosting her maximum health points up to almost 50,000 points, she was not used to having a monster target at her in his presence! She began to cry out loud, "You noob tank! You're letting the monster hurt me! Noob tank!"

Zhang Yang burst into laughter and said, "The monster you picked to lure is a bad choice! Hahaha!"

He kited the monsters and began to take a few steps backward. As long as he can step out of the attack range of the necromancer, the monster will automatically pursue. And, as long as he separates the monsters that he is kiting away, from the monsters that were wandering in the area, he did not have to worry about attracting any unwanted baggage.

Sparrow's nest is occupied by a pigeon - to occupy what that belongs to others. Here, it means that the evil undead army has occupied the palace and made it into their own lair.

# Chapter 408: Book of Experiences

---

It was really an unfortunate thing that the paired skills - {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew} were still under a cool down period. Or else, they could have kited the monsters in the entire area and unleash hell upon them with the paired skills. The amount of experience points that they could have acquired by doing so would have definitely been substantial, and it would have been a very satisfying experience!

However, Zhang Yang could only frown whenever he thought about that. That One Sword Stroke and Liu Wei are really two lucky sons of beaches! They actually managed to get their hands on two sets of paired skills! Although one set of paired skills had a very long cooldown period, if used wisely, every set of paired skill can unleash hell onto the monsters in an area, and vacuum in a sea of experience points for the players!

So, Zhang Yang could foresee that One Sword Stroke will definitely be leveling up like mad and catch up with Zhang Yang!

However, Zhang Yang still had a heavenly weapon, that is the [Sword of Purging Devourer]! The special effect of this [Sword of Purging Devourer], after absorbing the special effect of the [Dark Enigma Sword] had turned the sword itself into a new generation of legendary AOE weapon! The high defense of Zhang Yang aided in triggering the special effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] as it will keep him alive long enough to do so! If other players tried to rope in entire crowds of monsters like he did, they would have never been able to survive long enough before the special effect of the sword could take off. To be rounded up by so many monsters at the same time, let's not talk about grinding up first, these normal

players would not survive longer than a few seconds, and they will be torn into pieces in split seconds!

Pak! Pak! Pak!

In just a few seconds, the monsters were falling to the ground one after another, right before Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er, and they dropped countless copper coins and some [Silk].

The three of them did not clear up the area, instead, they simply tried to open up a path for them to get into the palace. So they only clear those monsters that were in their way into the palace. The reason was simple, because their main aim was to slay the boss, Shaman Mordoro, nothing more. They need not have to go through all the trouble of battling every single monster in the area. In just a short while, they had already let themselves into the palace.

The number of monsters inside the palace were surprisingly small, but all of them were Death Knights on battle horses!

Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh and said, "I really hate this kind of monsters!" These foul Death Knights had a skill called {Death Strike}, which can double the damage done to their targets, and if the player is out of luck that day and the hit becomes a critical attack, then the damage will become 4 times higher!

"Well, look who's talking, I should be the one who needs to be complaining right! I'm the one who should be stressed up because I need to heal you guys! Not you!" Han Ying Xue snorted after she

complained.

"I was being considerate for you, that's why, I said I don't like these monsters at all!" Zhang Yang smiled at her.

"Well, at least you still have a heart!"

Wei Yan Er could not take it anymore and said, "You two are being so 'sweet' that I'm about to throw up! Please go get a room, and stop disgusting me!"

"You little rat!" Han Ying Xue gave the little girl a cold stare.

Zhang Yang charged towards a Death Knight with big steps. Death Knights could mount themselves on a horse no matter where they are, but a player cannot. This area of the palace was considered an indoor environment. So, the three of them were forced to dismount and proceed on foot. As Zhang Yang had gained a suitable distance from the Death Knight, he threw out one shot of {Spear of Obliteration} at the one Death Knight that he had approached. After the strike landed on it, the Death Knight charged over on its battle horse.

[Black-Rock Death Knight] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 88

HP: 200,000



Defense: 900

What a powerful set of attributes this monster had there! It's two times better than the regular elite monsters' attribute stats!

"Living souls, must, die!" a low voice came from within the metallic helm of the Death Knight. This Death Knight then raised up its sword and swung it towards Zhang Yang's head!

‘-986!’

As the sword slashed through Zhang Yang, he was inflicted with a damage that almost reached 1,000! Elites undeads like the skeleton soldiers and the zombies out there could only inflict a damage of about 500 to Zhang Yang with each of their attacks. So, this Death Knight can actually do double the damage that those elites could inflict! And this attack was not even the {Death Strike}!

Of course, Zhang Yang did not have to worry about such small amount of damage, because in the end, this was just a mere elite grade monster. Its threat was far less than the threat that Yellow-Gold and Violet-Platinum bosses present to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang is strong enough to single-handedly take down a Yellow-Gold boss, so there is no reason at all for him to fear a mere elite graded Death Knight!

Cling Clang Cling Clang! Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er were like predators cutting up their preys, with all their slashing and

chopping. With ease, they had taken down the monster, and the monster collapsed onto the ground and dropped some coins and a piece of yellowish paper page.

Wei Yan Er saw it and acted very quickly, and she picked up the both the coins and the paper sheet! She wouldn't miss anything, of course! As the little girl took a quick look at the description of the paper page, her face was filled with joy in an instant. Then, she quickly kept the paper page into her backpack.

Zhang Yang could not resist his curiosity on what on earth did the little girl got into her backpack, so he asked, "Little girl, what previous stuff did you just stuff into your backpack? Why are you being so mysterious?"

"Humph! Not going to tell you!" Wei Yan Er stuck her tongue out at Zhang Yang, followed by a funny weird teasing sound.

Zhang Yang did not mind much about it, and he continued to kite and slay the monsters. In the process of slaying 7 Death Knights, a total of 3 of these paper sheets dropped from the slain monsters, and they were being snatched and kept into the little girl's backpack. Zhang Yang was getting more and more curious and he got interested to find out what it was all that about. So right after they slain another 3 Death Knights and the fifth sheet of paper dropped, Zhang Yang was one step ahead of the little girl and snatched the paper from the ground before the little girl could reach it.

"Oi, noob tank! That's mine! Give it back!" Wei Yan Er felt offended and began to make noise about it.

Zhang Yang took a good look at the description of the paper and understood why the little girl was being so persistent to get all the paper sheets.

### [Beginner's Residual Page of Experience Book]

Use: Combine 10 pages of Beginner's Residual Page of Experience Book to form a Beginner's Experience Book. Each Beginner's Experience Book can give 1,000,000 experience points.

"You're such a selfish girl, little girl. You actually tried to keep this all to yourself!" Zhang Yang said.

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue at Zhang Yang again as usual.

Han Ying Xue then realized and said, "Oh, then if a player is rich enough to spend money in the game, and with this experience book, that player can level up from Level 0 to Level 300 in an instant right?"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "You'll find out, that it's impossible to do that soon enough!" He passed the residual page over to the little girl and aided her in collecting the remaining 5 pages of the residual pages so that she could later combine the pages into a complete [Beginner's Experience Book].

The drop rate of this [Beginner's Residual Page of Experience

Book] was not low at all. They had picked up the remaining 5 of the pages required after killing another 10 Death Knights. After getting all the 10 pages altogether, Wei Yan Er combined them together, and in that instant, a stream of blinding light flashed by and the 10 pages of the residual pages in her hands had turned into a complete yellowish book, which seems kind of an old book, more like ancient!

### [Beginner's Experience Book] (Consumable)

Use: Immediate gives you 1,000,000 experience points.  
Cooldown: 72 hours. Any use of an Experience Book will make all other different levels of Experience Books enter the same cooldown period.

Level required: Level 80

"Haih, what a letdown. This book can be used only once a day?" Wei Yan Er sighed. Yes, the in-game time 72 hours was equivalent to 24 hours in real time.

Zhang Yang smiled and explained, "Of course, it's natural to set it up like this. Or else, if a rich player gets his or her hands on this book, then he or she could just tap the book and level straight up to Level 300! With a complete set of Yellow-Gold armor equipment, the player can rule over the entire server, not only in China, but the entire world! He or she will become strong enough to slay any boss in the game! And that, would make the game so unfair to the other players."

"Speaking of rich, aren't you rich now?" Han Ying Xue curled up her lips and said.

"That's right, noob tank. How much money do you have now? I mean your properties and cash and all that!" Wei Yan Er had her eyes glitter with stars the moment she talks about money.

"To be honest, I'm not so sure myself!" Zhang Yang shook his head. Now that the number of players above Level 50 was increasing, the income he earned from the territory was unimaginably high, and he still has his Little Merchandise shop! Still, the earnings from the Little Merchandise could be compared to the earnings from the Teleportation Circle placed right in the territory. However, the earning from that shop was endless, and the number was definitely not small at all.

Wei Yan Er tapped the [Beginner's Experience Book] against her body, and a stream of golden light surged through her entire body. Just like that, she acquired 1,000,000 experience points immediately. Although the amount was not really that big of a deal, it was free! It would be a loss not to take it, since it's free! Furthermore, one must slay at least 120 Level 85 elite monsters just to get this amount of experience points. So, it should be worthwhile to get this amount of experience for free!

The three of them proceeded forward and slew about 50 to 60 Death Knights along with their way. They managed to collect enough pages to combine the second and the third [Beginner's Experience Book], and one was given to Han Ying Xue while the other was given to Zhang Yang. But those were all of the Death Knights that had spawned in the palace. They had already run out

of Death Knights to slay after they got another 3 pages of the [Beginner's Residual Page of Experience Book]. So they replaced, their targets with the Abominations that were lurking in the surrounding.

[Black-Rock Abomination] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 88

HP: 200,000

Defense: 900

Han Ying Xue could not help but to feel surprised, "These monsters are so much stronger than the ones outside the palace!"

Zhang Yang merely nodded to express his agreement on this. Then, it was business as usual. He threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the Black-Rock Abomination to kick off their slaughtering.

"Rawgh!" That Black-Rock Abomination let out a roar and turned it's fat, distorted body towards Zhang Yang and charged forward. This Abomination had a ruptured, leaking belly that exposed it's intestines and inner organs, and there was some sort of green liquid dripping out through the holes on its belly. As the monsters charged forward, the greenish goo trailed across the ground and

melted its surface! There was a rotten smell flowing through the air that would disgust anyone who breathed in the scent, it was absolutely disgusting!

This monster was equipped with an Aura Effect that spread across a radius of 20 meters, damaging all targets within the effective range by 2,000 Nature Damage every 2 seconds. The body of this monster seemed to be protected by a layer of greenish fog that billowed around it.

Zhang Yang charged into the monster and with his [Sword of Purging Devourer], he locked onto the monster and began to slash like crazy!

"What a disgusting monster! Yuck!" Wei Yan Er went around to the back of the Abomination and began to channel her damage onto it. Launching assaults on the back of a monster can avoid taking damage from the monsters and also increase the rate of hitting the monster as well.

But, who would have guessed this, the Abomination suddenly stuck up its ass and splattered a pile of greenish goo onto the little girl! The goo splattered all over the little girl 'nicely'.

"Argh --- yuck! Pui! Argh! Bastard!" Wei Yan Er was so disgusted and angry that she started screaming like a banshee. She then raised up her giant axe and increased her speed in slashing up the monster like a mad lady! She has lost it!

The splattering piles of greenish goo on the ground were

extremely dangerous! Anyone who accidentally stepped on them will be inflicted with a Poison Effect that caused 2,000 poison damage every 3 seconds! It also removed a 1,000 defense points! It's just outrageous and 'ferocious'!

"This kind of aura skill should only be given to bosses! This isn't fair!" Han Ying Xue began to complain already, "If a mere elite grade monster can have such powerful skill, how are players going to survive this! It's not fair at all!"

It was fortunate that they had Zhang Yang around to kite this monster! Zhang Yang was currently equipped with an almost complete set of Violet-Platinum [Armor Set], and he had a total of 2,280 defense! A regular tank with a full set of Yellow-Gold Armor Set would also have about 1,000 defense or so. If they ever encountered such a monster with such an annoying aura, then their defense would have definitely been reduced down to almost zero!

The tanker, the Berserker and the bear were joining forces to slay the Black-Rock Abomination, and it didn't take long to finish it off! But unfortunately, after all the efforts, there was no sign of any [Beginner's Residual Page of Experience Book] at all.

As they pushed forward, Zhang Yang engaged with another Black-Rock Abomination, and they killed it. Although the monster dropped quite a number of Gray-Silver equipment pieces, there were no signs of any [Beginner's Residual Page of Experience Book] still. Well, it seems that the residual page would only be dropped from the Black-Rock Death Knights.



After battling continuously for almost an hour, the three of them had finally cleared out every single monster in that floor of the place, and they finally planted their feet into the main chamber of the palace.

"The scent of the living!"

A sharp voice came from somewhere in the area. Then, two gigantic statues made of rocks that stood by the entrance of the main chamber suddenly began to move!

Koom! Koom! Koom!

Dust and debris were falling from the statues as the two statues started standing straight up.

They were in humanoid form, but they had an extra a pair of large, bat-like wings on their backs. They had these weird and unmistakably demonic faces, with two horns on their foreheads. There seemed to be an incision between the two horns. It looked more like a third eye that was currently shut!

[Obsidian Gargoyle Gillock] (Yellow-Gold, Undead)

Level: 88

HP: 1,760,000

Defense: 1,500

[Obsidian Gargoyle Margheeta] (Yellow-Gold, Undead)

Level: 88

HP: 1,760,000

Defense: 1,500

Outstanding! Two Yellow-Gold bosses appeared at the same time!

# Chapter 409: The Obsidian Gargoyles

---

Right before the battle began, Zhang Yang quickly unsummoned Whitey and summoned the Mythical Turtle out. Things might get difficult, and he needed another powerful 'tanker' by his side.

"Hehehe, actual, living, breathing souls, stepping into this place! Can you recall how long ago was it since the last living soul set foot into our lair, Gillock?" Marginte was speaking in a sharp, weird voice, and he would make some weird noises as he spoke.

Gillock paused and gave some thought before replying, "Should be... about 15 to 16 years ago!"

"So it's been that long already? Hiss hehe!" Marginte suddenly unfurled his wings and flew up into the air, and the next thing was him flying at Zhang Yang and the ladies, "This is going to be a hell lot of fun! Weehee! "

"Hahaha! Marginte, please restrain yourself a little bit here! You're scaring our guests! At least leave one alive for me!" Gillock was also flapping his wings and began to fly into the air, and followed suit!

Zhang Yang quickly raised his shield up high and blocked the first attack of Marginte, and slashes at its belly as if flew past!

"Argh ---" Marginte was deflected away by the shield Zhang Yang wielded and took some damage. Although he was only inflicted with a damage of approximately 3,000, it provoked him well

enough! The boss raged and let out a deafening growl, trying to gauge at Zhang Yang's face with its claws!

"So, which one do we hit first?" Wei Yan Er asked.

Under normal circumstances, it would be wiser to focus on bringing down one of them first. After being done with one of them, players will have plenty of time to take down the other boss. However, in the case of two bosses appearing at the same time in the same stage, there might be a possibility that when one dies, the other one will revive the dead one back to life, at full health, or something equally unfavorable! Who knows!

Better to act than have too much thought about it. Zhang Yang decided to take down one of the bosses first, because it wouldn't take long for them to take down a boss with merely 2,000,000 health points!

Zhang Yang put a mark onto Gillock and said, "Focus fire on the marked boss first!"

"Alright!" with a clear assignment at hand, Wei Yan Er began to act. She laughed evilly and took up her giant axe, and swung it across the body of the marked boss vigorously! Light flashed off the surface of her axe each time she raised it up for an attack.

Zhang Yang smashed five layers of {Cripple Defense} onto Gillock first, and then did the same to Marginte whenever it was convenient. Both Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er had AOE skills, so it was actually wise to smash {Cripple Defense} onto Marginte as

well, as it can increase the damage inflicted upon Marginte. Plus, the duration of the {Cripple Defense} lasts for 30 seconds long. As long as he keeps on smashing the skill onto the boss before the effect fades, the effect will last forever. More importantly, it won't affect the efficiency of his damage output at all.

"Puny living creatures! Tremble before the power of darkness!"

"Flame of darkness shall engulf every corner there is!"

Gillock and Marginte were roaring together as they shot greenish beams of light at Zhang Yang.

‘Ding! You are inflicted with the Devouring Void (Black) Effect! If Gillock hits you, the damage inflicted will be increased by 50%!

‘Ding! You are inflicted with the Devouring Void (White) Effect! If Marginte hits you, the damage inflicted will be increased by 50%!

In just an instant, Zhang Yang received two negative effects!

‘-10,586!’

‘-10,723!’

The two bosses slashed at Zhang Yang and inflicted him with two large damage values! The damage output of these two attacks can be compared to the attack of a Violet-Platinum Boss! It was like

Zhang Yang was being attacked by two Violet-Platinum bosses at the same time!

He realized that the god-damn 'Black and White' effects were terrifying, so he quickly commanded [Mythical Turtle] to focus its assault on Marginte!

[Mythical Turtle] activated its {Spirit of the Flame} and {Madness}, which obviously boosted up its attack power like mad flames! After attacking for some time, [Mythical Turtle] managed to attract the aggro of Marginte, lifting half of the pressure from Zhang Yang. Although the giant turtle does not have any passive skills that granted it immunity from damage, but as a powerful Violet-Platinum grade [mount], it had a defense of over 2,500! Without having the 'Black and White' effects on it, the boss could only inflict a damage of approximately 9,000 on the [Mythical Turtle].

Meanwhile, a priest is naturally good in AOE healing. Han Ying Xue is a powerful healer with a high capability of healing, so they did not have to worry about her not being able to heal them up.

10 seconds had passed, and the two bosses had once again activated their {Devouring Void Effect} effects onto Zhang Yang and [Mythical Turtle]. Since there were two of them, Gillock activated his {Devouring Void (Black Effect)} onto Zhang Yang, while Marginte activated his {Devouring Void (White) Effect} onto the turtle! However, the effects would only kick in when the 'Black' and the 'White' effects were activated together. As there were two tankers, the 'Black and White' effect could not be activated!

‘-5,821!’

Gillock had landed his claw on Zhang Yang, but the damage Zhang Yang received was halved! Without the {Devouring Void Effect} running its course, the assaults of this Yellow-Gold boss had been reduced back to its original state!

With one hand raised, Zhang Yang summoned his servant [Devastator] to boost his damage output. It was time to end the fight! Since the cool down period of a Silver-tiered Servant was 30 minutes long, by the time they are done with the bosses, the cooldown period should have ended already!

Han Ying Xue also summoned her own Servant out after she saw Zhang Yang’s [Devastator]. Wei Yan Er only had a servant who was a Green-Copper grade Level 40+, and she was ashamed of it. Therefore, she did not even summon it out.

Under the bombardment of two powerful attackers, with the aid of two powerful servants as well, the health bar of Gillock decreased steeply! After just a brief moment, the health bar had dropped down to the dangerous level of 20%!

The boss let out a deafening roar out of a sudden and wrapped himself within the two large wings behind his back. Every part of his skin all around his body began to petrify into rock, and in just a few seconds, the boss had turned back into a statue of rock.

[Petrifying Recovery]: Recovers 5% of health in every second,

lasts for 10 seconds. During activation period, the user is immune to all damages.

"What the f\*ck!" Zhang Yang cursed, and he quickly turned towards Marginte and began his assault --- the effect of {Destructive Smash} on Gillock could still last for another 5 seconds, and Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash} still had 3 seconds left before it completely cools down. So instead of wasting time on Gillock while waiting for the 3 seconds to pass, he turned his assault to the other boss.

‘+22,000!’

A healing value appeared right on the body of Gillock, but thanks to the 75% healing reduction effect the {Destructive Smash} had caused, the amount of healing value had already been reduced steeply.

The 3 seconds had passed, and Zhang Yang quickly turned back to Gillock and activated his {Destructive Smash} straight onto Gillock! Even though the boss was immune to all damage, the effect of the {Destructive Smash} had been applied onto the boss, and the duration of the effect had been refreshed! 10 seconds later, Gillock only managed to recover another ‘+22,000’ of health, and only managed to recover his health bar back to 31%. If Zhang Yang had not applied the effect of {Destructive Smash} onto Gillock, things could have turned out to be much worse!

As the boss has returned to normal, no longer immune to damage, Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er immediately turned their focus back to Gillock and unleash their worst onto the boss!



25%, 16%, 7%... Gillock was bombarded with so many powerful strikes that he could not even breath, and his health points were decreasing madly! The special skill - {Petrifying Recovery} seemed to have a cool down period, so the boss had nothing left up his sleeve. All Gillock was able to do was to roar pathetically, flapping his wings, trying to stir up some wind.

0%!

"Argh ---" as Gillock roared miserably, his wings spazzed out, lifting himself up into the air about 3 to 4 meters from the ground, before smashing back to the ground in a lifeless heap!

"You living scums!" Marginte was enraged by the death of Gillock. With a powerful flap of his wings, he carried himself into the air, "You murdered Gillock! You killed him like an animal! Unforgivable! Unforgivable!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Really sorry for ruining your 'partner'! Or let's have it this way, I'll be doing you a good service, by sending you to the afterlife to continue your 'gayness' with your 'partner', so that you can enjoy your 'anal' relationship! Haha!"

"Noob tank, what's 'gayness' and 'anal' relationship?" Wei Yan Er asked, out of her curiosity.

Zhang Yang got a headache suddenly, how could he forget that there was a good, little, untainted girl here! He tried his best to think of a way to explain, and then he quickly answered, "

‘Gayness’ is some kind of happiness, and ‘anal’ is actually a kind of annual funding, you know? Where you invest money with a partner and check on it every year!"

Wei Yan Er stuck her tongue out at Zhang Yang and said, "Do you think I'm stupid? They are all game bosses, why would they have to fund anything annually?!"

"Well, it's a long story..." Zhang Yang started making up some stuff, and fortunately for him, he managed to ‘convince’ little girl into believing him.

After slaying Gillock, Marginte was like a vegetable, ready for them to chop and cook! So they handled it with ‘care’.

Zhang Yang unleashed everything he got, hooking Marginte's aggro back to him from the [Mythical Turtle]. And finally, Han Ying Xue felt relieved of her pressure. Although the turtle had a very thick skin, its defense was still inadequate, and turtle only had a 20% damage immunity on it, unlike Zhang Yang, who had a total of 50% damage immunity!

Cling clang cling clang! Marginte was beaten up so badly to the point that he could only constantly hissed in anger, which was weird. Although he used his {Petrifying Recovery}, it wasn't enough at all! With Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash} which had a 75% reduction in healing effect, the boss could only heal himself by a little at a time and delay the inevitable.

Another 3 minutes passed, and Marginte collapsed onto the

ground and went on to meet his ‘gay’ partner.

"Hahaha! Those two bosses were like vegetables! Fresh and easy!" Wei Yan Er was laughing with pride.

"Stop talking nonsense and pick up the loot already!" Han Ying Xue said.

The bosses had dropped quite a ‘handsome’ amount of coins; Gillock dropped 10 gold coins, while Marginte also dropped 10 gold coins, so there was a total of 20 gold coins dropped! Wei Yan Er was so excited and happy to see the amount, that she was smiling to the point where her eyes had been kneaded into a pair of crescent moons!

Other than that, of course, the two bosses dropped a large amount of loot, as there were two of them! 5 of them were Yellow-Gold equipment, and 13 of them were Gray-Silver equipment. It was a great day, with a great amount of loot! However, only one ring among all the equipment had a decent effect, while the other equipment shall be sold in Zhang Yang’s Little Merchandise Shop.

[Petrification Ring] (Yellow-Gold, Ring)

Vitality: +67

Strength: +61

Equip: 1% rate to stun target when hitting target, lasts for 3 seconds.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

"If the special effect of this little fellow can be triggered during a PvP match, it can turn the tide around, for sure!" Zhang Yang said.

Wei Yan Er's eyes were beginning to glitter, with stars blinking all around her, "So, if I wear this ring, does that mean that I can defeat you?"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Even if you wear 10 of these rings, you will never defeat me! Haha!"

"You! I hate you!" Wei Yan Er was angry, but she still kept the ring into her inventory, because rings, necklace, accessories were really hard to come by in the game, so one must not ask for too much!

"Let's continue with our quest!"

The three of them went right into the main chamber of the palace. All they could see was a building, tall and vast, supported by many columns of pillars that were about five or six meters thick. However, the atmosphere of the surrounding was a little

gloomy, making the sacred place look ghostly.

Phew ---

A chilly draft passed by, followed by a vague shadow of ghostly existence floating away from the shadows behind one of the pillars. There was no sign of any legs beneath the shadow, as if the shadow was floating in mid-air, and the shadow had a pair of large and thick arms, and a face that only a mouth on it, with no nose, no eyes, or ears. It seemed to be a spectral-kind-of monster.

[Black-Rock Spectre] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 88

HP: 200,000

Defense: 0

"Huh?" after seeing that the monster had 0 defense, Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were surprised. It was just too weird!

"The system will not be so kind to us! This monster must have some sort of powerful skill!" Zhang Yang stood in front of the two ladies and pulled out his sword and shield. With a shake of his [Sword of Purging Devourer], he charged forward and attempted to

attack the Spectre.

‘-4,282!’

"Argh!" the moment when the Spectre was hit, it immediately let out an angry roar into the sky. Followed by a sound of ‘Boom’, Zhang Yang was blasted four or five meters backward, at the same time, he was inflicted with a damage of ‘-3,623’!

# Chapter 410: The Vengeful Spirit Mordoro

---

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang reengaged into battle with the Black-Rock Spectre. Raising up his [Sword of Purging Devourer], he swung it straight towards the Spectre.

"Argh---" the Spectre once again let out a roar of rage, and the sound had this powerful force that blasted Zhang Yang a few meters back. The damage inflicted on Zhang Yang was almost similar, about 4,000 damage points!

"What the f\*ck!" Zhang Yang could not take it anymore and cursed. As he had already used his {Charge}, he could only run towards the Spectre again, on his feet. Meanwhile, the Spectre was floating slowly towards Zhang Yang as well. As they once again clashed into each other, Zhang Yang was once again thrown a few meters back, right after slicing the monster with his sword, just once! How long will it take for him to kill this god-d\*mn Spectre, if this goes on?!

"Hahaha!" as she was looking at Zhang Yang from the sidelines, seeing Zhang Yang being bounced back every time he tried to get near the boss, like a leather ball being tossed around, instead of helping him, she actually laughed at him heartlessly!

This monster is really annoying! It could only activate a single skill called the {Repelling Screech}. With just one annoying skill, it gave a hell of a time to Zhang Yang to even approach it! Zhang

Yang was not able to channel his damage output onto the monster peacefully!

After laughing for quite awhile, Wei Yan Er finally engaged into battle to aid Zhang Yang.

And so it began, two leather balls being bounced around like mad people, trying to play a game of pong with the Spectre!

"Hahaha! Gegege!" Wei Yan Er really enjoyed this new style of battle, being 'bounced' around. She was laughing and giggling all the way throughout the entire battle.

Although the spectre had 0 defense and players should be able to unleash high value damages onto it, because of the waves of {Repelling Screech}, Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er could only run around and try to approach the spectre by picking and rolling around, having no way at all to focus their assaults on the monster! Any melee profession players would face the same problem as the players would have trouble staying by the side of the monster and attacking!

After battling and repeatedly being bounced around for 2 minutes long, the god d\*mned Spectre was finally slain!

"Hahaha! Interesting fight!" Wei Yan Er was still laughing.

The three of them continued to push forward, as there were more Spectres coming out from their hiding spots behind the



pillars, causing great trouble to the three of them. It took them about one and a half hour just to get rid of those annoying Spectre. Finally, Zhang Yang and the ladies arrived at the bottom-most section of the palace chamber.

There was a throne chair placed on the higher ground, by the far end of the chamber, there were at least tens of steps of stairs that allowed people to walk up to the throne chair. The throne chair was huge and was completely made out of gold. Many diamonds and gemstones were crafted onto the surface of the throne, making the chair look magnificent!

Right above the throne chair, there was a man in a black robe, sitting on it. Even the head of the man was covered in a black scarf, protecting his face from being seen by others. However, his gender can be identified by just looking at his body figure. Right beside the black-robed man's right hand, there lay a sharp-edged long spear that surged with a gloomy aura.

[The Vengeful Spirit Mordoro] (Violet-Platinum, Undead)

Level: 89

HP: 8,900,000

Defense: 2,500

"Should we call uncle Hundred Shots and the others over here?" Wei Yan Er asked.

Zhang Yang took a look at the boss and said, "I don't think it's a good idea. Look at the beneficial effect of the boss!"

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er looked at the boss again.

[Undead Regenerative Aura]: Recovers health points once every 2 seconds. Recovers 2,000 health points as a basic amount of recovery. Healing amount of the boss will increase, based on the number of living souls within the effective range of the aura. One extra living soul within the effective range will provide the caster an additional 100% healing effect. Range of the aura: 100 meters radius out, with the caster as the center point.

"The more people present, the more amount of health the boss can heal!" Zhang Yang frown.

So now, it's just up to the three of them and one pet. The boss could basically heal over an amount of 16,000 health points every second. The math was simple. The basic healing amount was set at 2,000 health points every second. So, each living soul within the effective area will boost the healing amount of the boss by up to 4,000 health points per second. When a second living soul is present, the healing amount will be increased to 8,000 health points per second. And, the third living soul will be boosting the healing amount of the boss up to 12,000 health points per second! Turtle is also a living soul, so that makes the fourth living soul that boosts the healing amount of the boss up to a total of 16,000 health points. And after applying the effect of {Destructive Smash}, the

boss would still be able to heal 4,000 in every second, lowering their DPS altogether by 4,000 points!

If more players are coming, although their total amount of DPS will increase substantially, but the healing amount of the boss will multiply on as more living souls are present! With another one additional living soul presence other than the three of them, it would increase the healing amount of 16,000 by another 100%, making it into an amount of 32,000! So now, it is wiser to just keep the number small, like now, just the three of them and one turtle, narrowing the healing amount of the boss down by at least 16,000 health points.

This boss was purposely designed to limit the number of players.

With this kind of aura effect, if the number of players were more than 10, then the boss would become invincible already! Even a Level 300 player with a full set of legendary armor will not be able to defeat this boss if the player cannot end the boss within 2 seconds. The boss will just heal back to its full health state!

"So, just the three of us then?"

"Four! You forgot Turtle!"

Zhang Yang patted the turtle's head, and with his sword pulled out readily to engage into battle with the boss, he let out a cry, "Have some potions and get ready!"

Shoof! Business as usual, he began by throwing the {Spear of Obliteration} straight at the boss!

‘-4,372!’

A damage value appeared as the spear went by his head, quickly followed by a raging roar from Mordoro. The initiated attack triggered the boss to stand up from the throne, and with his right arm reaching out to the side, he grabbed the long spear that lay by his side. Two ghostly green flames ignited right at the eye pupils of Mordoro as he walked towards the direction of Zhang Yang, as if he was having a walk in the garden, but his movement speed was astoundingly fast! In just a split second, the boss had already reached Zhang Yang and he began to swing the long spear in his hands towards Zhang Yang.

‘+32,000!’

At that instant, the effect of the {Undead Regenerative Aura} kicked in and healed the boss. Without the effect of {Destructive Smash} to weaken the healing effect, Mordoro was healed by an amount of 32,000 health points, healing him back to his full health state!

"You insolent living scum! How daring of you to come forth to me with such misguided intent!" Mordoro spoke in a very low voice, as if the sound of thunder was rumbling in a rhythm forming up into audible words, trembling across the ears of Zhang Yang and the ladies, to the point that their ears hurt!

Zhang Yang quickly raised up his shield to block the long spear that was about to stab him, and ‘Ding!’, the shield and the spear clashed! Zhang Yang could feel a powerful force trembling across his shield, pushing him two steps back! He could also feel that the force had numbed his shoulders and arms! He had almost let go of his weapon in his hand as he could not hold it in his hands!

What a powerful boss!

He was struck back a little, but he stood firm and reengaged into battle with the boss.

Because the boss had an aura skill that heals him overtime, Zhang Yang quickly activated {Destructive Smash} onto the boss, followed by layers of {Cripple Defense}. Then, he worked together with Wei Yan Er and smashed another 5 layers of {Cripple Defense} onto the boss.

"Imbeciles, there is no point in resisting the inevitable, kneel before the great power of darkness!" Mordoro was looking down on them with disdainful eyes as he wielded his long spear and stirred up a strong current of wind across the area. It was as if the boss was charging up for an attack! As expected! The boss charged toward Zhang Yang with his long spear, like an enraged dragon, piercing towards Zhang Yang!

‘-11,380!’

‘+8,000!’

While giving a blow to Zhang Yang, the boss was healed with 8,000 health points at the same time!

To increase the damage output of Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er, Han Ying Xue healed up Zhang Yang with the time gap she had at hand, then she cast a {Putrefying Poison} onto the boss. Although the damage was not really affecting the boss much, the decaying effect could reduce about 10,000 health points from the boss, providing an overtime damage of 600+ for every second!

"Hahaha! Tremble before despairing darkness!" the aura skill wasn't the only skill Mordoro had. After engaging in battle for just awhile, he reached out with his right palm open, and tens of small black balls emerged around his hands. The black balls then dropped onto the ground and formed into puddles of black water that were wriggling like worms, it was disgusting! These black liquidated balls then gushed over Zhang Yang and [Mythical Turtle].

The movement speed of these black water puddles was extremely slow, slow enough for players to dodge with ease, but not for the turtle!

The movement speed of Turtle was much slower than the movement speed of the puddles of black water! After just a short while, the black water had caught up on Turtle.

Splash!

The black water puddles exploded violently, doing an area splash

on Zhang Yang and the ladies, inflicting each of them with a damage value of 10,000 Shadow damage!

"Stupid Turtle!" Wei Yan Er yelled.

"Turtles are just born slower, it's not his fault alright!" Zhang Yang laughed, but the remaining puddles of black waters were still pursuing them, slowly! He quickly unsummoned the Turtle back into his inventory as the Turtle would become dead meat if all the black water puddles touched it!

It was really an unfortunate thing to do, because Turtle the turtle was an indispensable attackers! Plus, Zhang Yang could not summon Whitey out, as he was now currently engaged in a battle.

But the good thing about this was that the healing amount of the boss had been reduced to 4,000 health points every 2 seconds.

Zhang Yang kited the boss by picking and rolling around the area, dodging whatever black water puddles that were pursuing him. It was a fortunate thing that they had already cleared most of the monsters in the palace. Now that the palace had been cleaned of the monsters, they could roll around with the boss without having to worry about being ambushed by monsters.

"Hahaha! Tremble before the despairing darkness!" Mordoro would cast the black water puddles all over the ground once every 20 seconds, giving no time for Zhang Yang to slack at all. All he could do was to move around, dodging those 'things' while kiting the boss at the same time.

It was really a fortunate thing that the area was vast enough, and that the movement speed of the black water puddles were really slow. As long as they were more aware of their surroundings, they did not need to fear being touched by the black water puddles that would explode upon touch!

90%, 80%... even though the health bar of the boss was reducing very slowly due to the {Undead Regenerative Aura}, after bombarding the boss with all that they had for 10 minutes straight, Mordoro was soon left with 50% of his health!

"So, it seems that I have underestimated you!" the greenish flames on the eye pupils of Mordoro flashed all of a sudden, as his right arm began to ignite in flames, and the greenish flames began to blaze on all the way down to long spear in his grip!

Zhang Yang tightened up his \*ss, as he could not afford to make any mistake at this point!

Boom!

Mordoro raised up his long spear and plunged the tip of the spear straight into the ground of the place. The moment the spear plunged into the ground, the earth shook as if there was a 10 magnitude earthquake striking the area. The ground began to shatter into pieces, as the pieces of the ground were stretching unevenly across the entire area. Boom room room! The pieces of ground were being crushed into dust, which surged across the air!



‘-12,186!’

‘-19,580!’

‘-19,910!’

Zhang Yang and the ladies were inflicted with a high value of damage as the air surged all around them! That wasn't the end of the attack, it was just the beginning of it! 18 streams of green flames beginning to ignite and grow right from the ground surrounding the boss, with the tip of his spear as the center point. These flames then expanded out towards eight different directions into the surroundings, and across the ground in an instant, expanding out into the shape of a spider web!

As the green flames spread across for quite a distance, they started to come to life from the ground at a high speed, forming blades at the tip of each flame. These blades were all about 3 meters long! Right after they formed, they reached out into the surroundings at high speed! Like thick whips of flames, with bladed tips, each of them reached out for their targets!

"Rawgh!" as he heard some weird noises, Zhang Yang could see that there were many terrifying human faces with horrifying expressions drilling their way out from within the green flames, moaning with weird noises, and grimacing at Zhang Yang and the ladies. While they were at it, Zhang Yang could also see their white teeth gnashing, as if they wanted to chew him alive! Are you kidding me? Green flames with bladed tips that can flexibly pursue targets, while having scary faces drilling out from the flames? Fortunately, the tenacity of these flames was really good. Even

though these faces were trying to drill themselves out from them, but after reaching out for about one or two feet, they would be held back by the elasticity of the flames.

"Dodge!" Zhang Yang quickly shouted, aware of the damage they were about to receive if they just stood there and did nothing.

Actually, Zhang Yang did not have to shout to inform Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue, because the moment they saw the faces drilling out from the flames, they had already began to run from them! So, it would be impossible for the faces to get near, or to touch them!

"Hahaha! Listen to the song of misery straight from hell!" Mordoro pulled his spear from the ground and pursued Zhang Yang. Waving up his left hand, it was another wave of black water puddles splashing onto the ground, making the place even merrier!

"To hell with this man! They expect us to survive all this?" Zhang Yang began to lose his composure and he cursed as he kited the boss, running all around the area like a mad man!

However, the 18 streams of green flames were like living beings, they actually tailed Zhang Yang and the two ladies! As the green flames spread, the human faces continued pushing out from the flames, crying out in sharp voices that stacked together. It was really disturbing to hear all that! What that was even worse was that the area where the green flames spread across would stay burning!

"I can smell the scent of despair and terror!" the boss laughed in a

very low and bassy voice, "Shake in fear! Fear! And finally, subdue yourself to the power of darkness, become my loyal servant!"

"Stop bragging, you stinky sh\*t! Just wait until we chop your god d\*mn doggy head down and kick it like a football!" Wei Yan Er replied defiantly, clearly more annoyed than anything else.

"Give up on this futile resistance, tuck yourselves into the embrace of darkness!" Mordoro spun his long spear so fast that there were visible ripples in the air!

Zhang Yang quickly took a few steps back. The movement speed of the black water puddles were extremely slow, but the green flames were moving extremely fast! He had to keep moving around without stopping at any one spot at all times to prevent those horrifying faces from biting him!

The 18 streams of green flames were like 18 gigantic pythons, twisting and turning all over the place, trying to catch up to Zhang Yang and the two ladies, forming walls of flames along the way, trying to cut the three of them off. Countless human faces were crying out into the area, just like the sound that could be heard, only from hell. It was just terrifying!

"It's time to speed things up!" Zhang Yang was frowning. Although this palace was vast, but as the 18 stream of green flames spread across the area, cutting off ways for them to run, if they delayed this battle a little more, all three of them would definitely be trapped inside the green flames and be burnt alive, or should we say, bitten to death, alive!

40%, 30%... The boss had the {Undead Regenerative Aura} that would recover his health overtime, so even though Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er had been giving everything they had into bringing down the health of the boss, their damage output efficiency had been reduced by almost 20%! With all the interruption from the black water puddles and the green flames, it would be hard to maintain the rate of their attacks on the boss, and that led them down to not being able to reduce the health points of the boss quickly enough.

"Keep it up, guys! You guys are doing great!" Han Ying Er was in charge of healing Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er. Other than that, she needed to time herself and cast the {Putrefying Poison} onto the boss, leaving her with no time at all to chant the {Punishment Ray}!

"This might just work!" looking at the one quarter of the entire area that was not yet being occupied by the green flames and the remaining 20% health bar of the boss, Zhang Yang was confident that they might just pull this off! Plus, all three of them had not yet activated their super skill - {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!

"Devastator!" Zhang Yang summoned [Devastator] out with a wave of his hand to aid them in battle.

--- as servants were not counted as living souls, they would not affect the {Undead Regenerative Aura} of the boss and consequently increase the healing amount of the boss.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Right after [Devastator] joined the battle, he used his large fists to punch the boss hard. The boss looked puny standing right before the huge body of [Devastator]!

17%, 14%, 11%... the health bar of the boss was getting lower and lower, while the surface area that had been engulfed by the green flames was getting larger, the party was almost drowning in a sea of green flames already!

[Devastator] had the disadvantage of having a very huge body mass! Although Zhang Yang and the ladies still had space to stand apart from the flames, the huge fellow had no place to stand anymore. It was during that moment, when everyone knew that [Devastator] was doomed! The green flames touched [Devastator], and the flames began to spread across him!

In an instant, the green flames had spread all over [Devastator]. Countless human faces were drilling through the body of [Devastator], the scene was really horrifying!

Boom!

The huge body of [Devastator] was reduced to bits in one short instant, and the 20,000 health points were reduced to zero in just a blink of an eye!

"Holy cow! What a mess!" Zhang Yang was shouting in shock.

If players were to be touched by these green flames, they would be instantly killed!

8%!

"Take some [Power Potions], and let's activate our {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}! Together!" Zhang Yang took a bottle of [Beginner's Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] first, and then activated his {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, followed by the special effect of {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}!

Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had also taken their own [Power Potions] and had activated their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} as well!

Shoof! Shoof! Shoof!

Three shadows wielded their swords, cutting through body of the boss, slashing like crazy! The body of the boss was suddenly surging with streams of white electrical radiance, as the old beastman started hammering strikes of lightning strike onto the head of the boss.

‘-14,000!’

‘-14,000!’

‘-14,000!’

...

The health bar of the boss was reducing crazily, as if a water pipe had ruptured, and the liquid in it was flowing out!

2%!

Mordoro was already at the brink of his death!

But, the green flames and the black water puddles were approaching the three of them, trapping them in a corner!

Zhang Yang tightened his teeth and shouted, "Charge into the black water puddles! I'll activate my skill - {Vanguard's Aggression}!"

# Chapter 411: Victory at a Price

---

Although the black water puddles could inflict AOE damage of 10,000 upon touch, upon the activation of {Vanguard's Aggression}, the damage can be minimized greatly! As for the green flames, it was a different story. Judging from how [Devastator] was drilled to bits within seconds, and no damage values appeared on its head, it was obvious that the attacks ignored defense, damage immunity, and damage absorption. So one touch, and you are as good as dead!

Wei Yan Er had been hanging around Zhang Yang throughout the entire battle, so Han Ying Xue had to approach them quickly to enter into the radius area of 3 meters, marking Zhang Yang as the center point. By entering the effective range of {Vanguard's Aggression}, she would be able to enjoy the special effect of the skill.

The black water puddles were right in front of them already!

Zhang Yang quickly activated the {Vanguard's Aggression} and activated his {Shield Wall}, almost at the same time! With the special effect of his [Titan Wall] kicking in, the damage he received was reduced steeply, and he was recovering 10% of his health points in every second! He was like a god for that 15 seconds!

1%!

That final drop of the health points of Mordoro was only 80,000!



{Killing Cleave}!

The moment the cooldown period of Wei Yan Er's {Killing Cleave} was over, she activated it again, almost immediately, swinging her heavy and powerful giant axe over at the boss and inflicting the boss with a terrifying damage of '-32,312'!

As Zhang Yang's {Killing Cleave} was still on cooldown period, he activated his {Block} to avoid some damage first, and then he activated his {Shield Bash}!

'-10,502!'

Critical Strike! Lucky!

Right after all that, the boss was left with around 40,000 health points! Since they already did not need Han Ying Xue to heal them anymore, Han Ying Xue began to hurl {Punishment Rays} at the boss as well.

'-7,243!'

The inherent damage of {Punishment Ray} was extremely low, but with the extremely high magic attack attribute of Han Ying Xue, the skill had exhibited an outstanding damage value!

The green flames were spreading over closer than ever!

30,000! 20,000! 10,000!

"Argh ---" Han Ying Xue screamed miserably, and somehow the voice turned Zhang Yang on. Her body was engulfed in green flames as the human faces tore her apart into bits! The moment she was killed, she did not even have the option to release her soul, and was transferred straight to the graveyard.

Wei Yan Er followed her to the graveyard a few seconds later. Things were happening too quickly!

‘-8,334!’

Zhang Yang swung his sword across the boss's body with a {Horizontal Sweep}! The boss was only left with about 1,000 health points! One more hit! A gentle hit, a strong brutal hit, it did not matter anymore! Just one more hit, and the boss is as good as dead!

The green flames were so close that they could touch Zhang Yang at any second now!

Zhang Yang activated his accessory [Heart of the Death Knight], but unfortunately, the invincible effect of this piece of accessory was not effective against the assault of the green flame! Countless human faces were drilling through his body. Even though Zhang Yang had a total of 70,000+ health points at the moment, and the skill - {Shield Wall} activated, everything was helpless before the blazing flames! He was instant-killed!

Boom!

A white light surged through Zhang Yang's body as he was revived back, with his health bar full again!

--- it must be Han Ying Xue's skill, {Rise Anew}!

Zhang Yang swung out his sword with all his might at the body of the boss as soon as he was able to - with a shoof! At the same time, unfortunately, the green flames engulfed him once more and he was burned into bits in the next split second!

‘-4,343!’

‘Ding! Your party has slain The Vengeful Spirit Mordoro, acquired 8,900,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! You have been killed, all equipment will acquire a 10% reduction on their durability!’

Shoof, Zhang Yang was transferred back to the graveyard right after the notifications.

When Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er saw Zhang Yang's soul had respawned by their sides, they let out a breath of sigh and disappointment and said, "Sigh, after all the effort and everything that we have been through, it was all for nothing!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Who says so! Hahaha!"

"You slew the boss?" Wei Yan Er asked curiously.

"Of course I did!"

"Then, why are you here in the graveyard?"

"Heard of Arthur and Mordred? Killing each other at the same time?" Zhang Yang smiled.

Han Ying Xue curled up her lips and said, "I only heard about 'sharing life and death', so, ahem! Silly Yu and the boss are really 'we are entangled together forever, never to part for a second, like wind, like sand, indispensable for minutes'! Haha!"

"Stop showing off your knowledge on wordings and stuff, let's get moving! We're going back to pick up our 'trophies'! Or else, the system is going to refresh everything, and all this would really have been for nothing!"

The three of them rushed back to the palace in their soul forms. It was really fortunate for three of them, that the graveyard that they were transferred to was just located right in the middle of the Black-Rock Canyon. So, it did not take them long to get back to the location of the palace. After about 10 minutes, they arrived by the side of Mordred's dead body. They managed to revive themselves nearby their dead bodies that were torn to bits.

Han Ying Xue gulped down a bottle of [Mana Potion] and quickly, she began to chant some of her healing skills to heal up all the three of them. It was just an act of precaution --- for example, in case other players appeared and ambushed them! So it was wiser for one to maintain health points at the maximum when traveling in the open world. You will never know what lay ahead of you in the ‘wild’!

As usual, Wei Yan Er only aimed for the coins and picked up the 20 gold coins first, and then only she began to look at the remaining ‘trophies’ that were scattered on the floor, besides the boss.

"Haha! It’s another [Armor Set]!" Wei Yan Er cheered with her hands raised up in the air, but immediately, she pulled her head and hands down facing the ground, "Unfortunately, this is not for me."

[Ring of Sincerity] (Violet-Platinum, Necklace)

Vitality: +141

Intelligence: +94

Spirit: +40

Equip: Reduces 5 seconds of cooldown period for {Holy Shield}.

{Unidentified}

Required Profession: Priest

Required Level: 80

With this ring, Han Ying Xue has finally gathered 3 [Sincerity Armor Set], activating the first special effect of the Armor Set! She was giggling and jumping in joy until her huge pair of boobs were jiggling about as if forces were applied on them, with the surface of the boobies rippling like watery sacks. Zhang Yang could not help but scold her for teasing him so!

[Raging Blaze Hand Guards] (Violet-Platinum, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +16

Vitality: +282

Intelligence: +189

Spirit: +81

Equip: Increases 100 damage points for Fire-Type Skills.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

"Hmm, this should be given to Daffodil Daydream!" Zhang Yang kept it into his inventory temporarily.

"Noob tank, do you like sister Daffodil Daydream?" Wei Yan Er tried to pry from Zhang Yang.

"Where did you get that idea from? How did you even come up with that?"

"Because, if you like someone, you will give her things!" Wei Yan Er cocked her head a little and said.

"... then, do you mean to say that I like Hundred Shots, Fatty Han and the other men in the guild? Because I always give them things." Zhang Yang spoke flatly.

The expression of Wei Yan Er changed all of a sudden and she pointed at Zhang Yang, "You! You like men! Oh my god!"

Han Ying Xue twitched her lips and said, "Ignore her, let's get all the equipment. I'm still hoping one boss can give me an entire set of [Armor Set]! Then I will finally have it!"

But her 'hope' was not realized as the boss only dropped two Violet-Platinum equipment, the remaining were a bunch of Yellow-Gold equipment. Because Zhang Yang and the ladies already had better equipment, so they were not interested at all. Zhang Yang took everything into his inventory as he was planning to sell all of them for gold coins.

As there was no sign of Zhang Yang's [Armor Set], he sighed and said, "Little girl, what kind of 'lucky hands' are yours? I'm still one out of seven short! And it's been so long ever since!"

"Humph! Don't get me started on this! I haven't made any noise even though I'm 6 out of 7 short!"

The last item on the ground was naturally, the quest item [Mordoro's Heart]. The heart looked like a red diamond, and looked like it's still full of life, still beating! The pulses were strong and lively.

"This is weird, aren't the undead...dead? How is the heart so lively? And it's beating stronger than an ox!" Wei Yan Er was beginning to ask some more senseless questions.

"Just give it a rest, we just have to complete the quest, and that would be enough for us!"

The three of them kept the [Mordoro's Heart] and came out from the palace. They had finally obtained the necessary requirements to turn in the quest item for rewards!



They went all the way back without encountering any problems, and they arrived at the little cottage of Kyle Dylan. There, the NPC was looking forward to their return. When he saw Zhang Yang and the ladies, his face was filled with hope again.

"This old man is quite suitable for this role, always waiting for us to come back to him!" Wei Yan Er nodded.

The three of them halted their [Mounts] and dismounted. Kyle Dylan was smiling at them, "It's good to see you all back here safe and sound, and I bet you guys have already completed the quest!"

"Here, this is the [Mordoro's Heart] that you ordered!" Wei Yan Er took the quest item from her inventory in a hurry and was ready to place it onto the hands of Kyle Dylan. But she was stopped by Kyle Dylan himself!

"Careful there! Careful!" Kyle Dylan looked very tense as he stared at the lively beating heart in the hands of the little girl, then he took the quest item into his hands as gently as possible.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Eliminate Shaman Mordoro, acquired 5,000,000 experience points!'

Wei Yan Er was curious, seeing Kyle Dylan being so careful with the heart, "My respected old man, may I know why are you being so careful with this heart? Is it because this heart has some sort of use?"

"Of course it does!" Kyle Dylan revealed a gentle smile on his face as he waved at the three of them, "Come, come. Follow me. I want to show you something, and also tell you a story!"

He walked out the little cottage and went to the little garden at the back of the cottage.

So, did this mean that there was another quest following up? Zhang Yang and the ladies exchanged a look, and then they followed the old man out of the cottage, and into the little garden.

At that moment, they could see dust stirring up from afar, approaching their location. There were five players riding on [Storm and Gale Direwolves], heading over at a high speed. At first, Zhang Yang did not realize it, but as the five mounts were approaching nearer, they saw that the five players who were coming at their way were, in fact, the five players of The Spartan Warriors who were wiped out by Zhang Yang and the ladies!

Three of them looked at each other and smiled.

Meanwhile, The Spartan Warriors were not aware of Zhang Yang and the two ladies. They thought they were just 3 random players trying to accept a quest. Zhang Yang could hear the voice of the Ten-Times-of-Grass coming loud from afar, "What a stupid quest! Wasted our entire day just to get it done! If it's not for that ring, I would have slaughtered that NPC and choke the life out of him --- Huh?"

The five of them saw Zhang Yang at the same time and they were terrified. Their faces were filled with pure terror as they began to back off very slowly.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely at them, "We are just going to accept a quest, if you're here for the quest as well, give us a moment, we're about to leave."

"No rush at all! We're not rushing at all!" Spartan Warrior quickly bowed at them and spoke in a very good manner. The other four of his party members were also being courteous, as they were afraid that Zhang Yang could charge at them and slaughter them all.

"Pff!" Wei Yan Er was trying to hold her laugh, but obviously, she failed. "These people look exactly like the sniveling traitors in war movies!"

"Speaking of traitors, now that we're about to enter the Chaos Realm, when the war is triggered, who knows, you might even see some traitors with your own bare eyes!" Zhang Yang smiled.

"Humph! If they ever appear in front of me, and I find out about them, I'm going to chop them down one by one, until none of them are still standing!" Wei Yan Er purposely took out her giant axe and swung it around to emphasize how she would do it! But her action scared the five Spartan Warriors until they hugged each other in one spot, having thoughts that the little girl was not happy to see them and was about to chop them into pieces.

"About 20 years ago, there was a plague that appeared out of nowhere and began to spread across our village. Many perished because of the plague!" Kyle Dylan kept the [Mordoro's Heart] into a weird looking container as he continued to tell the story, "Among the perished, my wife, Anelia was one of them. She was infected, and she passed on!"

The NPC's name has the term 'Grave Keeper', but there was no sign of any grave in the garden. Could it be, that he was only keeping an eye on his wife's gravestone where she was buried?

Wei Yan Er was filled with curiosity, so she asked, "And then? And then?"

"... some of the dead villagers had turned into undead creatures. So, our chief was afraid that the other bodies would undergo the same changes and turn into undead creatures. So he commanded everyone to burn every single dead body with blazing fire!" Kyle Dylan began to get agitated as he stood up, took a few steps back and look into afar. Then he revealed a sense of hatred on his face, "I begged him, I knelt down with my knees on the cold stones of floors and I begged him not to burn away my Anelia. But he refused and threw her body right into the blazing flame! I did the best I could and managed to get my Anelia out from the fire, But, this is all that's left of her, just her skull!"

The NPC suddenly revealed a very strange facial expression on his face as he continued to talk, "I fled all the way here, and all these years, I have been doing everything I could to resurrect my Anelia! Now, her resurrection is upon me! It's happening!"

Kyle Dylan began to laugh like a mad man, revealing his true colors beneath his gentle face!

We are entangled together forever, never apart for seconds, like wind, like sand, indispensable for minutes - means two persons sharing life together, including life and death. The same sort of line for newlywed but in Chinese culture.

## Chapter 412: The Resurrected Anelia

---

"Why do I have a bad feeling about this...!" Wei Yan Er beat on her chest and said.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh and said, "I really hate these types of dramatic quests, always making us look like fools!"

Kyle Dylan was laughing madly like he was about to drown himself into madness, as if he was being possessed by a demon! He gazed at Zhang Yang and the two ladies, "I must really show my gratitude to you adventurers! You worked so hard, aiding me in collecting all the ingredients that I need to resurrect my Anelia in the name of Justice and some treasures and coins! Thank you so much! For twenty years, twenty years! I have waited for so long, and today is finally the day!"

Boom!

A powerful quake trembled across the ground for just a brief moment, then everything went quiet.

"Can you hear that?" Kyle Dylan was looking madly passionate, "That's the sound of my Anelia, resurrecting! I really have to show my gratitude! The Vengeful Spirit Mordoro was the strongest undead there is, and with his heart, my Anelia shall have unlimited power!"

This NPC just turned into some evil character with a savage face,

"Those bloody villagers, they must have grown envious of me for being the richest man in the village and took all my properties right after I escaped! Humph! When my Anelia's resurrection is complete, I shall bring her to the village and rain chaos upon them, let those filthy scum villagers pay for what they have done!"

Boom!

The ground shook again, and again! Boom! Boom! Boom! The quakes were getting stronger and stronger, as the plants in the surrounding trembled as if they were human. Boom! Boom! Boom! Tall trees began to fall, as sand and dust were kicked up by the impact of the fallen trees.

"Noob tank, this looks a little too 'magnificent'!" Wei Yan Er gripped her axe a little tighter.

"Sigh, why do we have to battle no matter where we go, can't you give me some time to rest?" Han Ying Xue was sighing with a helpless tone.

The Spartan Warriors quickly backed off while hugging each other tightly.

Boom!

Suddenly, a gigantic white-boned arm emerged from beneath the surface of the ground! This arm was huge! It was about 3 or 4 times thicker and larger than the arms an average person would have!

Upon a closer look, the white skeleton arm was obviously combined together by many thigh bones, definitely not some natural human bone. It made sense now, that was most probably why Kyle Dylan had asked them to collect so many [Skeleton Bones], [Tooth of a Zombie], and also [Bone of the Necromancer]!

Boom!

Another white-boned arm broke out of the ground! The two huge arms were like bulldozers pushing across the ground, pushing away the soils on the two sides. In that instant, dust and sands were everywhere in the air, all they could see was shattered rocks and marbles flying all over the place!

"Hahaha! Come out! Come out now! My Anelia! My beloved Anelia!" Kyle Dylan was jumping about joyfully, with a crazy look, as if he just had drugs! "Now, no one will stand in our way! No one! No one! Hahaha!"

‘Ding! Grave Keeper used you to provide him the necessary ingredients to resurrect his late wife. This terrifying existence of undead will bring catastrophic consequences to the human nearby! You must be responsible for what you have done, warriors!’

‘Ding! You have automatically accepted a quest" Slay Anelia! If you give up on the quest or you cannot complete the quest within 1 day, you will receive a penalty of Level -1!’

What the hell!



Zhang Yang and the ladies stared at each other, and cursed in unison! For everything that had happened, it's all because of the system guide, isn't it? If the game could just give some sort of notification to inform the players, nothing of this sort would have happened right?

This is just helpless, and hopeless! Since things have already escalated to this, they just have to go with it!

"Silly Yu, should we kill those five Spartans first?" Han Ying Xue took a quick glance at the Spartan Warrior and his 4 party members. After all, they had been slaughtered by Zhang Yang and the ladies once, revenge was a sentiment that they most likely harbored.

Before Zhang Yang could reply, a gigantic white corpse broke out of the ground! The corpse was about 3 meters tall, and the white bones on it seemed all thick and strong, but the size of the human skull and brain above the neck were of a regular human size, sticking right on top of the gigantic body! It was really disproportionate to look at!

[The Resurrected Anelia]

Level: 89

HP: 8,900,000

"My dear Anelia ---" the eyes of Kyle Dylan grew gentle as he looked at the face of Anelia with an obsessed face. He was looking at Anelia as if she was not a gigantic white-boned undead, instead, he believed that she was still his beautiful wife! He must have lost his mind!

Zhang Yang smiled bitterly, "It's another drama mode, we can't move, again!" Fortunately for him, he managed to summon [Mythical Turtle] out right before all these happened.

"Kyle? Kyle Dylan?" Anelia was speaking out in a very low and husky voice, looking down at Dylan from the tall and huge body of hers, "Why have you become so short all of a sudden? That's not right, why is everything becomes so small around me? Argh! My hands! My legs! My body! What is going on with me! Argh ---"

"My dear Anelia, please listen to me first!" Kyle Dylan quickly told Anelia every single detail about her death and her resurrection.

"I... I'm already dead?" Anelia was feeling lost, as she reached out her hands up around her face. She was shivering as she was filled with despair. She placed her shivering hands onto her face and said, "My face, is my face also changed? Like my body and hands?"

"My dear Anelia, no matter how you change, I'll always love you!" Kyle Dylan told her gently and looked at her passionately.

"That's just so touching!" Han Ying Xue could not move, but she still could talk, "If only someone, some man would tell me that, my life would be perfect!"

Zhang Yang, "..."

But, Anelia did not seem to be able to listen or accept any of this. After clutching her face in a daze, she suddenly let out a thunderous raging roar towards the sky and began to slam on the ground with her hands. The slamming caused the ground to shake and tremble as if the water was boiling, constantly fluctuating! She then roared at Kyle Dylan with rage, "Why! Why did you resurrect me! I wasn't born a monster, and I sure didn't die as one! So what meaning does it hold, for me to live like this! I hate you! I hate you!"

"Anelia---" Kyle Dylan intended to comfort her.

"Shut up!" Anelia continued to roar.

"My dear Anelia, please calm down first!" Kyle Dylan made another attempt to comfort his resurrected wife.

"I said, shut up!" Anelia roared in anger yet again, but this time, she raised her huge white-boned arm and slammed it across the ground straight at Kyle Dylan! With one powerful sweep of her arm, flesh and bones of Kyle Dylan splatted right across the air onto the ground, he was instantly smashed into a pulp! "No---" Anelia shouted as she lost her voice. In the past, she was still an

ordinary woman, but now that she has become a Violet-Platinum boss, of course, she would lose control of her new strength, of course, she wouldn't know how strong she had become!

"Argh!" Anelia began to scream in a sharp voice, and her body began to radiate with terrifying a sense of power.

"You---" Anelia raged and looked straight at Zhang Yang, the two ladies, and the 5 Spartan Warriors standing further from her. Her eye sockets were ignited with an evil flame, "My husband is already dead, why are you still alive? I want to kill! Kill every single one of you! The world does not need a single living person!"

Right after she was done talking, Zhang Yang and the players in the area had finally regained control, and they could finally move!

Wei Yan Er pointed straight at the nose of Anelia and said, "You old b\*tch! You 're the one who killed your own husband and now, you're trying to blame this one us? What a b\*tchy Pan Jin Lian!"

"Zhang Yang could not help but to laugh, "If she's Pan Jin Lian, then she must be the worst looking Pan Jin Lian there is in the entire history!"

"Bastards!" the boss began to stomp the ground with her white-boned feet, charging towards Zhang Yang and the two ladies! Well, they were standing so much closer to the boss, of course, they would be the ones who would get the aggro of the boss first.

A boss battle was already upon them, and having no time to even look at the five players of The Spartan Warriors, Zhang Yang quickly equipped the [Party Summon Order] on him as a precaution. What if the five of them, The Spartan Warriors, decided to ambush Zhang Yang and his party when they are in deep trouble? With the [Party Summon Order], let's see who will be the one doing the looting by then!

{Spear of Obliteration} fired away! Zhang Yang charged in a few steps forward and engaged the boss in battle.

"Go to hell, and meet my husband!" Anelia let out a cry of sorrow and slammed her white-boned hand at Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

Without wasting every single second, Zhang Yang raised up his shield and blocked her slam, then he raised his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and began his assault!

"Hey, old ugly b\*tch! Eat my axe!" Wei Yan Er let out a roar and went to the back of the boss. Wielding her giant axe, she directed the swing onto the white bones of Anelia, and her strikes sent sparks flying as the axe was sliced across the surface of the white bones! That hit gave a good crack on the huge thigh of the boss!

After all, the body of the boss was just made up of some bones of elite monsters, how can this boss be compared to the other Violet-Platinum bosses!

"Argh ---" Anelia roared at Zhang Yang with her mouth wide opened. Although her head is just as large as a regular human being, her mouth is large enough to swallow down a full-grown pig! As the mouth was wide opened after the boss roared, black fumes engulfed Zhang Yang! Countless black skulls moaned and roared within the black smoke!

‘-10,000!’

A very nicely rounded up damage value was inflicted on Zhang Yang, and Zhang Yang had also acquired an additional negative effect!

[Fatigue]: reduces 10% of both damage dealt and healing effect, lasts for 15 seconds.

What that was even worse, was that this negative effect could be stacked by up to 5 times!

Zhang Yang quickly informed, "Witch Snow! Don't stand on the same line as me and the boss!"

"Alright!"

Meanwhile, after seeing Zhang Yang and the ladies engaged in battle with the boss, the five players of The Spartan Warriors stabilized their trembling hearts and let go of their fear.

"This is a great chance!" Ten-Times-of-Grass was agitated with

excitement.

"That's right! They're engaged with a boss, and it's a Violet-Platinum boss! Strong as f\*ck! So three of them plan to slay a Violet-Platinum boss? Dream on! We can't even bring down a Yellow-Gold boss with all five of us!" Freezing With Heart was a little agitated with excitement as well.

"Let's wait! They won't be able to hold on much longer against this powerful Violet-Platinum boss! When Zhan Yu is about to die, we shall charge in and take the advantage the god has given us! Kill him! Kill Zhan Yu! And after we upload the playback of us doing so to the forums and official websites... Haha! We shall become the first in the entire China server to ever kill Zhan Yu!"

First! Number one!

In online games, who wouldn't want to get the title of 'Number one'? Number one on the Leveling list, number one on the profession list, who cares! As long as it's a 'Number one', it was a majestic-looking title wherever you go!

"Hehe, if we can even get a few pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment after we kill them, then we will be rich and powerful!"

The five of them were getting pumped to do it as they talked on. Then they turned their eyes towards Zhang Yang and the two ladies without any fear anymore. Instead, they were looking at Zhang Yang with greedy eyes as if Zhang Yang was already destined to be killed by them.

"Anyone who has seen this look of mine must die!" Anelia was getting crazier, and because she was beginning to get used to her new body, she became more comfortable in advancing and retreating, basically, all of her movements became smoother. And now, she had finally begun to unleash the power of a Violet-Platinum boss!



# Chapter 413: Thrown into a Battle of Chance

---

Zhang Yang had been aware of his surroundings, taking in everything, including the expressions of the five Spartan Warriors. He had not missed that. He smiled coldly and said, "Witchy Snow, hang back a little and keep my health bar at 50%."

"Hmm... what are you trying to do?" Han Ying Xue couldn't understand what Zhang Yang wanted to do, so she asked.

"Those 5 behind us aren't looking at us so pleasantly. So, I plan to set up a bait and see if they would change their minds maybe? Their decisions shall decide their own fate." Zhang Yang laughed.

"... Noob tank, you're very... 'benevolent'!" Wei Yan Er was laughing very hard.

"Well, if they weren't thinking about taking advantage on us, then they wouldn't be lurking around us still! Haha!"

Han Ying Xue slowed down her healing on Zhang Yang, slowly letting Zhang Yang's health bar reduce from 90% down to 80%, 70%, and all the way down to 50%!

It seemed really dangerous to do so, but now that they were in an outdoor environment, Zhang Yang was mounted on his [Mount], boosting his maximum health up to a total of 133,470 points! So 50% of the maximum health he has is approximately 70,000 health points! Plus, all non-members of his party will not be able to see the specific amount of health points he has, they would only see

the percentage of the health bar left.

The Spartan Warriors had no idea how much health points Zhang Yang has at the moment, all they could see was that Zhang Yang's health bar was reduced swiftly down to 50%, and then the health bar was maintained at 50%. So they began to lurk from the shadow.

To them, their chance to strike has finally come!

Freezing With Heart gave the signal, "Alright! Let's get going!"

The five of them looked at each other and nodded. They raised up their weapons and began to approach Zhang Yang slowly.

"Go to hell, all of you!" Anelia suddenly let out a sharp and thunderous roar, as a stream of dark light surged around her body. The dark light then shot out from her body in all directions!

‘-20,000!’

‘-20,000!’

‘-20,000!’

...

In that instant, everyone was inflicted with a large damage value, and that wasn't all, everyone was inflicted with a DOT effect!

[Shadow Corrosion]: Inflicts 3,000 Shadow damage every 3 seconds and reduces 50% healing effects, lasts for 15 seconds.

"Son of the sniper!" all five members of The Spartan Warriors cursed at the same time. Other than Spartan Warrior the tanker, who had approximately 30,000 health points on him at the moment, the remaining of his party members only had around 20,000 health points. After being assaulted by the boss with that powerful skill, the remaining four were left with only approximately 5,000 health points. The worst part was that the negative effect actually inflicted DOT damage on their health points! None of them could handle that sh\*t!

It had turned into a catastrophic disaster for The Spartan Warriors!

All five of them had their faces wet with tears. "What a stupid boss! We were coming to aid you, and this is how you repay us! Don't you know who are your enemies and who are your allies?"

Invincible Mouth-Sacrifier quickly activated his {Sacred Protection} and entered his invincible state, trying his best to heal up his 'brother-in-arms' a little! However, he was just a holy knight in the end. He specialized in single-target healing. However, there were 5 players - including himself - that required healing, so it made sense that he couldn't handle it! Priests would fare better in this sort of AOE healing.

He quickly shouted, "Quickly, use your skills! I can't hold it up much longer!"

There and then, the five of them had activated their own life-saving skills to save their own \*sses.

"Hahaha!" Wei Yan Er suddenly laughed madly and broke off from the battle. She rode on her [Crimson Flaming Horse] and charged towards the five of them.

At the current situation, [Battle Mounts] were still rare, or at least, the five Spartan Warriors had not yet acquired such rare equipment. Standing before the [Battle Mount], they never stood a chance. All they could do was to watch Wei Yan Er charging in swiftly, like a mad general on a horse with a giant axe!

"Taking advantage of others when we're busy? You better go home and suck on your own thumbs!" Wei Yan Er wielded her axe and directed the swing towards Ten-Times-of-Grass!

‘-14,211!’

It was a {Destrutive Smash} indeed, Ten-Times-of-Grass turned into a stream of white light immediately and got transferred straight to the nearest graveyard. He had already activated his {Ice Barrier} to remove the effect of [Shadow Corrosion], so he had nothing left to block the heavy strike that Wei Yan Er gave him!

Wei Yan Er giggled and turned her horse around, charging towards her second target, Freezing With Heart!

Taking advantage of others? The Spartan Warriors were already wounded badly by the boss! So now, it was actually Wei Yan Er who was taking advantage on The Spartan Warriors, finishing what the boss had started!

Although the 5 of them had already broken out of their formation, the distance of 20 to 30 meters made no difference. In just an instant, Wei Yan Er had caught up with her next target and had swung her axe again!

‘-9,212!’

Freezing With Heart had also let out a sad scream and disappeared into a stream of white light, joining his pal, Ten-Times-of-Grass.

Wei Yan Er turned her horse towards her next target, Invincible Mouth-Sacrifier, and she began to charge again, terrifying Invincible Mouth-Sacrifier until he almost pissed his pants! His face turned pale the moment he saw her charging towards him, because he never expected the little girl to come at him first! He had healed Spartan Warrior first, but Wei Yan Er did not charge at him firstly, even though she knew he was the healer. Instead, she went on killing his other two ‘brother-in-arms’ on her horse mount!

As his {Sacred Protection} had already been activated previously,

it's futile to even think about running away. So all he can do at that moment was to focus healing himself!

‘-15,789!’

{Tornado Cleave} activated! Wei Yan Er swung her axe through and instant-killed Invincible Mouth-Sacrificer!

‘-4,221!’

Zhang Yang also turned around and threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at Sloppy Sloth, taking away the health points that he had just recovered from a [Red Potion].

Wei Yan Er had already arrived at where Sloppy Sloth was, right after Zhang Yang had damaged him, and with a powerful swung, she struck Sloppy Sloth without holding back!

‘-9,284!’

Sloppy Sloth let out a miserable cry and collapsed in his own pool of blood.

There was only one left on The Spartan Warriors party, Spartan Warrior himself!

What a tragic day! They were supposed to wait for the boss to wound Zhang Yang and the ladies before they could cut in and

finish the job, but instead, they were the ones who were wounded badly! Left near dead, and having expended their life-saving skills, it was no wonder that they were so easily slaughtered by Wei Yan Er!

It was really a tragedy that would make people fill their faces with their own tears!

Zhang Yang did bother much about The Spartan Warriors, because he knew that Wei Yan Er alone was enough to take care all of them! A Violet-Platinum boss was so much more intimidating and threatening!

"Pitiful humans, why are you still alive? Just die already!" Anelia let out a hissing scream while reaching out with her arms. Clouds of black shrouds were surging around one of her arms, and she clawed her arm towards Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

Cheh ---

Although the {Block} was effective in blocking the attack, the [Titan Wall] was covered with a black shroud. Zhang Yang took a look and he cursed, "What the f\*ck! The attack of this boss has a corrosive effect on equipment! My shield lost 29 points of durability just by touching her hand!"

As long as the durability of equipment did not hit 0, the effect

and function of the equipment would still be there, even if there was just 1 point of durability left. But once it hits 0, then wearing the equipment will mean nothing, it will be just like being naked! To get the equipment functional again, one would have to take the equipment to a Black-Smith to repair it!

Fortunate for Zhang Yang, the [Titan Wall] was a Violet-Platinum that he used very often, so he knew the exact durability of the shield to be 1,920. Although he had engaged the boss with his shield at 1,600 durability points, it would still take a very long time to whittle away those durability points, even for a boss.

"Argh ---" on the other hand, Spartan Warrior could only struggle for a bit before he was chopped down by the giant axe of Wei Yan Er. There, he was transferred to the graveyard to join his brothers.

"Noobie!" the tragic hero Spartan Warrior heard Wei Yan Er looking down upon him as he was being transferred to the nearest graveyard. He had never felt so humiliated in his entire life, that he felt like killing himself with a piece of soft tofu. Obviously, he was on the brink of losing his mind.

Wei Yan Er took up her giant axe and spun it to make herself look cool, and then she patted her horse and ran back to the boss.

Without the need to worry about being stabbed in the back by the five 'noobies', Zhang Yang and the ladies began to unleash all their power onto the boss, without a single sign of holding back!

However, Zhang Yang was inflicted with the negative effect



[Fatigue], so his attacks had been reduced by 50%, causing him to be able to inflict only about 2,000 damage onto the boss with each hit! If it weren't for his {Eagle Eye} that ignored 50% of the target's defense, and also having 5 layers of {Cripple Defense}, he would have been affected, even more, having his damage output lowered even further!

Zhang Yang had already dismounted from the Turtle. Although he could boost his maximum health points a lot higher by mounting, it would expose [Mythical Turtle] to the effect of [Fatigue].

After waiting out the {Fatigue} effect, Zhang Yang quickly activated Turtle's {Spirit of the Flame}. All attacks of the Turtle had turned into Fire-type attacks in that instant, and the attack of Turtle had been boosted up to another level!

Although the damage output of Zhang Yang had been reduced steeply, Wei Yan Er and Turtle were still inflicting damages to the boss as steadily as usual.

On the other hand, the five members of The Spartan Warriors were running in their soul state.

"Are we still doing this?"

"... Forget about it, after we revive ourselves, we'll just wait until those god-slayers finish off the boss, before we get the quest done."

"Gosh, she was really worthy of the title 'One of the Strongest Core Players in Lone Desert Smoke', look at her! How fierce she can be when in battle! What kind of axe do you think she's wielding? That berserker can inflict me with about 9,000 damage with a regular attack. It only took her 3 slashes to kill me!"

"Better don't provoke them ever again! Let's just hide from them whenever we see them!"

When the five of them were running around in their soul state, Zhang Yang and the ladies were engaging the boss in a fierce battle. The boss had many different patterns and styles of attacks. She would switch between applying {Fatigue} and {Shadow Corrosion} effects, depend on her mood. The negative effect - {Fatigue} only affected Zhang Yang alone, but the {Shadow Corrosion} was very horrifying! Not only could it inflict 20,000 Shadow damage directly, but also inflict a total DoT damage of 15,000 points, adding up to a total damage of 35,000! Even Han Ying Xue would 'choke' on it!

Fortunately, Zhang Yang had crafted a large number of high grade transmuted potions and had seen to it that the two ladies had an abundant supply as well. They were able to enjoy the perks of spamming the potions without worry! And thanks to this large number of [Mana Potions] with extra effects, Han Ying Xue could heal more comfortably.

"I'm the master of the undead! Spectres, awaken from your slumber, and fight for your master!" Anelia's humanity was beginning to slip away, as she was transforming into a true master of the undead!

She raised her hands up and sent black shrouds across the air, over to the six corpses on the ground.

Right after that, a series of violent cracking sounds could be heard, and those corpses started to shuffle on their feet. The eye sockets of these corpses were ignited with green flames of the undead, clear and bright. The corpses then opened up their arms and roared into the sky in rage.

[New-Raised Skeleton Soldier] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 85

HP: 85,000

Defense: 450

At that exact moment, the five players of Spartan Warriors had finally arrived at the locations of their own corpses and selected 'Revive'. Shoof shoof shoof shoof shoof! Five of them revived and stood on their feet in the middle of the battlefield!

"Rawgh!" the six elite skeleton soldiers had empty aggro bars, the moment they were raised from the dead. So, the moment the five players respawned nearby, the skeleton soldiers immediately set them as their primary targets! Growling all the way, other than the

one skeleton soldier raised from the dead Kyle Dylan close to where Han Ying Xue was, which charged straight for her, the remaining 5 skeleton soldiers went on to slaughter the five players of The Spartan Warriors.

These five poor souls had just respawned, and they had only 20% health points on them. Furthermore, they were not particularly skilled in the game. So, when the elite skeleton soldiers came up to them, they did not stand a chance and got slaughtered all over again. With some miserable screams spreading into the surroundings, the five of them were quickly sent back to the graveyard.

"What just happened? Why are we dead again?"

The five of them were looking at each other, their faces gaunt and manic.

Zhang Yang quickly flung a {Spear of Obliteration} at the skeleton soldier from afar attracted its attention, shouting, "Little girl! Kill the small ones first!"

"Roger!"

"Kill, kill them all!" Anelia cried out in a hostile tone of her sharp voice. There were more than a few white bones all over her body that had already been smashed and shattered to the ground like bread crumbs, all thanks to the powerful smashes and slashes that Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er had brought upon her. But that had only provoked her even further!

Zhang Yang stepped up and clashed with the remaining 5 skeleton soldiers, with the activation of his {Horizontal Sweep}, a powerful swing of his [Sword of Purging Devourer] directed straight at the monsters. The special effect of his sword was triggered as well, and countless aurablades were dancing around the monsters, luring them over to Zhang Yang.

The firepower of five elite monsters and a Violet-Platinum boss was quite powerful. Zhang Yang did not dare to slack or to be negligent at all. So, he activated his {Shield Wall} to tank them, and finally, he took them all out one after another.

But these monsters had a skill on each of them, that was, when these monsters die, they would cause the damage done to them to turn into the health points for the boss! Although these monsters had been slain, the health bar of the boss had recovered by 2%!

"It's all because of those five nincompoops! That was how 5 more monsters were spawned!" Wei Yan Er scolded.

The situation was obvious just now. The number of elite skeleton soldiers Anelia can summon depended on the number of corpses in the surroundings! If The Spartan Warriors had not died, there would only be one skeleton soldier summoned, and there wouldn't be a problem at all!

If The Spartan Warriors could hear what Wei Yan Er just said, they would probably puke blood immediately --- it was Wei Yan Er who slaughtered them in the first place!

Zhang Yang frowned, "They were just killed again, so there are another 5 fresh corpses around for the boss to rise again!"

"What a bunch of losers, can't they just find a better spot to die?" Han Ying Xue started attacking the boss directly.

One minute had passed, Anelia let out a deafening cry again and said, "I'm the master of the undead! Spectres, awaken from your slumber, and fight for your master!" She raised her hands up and sent black shrouds across the air over to the corpses of The Spartan Warriors on the ground, just like how she did previously.

Clak! Clak! Clak!

5 Death Knight began to spawn out from the corpses! The Death Knights were resting on their own battle horses, and the horses would paw their hoofs on the ground from time to time, breathing out fire from their noses!

[Newly-raised Death Knight] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 85

HP: 200,000

Defense: 900

---

Wei Yan Er was staring with her jaw hanging, "That doesn't make any sense! How can a horse even come out from the corpses!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Something to think about, The Spartan Warriors should be proud of themselves, because they can still transform into such powerful foul monsters!"

"Whinny!" the five battle horses from hell let out their battle whine, moving their powerful legs, carrying the Death Knights towards Zhang Yang and the ladies like howling gale!

Death Knights were not regular elite monsters, and if 5 of them activated {Death Strike} at the same time, together with the boss's attack, even Zhang Yang could be instant-killed!

At that instant, the three of them were in a very dangerous situation!

# Chapter 414: Powerful Summons!

---

Thud! Thud! Thud!

The Death Knights did not even allow the party time to prepare themselves. They came up, wielding their heavy swords at Zhang Yang, as if they were about to slay a god!

‘-1,785!’

‘-1,536!’

‘-1,693!’

‘-7,384!’

‘-1,634!’

The five Death Knights directed their heavy swords right at Zhang Yang, and one of them was able to score a {Death Strike}, inflicting a horrific damage on Zhang Yang!

The boss did not just stand there and watch as well. She reached out for them with her massive arms. Fortunately, Zhang Yang was ready. He had reserved his {Block} just for her! With his shield raised up high, he activated {Block} and repelled the arms, preventing himself from being damaged even further.



Zhang Yang could not care whether the damage output of Turtle was reduced or not at this time. He immediately flipped himself over onto Turtle, boosting his maximum health points up to 130,000 to increase his own survivability.

{Blast Wave}!

All five Death Knights were hit and they were stunned, giving Zhang Yang and the ladies a brief moment to breathe and buffer a little.

"Focus on one monster, and kill it first!" Zhang Yang quickly marked one of the Death Knights with the symbol of a 'sun' and commanded the ladies to attack it.

Han Ying Xue also took a moment of her time to activate {Putrefying Poison} on the Death Knights, all five of them. Then, she turned her attention towards healing Zhang Yang with everything she had. The damage output of one boss and five elite monsters combined was very powerful! Even Zhang Yang's defense would not hold up for long. With all the damage done to him and Han Ying Xue healing him, his health bar was like a roller coaster, going up and down, breaking even at around 50%.

This time, he wasn't just pretending. It was because Han Ying Xue could not keep his health points up!

[Devastator] and [\[Money-Greed Florick\]](#) were summoned to increase their damage output in an attempt to end the battle a little faster. As for the centaur servant that Wei Yan Er had, the power

level of this servant is just too weak compared to the other two servants. So it would be pointless to summon it out.

{Force Blast}

[Devastator] blasted the 5 Death Knights 10 meters back the moment he was summoned out, followed by a powerful {Blast Wave} from Wei Yan Er in attempt to restrict the movement of these elite monsters.

But still, Zhang Yang's health bar was still decreasing madly, and it was about to hit the bottom!

{Berserker's Heal}!

‘+133,470!’

A healing value that left Han Ying Xue speechless and impressed at the same time appeared right above Zhang Yang, healing him back to his full health state!

In terms of AOE attacks, Wei Yan Er was no match to Zhang Yang! But, Zhang Yang is currently inflicted with a {Fatigue} effect, causing his attack to decrease tremendously. The defense of these Death Knights was uniquely high, causing the attack of {Blast Wave} and {Thunder Strike} which already had low damage output, to become even weaker, reducing the effectiveness of their initial damage output capability!

It seemed that it would be wiser to level up the skill {Eagle Eye} up to Level 10 as a priority!

When this skill is at the maximum level, it would allow the player to ignore 95% of the defense of the target! So, it could have surprising effects when used to engage multiple monsters at the same time --- of course, it did not make sense to use {Cripple Defense} on the monsters one by one when there are many monsters around!

50 seconds later, the first Death Knight had finally been slain!

"I'm the master of the undead! Spectres, arise from your slumber and fight for your master!"

Another minute later, Anelia began to summon her little minions. But this time, there were no corpses for the boss to use, so Anelia was just wasting her breath and her expression!

Boom!

Another 40 seconds have passed, and the second Death Knight was slain!

Although they were focusing on one monster at a time, some of their skills such as {Tornado Cleave} and {Horizontal Sweep} would inflict damages to the other monsters around them. That was the reason why they were getting faster in slaying the monsters!

The third one followed, and the fourth one, then last but not least, the fifth one! All have been slain! Zhang Yang and the ladies had finally made it through the dangerous situation they were in!

Han Ying Xue staggered in relief, "It was really lucky for us that there were only 5 of them dead! If there are more corpses on the ground, then we won't have been able to pull it through! Any party would not survive if more elite monsters were spawned!"

Anelia possessed the [Mordoro's Heart], and all thanks to this [Mordoro's Heart], Anelia had earned a new ability. As Kyle Dylan had used the heart to resurrect Anelia, it had given her the ability to raise the undead! And Anelia had many very powerful AoE skills. So the more players present, the higher the death rate would be, and the number of elite monsters that Anelia could summon would be much higher as well!

If the death counts of the players reach a certain extent, then the boss would bring disastrously high damage to all players by just summoning elite monsters, causing more deaths. When there are more death counts on the players, the boss could just summon elite monsters with her ability, and the number of the monsters she can summon will increase together with the increasing death count. The boss could simply overwhelm the players in that manner!

Zhang Yang then said, "I hope those 5 nincompoops won't come back and die again!"

After clearing the five monsters, Zhang Yang dismounted from [Mythical Turtle] once again, allowing the mighty and powerful Turtle to unleash its best potential in battle, channeling the

highest damage output it could!

70%, 60%... the health bar of the boss was constantly reducing.

For every one minute, Anelia would attempt to summon something. But, unfortunate for her, there were only Zhang Yang and the two ladies breathing with life. So the strongest 'special ability' of the boss had become totally useless!

Pak! Plak!

The bones on Anelia were clashing violently against the sword and axe, causing them to fracture bit by bit. The fracture-lines were beginning to form deeper cracks, as pieces of bones were beginning to fall from her body as if she was oppressed! As the boss's health bar was around 50%, one of her leg was actually hacked off by Wei Yan Er with a powerful blow, literally!

Boom!

The body of the boss collapsed, as she lost balance, and the impact of her falling trembled across the ground, leaving a wave of rumble and a stir of dust into the air.

"God damn human! Insolent living souls!" Anelia could not stop cursing, trying to support her large body with her other leg that was still attached to her body! She repeatedly slammed at Zhang Yang in rage and hatred!

In this game, there is no such thing as a wounded or weakened status, meaning that, as long as one is still alive, it would not matter if the health bar is full, or if there is only 1 health point left, the attack of a monster or a boss would not undergo any difference --- unless they are affected by status effects from skills such as stuns or movement speed reduction. Although Anelia was only left with one leg, but she could still jump around as if she had both legs!

"Hahaha! This boss is like a kangaroo now!" Wei Yan Er could not help but to laugh out loud!

But this kangaroo is definitely the deadliest one there is in the entire world. As her body was badly wounded, the boss was enraged even more. Although it had not yet increased her damage, but it would likely trigger some sort of skill or effect that she had yet to use!

Red visible lights were flashed violently across the eyes of the boss, as her right arm suddenly turned bloody red, and it looked like her hand was covered with endless blood, flowing around like armor, up her entire arm!

Zhang Yang felt a chill down his spine, it had been a while since he felt fear! As his {Shield Wall} was still under cool down period, he activated his [Heart of the Death Knight] without hesitation, entering a 10-second state of invincibility!

Boom!

The right arm of Anelia extended far out and stabbed straight into the chest of Zhang Yang like a long spear!

‘Ding! Anelia has unleashed Fatal Bone Spear!’

Immune!

After the boss stabbed him in his chest with the skill, he suddenly realized that the boss had acquired a negative effect on her.

[Overstressed]: Suffers 20% additional damage when being hit, last for 15 seconds.

Although Zhang Yang was not aware of how powerful the {Fatal Bone Spear} was, as he was invincible at the moment, but after realizing the new added negative effect on the boss, he knew that the moment had finally come!

With the boss having the negative effect to receive 20% additional damage, it was a great chance for Zhang Yang and the ladies to hustle up! Time to strike violently!

40%, 30%, 20%... the health bar of Anelia had almost hit the bottom, but Han Ying Xue’s mana bar was almost depleted as well! After all, the boss has many means in her AOE attacks. To have her healing Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er with higher skills of healing, even with her {Divine Soul} activated, which reduces 75% of mana consumption, she would not be able to hold up so long as well!

And she had also been taking [Mana Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)], or else, she would have been done for, since the beginning, and forced to stare from aside, doing nothing!

When the health bar of Anelia was reduced down to 10%, the right arm of the boss turned bloody red again!

{Shield Wall} has completely cooled down, so Zhang Yang did not hesitate at all and activated it right away!

‘-37,554!’

That was really terrifying! Zhang Yang was still inflicted with almost 40,000 damage even with his {Shield Wall} activated! Fortunately, he still had about 80,000 health points on him at the moment, or he would have been instant-killed!

Zhang Yang brought up the battle log to check: Anelia’s Fatal Bone Spear has inflicted 37,554 physical damage on you (160,456 damage immune, 1,990 damage absorbed).

This... this is just outrageous! A basic damage of 200,000!

Without activating skills, no tanker at the current stage of the game could sustain that amount of damage and survive!

This was just domineering! No wonder the boss became weak for the next 15 seconds, so this was her ‘end game’ plan! A total damage of 200,000! It would still be worth it, even if the boss stayed



weak for another 1 minute!

Even a Level 80 tanker with a full set of Yellow-Gold equipment would have only about 30,000 health points. Without a pet mount to boost the maximum health points, the tanker would still die without activating {Shield Wall}, without a doubt!

So the future was very tough on those tankers without pet mounts. They will definitely be struggling a lot!

During the first hit of {Fatal Bone Spear}, as Zhang Yang was invincible due to his activation of [Heart of the Death Knight], Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were not aware of how powerful the skill is. But this time around, the damage value appeared on Zhang Yang took their breaths away, leaving them speechless.

‘-54,264!’

While the boss was still under the influence of the negative effect {Overstressed}, Wei Yan Yer quickly took a bottle of [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] and swung her axe with full strength! Instantly, she inflicted the boss with a horrific value of damage! It felt really awesome!

"Wow!" Wei Yan Er was agitated and she screamed in excitement!

Zhang Yang nodded and praised her, "That value of damage is really a little overpowered. It can be compared to an attack of a boss! Too bad, the cooldown is a little too long as well."

"Humph! It's not just overpowered by 'a little' alright? It's overpowered to the max!" Wei Yan Er was feeling flattered. This little girl really loved to show off.

18%, 16%, 14%... as Anelia was being weakened by {Overstressed}, her health bar was reduced incredibly fast within the 15 seconds!

"What a waste, that all our {Dance of the Heaven and Earths} are still on cooldown period!" Han Ying Xue sighed. If one could just activate {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} while the boss is in her weakened state, it could bring about 170,000 damage to the boss, a terrifying damage value indeed! But the unfortunate thing was that this skill had a 24-hour cooldown period, and they had just activated their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} during the battle with The Vengeful Spirit Mordoro, so they would need to wait for another 20 hours before they can activate it again!

"Power of darkness, please grant me unlimited power to exterminate these imbecile living souls!" Anelia looked up into the sky and let out a sharp and yet thunderous cry. Her large body began to give off the cracking sound of bone joints as the body shrunk smaller and smaller by the moment!

In just a brief while, Anelia had shrunk down to the size of a regular human person, and at the same time, she also gained a double edged effect. The effect is beneficial and harmful to her at the same time! How so?

[Unholy Strength]: Damage increases by 30%, however, loses

10,000 health points every 3 seconds, last for 5 minutes.

At that very moment, the boss still had 5% of health left, a total of 440,000 health points left!

Theoretically, if Zhang Yang and the ladies could hold on for 132 seconds, then they did not have to hit the boss, they only had to wait for the effect of {Unholy Strength} to reduce the health to zero and kill the boss! But the key here now, was that Han Ying Xue was already at her limit. Her mana bar was about to hit the bottom already! Now that the boss had somehow gone 'berserk' and the boss's attack had increased substantially, this final stage of the battle where the 5% health must be reduced to 0 will become very difficult and dangerous!

{Titan's Shield}!

Zhang Yang had finally activated his final trump card! He activated his Titan Set Armor's additional effect skill {Titan's Shield}, giving him the ability to absorb 300,000 damage!

"Let's slay this thing fast!"

After going into berserk mode, the boss could inflict a damage of 16,000 in a single hit! Even the {Titan's Shield} can only withstand 19 hits from the boss!

With everything they got, Zhang Yang and the ladies unleashed every single possible hit onto the boss!

3%!

2%

1%

Pak! The {Titan's Shield} was broken at last!

Fortunately, Han Ying Xue's mana bar had regenerated a little over the period of time when they were engaging the boss, so she had enough mana points to heal Zhang Yang in the nick of time!

0%!

Finally, Anelia screamed in misery and collapsed onto the ground heavily.

[Money-Greed Florick] - before the amendment, the name was [Codger Florick].

# Chapter 415: Titan Set Armor Completed!

---

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Slay Anelia, acquired 5,000,000 experience points!’

The mesmerizing sound of the system notification sounded across the ears of Zhang Yang and the two ladies. Those were the sweetest sound notifications they have heard for the day.

"Please do not engage a boss with only 3 members in a party, that was so tiring!" Han Ying Xue shook her head again and again. Her mana bar had dried up once, and now it got sucked dry once again.

But Wei Yan Er was happy about this, "Sister snow, the fewer we are, the more gold coins we get after slaying the boss!"

Han Ying Xue immediately revealed a conflicted expression right on her face.

Then, Wei Yan Er went on to pick up the loot dropped by the boss. With a joyful smile on her face, the little girl picked up 20 gold coins, and that was the moment when she discovered a pair of gloves glittering in a shiny violet complexion. She picked it up and went to Zhang Yang, "Noob tank, come worship my incredible lucky hands! Take a look at what my hands have picked up for you!"

[Titan Gauntlets] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +282

Strength: +81

Agility: +40

Equip: Absorbs 162 damage points when being hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Profession: Guardian

Required Level: 80

Titan Set Armor (8/8)

Finally! It's complete! All eight pieces of the armor set were in place! Zhang Yang filled his face with tears of joy, as it was really a long journey - full of hardship and patience. Ever since he got the first piece of the Titan Set Armor [Titan Greaves], it had been a long 5-month journey, 5 months!

Without having the patience to wait until the equipment is

identified, Zhang Yang equipped it on straight away right after tossing his [Earth Spirit Hand Guards] off into his inventory. There, he finally acquired the special effect when all eight pieces of the Titan Set Armor are together in one place: When you are hit, there is a 1% chance that you will acquire the Titan's Blessing, and the attacker will be stunned for 10 seconds. This effect is effective on the bosses of Violet-Platinum or lower grade.

This effect is wicked sick if it's ever triggered in a boss fight! It can save a life, no, save lives!

Wei Yan Er grew envious of Zhang Yang, and she teased, "Now that noob tank has one complete set of Armor Set, I have only two pieces of my Armor Set. How long do I need to wait before I can complete my Armor Set too! Months? Years? Wu wu wu."

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "If the bread can get it, the butter will get it too! Haha!"

"You sarcastic son of a beach!" Wei Yan Er harrumphed and proceeded with her looting.

### [Battle Flag of Recovery] (Consumable)

Use: Installs a battle flag on the ground, heal members of your party (Maximum 10 players) by 2,000 health points every 10 seconds, members must be within the 30-meter radius of the area, with the flag as the center point, lasts for 5 minutes.

Required Level: 80

Well, this was actually a useful piece of consumable convenient for Party Battles! It's like an AOE healing skill, it was definitely practical for battles! Zhang Yang quickly called dibs on it and kept it into his inventory.

"Yan Er, stop fooling around with the inferior stuff and get on with the armor set equipment!" Han Ying Xue urged the little girl.

"Alright!" Wei Yan Er replied with a strong nod and quickly looked for any possible items that glowed violet!

[Blade of Endless Abyss] (Violet-Platinum, Dual Weapon)

Attack: 2,356 - 2,956

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 699

Equip: When hitting a target, there is a 1% chance to reduce 5% strength of the target. Can stack up to 3 times. Lasts for 10 seconds.

{Unidentified}



Required Level: 80

"The weapon attack is really good, but the special effect is little underwhelming." Zhang Yang commented. The attack of a boss is usually fixed, so it would be pointless to reduce the strength of a boss. And in player vs player mode, unless it's a battle of attrition where the one lasting the longest wins, it would be impossible to wait for so long until the effect triggers 3 times and stacks onto each other!

"If we sell it, it will still be worth quite a fortune!" Han Ying Xue nodded, but she was not really into this kind of selling and buying business. She preferred to get the gold coins in her hands, as it's more exciting to pick up the gold coins by herself, and holding them in her hands felt more practical and real.

"Wu wu wu, so after all that we have been through, battling the boss, we only get three pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment as our reward? And only noob tank gets to complete collecting all eight pieces of his armor set equipment! This is really unfair!" Wei Yan Er lamented

[Cryonic Warrior Greaves] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +564

Strength: +161

Intelligence: +80

Equip: Absorbs 162 damage when being hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

"... doing all the heavy work for this Starlight boy I see!" Zhang Yang let out a sigh, because this equipment was specially designed for a defender, as it increases the intelligence of the person who equips it.

"Humph! At least get 100,000 gold coins from him as service charge!" Wei Yan Er bared her 'fangs' as she spoke. She wasn't in a good mood, as she did not get any of her armor set.

Zhang Yang kept the remaining Yellow-Gold equipment into his inventory and said, "Since the boss is slain, and the quest is completed, let's go back now!"

He was eager to identify his [Titan's Gaunlets].

The two ladies nodded, but both of them requested Zhang Yang

to teleport back to the main city and use the [Party Summon Order] to summon them back.

These ladies were capable of squeezing oil out of stones, so Zhang Yang had nothing to argue with them and just did what he was asked to do.

Arriving back at the White Jade Castle, Zhang Yang went straight over to the Identifying Shop to identify his newly acquired [Titan's Gaunlets]. Then he inserted the [Level 3 Vitality Gemstones] onto his equipment, powering it up by 50%! Now, he finally had a complete set of Level 80 Violet-Platinum armor set on him! Initially, the Titan Set Armor only glittering in a vague and gentle violet glow. But, the moment he identified the final piece of the armor set equipment and equipped it, this set of Titan Armor Set suddenly began to bloom in a dazzling violet glow that catches the eyes of the public! He looks awesomely 'shiny', in that sense!

There were many players nearby at the Identifying Shop as well. Seeing Zhang Yang suddenly transformed into some sort of godly existence, everyone was exclaiming on how cool he seemed to be. Some of them were quick on reflexes as they already activated the function of the recorder in the game. If this magnificent scene is uploaded on the forums, this would definitely win a large number of clicks!

Zhang Yang was caught by surprise as he had never thought that the armor would glow so bright, attracting so much unwanted attention to him! So he quickly deselected the 'Show special effect of your armor' in the option menu and instantly, his [Titan Set Armor] became dimmer. Only the lucky ones with quick eyes could

see him glowing in ‘holy’ violet light.

If he had not switched the ‘special effect’ on his armor off, he would have become a huge 1000-watt light bulb running around in the city! Wherever he goes, he would shine upon the place!

As he was rounded by a bunch of players, Zhang Yang quickly summoned his mount and rushed towards the auction house.

Every time when he returns to the main city, he would visit the auction house to try his luck. Oftentimes, he would find something useful.

As usual. He would first seek for the skill books for pets. Although he did not find any high grade skill books, but he had managed to secure two [Pet Skill Engravement Scrolls], and it was worth his time! But when he went over to search for [Skill Books] for Professions, he was out of luck that day.

Now that he had acquired a full set of Titan Set Armor, he did not have much equipment needs for his next 20 levels journey. The only need he had left was to switch the two rings and two accessories with better ones! The Armor Set effect of his Titan Set Effect would remain irreplaceable until Mythical grade equipment appears, and the [Sword of Purging Devourer] still had two seals that had yet to be unsealed. So, as long as he stays on track and completes all the quests related to the sword, the ‘Holy’ sword will be able to ‘grow’ even stronger!

So now, leveling up is the priority!

As he had been so busy with so many quests that had provided them so much experience points, along with slaying so many elite grade monsters while progressing through his quests, he was just one small step away from reaching Level 87! And he had only used one day to complete leveling up to Level 87, becoming the first player in the entire China server to ever reach Level 87!

All he ever wanted was to grind his level up further, however, accidental situations tended to befall on him at the best 'suitable' times!

As Silky Soft Holdings was trying to rebuild their business base, many of their business partners were beginning to treat their partnerships a little differently. So the Silky Soft Holdings must be very cautious on every move they make in the future. This time, his company had a contract related to getting a large company in Northern Beijing City, the Crimson Cosmetic Holdings. The two large companies were attempting to work together for once, taking a bundled sales strategy to fight a 'war' with a price.

But as for how they are going to divide the profit, it was a large problem. Because portion as small as one out of one thousand ratios of in and out, can be about millions of dollars for the both companies. So they cannot just simply act on it!

Therefore, although Zhang Yang did not really understand anything about this, he still had to present himself at the Crimson Cosmetic Holdings's headquarters in Northern Beijing City and have a meeting with the CEO of that company. He had the obligation to handle the details of their partnership. Although he

was just an observer, but his presence would mean the sincerity of the Silky Soft Holdings in their partnership!

This was actually the biggest step that Silky Soft Holdings would be taking ever since they started rebuilding their business. Therefore, they valued every part of their company. They had already arranged the managers of all departments in their company to get involved in the operation this time around. Zhang Yang thought that he did not have to worry about anything as he was the CEO. There would be a car escorting him to the airport, and when he arrived at the destination, there would also be a car escorting him over to the hotel. That was all in his own thoughts.

On the April 29, he brought 3 of his secretaries along. But when his car arrived at the destination, Zhang Yang realized that they were not at the airport, but they were at the train station instead!

The three pretty secretaries were giggling and smiling while they were trying to pull him up to the train. They informed him that the negotiations would only take place on the day after tomorrow, and they would have plenty of time to be sentimental and have fun ‘shaking’ on the train!

Now that he was surrounded by three young and sexy women who kept on ‘luring’ him in, who knew how many men on the train, being envious of him, quietly to the point that they were drooling to themselves! The secretaries had booked their very own Soft-sleeper seats, and the decoration for the coach of the train was very luxurious! The bathroom even had a bathtub in it! The standard of the coach was comparable to a 5-Star hotel!

No wonder one ticket was worth more than three times of the price of a plane ticket! It was all worth the money, just by looking at the coach now!

At first, all six of Zhang Yang's secretaries wanted to tag along. But Zhang Yang thought that it would be way beyond exaggeration for a mere contract meeting, so after picking his troops more carefully, he finally managed to reduce the number of people following him down to only 3, and it was actually still too many! One secretary was all he needed! These three pretty women were giggling all the time. All three of them went into the bathroom of the coach to take a bath, and had come out with only bras and panties on them, walking around, shaking their boobies right in front of Zhang Yang, trying to get on his 'nerves'!

It was really fortunate that he had brought along his game helmet. So, after Zhang Yang put on his helmet and lay down on his bed, he went on and played his own game.

All the while on the coach, the three secretaries pampered him to the point that he only needed to hold out his hand to be dressed, and open his mouth to be fed! They were about to turn him into a lazy person! But the duration of the journey from Zhou Su City to Northern Beijing City was about 16 hours, add or take. So they arrived at the station in less than a day.

So, they arrived at the designated hotel to meet the negotiation team of Crimson Cosmetic Holdings. After a night of rest, Zhang Yang and his main team departed for the company office of the Crimson Cosmetic Holdings, ready to begin their 3-day negotiation on the details of their partnership.

The CEO of the Crimson Cosmetic Holdings was a charming lady, with an outstanding appearance and personality. She was aged at about 28, with a slender and yet attractive body figure. Her boobs stood at attention, and she had a fair face, with a little blush on her face. An angelic face like this would attract most men to take a quick glance at her - both intentionally and unintentionally.

An attractive lady at this age is really mature and attractive. This woman had a strong impression to be kept in admirable order. Every word and every move she made really showed that she was so much more mature and attractive than those young and simple-minded pretty girls that he had met before.

Xu Lan, that is her name.

Zhang Yang took a good look at the woman, and he was shocked! He could not help himself and let out an obvious exclamation, "Snow Seeker!"

"Zhan Yu!" Xu Lan was also very surprised to see him.

So, this Xu Lan is actually the Guildmaster of the Crimson Rage in the game. The two of them actually met once during the Soaring Sword Competition that was being held in Shang Hai.

"Haha! I should have guessed it earlier! How could I not connect the dots! Crimson Rage and Crimson Cosmetics are of course, related!" Zhang Yang laughed.



# Chapter 416: Island Of The Sacred One

---

Xu Lan smiled. She did not drop her professional demeanor, since the two of them were surrounded by their own staff members. Moreover, they were both in public. "I finally see the reason why during each First Kill announcement, Lone Desert Smoke would put up an advert for Silky Soft Holdings. Even the name of your battle team is Silky Soft Battle Team. You're the C.E.O of Silky Soft Holdings!"

"You flatter me too much. I'm but a sheep in wolf's skin. Who would have thought that it was a good idea to make me a C.E.O?" Zhang Yang laughed. "Speaking of which, who would have thought that we were allies in the game, and business partners in the real world!"

"It must be fate. I hope that Mr. Zhang would show a little leniency! You have already hoarded so much in the game!" Xu Lan grinned happily. Zhang Yang had always admired Xu Lan, or rather, Snow Seeker because of her mature methods of handling any kind of situation. There was something attractive about it.

Luckily, Zhang Yang had been through much worse. Over the past few months, Zhang Yang had always been played, teased, and been through the temptation of the devil himself, as he stayed over at Han Ying Xue's house. That woman would always find some method to sexually trigger the poor man. Case and point, Han Ying Xue had always worn thinly-layered clothing that would reveal her voluptuous curves. That, and the six, super-hot and sexy secretaries in his office who would always try their best to bring their "A game" for Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang had been through so much that it was even possible for him to walk through the valley

of shadow and death, and he would fear no temptation from anyone! A simple skip of his heart would suffice to satisfy his lust, which would only calm down after that one beat.

"That's a manner of etiquette. Business is business, private is private. What I do in my own free time is a whole other matter. Still, I'm just a man wearing the title. Silky Soft Holdings is not mine to throw about. But, if I did have my own company, I wouldn't mind giving you the company itself!"

"You sneaky fox!" Xu Lan snickered shyly.

Everyone in the company was shocked to see how the timid little woman had become so friendly with another in their own ground! It seemed like Xu Lan had never been seen behaving in such a manner, that everyone had thought her to be the typical workaholic.

The business meeting went off smoothly since there were two higher ranking officers on the table who were allied guild masters in a highly regarded game. Even though there were slight conflicts in the agenda, both sides had come to an agreement easily, without the need of slamming the table top, or flipping it.

Zhang Yang was completely oblivious of the content of the minutes of the meeting. Out of habit, Zhang Yang had invited Xu Lan for a one-day fun trip in Jing Tian City. Since she had already come over, and that the meeting was already over, might as well spend the rest of the day leisurely. Even though they had plenty of opportunities of adventuring in the game, the experience of walking in town with someone was a whole different experience.

The three other secretaries who had accompanied him had not left his side. They had joined the fray and had made the entire situation rather awkward. Xu Lan had been throwing weird glares at Zhang Yang.

The meeting agenda was unsurprisingly dragged out longer than planned. From three days, it was extended to 6 days! However, the discussion was fruitful and had ended with a final decision that led to them collaborating together to produce a new line of products. At the end of the meeting, after discussing and arguing for 6 days, both companies had finally reached a final agreement, and left, satisfied with each other. The fruitful meeting had ended with a decision to have a celebration at a hotel where Zhang Yang was forced to drink to a point where he was taken into uncharted waters in terms of drunkenness. In the morning, with a throbbing skull, Zhang Yang found himself buried under a pile of half-naked women.

Luckily, after crawling out of the steaming heap of womanly flesh, Zhang Yang had checked out Zhang Yang. Jr. and was delighted to see that he had not been inside any woman! Or rather, no one had taken a chance to taste junior!

After hanging out for a few days with Xu Lan, Zhang Yang had gotten a clearer understanding of what kind of person Snow Seeker was. The beautiful dame was still, surprisingly without a partner. It was not that she was asexual or something like that. Contrary to popular belief, Xu Lan had a love interest back when she was still in university. She had made a move and even got to discuss marriage. However, right after graduation, the boyfriend was involved in a freak car accident which took his life. If there was

anything odd about Xu Lan, it was her extreme loyalty. After the accident, she had never searched for a new life partner which had ended up with her placing all her attention on work.

Normally, she did not have the tendency of going out or hanging out with what normal girls of her age would. Inversely, she had gotten hooked up in online gaming, which had also poisoned most of the top-rated product models into playing the game as well. As such, Xu Lan was rather proud of her doing. From what she heard from her peers, the life of a model in the entertainment world was extremely unfair. If they wished to be on the news, they would have to make a deal with the photographers, with their own bodies. If they wished to have a good position in the company, they would have to 'deal' with the company's top brass. Compared to that sort of life, all the models had to do to get to Xu Lan's good side was to behave nicely, and perform admirably in the game!

Zhang Yang understood why there were so many rotten female players in the guild. They had been involved in the entertainment circle for a while, and were well-versed in the ropes! Even their speech patterns...

All in all, the meeting was adjourned and brought to an end. Everyone bid each other farewell, and Zhang Yang returned to his own headquarters. Back at Silky Soft Holdings main branch, it was another round of celebration with Han Yang Xue, Wei Yan Er. Even Li Ru was there. Li Ru had taken some courage from a few cans of beer and had made a move on Zhang Yang. Han Ying Xue was there to interfere with her, fortunately. Han Ying Xue had "foiled" Li Ru's plans of "attacking" Zhang Yang when he was in the bathroom.

On one end, Zhang Yang was quite pleased with how Silky Soft Holdings had turned up to be. Even though Liu Wei was taking a lot of heat, he had not taken much damage. There was still the Liu's family "mothership", backing up his ventures. For the past 2 months, as 'God's Miracle' progressed, the Lius had pushed their business module in the game.

Judging on how much has Zhang Yang amassed, he was still far from where Liu Wei was standing. Although he may earn much more than he could in the game, there were still things that could not be settled with money. It had to be either power and position. As much as he could admit it, Silky Soft Holdings had become his stronghold, allowing him to interact with the business world and engage in monetary battle with Liu Wei.

Zhang Yang went back to his usual lifestyle and started to madly grind. As swiftly as he could, he had successfully become the first player in China to reach Level 90.

"Zhan Yu, I have to say. Among all the warriors under the stars in the sky, you sure have grown fast!" said Warrior Instructor Ani. As usual, her attractive body had permanently drawn in many perverted men.

"Sigh..." Ani sighed sadly. "Looks like I can no longer instruct you! You have grown so strong, that I have nothing left to teach you!"

After paying 200 gold coins, Zhang Yang had picked up a Level 90 Warrior class skill, which was also the last skill available from Ani.

[Last Vigor]: Increase your HP limit by 30% and heals 30% of your maximum HP. Extended HP limit will last for 15 seconds.

Cool Down Time: 5 Minutes.

For a tank, this skill worked as the name suggested. A final push, to determine the outcome of the match. Be it a boss fight, or a PvP battle, it would serve as a lifesaver. The Mythical Turtle had also reached Level 90. The HP of the pet, after receiving the Vitality Aura would push the turtle's HP to 65,790! With the both of them combined, the HP limit would reach 144,460! It did not stop there, with the activation of the skill {Last Vigor}, the HP limit would be boosted up to 187,790! Besides that, there was a healing effect of 56,337! It was a powerful lifesaving skill!

Like Warriors, other classes would stop learning new skills after Level 90. Adversely, after the Level 100 threshold, players could only get new skills through skill books.

Moreover, Zhang Yang had reached Level 90! He could finally finish the quest in search of the last Dimensional Key Fragment!

With a long sigh of relief, Zhang Yang stretched his body and summoned the bear. Brimming with great excitement to finally finish the quest, Zhang Yang rode to the only Level 90 map in the region of China, the Ten Barren Seas. Although it was the only Level 90 map in the entire region, it was much bigger and wider than all three Level 80 maps combined together. As the name suggested, Ten Barren Sea's was an ocean. The entire map region

was considered to be mostly ocean waters, with plenty of islands scattered all over the ocean. The islands themselves were huge; as vast as a Level 60 maps! It's safe to say that the entire map was like the stars in the night sky; an endless sea, with countless big islands. Among all the islands in this biome was an extremely small piece of land which housed a gateway to the Chaos Realms, only usable for players who have reached Level 100.

The person Zhang Yang was supposed to look for, was called Madran. In the quest log, it was mentioned that the NPC was living in the Ten Barren Sea's, Island of the Sacred One. Again, the most annoying part was the fact that the quest description never revealed the NPC's location. As such, Zhang Yang hoped that the island in which the NPC resided in would be smaller than the usual big\*ss ones. If not, god knows how long it would take him to find that one NPC!

Zhang Yang rode through the darkness in the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night and ventured towards the Ten Barren Sea. As he slowly left the canyon, the dark, gloomy clouds had started to scatter wider, away from each other. Rays of light seeped through the clouds and onto Zhang Yang's skin. Zhang Yang felt a new warmth like never before, as if he had just transcended into a new realm.

The map changed drastically. From the hard, lifeless dirt on the ground, to soft sandy beaches that sunk beneath the paws of the bear. One vast sunny beach appeared in his sight. Everything about it screamed about summer! The blue emerald water of the sea, gushing onto the golden sands of the beach. The big looping waves that rolled themselves up like blankets! Sun, sand, sea!

Zhang Yang felt like he could just sit back on a recliner and enjoy a sip of red wine by the seaside, as if he was on a holiday. That was, not accounting for the huge lobster monsters walking around the beach.

Zhang Yang walked closer to the sandy ground and tried to find someone to ask for the exact location of the Island of the Sacred One. Within a few kilometers, he found a small fisherman's village, with more than 10 houses around. The number of people around this small village was scarce, but enough to set sail on the seas.

Zhang Yang rode to the edge of the village and approached a middle-aged man who was smoking a pipe. "Excuse me, sir, I'd like to ask about the whereabouts of the island called Island of the Sacred One.

"Ho ho. Now aren't you a religious lad?" the man put down the pipe and turned to Zhang Yang.

Religious?

Zhang Yang smiled and continued, "No sir, I'm just a messenger, seeking a man named Madran..."

"STOP RIGHT THERE!" the man yelled abruptly. He quickly turned sideways rapidly to search for something that would suddenly jump out and kill him.



"What's wrong?" Zhang Yang was genuinely surprised at the man's reaction.

"Are yer daft? If those god-loving-good-for-nothing-fanatics heard you speak of the Sacred One's name directly like that, they would hang yer head off like a tuna!" the middle-aged man warned.

Madran? The Sacred One?

Zhang Yang laughed in his mind. It was Eins Brook all over again!

Zhang Yang asked again, "Sir, could you tell me more about Ma--- I mean, the Sacred One?"

"Hm...Let's see. I think it's best for yer to know about the situation eh." The man drew in a deep puff smoke and blew it into the air above him. "I'd say, about 17 years ago, the Sacred One brought 12 disciples and had spread his religion throughout the land. He claimed to be the son of the God Zolanor, which had descended onto these plains to be messiah. After several years, almost half of the population of Ten Barren Sea had turned to him to seek for his teachings. Every year, at this time, there will be a huge number of people visiting the Island of the Sacred One."

"I see. No wonder you thought I was one of Madran's followers!"

"Right on. Lower your voice!"

Zhang Yang nodded and looked towards the endless horizon of

the sea. "How do I get to the island?"

"Everyday in the afternoon, there will be ships docking in the harbor by the sea. That ship will transport you to the Island of the Sacred One. If you wish to head there, just wait for a little while. A ship will be arriving soon!" as the man finished his sentence, he returned to his pipe, filling more tobacco in it, and spoke no more.

Zhang Yang did not bother to bid farewell to the NPC, and headed straight towards the harbor. There was nothing to do there, besides waiting. Thus, Zhang Yang had summoned the Mythical Turtle and dived into the waters to farm for some [Devil's Algae].

The moment the Mythical Turtle was summoned out, it had jumped into the waters and started to chase after the fishes around, before Zhang Yang could even get the chance to ride it. Half an hour later, Zhang Yang had already picked more than 20 counts of [Devil's Algae]. The mastery of Herbalism, which had been stagnant for quite some time was finally growing towards the level of Master.

Fwosh!

From where Zhang Yang was, he could hear the sound of water crashing. He looked up and saw a huge turtle-shaped like boat sprinting on the surface of the water at the speed of a torpedo! Within a few moments, the boat slowed down and docked at the harbor.

Zhang Yang stopped his actions and carefully observed the boat. There were more than 10 elite guards with weapons, stationed at the head of the ship, as well as the rear end. They were all Level 92, and were guarding a few weirdly dressed humans in the middle of the ship, with name tags saying "Loyal Followers".

Zhang Yang immediately shot up to the surface and swam back to land, and onto the boat.

The elite guards did not even glance at Zhang Yang and allowed him to walk past them, and onto the ship. On the other hand, it was the followers on the ship who had greeted Zhang Yang by cheering, "Hail the Sacred One!"

Zhang Yang had said nothing else but replied the exact same words.

The ship docked for just a few moments before it started to take off. Instead of heading directly to the Island of the Sacred One, the ship traveled along the land and circled around the coastline. After it had picked close to a hundred more followers, the ship finally left the shore and headed into the deep sea.

Zhang Yang was greatly impressed at the speed of which the ship traveled on water. If Zhang Yang had right, the ship would be at the same speed as a flying mount! After only half an hour of traveling on waters, the ship started approaching an island. At first, Zhang Yang did not know that the island was the Island of the Sacred One, until all the followers on the ship started to stare at it, as if they were finally returning home after 10 years of separation.

Just as they were about to reach the coast, something happened.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Waters around the ship had exploded as if someone had detonated a bomb. The explosion of water was not an attack, but the surfacing of a three-story-tall lobster monsters! Close to 10 of them surrounded the ship. Riding on top of the lobster monster were Naga warriors. They had human bodies but a snake's lower half, with a menacing look on their face that clearly spelled hostility.

They were all Level 92 elite monsters, except for the one that was blocking the huge ship upfront. The Naga that was riding the lobster monster was a Yellow-God tier Naga.

[Ankhdorea] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 93

HP: 1,860,000

Defense: 1,700

One of the elite guards on the ship had immediately rushed to the

front and had pointed his sword at the Naga and had screamed from the top of his lungs. "Curse you, seamen! The Island of the Sacred One is just right ahead, you dare to show your blasphemous faces here!?"

"Hahaha!" Ankhdoria laughed. His voice gargled as if there was still water in his mouth. "You, humans of the land, we Naga thrive where there is water! If not for Island of the Sacred One being there, I would be glad to deliver damnation to where hope is just around the corner!"

"Seamen! If the Sacred One finds out about your attack on his beloved followers, the wrath of his holiness shall befall on you! Heed my words, wretched ones. For the wrath of the Sacred One shall be the end of you seamen!" said the guard with confidence.

"Piss off! Do not mention the Sacred One. He is nothing but a slaughterer who has killed many of my brethren. Now, we will return the favor! A bloodbath is what he delivered to us, and a bloodbath is what we shall return to him! All you people here best pray that Madran will tame his raging heart!" Ankhdoria brandished his trident and bellowed, "Kill them! Spare not one!"

It did not take long for the Nagas and their lobster monsters to capsize the ship and kill everyone. Be it the followers or the elite guards, all of them were screaming helplessly as they drowned in the water.

The Naga initiated the bloodbath quickly and efficiently. They were indeed stronger at sea, as they killed the people with such speed and agility. As easily as a human could move on dry land, the

Naga had done the same with the humans in the water. In an instant, the emerald water of the sea was dyed crimson red.

Right after the ship was overturned, Zhang Yang was dragged away by the raging waves and was sent violently to a nearby land. Zhang Yang had no chance to swim, the water current was just too strong.

The Naga had appeared with a flash and had disappeared in the same manner. With Ankhdoria leading the party, the Naga had ridden their lobster mounts and descended into the water.

After the ordeal, Zhang Yang went back to where the ship was sunk and received a system notification.

‘Ding! You have survived a mass slaughter. Perhaps you should report this unfortunate turn of events to someone!’

‘Ding! You have received a quest: The Lone Survivor. Will you accept it?’

# Chapter 417: Kill Cynapor

---

[The Lone Survivor] (Difficulty Level: D)

Quest Description: As the lone survivor of the eerie massacre, you feel a sense of guilt, and the obligation to report the incident to a higher authority. Hurry over to the Island of the Sacred One and bring this matter to the Public Safety Officer Julio. Inform him of the incident and allow him to make preparations to prevent any deadly attacks of the Naga.

Progress: Inform Julio 0/1

Zhang Yang controlled the Mythical Turtle and turned around, and shot towards the Island. Although the turtle did not have an engine powering it, it was still as fast as the ship itself, before it was sunk. Splitting the waves as he sped through the water surface, Zhang Yang had arrived land in just 5 minutes. Once Zhang Yang stepped on land, like a bullet train arriving at the station, the turtle suddenly moved ever so slowly that Zhang Yang had jumped down and started to walk on his own two feet. Zhang Yang immediately swapped the turtle for the bear and rode towards the designated direction.

The rainforest on the island was thick and flourishing. The place was like Eden; especially when there were occasional deers, wild rabbits, and other fauna running around happily, around the skyscraping trees. After the thick forest, the presence of humans started to get heavier. From where Zhang Yang stood, he could see that there were many people looking at the same general direction. There were many kinds of expressions on their faces when he

arrived. Some were crying, some were happily smiling, and some were so grateful with tears pouring out of their eyes, they were bowing down on all fours.

Zhang Yang proceeded to investigate the location of Julio, and once he had obtained reliable information, he arrived at a small station, situated at the side of a small hill. There were elite tiered guards everywhere in the station. Some were patrolling around, while the others were standing guard. At the center of the entire group of guards, was a taller man with a well-built physique. Beneath the huge, heavy armor, the man looked like he could kill a bear with a single punch.

[Public Safety Officer, Julio] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 95

HP: 1,900,000

Defense: 1,700

Zhang Yang rode his way towards the officer and stopped a few meters away from him. He saluted the man before reporting the entire incident. "General Julio. I have grave news for you!"

The stoic and calm expression on Julio was immediately replaced with rage and madness when he heard Zhang Yang's story.



"I knew the Naga were nothing but warmongers! But this time, they have gone too far! They had slaughtered the loyal followers of the Sacred One! This is an open act of blasphemy! Adventurer! I do not care who you are or where you came from. But since you had obeyed the summons from the Sacred One, you have to follow my orders! I hereby command you to go to the Naga's lair, located at the Ruins of Apolli and kill their leader, Cynapor!"

'Ding! The Public Safety Officer, Julio has a quest for you: Kill Cynapor. Will you accept it?'

Zhang Yang frown disgruntledly and said, "Sir, I am but alone. You wish to have me to make my way to the enemy's lair and kill their leader alone?"

"Excellent. You seem to have a perfect hearing!" Julio nodded his head.

Perfect hearing?! You won't need to have a perfect hearing when you hear me screaming in your ears!

Zhang Yang was so angry that he could just jump on him and take his head instead! With great effort, Zhang Yang calmed down and proceeded on with the quest. At least there should be a reward which would make it worth his while.

[Kill Cynapor] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: The Public Safety Officer Julio has commanded you to invade the Naga's lair and kill their leader, Cynapor. You must bring his head back as proof. The wretched Nagas lair is situated at the Ruins of Apolli, 500km west of the Island of the Sacred One, under the sea.

Progress: Severed Head of Cynapor 0/1

Quest Reward: Julio's Appraisal.

[Julio's Appraisal] (Gray-Silver, Ring)

Vitality: +120

Use: Increases 50 points - all attributes. Last for 30 seconds.

Cool Down Time: 5 Minutes.

Level Requirement: 90

Zhang Yang slowly read through the quest description and closed the quest window with a sulky face. What a f\*cked up quest...

Although Zhang Yang had never seen or heard of Cynapor, he

knew that when even his subordinate was already a Yellow-Gold tier, would not Cynapor himself be someone of a higher tier? It had to be a Violet-Platinum boss, at least! Furthermore, being the leader of the Naga race, Cynapor would definitely be heavily guarded by all the elite forces of his races! To kill the leader, he would have to go through countless of obstacles and strong bosses! It would be a waste of time! Such a troublesome quest should only be rewarded with a Violet-Platinum! Not some cheap Gray-Silver piece of crap! Who would be willing to do it?!

If not for the Dimensional Key Fragment, Zhang Yang would not have even care about the douchebag. But having gone so far, it was simply something he had to do for the fragment!

After thinking about it for some time, Zhang Yang finally decided to put this quest on the sidelines. Since each player could receive as many as 100 quests at the same time, Zhang Yang was better off trying to complete a few better ones around the island before attempting the troublesome one.

Zhang Yang had ventured through the entire island and found many different types of the most down to earth kinds of quests. There were extermination quests, collection quests, guarding quests, and much more similar kinds. In his ventures, he had found that he was unable to enter the palace, like building centered on the island. There was some kind of magical seal protecting it, that even {Burrow} and {Shadow of the Void} could not penetrate the shield. Alas, Zhang Yang had no choice but to take on the stupid quest and kill what's-his-face.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and stomped the ground like a

pampered kid. He then rode the bear and came to the west side of the island. There, he switched to the Mythical Turtle and sped through the water, towards the west. Since the Mythical Turtle granted underwater breathing, Zhang Yang had taken the opportunity to harvest some [Devil's Algae]. Back on the island, Zhang Yang had taken a quest that required him to farm some materials. Zhang Yang swam close to the monsters that were guarding the herbs and killed them for their drops. The ingredients gathered could be traded to the cooks in the islands and they would whip up something for Zhang Yang to eat.

After swimming for 2 hours or so, Zhang Yang found the place where he had intended to be. It was an old, underwater castle, which was surrounded in ruins. The castle was obviously created by humans at a glance, since there were many statues that were made to look like regular humans. There were statues of Warriors, Hunters, and even Spellcasters.

Perhaps, this castle had once belonged to an actual island. Perhaps, a war had erupted at some point in the past, that had caused the entire island to be destroyed and lost in the deep sea.

Outside the castle were many Nagas patrolling. The males were holding spears, while the females were carrying bows and arrows. None of them looked friendly to begin with. They were all Level 94 elite tiered monsters, with HP bars reaching as high as 94,000. There was no other way to enter the castle, other than the front door which was heavily guarded. Looks like Zhang Yang would have to dye the water red in order to breach the door.

Zhang Yang swam close to the nearest male Naga and threw a

{Spear of Obliteration} the moment he was 30 meters away from him.

‘-4,423!’

"Sssss! Filthy human!" cried the warrior Naga. With a quick swing of its tail, the Naga rose from the ocean floor and swam like a torpedo towards Zhang Yang.

‘-7,902!’

‘-9,613!’

The devastating attack was purely from the Mythical Turtle. The attack was one normal attack and one {Tear}.

After reaching Level 90, Zhang Yang merely gained a new skill and some skill points to use. Since there were no changes in terms of equipment, Zhang Yang had not gained any improvements to his HP limit or his attack power. On the other hand, the battle mount was different. It would receive an upgrade with every 10 levels gained!

At Level 89, the Mythical Turtle’s average attack power was only 7,579. After reaching Level 90, the average attack power of the Mythical Turtle had reached 8,428! An 11% gain in attack power!

"It’s futile to fight us! The water is our realm! You’re powerless here!" cried the warrior as he thrust his spear to attack Zhang

Yang. It was true that the Naga thrived in water. They were moving beyond the speeds of a human on land. It was a pity that, as they were fighting Zhang Yang, be it on land or water, an elite tier monster would only be treated as a normal tier. Together with the Mythical Turtle, Zhang Yang had practically butchered the poor Naga.

Zhang Yang had ended the battle quickly and proceeded to loot the battle drops. He picked up a clamshell and when he opened it, there was only meat, but no pearl. Though it was unfortunate, Zhang Yang felt nothing about it and continued to kill his way towards the royal palace.

After some time, Wei Yan Er, Fatty Han and the rest of the team had entered the Level 90 map. Every one of them cried out to join him in his fights. Zhang Yang had no choice but to allow them. He had asked them to visit the guild storage and bring along Underwater Potions. When everyone had made their preparations, Zhang Yang had used the [Party Summon Order] to teleport them to his side.

Since Zhang Yang had only procured one [Mermaid's Lung] which was forcefully taken away by Wei Yan Er, the rest of the team had to use the [Underwater Breathing Potion] to breathe underwater. Since Zhang Yang had the skill Alchemist's Intuition, some of his potions were Transmuted, granting a bonus ranging from a 10% to a 100% increase in swimming speed. The little brat, even though she was already wearing the [Mermaid's Lung], she had still consumed a [Grade 10 Transmuted Underwater Breathing Potion] to increase her swimming speed to 100%. However, even with the speed buff on them, Zhang Yang's and Han Ying Xue's battle mounts' were still faster. Everyone was envious, yet they

enjoyed their time underwater.

Zhang Yang tried sharing the quest to everyone and succeeded. However, every one of them immediately complained about the quest when they saw the reward.

The 10-men party was gathered and had punctured through the barricade of Naga like a nail and hammer, and entered the palace's compound.

At first glance, the first area they had entered was supposed to be a garden. Now, instead of flowers, many types of seaweeds were thriving in the area. There were many different kinds of small fishes swimming around freely. Tempted, the turtle turned its head left and right as it saw the fishes swimming past it. Finally, after it could take it anymore, the turtle turned its head up to Zhang Yang, trying to ask for a brief moment for it to have a feeding frenzy.

Zhang Yang sighed and patted the turtle's head, saying, "Let's finish things up here first. I'll let you have your feast after!"

The Mythical Turtle lowered its head sadly and proceeded to swim forward.

With the entire elite team with him, Zhang Yang easily cleared the monsters in the garden area and had stumbled upon the first boss without a hitch.



[Group Captain Jue Was] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 92

HP: 1,840,000

Defense: 1,700

Once they had taken a good look at the boss' HP, the party snickered. Lost Dream said, "Man! The bosses these days sure are easy as pie! Come on! Not even 2 million there! We could kill it in two to three hits!"

"Yeah, easy for you to say. Without a tank, let's see you manage that!" said Endless Starlight. He hated pompous brats and have never found peace with Lost Dream.

Lost Dream scoffed lightly and replied disgruntledly. "Give me 10 well-equipped Thieves, and we could take turns to use {Blur} and {Vanish} to erase aggro, I'm sure we could defeat the boss easily!"



## Chapter 418: The King of Naga

---

Since the boss fight had not yet started, the party was paying attention to Lost Dream's and Endless Starlight's petty squabble. They shrugged helplessly, in pity for the two childish men!

Zhang Yang ignored the two of them and proceeded on with the boss. "It's just a Yellow-Gold tier. Just kill and be done with it."

"Understood."

Everyone nodded in unison. If the boss was a Yellow-Gold boss in a dungeon instead, the party would have been a little more cautious. After all, dungeon bosses were defeated with skill. No amount of high tiered equipment would save you from being a dumb meathead. But an open-world boss was different, their difficulties were just based on their tiers, it's true that they may have skills which required skills to defeat, but when the team is strong as f\*ck, there's nothing to it anymore.

"Tch! It's the despicable subordinates of Madran!" Joe Was clicked his tongue and brandished a long metal pole. With quick movement underwater, the first person Joe targeted was Zhang Yang.

"I shall be honored to send you to meet your god!"

Foom! CLING!

The metal pole was swung at incredible speed, but was immediately blocked by Zhang Yang's equally fast shield block. However, since there was no ground to stop the sheer momentum of the spear, both Joe and Zhang Yang was sent backward. However, the Mythical Turtle had immediately paddled its flaps and forcefully stopped its movements to charge back at the boss. Joe Was, being a Naga of the sea, was able to stop himself from being pushed too far. With a quick swing of his massive tail, Joe shot back towards Zhang Yang and prepared himself for another godly smash.

"He looks so proud wielding the pole. Does he think himself as the monkey god Sun Wu Kong?" said Wei Yan Er as she swam towards the boss. Without waiting for an answer, Wei Yan Er swam close to the effective range and activated {Charge}, and started to swing her own axe at the boss.

Unlike Wei Yan Er who was a melee type attacker, the ranged attackers had no need to swim around. They could start attacking, as long as they were 30 meters away from the boss. Fatty Han laughed and said, "Sun Wu Kong huh? Now that you mention it, did you know that when he trashed the entire heaven palace, he was all-powerful, and was able to destroy most of it? But when he was sent to retrieve the scroll in a journey to the west, he was unable to defeat most of the demons and had to ask for help?"

Lost Dream laughed and said, "That's simple! During his ruckus at the heavenly palace, all the gods and goddesses were nothing but regular officers. If the palace was destroyed, so be it, they only needed to wave their hands to rebuild the entire thing! It's not like it would work them up to a wreck. On the other hand, during the journey to the west, the home of the demons that Wu Kong had

fought were built by the demon's own blood, sweat, and tears! It's only natural that the demons would fight for their lives! Imagine someone knocking down your door and trashing your place, I'm sure you'll squash them and make apple juice from their skulls!"

"Hey! Wankers! Are you nothing but regular officers yourselves? You think the boss would be defeated with just a wave of your hands?" Zhang Yang scolded whilst attacking at the same time.

Everyone else laughed while Lost Dream and Fatty Han quietly lowered their heads, feeling guilty.

Still, under the massive power of the entire party, the Yellow-Gold boss' 2 million HP was nothing to be feared. With nothing but the wail of the boss, Zhang Yang rushed to deliver the last killing blow.

Just before the sword was about to drop on Joe Was' head. A loud deafening voice echoed through the water.

"HOLD!"

It was then, that the voice had spread through and enveloped the party member with a large air bubble, rendering them immobile to a certain extent. No matter how much they moved or struggled, the air bubble was not like the usual soap bubble that would pop at a single touch. The bubbles encasing the party were too strong to be real.

"It must be a change in the plot!" Zhang Yang explained. From the moment he received the quest from the bloody Julio dude, he felt that the quest was just something to mess with gullible players. Compared to the other players in the team, these kind of sudden changes in the quest development were no surprise to him.

Out of nowhere, a male Naga with a slightly larger character size rushed over. Besides the skin color and the body build of the Naga, he wore a large golden crown. He was also riding a large shark mount and had a large trident in his hand.

[Cynapor, The King of Naga] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 95

HP: 9,500,000

Defense: 2,600

"Lord Cynapor, these humans are Madran's lackeys! We should hurry up and kill them!" cried Joe Was, like a bullied child.

"Joe Was. You're too quick to judge them. They are not the underlings of Madran!" said Cynapor. He glanced through the party members and locked onto Zhang Yang's Mythical Turtle. "I know that turtle. It once belonged to Gethelo the Merman, yet it now falls in the hand of that human male. I could tell that he and Gethelo have some sort of connection! He would never be the underling of Madran!"

"But, my lord---"

"Silence." Cynapor gave a quick glare to Joe Was.

The King then swam towards Zhang Yang and had a good look at him.

"Young warrior. Would you listen to my plea before you act?" said Cynapor politely.

Cynapor waved his hands and the air bubbles encasing Zhang Yang and his party disappeared.

‘Ding! You can select one of the following choices. 1, Ignore Cynapor’s plea and kill Joe Was. You will now openly engage an all-out war with the Naga. 2, Spare Joe Was’s life and listen to Cynapor. Option 1 will reward you with a Relationship points with a certain individual on the Island of the Sacred One. Option 2 will cause you to be marked as an enemy to everyone on the Island of the Sacred One.’

Both options were like double-edged swords!

Zhang Yang remained quiet and thought of the options available. Even though option 1 was rather fair and tempting, since Joe Was was only one sword stroke away from death, Cynapor had come alone and was easy to defeat now that Zhang Yang had a full team with him. However, Zhang Yang was standing in front of the royal

palace of the Naga! Who knew, Cynapor might just call out for help and the entire army of Naga will swarm to his aid! At least, the previous boss that had sunk the ship, Ankhdoria was not here. Still, Cynapor is the King of Naga! He should have more than a couple of Yellow-Gold underlings!

From another point of view, option 2's Relationship with a certain individual was too vague, to begin with! It could anyone! It could be the cook, the fisherman, the ship captain, the harbormaster, or even perhaps the wanker with the name Julio! After all, Zhang Yang's ultimate goal was to obtain the last fragment by killing Madran! What would Zhang Yang gain by getting any Relationship with Madran?

In the end, Zhang Yang finally settled with a decision. "Option 2!"

Everyone in the party followed Zhang Yang without any objection.

Zhang Yang sheathed his sword to display his cooperation and said, "Naga King, I think...a discussion is way overdue!"

"Hmph! I only have to discuss crushing your head!" said Joe Was.

Cynapor laughed and turned his back. "Please follow me to the royal palace!"

With Cynapor leading the way, the other warriors that were patrolling the palace had formed a line to welcome the king and his

guests. Cynapor had led the party inside one of the buildings still stood. Inside, Zhang Yang had noticed that there were no one inside the building. Unlike how human's behaved and ruled, a royal palace like this should have many maids and servants stationed inside the palace to serve their king. Besides the guards outside the palace, the building was completely empty.

"Please sit." said the King as he sat down on the throne.

Everyone was troubled. How do they sit in water? Everyone was literally in a hovering status. Sitting down would not make any difference. However, since the king had decreed it, it would be best to sit down on the chairs provided, or it would be unpolite not to do so.

"Adventurers, why are you here?" asked Cynapor.

"Because you called us here?" was what Zhang Yang wanted to say but if he did, it would be massively disrespectful to the king. Instead, Zhang Yang explained the events chronologically. "I am an adventurer who was headed to the Island of the Sacred One. In the middle of the journey to the island, the ship that was ferrying the followers of Madran was attacked by your kind. Everyone died, and I was the sole survivor. I then reported it to a person named Julio, on the island. He had, in turn, sent me here to have your head."

The crowd went silent. Besides the sound of the ocean waters, there was no one making noise until Joe Was opened his mouth. "I know that person. Julio. He is a greedy and sneaky bastard! If he is not hiding on the island, I would have sliced his head off!"

Cynapor nodded and asked Zhang Yang. "Adventurer, I believe that there is a misunderstanding here. You might have come to believe that the Naga are attacking your brethren. However, I feel obligated to inform you of the truth. Madran is an evil man. He plans to revive an ancient Demonic Statue. If he succeeds, it would spell doom for the entire world!"

"Demonic Statue?"

"You heard right. There was a legend that spoke of the War Demonic Statue. It was one of the demon artifacts from the war of the gods. It contained unimaginable power! I have no idea where did Madran acquire the artifact. But I do know this. He had also obtained the means of reviving the statue! The reason behind why he had amassed so many followers is to select the most suitable person and offer them up as a sacrifice to the Demonic Statue. That is his plan. To trade human life, for the power of the Demonic Statue!"

Zhang Yang nodded. He understood what was happening with the quest storyline. "That is why you had sent out your soldiers to attack the ship that was ferrying the followers. It was to prevent Madran from "collecting" enough "sacrifices"?"

"You are correct, earth dweller. However, we do not know accurately, which of them was the real sacrifice. That is why we killed them all."

Zhang Yang had no feelings for the people who had died in the



capsized ship. Nothing. Yet, he felt that as a human, he should be. Especially when Cynapor had confessed that he had commanded the kill for those people. The tone that he used was as if they had killed nothing but rodents in the drain. Since they (humans) were not their kin, their death meant nothing to the Naga.

Luckily, it was all but a game's storyline. If he had listened to his words in real life, Zhang Yang would have sprung into action and beat the living hell out of them.

Cynapor had not noticed the change in Zhang Yang glare, and continued to speak his mind about Madran. "In the end, destroying the ship was nothing but to slow Madran down. Eventually, the man will get what he wants. Unless we are able to completely rid him of this world, he will prevail. When that day comes, it is not only us, the Naga, who will perish, but the entire world, including you, humans shall be thrown into the flames of hell."

Cynapor made a sad expression and sighed heavily. "What is wrong with you humans! Why is it that you can kill one of your own so easily? Such a thing would never happen to the Naga!"

"That, my lord, is why I said, the humans are the lowest of all races!" Joe Was spits his saliva which was dissolved immediately in the water. Besides Zhang Yang, the rest of the party members were ready to leap on him at any moment.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily in response to Cynapor. He had no interest in arguing about the virtue among the humans. "Naga King, is that what you wish for? The death of Madran? Will that truly solve all problems?"

Cynapor nodded his head without a trace of hesitation. "Madran, and his 12 Disciples! When that deed is done, the secrets of reviving the Demonic Statue will be forever lost!"

‘Ding! You have received a choice. Give up the quest: Kill Cynapor, and accept a new quest: To Bury the Secret. Will you proceed with the change?’

Zhang Yang glanced at his team, and they all nodded in unison. Zhang Yang nodded back to acknowledge, and accepted the quest. It was pretty obvious why he would do so. The main reason was the quest only had a stupid reward in the first place. Secondly, Zhang Yang wanted to kill the NPC and that way, he could easily obtain the last piece of the Dimensional Key!

[To Bury the Secret] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: Madran has been secretly preparing the revival of the Demonic Statue. Once he succeeds, the entire realm will be blanketed in a dark shadow! Warrior, you have to kill Madran and his 12 Disciples to prevent this catastrophe! Make haste, for Madran is one step to victory!

Progress: Kill Madram 0/1 12 Disciples 0/12

Cynapor was extremely happy. He nodded when he saw the glint of determination in Zhang Yang's eye.

"Madran and his 12 Disciples are always hiding in the magic seal that is protecting the palace in the center of the island. I can tell you this with great confidence. If you want to destroy the magic seal right now, it would take a lot of effort and sacrifice to do so. However, now that you are here, I'd say, there's a good chance of things being much simpler!"

In truth, right after accepting the quest to kill Madran, Zhang Yang was having a massive headache, thinking of a way to penetrate the shield.

# Chapter 419: Breaking the Cages

---

Zhang Yang replied immediately, "Naga King. I assume that you have a brilliant idea?"

Cynapor laughed. "Brilliant? Wrong there. I'd called it the last measure. That idiot Julio is our answer. Didn't he want my head? Then, a head he shall get. I'd bet the Trident of Poseidon that he would take the head to meet Madran! When he does, I want you to follow him! That is how you can sneak past the magic seal."

Joe Was suddenly grew anxious. There was a glint of panic in his eyes. "My king, you are our king! The King of Naga! Without your leadership, we would be nothing but wandering soldiers!"

Cynapor sighed and smacked Joe Was lightly at the back of his head. "You fool. Do you think that I would take my own head off for the death of a simple human? I never said that I would give him my head. I will use magic to create a head. The human warrior could take the fake one and trick the idiot Julio!"

"Phew! That freaked me out!" Joe Was calmed down.

"What's up with those naming...Joe Was?" Wei Yan Er cocked her head.

"It's just a name, get over it," said Zhang Yang.

Cynapor clapped his hands together. A faint light glowed around

his hands, which grew larger and brighter in a green hue. The light formed a ball and flew a few centimeters away from him and started to form a human-sized ball. The ball kept on spinning and spinning as if it was a 3D printer. After two minutes of "printing", the light faded and revealed a head that was the exact copy of Cynapor's. There was even blood dripping from the severed neck! Complete with a dangling spine and blood vessels! Anyone who sees it would surely be struck with horror!

The move had surely taken a toll on Cynapor. Panting heavily, Cynapor lifted the head from the ground and handed it over to Zhang Yang. "The magic in his head will last only for 12 hours. I urge you to hurry. Fu..."

Zhang Yang accepted the head and immediately placed it in his inventory. "Thank you. We will set off for the Island of the Sacred One immediately."

The 10 of them headed out of the palace without saying anything else, and shot towards the island. Besides Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue, the rest of the team had no water mounts and had to swim by their own efforts. Zhang Yang feared that by the time they reach the island, the "head" would only have only a few minutes left. That was unless they swam like Michael Phelps.

During the designing of this quest, the person had already factored in the possibility of a player not possessing any aquatic mount. That was why, the assigned magic duration was 12 hours.

"Take the time to train here, guys. I'll reach the island first, and I will summon you guys there with the order."

Everyone nodded and turned around to start killing underwater monsters.

The [Party Summon Order] only one hour of cool down time. Zhang Yang had taken close to 2 hours to travel from the island to the place in the beginning, which left him plenty of time to use the [Party Summon Order].

Since he was in a hurry, Zhang Yang had summoned the turtle and used all its strength to get him to the island as fast as possible. He had not even had the spare time to harvest the herbs! In return for his efforts, the turtle had only taken half an hour to reach the island. He quickly used the [Party Summon Order] and called the nine other members who were left behind.

"Let's go!"

Everyone summoned their mounts and galloped towards the location of Julio. With haste, the team had reached hillside, leaving a trail of dust behind them.

"Lord Julio. I have completed my mission!" Zhang Yang jumped down from his bear and handed the bloody head to him.

"Hmm?" Julio turned and check the head that he had just received. After a short duration of skepticism, the man smiled sinisterly and laughed manically. "This is it! This is wonderful! Magnificent! The bloody seaman is dead! With this head, Lord Madran will finally have an audience with me! I will be one of his

trusted men!"

After laughing for a good minute, Julio stopped promptly when he realized that he was completely out of character. "Good job in completing the mission. Well done," said Julio, back in his usual stern voice.

Since the quest [Kill Cynapor] was deleted, the party had not received any rewards.

Just when Julio was about to turn away, Zhang Yang placed a hand on his shoulder and put up the best fake smile. "Lord Julio. We are loyal believers of the Sacred One. We wish to have an audience with the Lord himself. Would that be too much to ask?" Zhang Yang could physically throw up right away, if he ever heard himself saying that out loud.

"Imbecile! Do you think I do not know what are you up to?! You wish to take all the credit away from me!" Julio started to get all aggressive and raised his voice. "Scram! Begone!"

Wei Yan Er frowned angrily. With her finger tapping on the handle of her axe, she asked Zhang Yang, "Noobie tank, can I skill this douche now?"

"Hold your horse, sweetheart. Let him disable the magic seal first." Zhang Yang grabbed her shoulder and pulled her back. The party left, but not for long. They went into hiding in the bushes, near the station where Julio was. After a while, Julio was spotted leaving the station with a horse. Zhang Yang gave the signal to his

team and tailed him until Julio reached the center of the island, where the palace was.

After a short gallop, Julio had arrived at a magic circle. He got down the horse rather sloppily and took out a piece of crystal. He walked to the magic barrier and pressed the crystal against the magical wall. The barrier wall absorbed the crystal and formed countless of bright lines which formed the hologram of a human head. "Why are you disturbing me, Julio!?"

"Lord Marvados!" Julio kneeled down and unwrap small cloth to reveal the head of Cynapor. "Your humble servant has killed the King of Naga, Cynapor and wishes to deliver his head to the lord!"

The hologram looked down on Julio and glared at the head. "You have done well Julio. You shall bring the head of Cynapor and come to me. The Sacred One will be pleased!"

Bzz...

The head hologram dispersed. The barrier that Julio was facing suddenly made a loud, thunderous crack. A tear in the barrier seal was seen opening up.

Pleased, Julio wrapped the head and walked into the barrier.

"This is it! Jump him!" Zhang Yang cried. All the party member kicked their mounts and dashed towards the crack in the barrier.



Hidden behind the opaque barrier was a huge circular magical altar, surrounded by many stone figure. Each of the statues was anomaly huge and were made to be positioned to look at other stone statues at the center of the circle.

Zhang Yang had immediately recognized one of the statues at the 1 o'clock direction. It had the same face as the man who had appeared as the hologram earlier on. If that was the case, these 13 stone statues would represent the 12 Disciples and Madran himself.

"You---!" Julio turned back and found that Zhang Yang had successfully breached the barrier. With rage in his eyes, Julio bellowed angrily. "I'll crush you! I'd do anything to prevent you from grabbing the right to meet Lord Madran!"

"...What a stuck up boss. I'd say, he might be as stuck up as the fatty!" said Han Ying Xue with a sinister grin.

"Yo...What did I do to you?" said Fatty Han with a sad, close-to-crying kind of expression. In his defense, Fatty Han felt that he was indeed a little more perverted than a regular man. But being a pervert had nothing to do with being an \*sshole like Julio!

Julio puffed out angry steam from his nostrils and jumped down his horse. He unsheathed the sword from his waist and attacked Zhang Yang who was the closest to him.

"Little brat. You can now kill the man. Go wild!" Zhang Yang received the attack and grabbed onto the boss' aggro firmly.

From the moment she saw the NPC, she already had insatiable urge to beat the crap out of him. Now that she had received the green light from Zhang Yang, she yelled her battle cry and leaped into the battle axe-first.

The rest of the party did not stand to watch, and moved to their attack positions.

It did not take long for the party to kill a mere Yellow-Gold boss. In the end, they had killed the boss and obtained a Yellow-Gold and two Gray-Silver equipment from Julio.

[Sinister Ambush Chestplate] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +302

Strength: +121

Dexterity: +274

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 90

Without the shine of a Violet-Platinum light, the best they got

was a shiny gold luster. The four Leather Armor classed players rolled for the item which was won by Hundred Shot, rolling 87 points.

As for the Gray-Silvers, there was a silent agreement that it should be sent, packaged, and delivered to the Little Merchandise Shop. There were no Violet-Platinum drops, since the boss was nothing but a small minion. It was already fortunate of them to obtain some loot in the first place!

"There's a door there!" cried Daffodil Daydream. The young lady pointed at the direction of the statue at the 1 o'clock direction. Beneath the statue was a secret passage, with a staircase that led down to the underground. It was probably opened for Julio.

"Hmm. Looks like the master is welcoming us directly. Well, might as well make ourselves at home!"

Everyone walked down the stairs and was greeted with nothing but darkness. With a quick thought, Zhang Yang had reactivated the equipment effect and it had lit up the pathway like a megawatt lantern.

Wan Yan Er suddenly laughed out of control and had to stop walking. "Noobie tank! Pffft! Are you a---wait for it---a firefly?! HAHAHAHA!"

"Wait! He's not some bug! I'd say, he like the sun in the sky! Shining brightly!" said Endless Starlight, kissing Zhang Yang's butt.

Everyone laughed and immediately understood the underlying meaning behind Endless Starlight sudden cries. However, it was indeed helpful. With Zhang Yang leading down the staircase, it was much easier to see.

After 5 minutes of walking, they had walked out of the narrow pathway and had arrived at a large, empty hall. The hall was much brighter now, and the party had just realized that it was extremely huge. The ceiling was at least a hundred meters tall, and the hall was at least the size of three football stadiums! In this massive empty hall, there was an indented area, which revealed itself as a pool of blood when the party had gotten close. No one knew how deep it went, but one thing was sure, it was blood, and it was boiling.

Right behind the massive, Olympic-sized pool, were cages with a human in each cage. Despair, dread, and hopelessness were in their eyes.

From afar, Zhang Yang could see three soldiers doing something. One of the soldiers had opened a cage up and pulled out a man. The two other soldiers dragged the man by his feet towards the pool. With nothing but the screams of horror, the soldier had pulled out a long broadsword and had cleaved the man's head off, clean.

Thud...\*rolls\*...Splash!

The head rolled on the ground and fell into the pool of blood. The soldier then picked up the headless body and tossed it into the pool

as well.

"Not bad. A clean cut, today! Looks like you're getting the hang of it."

"Yeah. It's the sword, it's all about the sword. It's nice to have it sharpened once in a while."

"Don't sweat it. We'll be given a new blade soon enough when this is over."

"Hahaha. You're absolutely right! I swear that---"

The chattering of the soldier dissipated into the darkness as they left the pool.

Zhang Yang saw what had happened and felt the dread of it. "Erhm...I think Cynapor was wrong after all. It's not a special sacrifice that Madran needed to retrieve. Its blood. A lot of blood."

"That looks more like a human goulash..."

The party moved around the pool and tried to follow the soldiers. As they walked closer to the scene, they found more markings on the stone slab where the most recent parting of a head from its shoulders had just occurred. It appeared that countless heads had rolled into the pool and had stained the flood with so much blood, that it had dried and formed a thick layer of blood plaster. Rage burned in their hearts, and the urge to seek revenge boiled like the

pool of blood.

When Zhang Yang had gotten closer to the cages, one of the women in cages reached out her extremely thin arms, begging for Zhang Yang and his party to save her.

"H-Help...me...pl-ple-se..."

Her voice was so frail. Her face, especially, told of the days or even weeks she had not been fed. She was so skinny that she was practically skin and bones left.

Sun Xin Yu was the first person to react to her plea. With quick movements, she jumped to the cage and busted the lock, releasing the poor woman from her captivity.

"You're safe now." Said Sun Xin Yu with the softest voice that Zhang Yang had ever heard. It was extremely soothing to hear her voice when she was not putting up a cold act. The woman cried and hugged Sun Xin Yu. "Why...Why...I don't understand. Why would the Sacred One do these to us! We believed him! We worshiped him! The Sacred One...no...his is not the Sacred One. He is the Damned! The Damned One!"

"Hush now. It's alright. I will make this right," said Sun Xin Yu as she wiped away the tears from the poor woman's eyes.

After stroking her hair and face for a while, the poor woman calmed down and said, "Brave ones, I beg of you! Please save

everyone here!"

‘Ding! Lena has a quest for you: Breaking Free. Will you accept it?’

Accept.

[Breaking Free] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: Lena had requested that you rescue all of the captive prisoners. Note: There are 12 places such as this. They are all guarded by Madran’s 12 Disciples. Every 5 minutes, each blood pool will claim one prisoner. To complete the quest, you must prevent the deaths of 500 prisoners. The quest will be deemed failure when the death toll had surpassed 500. Each rescued prisoner will increase the reward experience points by 1%

Progress: Rescue all the prisoners 0/1

Zhang Yang then unsheathed the blade and swung it forcefully, causing the metal cage in front of him to collapse, freeing the prisoner inside. With a loud voice, he yelled, "We will free all of you. Please, find a way outside this place and inform everyone of the truth of Madran!"

One by one, the prisoners were freed by Zhang Yang with the help of everyone in the party. All of the prisoners had mixed feelings. Some were extremely grateful for Zhang Yang and his party while the others were burning with rage, even though there

were little to no life force to them. From their perspective, they had traveled a great distance just to worship the person who they thought was the Sacred One. Who would have known that they were captured and treated as livestock, instead!

"Something's wrong!"

A voice came from the far side of the pool. It was the three soldiers who had killed a person from before. The soldiers had found out there the prisoner had escaped their cages and had alerted more soldiers to come into the hall. Close to 10 or more soldiers had mysteriously spawned out of nowhere and had joined the fight.

Some of the prisoners who had just been sprung from their cages ran back to the broken cages in fear. Zhang Yang had dashed to the front and called out to Endless Starlight. "Starlight. Come. Let's wrap this up quick."

"You got it boss."

With the battle hammer in his hands, Endless Starlight did not wait for Zhang Yang, and rushed at the incoming soldiers.

The enemies were only Level 93 monsters. There was a total of 15 of them. For other parties with average equipment, this situation might be a little too much for them to handle. But for Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight, it was just a regular grinding session. The soldiers could not break through the line of defense and could only throw insults at them.



"Heretics! The wrath of the Sacred One shall befall upon you! The judgment of God is absolute!" cried the soldiers.

"Tch! Sacred One? Don't make me laugh. He is nothing, but the devil himself!" said Endless Starlight.

Zhang Yang activated {Blast Wave} and stunned the soldiers. The Sword of Purging Devourer glowed and repeated the skill over, and over again!

Sun Xin Yu and the rest started their attack. Like hungry tigers, the team devoured the soldiers in just two minutes. Among the loot that they had picked up, there was a new cloth material, the [Inscribed Cloth]. Besides using the cloth in the profession of Tailoring, it could be used to create [Inscribed Bandages] which could heal 20,000 HP over the period of 10 seconds.

Zhang Yang had picked up a set of keys from the fallen soldiers, and had given the keys to the freed prisoners and had released the other prisoners who were still in their cages. The party then left the place and searched for the door of which the soldiers had come through.

# Chapter 420: Marvados

---

Zhang Yang found the door which the soldiers had through, proceed inside. The place behind the door was like a dormitory for the soldiers. It was a narrow passageway, with doors on either side of the place. The first few rooms had their doors opened wide with no one inside but messy beds. It looked like the rooms belonged to the soldiers who had just rushed out to attack Zhang Yang.

As Zhang Yang and the party proceeded further down the pathway, more soldiers had rushed out and had attacked them. Without much trouble, the lot hacked their way through the mess and proceeded on through the mess. After covering a short distance at a slow pace, the team arrived at a dome-shaped room. The room was clearly big, since it housed a similar pool of blood like before.

There was man cloaked in a white long robe that was sitting in a chair at one side. There were two other beautiful females who were clinging rather intimately onto him. Behind the three bizarre characters were 12 soldiers in perfect formation. They were all well-equipped, with metal cuirasses, and long spears in their hands.

[Marvados] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 95

HP: 1,900,000

Defense: 1,700

[Armored Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 92

HP: 200,000

Defense: 1,000

The boss was holding a wine glass in his hand, that was filled with a liquid that shared the same color of blood. When the man noticed the presence of Zhang Yang in the room, the guards were signaled with a snap of his fingers, and they had charged towards them.

Marvados was cool and calm. While sipping his glass casually, he said softly, "I should have known that Julio would be dead by now."

The guards had already surrounded Zhang Yang and were pointing their spears towards the party, but they were not attacking.

Zhang Yang had not yet sheathed his sword. He swung the sword extremely fast and the blood flew off the blade and spurted on the floor. "I do need to apologize for that. I kinda went overboard and accidentally killed the poor bastard."

Marvados chuckled and placed the wine glass down. "His death does not concern me. I had never had any inclination towards that arrogant man." The woman who was standing next to him took over the cup and the other had taken out a piece of white cloth to carefully wipe the corner of his lips.

"My lord." The guards that were waiting for the order from Marvados dared not act on their own will.

Marvados stood up and thrust his hand out in a dramatic, anime-ish pose. "Kill them."

"Yes sir." The guards replied in unison and started their attack. A magical staff magically appeared in the hands of Marvados. With a quick glare, he bellowed, "The Sacred One's plan must never be foiled!"

"Endless Starlight, take the boss. Kite him away. Let me take on the guards!" said Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang had no problem entrusting Endless Starlight to handle the boss, since it was only a mere Yellow-Gold tier. With his current equipment, he could easily tank the boss without a need of immediate healing. Furthermore, Mardavos was probably a magic type, having a magic class Defender tank him would be wise.

On the contrary, the 12 elite guards were a greater threat than the boss. Even though their HPs were not as long as the boss, together, their combined attack would prove lethal to any tank. Zhang Yang

had the better equipment and it would be logical to have him take the heat, instead.

"Got it, boss!" Endless Starlight grabbed the boss' attention with a quick toss of his shield.

The 12 guards had no original targets to attack in the first place. When Endless Starlight had tossed the shield and went up to the boss, they had went after him. Zhang Yang quickly went up to the guards and activated {Thunder Strike}, inflicting the first aggro on the monsters, while also slowing them down.

"Futile resistance!" Marvados scoffed and pointed his staff towards the group of guards saying, "The Lord decrees, that those who devote their lives to serve shall gain His powers!"

Shring!

A bright light came down from nowhere and struck the group, granting them a boost of power. Whatever buff Marvados granted, it had profound effects. The men had grown in size. The original breastplates they wore suddenly burst off as the buckles gave way.

[Marvados Blessing]: 30% increase in Attack Power. Lasts for 5 Minutes.

Zhang Yang frowned worriedly. If one of them gained a 30% power boost, it would not matter to Zhang Yang. But now, all 12 soldiers had gained power! The overall damage gained would prove

to be too much for Zhang Yang to endure.

"We need to kill these guys off, quickly!"

Without delay, the group had rushed forward and unleashed all their AoE skills.

Zhang Yang joined the fight as well. All his AoE skills were used. {Blast Wave}, {Thunder Strike}, {Heroic Leap}, {Brutal Smash}, all status effect skills were used mostly to prevent damage from inflicting him. However, when those proved to be insufficient, {Shield Wall}, {Berserker's Heal}, and even the new skill, {Last Vigor} had to be used to save himself. In this boss fight, Marvados was nothing but a side character, the main problem was his 12 guards!

One by one, the party targeted one monster and proceed to the next when the first was killed. This way, they could kill the monsters more efficiently when their AoE skills were on cooldown, and they could switch to single target skills instead.

Just when the party had killed every single elite guard and were ready to switch their target to the boss, Marvados pointed his staff at the dead guards and said, "The Lord decrees, that eternal life shall be granted to His servants!"

Whoosh!

This time, a blast of dark light came down from nowhere and

seeped inside the lifeless bodies of the dead guards.

"Urgh....Orh...." Slowly, the dead soldiers started to make some eerie noises. One by one, their muscle twitched and moved in a disgusting manner. They scrambled up and started to dash towards Zhang Yang.

[Revived Guard] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 92

HP: 200,000

Defense: 1,000

Sigh...There's no end to this!

Zhang Yang immediately cried, "Stop attacking the monsters. Kill the boss! Or else these critters will keep on coming back to life!"

Zhang Yang changed his battle strategy. Instead of tanking the guards head-on, he blasted them with {Thunder Strike} and kited them around. However, Zhang Yang had never expected the undead minions to have such fast movement speeds, that even after the slow debuff, they were still running faster than Zhang Yang could!

‘Ding! Revived Guard has received the effect: God Titan's Wrath.

Stunned for 10 seconds!’

...

‘Ding! Revived Guard had received the effect: God Titan’s Wrath. Stunned for 10 seconds!’

...

Since Zhang Yang had received a barrage of attacks from a group of monsters, the Titan equipment set had finally shown its prowess. A holographic image of a metallic, god-like character hovered behind him for a brief second when the equipment set effect was triggered. With a snap of his fingers, the monster was stunned for 10 seconds.

On the other side of the battle, even though Zhang Yang was not participating in the battle against Marvados, the elite fighting party of nine was able to quickly hack away at the boss’ HP till he was close to death!

"For the Lord has decreed! Eternal life and happiness for those who worshiped His name!" Marvados pointed his staff at one of the soldiers who was chasing after Zhang Yang. At first, Zhang Yang felt something was off. Perhaps, the skill was going to be used on the monsters and made them stronger. However, to his surprise, one of the guards had burst into dust, leaving its empty armor falling down to the floor. A light ray glowed around the area for a while before it flew from the place where the soldier had fallen, towards Marvados. The light surrounded Marvados and fully



restored his life! Wei Yan Er had inflicted {Destructive Smash} on the boss. But even with the 50% reduced healing rate, the boss was still able to recover to its original, unharmed state.

"Sh\*t!"

"I'd be d\*mned if the boss could still revive the dead guy there! He'd be invincible then!" said Endless Starlight.

"Why do you always go for the worst case scenario?! Will you be satisfied if that really happens?!" Zhang Yang scolded.

Luckily, it did not happen.

After a mere minute, Marvados HP had plunged down again.

"For the Lord has decreed! Eternal life and happiness for those who worship His name!" this time, the party was not surprised. Marvados had repeated the same skill, which had sacrificed one of the undead guards and had restored his HP back to full health.

"...Thank god that this boss had only 1,900,000 HP. If it was a Violet-Platinum tier with 9 million HP, we would have been in for a treat!"

"That's nonsensical. A Yellow-Gold boss would never be that OP!"

However, the boss would never bother about being OP, or not. It

would only act as it was programmed, killing the players as swiftly as possible, and surviving by any means necessary! Luckily, the person tanking the boss was a Defender with high magic defense. Fortunately, Endless Starlight had a strong equipment, and was able to defend the party easily. He did not need to ask help from Han Ying Xue for emergency healing.

On the other side of things, Zhang Yang was under tremendous pressure from the monsters. Although now there were two fewer monsters to worry about, the pressure placed on him was still immense. His HP was being maintained by Han Ying Xue, while being knocked back down by the monsters so rapidly, that his HP bar was like a pulsating heartbeat.

Although Zhang Yang was taking a beating, it was fortunate that Endless Starlight was facing next to no problems in facing the boss. The main healer for Endless Starlight, Fantasy Sweetheart, could take some time off him and heal Zhang Yang with {Regeneration} and {Holy Shield}. At least, it could take some load off both Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang had no other choice but to bite down the hardship and push on until all the guards had been "eaten" by the boss.

Slowly, and eventually, the boss had taken the third, the fourth, all to the last one. As the number of soldiers decreased, so did the pressure on Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue. After the last one was down, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue did not immediately jump to the boss, but sat down and have a little time off to cool off their fatigue. The two of them were constantly on overdrive for so long and simply had to relax for a minute or two. Since the boss was

only going to last for so long, Zhang Yang could take his rest without much worry.

However, at 80%, the boss suddenly cast another spell.

"On the first day, the Lord commendeth. Let there be light!"

A blinding light burst out from the boss' staff and had successfully blinded the party. No matter how quickly one could respond, the light would always be the faster. Everyone had to stop for a good second to cover their eyes, for it was incredibly bright.

[Blinding Light]: Causes the enemy to lose their sight temporarily. Unable to focus on a target for 10 seconds.

The boss' skill was not an attacking skill, but rather a temporary stun. The entire party had to stop attacking.

In 'God's Miracle' a player can only attack a target by locking onto a target. Losing their sights will lead to a disability of locking onto a target. Luckily, the party members were smart. Instead of locking onto a target, they switched to their AoE skills and targeted the floor around the boss instead. Although they could attack, the damage inflicted on the boss was only but a scratch.

After 10 seconds, the blindness stopped and everyone was enraged. They cried angrily, throwing insults at the boss and releasing their frustration by hacking the boss even more furiously.

The thought of using {Dance of Heaven and Earth} had crossed everyone's mind. Undoubtedly, it would kill the boss easily. However, this boss was just the first among the 12 Disciples of Madran. If they used their trump card now, how would things be when they fight with an even stronger boss?

60%...

"The Lord said, give the Earth water, and water filled the Earth!"

Qiang! Qiang!

Pillars of ice pierced out of the ground beneath them, and dealt as much as 12,000 damage to everyone. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had to jump into action to heal everyone before anything else.

"What the hell! This isn't water! It's ice! Don't be playing around with God's words!" cried Fatty Han.

"Nyehehe. I guessed the boss has no knowledge of physics. Water has three natural states!" said Wei Yan Er as she giggled happily. She was showing off her knowledge, since, among the party member there, she was the one who had just recently been in school, and had very limited time to act as a teacher herself.

40%...

"For the Lord granted the Earth fire, and fire lay its fiery breath upon Earth!"

Foom!

Before the pillars of ice could disappear, cracks had started to appear on the surface of the ground. Without any warning signs, the cracks spewed strong tongues of fire which had scorched those that had not able to dodge in time, for 12,000 damage.

Like frightened chicken, everyone had jumped on their feet and had started running around in disarray.

# Chapter 421: The Four Horsemen

---

"The system must be cheating! This boss must be a Violet-Platinum boss, masking as a Yellow-Gold!"

"F\*cking prick, must be thinking of saving Violet-Platinum equipment. That's why he paid the right people off to be classified as a Yellow-Gold! Sh\*t is still as difficult as a Violet-Platinum fuck!"

"Yeah! D\*mn! It's not what we signed up for!"

Everyone was pissed off when the fight between Mardavos was so much tougher than Julio, even when both of them were of the same tier.

20%...

"The Lord had wished for land, and the earth sprung new land for the Lord!"

Right after the boss had finished talking, a large meteorite fell down from the sky, smashing down on them. From the words that the boss had just said, they were expecting something to come out from the ground! None of them was prepared to defend against the falling rocks!

It was not one, but an endless cascade of falling rocks. The skill dealt the same basic damage as the previous skills that the boss had cast, but compared to the ice pillars and the flaming tongues, this

meteorite shower was falling continuously! Eventually, it proved to be impossible for both Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart to heal everyone. Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight had already used {Vanguard's Aggression} during the previous skills. Luckily, Zhang Yang was still able to use {Rearm} and reactivated {Vanguard's Aggression} just for one last time.

A blue spherical barrier was placed and had protected everyone. However, safety was nowhere to be seen. By the time the barrier had expired, the meteor shower had not yet finished falling. However, during the protective duration, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were able to heal everyone. After {Vanguard's Aggression} had ended, the continuation of the meteor had dealt so much damage that the party had lost the HP they had painstakingly recovered.

The decisive moment had arrived, just when both sides had little to no HP left. The party was left with a few drops of HP, while the boss still had over 4%. Zhang Yang and everyone else gritted their teeth hard and rushed forward without the need to care about their lives any longer. The last spurt of power had cost them Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream.

After the boss was killed, everyone still stared at the corpse warily. Taking the chance they had, they had quickly taken out recovery snacks, and had healed themselves with every second they had. There was lingering silence among them, and no one was willing to let their guards down. After a good long while, everyone finally relaxed. However, there was still tension between them. If the boss had such a strong power since the "first" half of the battle, he would have already wiped them all clean before Marvados was even required to heal himself with the soldiers' lives. If the first

boss was already this tough, how would be for the next 11 bosses?

Compared with the rest of the party, Wei Yan Er, being the youngest and most carefree person, had skipped towards the battle drops while whistling happily.

[Boots of Meditation] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +151

Intelligence: +137

Spirit: +60

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 90

Even though it was not a Violet-Platinum tier, this Level 90 Yellow-Gold equipment was still an incredibly good item, even by the current standards. The boots was then given to Fantasy Sweetheart. The sweet, busty girl then bowed down happily and thanked everyone for the item. Her actions were earnest, yet her movements were so aggressive that she did not realize that her gigantic badahoonkers were bouncing around, causing the pervy Fatty and Endless Starlight to cover their pants.



Han Ying Xue sneaked a peek at Zhang Yang and whispered in his ears. "Don't stare too much though, you might be hypnotized!"

"Hohoho. Jealous much? For she still has it, and you've lost it?"

"Lost it? I did not lose anything! I can get it whenever I want!"

"Nope. You've clearly lost it. She's got the charm. You've got nothing."

"Please. I could steamroll over her with one of these!" said Han Ying Xue as she grabbed hold of her left mountain of delightful flesh and jiggled it at him.

Zhang Yang fell silent. He had completely regretted about taunting the jealous little woman.

[Fragment of Hammer of Sanction] (Yellow-Gold, Weapon Fragment)

Use: Combines 12 Fragments of Hammer of Sanction, and one Hammer's Hilt of Hammer of Sanction to form a complete Hammer of Sanction.

Level Requirement: 90

"Another Assembled Weapon!" cried the party.

The previously assembled weapon that Zhang Yang had wielded for a long time now had made everyone drool for it. Who would not want to own such a powerful killing tool! Since Violet-Platinum weapons were available for Level 80 players could be farmed in Level 80 maps, there were Assembled Weapon there as well, but they were mostly Gray-Silver tier. The end result would only be at the same level as a Yellow-Gold tier. None of the party members were interested in owning such a weapon. However, the Level 90 area was different. A drop of Assembled Weapon would automatically be one of the Yellow-Gold tiers! Which inevitably meant that the end result, would create a Violet-Platinum tier weapon!

"What!? It's a hammer fragment! Awesome! Hell yeah!" cried Endless Starlight happily, since his class had the Hammer Mastery passive skill, which granted the player a boost of strength when using a hammer type weapon.

Zhang Yang laughed and gave the fragment to Endless Starlight. "There are 12 Disciples in this fight, and a final boss. I'm guessing that each of the Disciples will drop a piece of the hammer fragment, and the final boss would drop the hammer's hilt."

"Oh man! This is just too great. It's like a dream come true!"

While everyone was happy for Endless Starlight, Lost Dream muttered something disgruntledly. "Hmph. Just hope that it's not a two-handed hammer."

A Defender could only use a one-handed hammer.

Although Lost Dream was muttering softly, his voice was able to reach Endless Starlight's ears, slightly annoying him.

"Alright guys. We've had our rest. Time to move on." Said Zhang Yang. He sensed something was coming up between the two of them, and tried to prevent something that might affect the party's performance. They still had 11 more Disciples to kill.

Zhang Yang led the way, while Endless Starlight was the rearguard. The party moved in a single file and proceeded beyond the dome hall. After passing a doorway, the team was immediately ambushed in the dark. There was not enough light to see the enemy. However, it did not take long before Zhang Yang realized that the pathway was the same as the previous pathway that had led them to the dome hall. It was another dormitory for the soldiers.

Zhang Yang and his team lowered their guards a little, since the enemies were the same elite soldiers that they had fought before. With no trouble, Zhang Yang slashed his way forward, collecting more [Inscribed Cloth], before coming upon a large room. The room was an exact copy of the first gigantic hall from before. It had the same blood pool, and a ridiculous number of cages that were all filled with prisoners.

It was all a repetitive process. Zhang Yang and the party member silently split up to rescue as many prisoners as they could. Amid the chaotic rescue, came a group of 12 elite guards, who were all killed by Zhang Yang and the team with relative ease. After they

were done with the guards, the party continued to release all the prisoners, and went to the same doorway from which the guards had just come out from. They walked down a similar pathway with the same dormitory, and came to a similar dome-shaped hall, except for one issue. The boss was nowhere in sight.

Everyone started to get a little worried.

Bury the Secret was the quest that the party had accepted. The quest had required them to kill Madran and his 12 Disciples. If anyone of them was not killed, the quest would never be completed. This was bad. Among them, Endless Starlight was trembling in fear. The hammer fragment that he was carrying needed to have a total of 12 pieces, if either one of the bosses were missing, he would never form a complete hammer!

"Did someone come before us and kill the boss?" ask Daffodil Daydream.

Zhang Yang looked up and down, before answering her. "I don't think so. In fact, I know so. Currently, I am the only Level 90 player in China. There is little no chance that other players would have come to this island before us. Besides, we have just walked through the only pathway. How do you explain the first boss being there? It must be another reason."

"How could it be?"

"Perhaps the boss got lonely and decided to move to the neighbor's hall for company!" said Fantasy Sweetheart, giggling.

Zhang Yang cried, "It could be that!"

"...Wait a second...Does that mean that we have to fight two bosses at the same time?" cried Han Ying Xue as if she was about to bawl. The woman hated working hard.

"I'm afraid, it could be that."

Everyone left the empty hall and proceeded through a doorway which Wei Yan Er had found. The party repeated the same thing over again. They walked through the pathway, killed more elite guards, came into a large hall, rescued more prisoners, killed more elite guards, and finally arrived at the next boss room. Except, that the third boss was not present!

"What is the meaning of this!" cried Fatty Han.

"I'd say, we'll be fighting three bosses in the next hall!"

"I bet that the next boss will not be there as well!" cried Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang frowned worriedly. Words that came out of Wei Yan Er's mouth always came true, especially when it was something bad. Zhang Yang signaled the party to move forward, and they had killed and rescued their way to the next boss room. Lo and behold, Wei Yan Er's premonition had come true. The fourth boss was not around as well.

"Haha! Perhaps we could fight 4 bosses at the same time! The system must be thinking highly of us!" said Hundred Shots laughing. There was a hint of annoyance buried shallowly beneath his laughter.

"Keh Keh Keh! I knew it! Perhaps, the next boss would also be miss---HMM!! HM!!"

Before the little brat could finish talking, Han Ying Xue had already pushed her jaw back up and sealed it firmly with a headlock.

"The boss will be in the next room!"

Everyone prayed out loud. Even though everyone had wished for the best, having the thought of fighting just one Marvados had made them tremble in fear, thinking that the next foe they would be fighting, were four bosses.

The party moved on and proceeded after the fifth blood pool.

After completing the same repetitive process, the party had reached the fifth doorway that led them to the boss hall.

"Come on! May the bosses be there!" cried Fatty Han as he squeezed his eyes shut, and pressed both his palms together.

Zhang Yang turned back and glared worriedly at Fatty Han. In his previous life, 1 month from now, Fatty Han would get involved in a series of fights which had ended with a metal baton striking his skull, hard. The strike had cost him his life. This time, in this lifetime, Zhang Yang had made many changes which had led Fatty Han completely off the previous life's route. Still, who knew what destiny called for. Zhang Yang swore to protect him. He had to prevent the incident from happening at all costs. No matter what happens, Zhang Yang would not let Fatty Han get into any fight!

After the party proceeded through the doorway, they arrived at the fifth boss' hall. Expecting the worse, Fatty Han opened his eyes and had never felt so happy to see a boss. Still, the horror of facing four bosses at the same time had kicked in. All three bosses that were missing from their halls, were all there, with the fifth boss.

[Bellroy, The Four Horsemen] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 95

HP: 1,900,000

Defense: 1,700

Note: One of the 12 Disciples.

The other three bosses, lined up in a straight line, where Mecca, Gray, and Cindy. All of them carried the title - "The Four Horsemen". They were all Level 94 Yellow-Gold tier, and were

riding large handsome horses, hence the title. There were large swords on the side of the horses.

"Crap...It's really four bosses," said Fatty Han. Everyone had mixed feelings about the boss. Even though they were hoping that it would be four bosses, but at the same time, they had wished that it would not have to come to that.

"Let's just be thankful, it's four instead of all eight," said Daffodil Daydream firmly, even though she herself was trembling with fear.

"Hold up. There's an aura effect on the boss!"



# Chapter 422: Overwhelming Aura

---

[Gluttony Aura]: Inflicts the status effect of {Gluttony} every 3 seconds, on any target within the aura ranged. {Gluttony} will decrease 1% of the target's attack power. Maximum stack: 50. Additional attack buffs will be granted to the aura's owner whenever one of the following auras is applied on the target: {Greed Aura}, or {Slayer Aura}, or {Destiny Aura}.

Two auras: 50% bonus attack.

Three auras: 100% bonus attack.

Four auras: 150% bonus attack.

Aura radius: 20 meters around the owner.

{Gluttony Aura} belonged to Bellroy, while the other three auras belonged to the other horsemen. As the aura skill description depicted, if more than one aura is stacked, the bosses would gain an attack bonus buff.

{Greed Aura} would cause players to receive a stackable debuff, just like {Gluttony}. {Greed} would cause players to receive additional damage received, by 1% per stack, with a maximum of 50 stacks. Debuffs will stack once every 3 seconds.

{Slay Aura} would inflict direct damage of 3,000 chaos damage, every 3 seconds.

{Destiny Aura} would create a field where players will be stunned for 3 seconds, at a certain chance, every 3 seconds.

Zhang Yang practically threw in the towel when he had read the description of the auras on each of the bosses. To make things worse, he just realized that the bosses were sharing the same HP bar! That meant, they could not kill the bosses one by one to slowly terminate the threat of the auras! All 7,600,000 HP had to be dealt with before all the bosses could die.

"Boss, how you want to split it? You'd take two, or three at the same time?' asked Endless Starlight.

Without a doubt, these bosses had to be kited away from each other to prevent the aura from stacking on each other. If each of the bosses gains a 150% attack power boost, the team would not even last for 1 minute.

Zhang Yang thought of a strategy for a long time before talking to Endless Starlight. "You'll take on Mecca. I'll let my Mythical Turtle tank Cindy. I will take on Bellroy and Gray at the same time. These four bosses share one single HP gauge. That mean, we have no need to fight them all. Just focus only on one at a time, and that is Mecca!"

This was a last resort. Endless Starlight might have a strong equipment, but he would never be as powerful as Zhang Yang. The battle would be over in a flash for Endless Starlight if Zhang Yang had allowed Endless Starlight to tank two bosses at the same time.

Furthermore, Mecca's {Greed Aura} was able to increase the damage taken. If Endless Starlight had more than one boss on his \*ss, the auras would stack atop each other, and would further increase the overall difficulty.

Besides Mecca, the other bosses' aura effects could lower a player's damage output, damage them over time, and inflict a group status effect skill. If everyone were to fight within the aura range of the bosses, the team could not deal much damage, while taking damage over time, and risk getting stunned every 3 seconds!

If the attacking players did their jobs well without taking much damage, and Endless Starlight properly tanked the damage, it would not greatly affect the team's overall performance.

Zhang Yang summoned the Mythical Turtle and got it ready for the attack. "Hundred Shots, when the fight starts, I need you to kite Cindy to the turtle. Can't really depend on the turtle's movement speed to move to Cindy. Endless Starlight, you'll position the boss to the left, and I'll position my own bosses to the right. Remember to keep the distance between us as far as 40 meters!"

"Got it, boss."

"Understood."

"Any questions? Fatty, follow me. When I fight Bellroy, I want you to attack Gray. When Gray chases you, I'll draw his attention," said Zhang Yang.

"Leave it to me."

Zhang Yang gazed at Fantasy Sweetheart and said, "Sweetheart, I want you to focus on Endless Starlight. However, at the same time, you'll need to heal the Mythical Turtle once in a while."

"Ok!" squeaked the busty dullard.

Lastly, Zhang Yang turned to Han Ying Xue and laughed. "I guess you'll be healing me then. It's all up to you now. You'll be focusing on me, and you'll also have to make sure that the Mythical Turtle does not die!"

Han Ying Xue glared at Zhang Yang for a long time, until Zhang Yang was extremely afraid that she might just jump in and hump his brains out. That woman might actually do that! She walked closer and said, "Dinner's on you!"

"...Fine..."

Without a doubt, Zhang Yang was glad that she had just demanded dinner and nothing else. Right when he turned his back to face the boss, he could feel a sudden shiver down in his spine. Zhang Yang could have guessed that it was because of a certain Frost Snow giving him the death stare.

"\*cough\* Erhm. Let's get ready!" Zhang Yang charged up to the boss with Hundred Shots, Endless Starlight, and Fatty Han

following him.

{Spear of Obliteration}, {Finger of Justice}, {Take Aim}!

Four attacks flew out in the air and landed on all four of the bosses. With a great battle cry, the four foes charged at their attackers.

"Criminals will be punished!"

"The Sacred One does not tolerate evil!"

"Kneel down before the Lord!"

"Judgement shall be on you!"

With their short opening speeches delivered, the horses neighed furiously and galloped towards their targets.

Hundred Shots leaped back and ran towards the turtle. Although it was slow, the turtle was still able to snap its jaw and add a {Tear} on Cindy. The Mythical Turtle had easily taken over the minimal aggro generated by Hundred Shots.

Endless Starlight had kited Mecca for as far as 50 meters away from the Turtle, maintaining a good distance to prevent the auras from stacking with each other.

Zhang Yang had started his attack and grabbed hold of both Bellroy's and Gray's attention firmly.

‘Ding! You have gained the effect {Glutton} (1 Stack). Attack power reduced by 1%!’

Zhang Yang had received the first stack of debuff on him, which had lowered his basic damage by 1%. Although he had received the DoT effect of the other boss' aura, it was as low as 294 damage every 3 seconds, which was close to light caress.

Sun Xin Yu and the other of party members had started to attack Mecca as furiously as they could. They knew that this slugfest was a matter of speed. Healers were extremely important in this kind of fights since their speed and power of healing would definitely affect the outcome of the battle.

Back to Zhang Yang's battle, he clearly felt the power of the aura stacking effects when both Gray and Bellroy were on his radar. Each of the bosses had gained an additional 50% attack boost, causing their attack to pack quite the punch.

‘-12,831!’

‘-13,042!’

Their huge sword swings had literally torn the air around them ever so violently that Zhang Yang could hear, and feel the devastating blow from them. Each of the bosses had whacked him

for close to 13,000 damage points, EACH! Han Ying Xue alone could not heal that much HP alone! From the first strike onward, Zhang Yang knew what he had to do. Speeding the fight up would be the very least he could do. On top of that, Zhang Yang had to utilize all his other defensive skills and various jugs of potions!

Bellroy attacked Zhang Yang without waiting. By the time the huge, blade landed on Zhang Yang's shoulder, he could feel a faint flash of light behind him, and the boss was stunned in his place. The Titan's set equipment set effect had triggered its skill and had stunned Bellroy for 10 seconds.

The 10 seconds stun was too good to be true. Not only had it greatly reduced the attack power, its aura was also deactivated!

‘-7,328!’

As seen from Gray's diminished attacks, the aura stacking bonus attack was gone for 10 seconds. Han Ying Xue was able to heal Zhang Yang back in time, and had even managed to spare some time to heal the Turtle!

Since all the bosses shared the same HP bar, all attacks on the boss had been averaged out and had caused the entire battle to be dragged on for a little longer. Still, they had only 7,600,000 HP, which was still lesser than a Level 80 Violet-Platinum. Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the party members could easily deplete the boss' HP in less than 3 minutes.

The problem was not the attack, but the endurance. Could the

tanks and the turtle hold out for that long?

3 minutes later, the HP gauge had been hacked down, leaving all the boss with 20% HP and had allowed the usage of {Killing Cleave}. This was a new threshold for all players to attack. Almost all class had skills like a Berserker's {Indiscriminate} and {Killing Cleave}. Pyromancers had {Rage of the Flame}. There were other class skills which had not revealed themselves yet, but the important aspect was the fact that they could only be activated or used on a target with less than 20% HP.

Sadly, during this crucial moment, the Mythical Turtle had drawn its last breath. Even though the Violet-Platinum tier battle mount had a higher Defense compared to Zhang Yang, and a strong Defensive boost skill, it was only limited to a few seconds and had long cooldown. Although both Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had managed to find some time to heal the turtle, they had their focus on Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight. It was already a miracle that the turtle was able to hold on for that long.

Cindy's menacing attacks had crushed the turtle, and had turned the poor turtle into an empty shell.

"Victory shall be granted to those to worship the Lord!" Cindy raised her sword high, as she claimed victory. Without delay, Cindy shifted her horse and turned to attack the second aggro target, which was Han Ying Xue. Although Han Ying Xue had realized that she was being targeted, there was nothing she could do in time, as the boss had taken no time at all to reach to her side. A sword was swung and struck Han Ying Xue.



Transferred!

With speed on par with lightning, Zhang Yang had cast {Sacrifice} on Han Ying Xue. At the same time, Zhang Yang quickly made his way to Cindy and had attacked her. He had to draw all the aggro from Han Ying Xue to him as soon as possible. Although the amount of aggro generated by healing was small, Han Ying Xue had been healing for a full 3 minutes, so even Zhang Yang would have to work his \*ss off to snatch her aggro!

As expected, after 5 seconds, Cindy was still attacking Han Ying Xue. Zhang Yang continued to attack Cindy and displayed an utmost prowess display of footwork. He stood in between Cindy and Han Ying Xue, utilizing every possible move to physically block Cindy's attack.

"Curse you!" Cindy growled madly and wanted to circle around Zhang Yang to get to Han Ying Xue.

This time, Zhang Yang performed faster and moved around like a fish in the water. With little but fast movements, Zhang Yang had anticipated every possible move that the boss was about to make, and blocked them without fail.

"I'll be d\*mned. Dummy! You're one hell of a protector!" said Han Ying Xue after witnessing Zhang Yang's heroic actions. "Look at you, trying your very best to protect this lovely maiden. I've decided to accept your love!"

"What the hell, woman!? Can you please choose the right time

and place to say such things! We are fighting now!" Zhang Yang cried out in frustration. He had no time nor the effort to spare for Han Ying Xue's random rants or compliments. This time, she was spouting nothing but harassment!

Bellroy had long since recovered from the Titan's stun and had rejoined the other two bosses, combining their aura. All bosses had gained a 200% attack boost and were capable of dealing as much as 18,000 damage per boss. Without any action taken, Zhang Yang would go down in mere seconds!

"What about {Dance of Heaven and Earth}?" everyone asked.

"No! Not here!" Zhang Yang shot down their suggestions to use the ultimate skill. {Dance of Heaven and Earth} was a skill with a 24 hour long cool down time. Undoubtedly, the skill could only be used once! If they were to use this skill and waited for the skill to be used again, the quest [Breaking Free] would definitely fail. On the other hand, the quest - [Bury the Secret] was an S tier quest. The time taken to complete the quest would surely be used to evaluate the final score. Zhang Yang had never wished to compromise that just to complete the quest! Perfect score, nothing else! With a steeled decision, Zhang Yang would not use {Dance of Heaven and Earth} here because he knew, from the bottom of his heart, that the other bosses up ahead would be even harder than this fight.

After a good time moving around swiftly, Cindy's attack had finally been diverted to Zhang Yang. It was both good news and bad in the same time. Cindy has stopped targeting the healer. But now Zhang Yang was taking attacks from three bosses at the same

time. It was not something that anyone, not even himself could last against! In the depths of desperation, Zhang Yang used {Shield Wall} to protect and heal himself, thanks to the [Titan Wall] and the [Titan Chest Plate] armor effect. In that 15 seconds, he had gained an immense defensive power and was able to heal himself back to full health! A 15 seconds, God of War effect!

14%...

On the overall perspective, the four bosses were at the ends of their lifelines.

5%...

After the 15 seconds {Shield Wall}, Zhang Yang was once more plunged back into the mouth of the tiger. 87,000 HP was strong, but here, it was as weak as soft tofu being squashed into smithereens.

Zhang Yang still had one last trump card, the [Heart of the Death Knight] which granted him 10 seconds of true invincibility.

4%...

2%...

1%...

0%.

"T-The L-Lord shall...bless...his..s-serva-ant.." One by one, the horsemen dropped fell from their horses and left the world with one last speech at the tip of their tongues.

They had done it. Even so, there was still a lingering fear in their hearts. If the bosses had slightly more HP, they would have killed Zhang Yang. Once the main pillar falls, so would everyone else in the party.

"Why are the bosses here so hard to defeat?"

It was natural that they would voice out their complaints. Compared to the other Yellow-Gold bosses that they had encountered before, it was heaven and earth. It would better for the system to just change their tier to Violet-Platinum instead of hiding it behind a mask.

"How should I know?" said Zhang Yang. Level 90 was just a brief period. Once players had surpassed Level 100 and entered the Chaos Realm, the difficulty of all the monsters and boss would have a major upgrade. Perhaps, the system had made the bosses here harder to defeat, to allow a certain level of adjustment for the player to get used to. After all, Yellow-Gold bosses were being seen more frequently than before. What was the use of just increasing the difficulty then? It may be frequent, but the number of bosses would never be too many for everyone to fight. As such, close to 90% of players around China had never fought a battle as hard as Zhang Yang and his party had just been through.

"Enough sulking! Let's check out the boss' drops!" The chirpy voice belonged to none other than Wei Yan Er.

As expected and predicted, each boss dropped one fragment of the hammer. Endless Starlight had swept them all and had collected a total of five pieces. The man was so happy that his smile had closed his eyes shut.

[Evil Breaker Glove] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +151

Strength: +137

Dexterity: +60

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 90

Sun Xin Yu had a pair of Level 80 Violet-Platinum gloves and had no need to participate in the rolling for the item. Fatty Han, Hundred Shots, and Lost Dreams rolled for it, and Hundred Shots won the item.

[Ring of Grandiose] (Yellow-Gold, Ring)

Vitality: +76

Strength: +68

Dexterity: +68

Equip Effect: Grants a 1% chance to inflict 10,000 Shadow damage on every attack. Upon successful proc, a magic shield will be cast on the user which will absorb 10,000 damage. The shield will last for 30 seconds, or after 10,000 damage points have been absorbed.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 90

"This is a bloody good ring!"

It was good. The effect itself was enough the ring to be a Violet-Platinum tier. However, the 1% proc rate was too low.

## Chapter 423: The Three Saints

---

"I'd say, the price for the ring could go as high as 100,000 gold coins! I'm sure there will be people fighting for it!" said Fatty Han as he examined the [Ring of Grandiose].

Fatty Han's logic was right on one aspect. Rings and accessories were rare drops. Players would definitely put on a high price for it, even though it was not a Violet-Platinum tier.

"Fatty bro, I think you're missing one digit." Said Daffodil Daydream.

"Huh? What? You're saying the ring is actually worth more?" Fatty Han asked curiously.

Zhang Yang nodded. "Don't be surprised, but a ring like that would fetch prices as high as a million. However, I urge that we do not sell the ring just yet. Since neither if you have a Violet-Platinum ring, might as well use this for the moment. Until the day we can get a better one, we shall keep this."

"But...Little Yang, by the time we farm for new rings, this one would not be worth selling anymore," said Fatty Han with a bitter sad face.

Zhang Yang cocked his head and frowned. "Don't tell me that you already used up all your money!"

Fatty Han smiled. "No. But what's wrong in earning more? There's no limit to how much you can make, right?"

Wei Yan Er had picked up two more Yellow-Gold equipment, but neither of them was good. One silk armor had too much Spirit, and the other heavy armor added magic defense. Both of these two equipment were considered dissonant stats, and everyone agreed to put them up for sale in the Little Merchandise Shop.

"Let's go. There's no time to waste. We have eight more bosses to kill!"

The party proceeded on and had repeated the entire rescuing process, and came to the sixth blood pool. After they had made their way to the boss room, everyone was stunned, and filled with dread and horror. The boss room was empty.

"Oh god..."

"Don't tell me..."

"F\*ck my life..."

"Sigh..."

Fatty Han cried angrily and said, "Little Yang! Don't tell me that the future boss fights will be in groups?!"



"What do you think?! Of course, it will be! Duh!"

The party proceeded on to the next pool, and the next one after that and had still not encountered any bosses, even after the eighth boss.

"...Crap...Are we going to fight 5 bosses at one go?"

Everyone stared at Fatty Han with a sudden burst of anger but simmered down quickly. They knew that it was not Fatty Han's fault. Truthfully speaking, they were thinking the same but had remained quiet about it.

After the ninth pool, Zhang Yang and the party came into the boss room. Everyone let out a sigh of relief when they saw the bosses. There were only three in total.

[Rayleigh, Shield of the Three Saints] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 95

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 3,000

Note: One of the 12 Disciples.

[Dolor, Spear of the Three Saints]

Level: 95

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 1,500

Note: One of the 12 Disciples.

[Cherry, Wings of the Three Saints] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level 95

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 1,000

Note: One of the 12 Disciples.

As the title suggested, Rayleigh was a Guardian-class boss. He wielded an axe in his right hand and a shield in his left. His shining armor, encasing his entire character was all grand and scratch-free. Zhang Yang had one principle. That is, a knight in shining armor was not something to be respected, for he had never truly had his metal tested in battle. The next boss was Dolor. The man had two gladiuses hanging behind his back. Zhang Yang had

deduced the boss was a Thief class, since warriors carried their weapons at the waist instead of on the back. That and the occasional fading presence of the boss. The last boss was a woman named Cherry. Despite her cute name, the woman was a full-grown adult. She carried long magician staff in her right hand and was wearing a long white robe which covered her body entirely, besides her chest...

The hole in the middle of the chest was large enough to reveal half of her breasts to the world. The lower half of her robe had a gap at each side of her waist. The dressing style had reminded Zhang Yang of a Qi Pao, the traditional clothing for women. However, unlike the Qi Pao, her robe was just too revealing. The gap was extended up to close to her lower breast which revealed quite a lot of flesh, emphasizing her voluptuous body and her long fair legs.

Fatty Han snorted and smiled from ear to ear. "Well. Guys, count me out in this. It's my policy to never strike a woman. Especially when she is that hot! I mean, look at that---"

Zhang Yang smacked Fatty Han's head to shut the man up.

Zhang Yang examined the bosses and found out that the bosses were sharing the same HP gauge. It was as the same as the previous gang of four. However, the biggest difference was that, there were no annoying auras!

"I don't believe that the later bosses would be easy. They must be hiding something. Let's just hope it's not some ridiculous super killing skill."

Zhang Yang nodded. "That's true. Now listen to me. That boss is a tank class. Everyone could see the shield there. The one with the swords is a Thief class. The woman should be a magic user but I'm not sure if she is a healing type or an attacking type. But, based on my judgment, I'm guessing that she should be a healer. A tank, an attack, and a healer should be a perfect formation."

He continued, "Endless Starlight, I want you to kite Rayleigh. That boss is a tank class, so I'm hoping that its attack will be lower, to trade for its high defense. I will handle both Dolor and Cherry. Everyone else should focus all their fire solely on Cherry for she has least Defense among the boss."

"Understood." Everyone understood. Truthfully, there was no need for Zhang Yang to even explain, since that was the most common battle strategy. Hit the healer first, and then the attacker. Leave the tank for last, since he should pose no threat to the party.

"Alright, if everyone is ready, let's begin."

"Foolish mortals! How dare you defile the temple!"

"I hereby represent the Sacred One in laying judgment upon you!"

"In the name of the Lord, the Light shall purify your malicious presence! Be gone! Maverick!"

The battle started with the bosses' individual speeches and they

rushed towards Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight. The entire battle scene had changed. Not in terms of system UI or battle strategy. It was just the atmosphere of it. Endless Starlight was silent and stoic. Wei Yan Er was not making any noise or doing any annoying gesture. She was calm. After the party had been through several battles, this one was of the times that they knew a trivial mistake would lead to a catastrophe end. Everyone had the same glint in their eyes. The same when soldiers go to war. Determination.

In just a few steps, Cherry had stopped running and had pointed her staff at Zhang Yang from a good distance. From the progress bar appearing on her head, Zhang Yang had determined that Cherry was a Priest since the spell that she was casting was called {Punishment Ray}. That and her righteousness speech. Dolor, on the other hand, had vanished without a trace and entered stealth mode.

Zhang Yang gripped his sword tighter and activated {Charge}. Instead of Zhang Yang, the rest of the party had a tenseness in their heart. At such a close range, Zhang Yang would not dodge the attack. Zhang Yang swung his sword hard and laid down the first attack. With a quick spin in the air, Zhang Yang slashed his sword downward and attacked with the first {Cripple Defense}.

"Weep for your sins! Surrender yourself to the power of the Lord!" Cherry had just finished her spell and a bright light blasted off her staff. In the split second, everyone, including Zhang Yang was prepared for the worse. Han Ying Xue had already prepared to cast a healing spell on Zhang Yang if her power was too strong.

‘-9,411!’

As the damage text floated away from Zhang Yang’s character, everyone sighed with great relief, as the damage was not at all devastating. During that time, Dolor had appeared with a puff of smoke and had knocked Zhang Yang’s head with the sword’s hilt, successfully stunning him. Zhang Yang was not prepared for that since he was too focused on the Cherry’s {Punishment Ray}!

Dolor danced around swiftly as how a Thief would do after they have managed to {Ambush} their enemy. Each of the sword slashes had dealt close to 10,000 damage. Dolor had gained a buff. 30% increase in attack power which lasts for 10 seconds. It was the same as a player Assassin. Every time they appeared from stealth, they would gain a similar buff.

Without delay, Zhang Yang used {Warrior’s Will} to free himself from the stun. There was a good reason for him to do, so even though the stun duration was only 2 seconds. (Stunning duration was shortened by 50% due to the equipment effect of Heart of the Death Knight.) Zhang Yang had not attacked Dolor. If he had not freed himself to attack him, Dolor would immediately attack Han Ying Xue, since she would heal Zhang Yang and gain aggro from Dolor. Zhang Yang had to build aggro on him to prevent Han Ying Xue from being attacked.

Zhang Yang slashed and activated {Horizontal Sweep}, and damaged both Cherry and Dolor for 8,412 and 8,134 respectively. With that, Zhang Yang could have an ease of mind to let Han Ying Xue heal him without any interruptions.

Right then, Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the party had arrived and started their attack. Melee attackers went into position and laid down a flurry of attacks.

"Hmph! No matter how many of you there are, in the presence of the servant of the Lord, you are nothing but ants!" Cherry scoffed arrogantly and struck her staff into the ground.

Right at the moment when Sun Xin Yu's blade was about to reach her back, a bubble grew from under the staff and pushed everyone away at an intense speed, damaging them for 20,000 Holy damage. Everyone was thrown 10 meters away from Cherry.

"Woah! A Priest isn't supposed to do that! This isn't fair at all!" cried Fatty Han.

Luckily, both Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were long-ranged supporters. Even though they had taken 20,000 damage, it was no trouble for the two healers to bring their HP back to full capacity.

After being healed, Sun Xin Yu and other melee fighters rushed back to the fight. Luckily, Cherry's barrier-like skill was not used frequently. All the melee fighters were able to attack her without being blown away again.

Dolor had all the Thief skills a player would. After having his stun removed, Dolor stunned Zhang Yang once more with {Kidney Shot}, stunning Zhang Yang again for 6 seconds. However, having {Heart of the Death Knight}, Zhang Yang was only susceptible to 3

seconds of stun. 3 seconds later, Zhang Yang countered Dolor's furious attacks to prevent him from losing too much HP and Dolor from gaining too many combo points.

After 10 seconds, Dolor vanished into the shadows once more. Unlike players, the boss' movement speed was too quick for Zhang Yang to react. Dolor had appeared almost instantly as soon as he had vanished and had bashed Zhang Yang, stunning him for 4 seconds. Even though Zhang Yang had half the stunning duration, being stunned while he was attacking was extremely annoying. Imagine an actor who was acting passionately and asked to stop suddenly just because the director said so.

Still, as annoying as it may be, Zhang Yang was unable to do anything. Although {Warrior's Will} had been leveled up to max, it still had 60 seconds of cool down time. It could not dispel the stun as frequently as to how the boss could stun! It was already a miracle that he could possess the passive skill that reduced half of all status effect skill!

At the other side of the battle, Endless Starlight was facing with a little bit of trouble. Rayleigh had been repeatedly using {Brutal Smash} on Endless Starlight, stunning him for 4 seconds per skill use. The skill had a 2 minutes cooldown time, yet the boss was using it every 20 seconds! Endless Starlight had finally felt the immense annoyance after being stunned for 4 times. Once Endless Starlight was stunned, even for a 4 seconds period, Rayleigh would completely ignore him and proceed to target the next target in the aggro list. There was once when Endless Starlight was stunned, the boss had almost killed Fantasy Sweetheart. Luckily, Zhang Yang was quick enough to cast {Sacrifice} to divert the damage to him instead.



After getting used to all of the bosses' skills, Zhang Yang moved closer to Endless Starlight and allow him to take on all three of the boss simultaneously. The benefit for him in doing so was to allow Zhang Yang to hold on the aggro of Rayleigh. Once either one of the tanks gets stunned, Rayleigh will proceed to target the second target in the aggro rank. Zhang Yang was hoping that Rayleigh would target either him or Endless Starlight instead of the other low-HP players. He had already spent {Sacrifice}, and cannot save anyone within the 1 minute cooldown period.

Secondly, the AoE skills {Horizontal Sweep} and {Tornado Cleave} could deal better damage when all of the bosses are gathered together in one place. Those two skills were, after all, the ultimate AoE skills among the group.

"Rayleigh, protect me!"

60 seconds into the battle, the bosses HP bar had dropped down to 73%, and Cherry suddenly cried for help.

"I listen and serve!" Rayleigh responded and cast {Sacrifice} on Cherry, as he was still fighting Endless Starlight.

Having a protective barrier, Cherry immediately stopped attacking and cast a skill called {Holy Starburst}, with only 5 seconds of casting time.

"The boss is protected by {Sacrifice}! We cannot disrupt her!" cried Lost Dream. He had already used {Low Kick} on the boss but

was only rewarded with the word "Transferred". The skill was diverted to Rayleigh instead.

"Embrace the power of the Lord!" Cherry's {Holy Starburst} was completed after everyone had tried to cast their disruption skills. A ball of bright light erupted out of her body and split into three smaller balls of light. All of them flew to each boss.

‘+100,000!’

‘+400,000!’

‘+400,000!’

Three high valued healing texts popped up on all three bosses, healing them for a total of 900,000 HP. On average, their shared HP bar was raised back to 83%.

"Crap!"

The healing skill had proved to be so strong, that everyone was spouting insults and curses. Luckily, Cherry had the effect of {Destructive Smash} on her, causing her to receive 75% reduced the healing effect. If Zhang Yang had not struck her with the skill, the bosses would have healed 1,200,000 HP.

Even though the bosses did not possess any auras, they were strong. They also fought in an uncannily similar manner to that of a player's party.

# Chapter 424: Rain Down, Hell from Above

---

Making complaints now would not do anyone any good. Since the boss was designed to be that way, they could only complain to the designers.

Zhang Yang shouted, "Little brat! Maintain {Destructive Smash} on Rayleigh!"

"Ok!" Wei Yan Er nodded her head vigorously and made sure not to waste any second of the skill's cool down time.

Now that they had formed a new plan, Cherry's {Holy Starburst} would heal one boss with 75% reduced healing, one boss with 50% reduced healing, and one boss receiving a full heal. Zhang Yang's plan would prevent an extra 200,000 HP from being healed. It was a real shame that Zhang Yang's party did not have one more player who could inflict {Destructive Smash}.

{Destructive Smash} had a cooldown time of 8 seconds, and its effects would last for 10 seconds. In theory, they could inflict all three of the bosses with {Destructive Smash}. However, both of them only had 2 seconds to spare. Furthermore, Dolor the Thief was extremely tough to detect, for he was always in stealth. There was little to no room for them to make the strike. None of these bosses was a good fight!

Rayleigh's Defenses were too strong, Cherry was always using the area knockback skill, as for Dolor the Thief, he had been sneaking around, and had been stunning players whenever and wherever he

wanted to! There was no room for a perfect attack!

Luckily, the party's attacking power was stronger than Cherry's healing power. The second {Holy Starburst} had only healed themselves for around 8%, while the team was able to take off 27% of the bosses' HP. Comparing the damage to the healing ratio, it was nothing to be worried about.

50%...

"Foolish mortals! Pray to the Lord, and He shall deliver salvation!" Rayleigh roared to the sky.

Boom!

Rayleigh stomped on the ground with his right leg and created a gold-colored aura beneath his feet. The light glowed brightest from where he stood and faded after 5 meters.

"Hey...I think that's my {Sanction}!" Endless Starlight cried.

"That can't be right. The boss is a Guardian. How could he have a Defender's {Sanction}!" said Lost Dream sarcastically, as he attacked. Right then, Rayleigh struck Endless Starlight with {Brutal Smash}, stunning him for 4 seconds and headed straight to the second aggro rank.

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

...

As the boss approached the group of melee attackers, the light around the boss had dealt 10,000 basic damage to everyone.

"Sh\*t! It's really {Sanction}!" They cried in surprised and quickly ran from the vicinity of the boss.

"How could a Guardian have a Defender's skill?" Fatty Han cocked his head.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "That's probably because the boss might be a Defending Guardian!"

"Wut?"

Everyone frowned. They were not sure whether Zhang Yang was joking if he was being serious. Only Wei Yan Er had voiced out and asked, "Is there such a class?"

After being stunned by the boss for 4 seconds, Endless Starlight had taken 4 seconds of {Sanction} damage. Good thing that he was a Defender with a high magic Defense. Out of the 10,000 damage, Endless Starlight had taken close to 5,000 damage instead. Still, he had taken 4 seconds of {Sanction} and had suffered more than

20,000 damage, which did not require any immediately healing.

Rayleigh's {Sanction} skill was complicated. Occasionally, he would use it once every 10 seconds, forcing the party to move around endlessly, to escape the AoE skill. However, there was a trick in escaping the skill. There is a 1 second delay before the skill could inflict damage on a player. A player must be in the vicinity of the skill to receive the damage and will only continue receiving damage every second for a total of 10 seconds, if they continue to stand in the golden light. Once the light is seen beneath the boss, one could easily jump away to prevent any damage.

Unfortunately for Endless Starlight, who had to tank the boss, under the effects of {Brutal Smash}, would be stunned for 4 seconds, and will take 4 seconds worth of damage from {Sanction}.

Running around like rats being chased by a cat, the party had managed to bring the boss' HP down to 40%.

"Heretic will be destroyed! Snow storm! Bury the sinners in your snow!" Cherry cried.

White clouds suddenly formed around the battlefield, and had hurled sharp and long icicles! Each of them dealt the same 10,000 basic damage. The problem was worse, the area of effect, was as wide as 10 meters.

"Move away! Move away!"

Before any of them could even see where they were landing, Rayleigh's was there to attack, with his {Sanction} still active!

"What the f\*ck! First, the Warrior has the Knight skill. Now the Priest has a Spellcaster skill! What's next? The Thief having Hunter's skill!? F\*ck this!" Fatty Han madly yelled.

"D\*mn! Don't jinx it! Stupid pig!"

Unlike a player's {Hail Storm} which required constant magic channeling. The boss's {Hail Storm} has only required a 2 seconds cast time of creating clouds above to continue hurling more sharp icicles down the earth, as the caster itself would be free to move around. In this case, Cherry was able to move around to attack and cast {Holy Starburst}.

Everyone, including Zhang Yang himself, had to run around like cats and dogs. Out of the party, Endless Starlight had the short end of the stick. Once he was stunned by the boss, he would be susceptible to both {Sanction} and {Hail Storm}. He would be killed by all the attacks!

Zhang Yang checked the situation and found that he was ranked second, behind Endless Starlight in the aggro list, for Rayleigh. "Starlight! Kite the boss away!"

Previously, Zhang Yang had dragged all three bosses together to inflict enough aggro and to maximize damage dealt by {Horizontal Sweep} and {Tornado Cleave}. However, now that two bosses had revealed a new skill, the strategy to optimize usage of the two AoE

skills was no longer worth its toll.

"Got it, boss!" cried Endless Starlight. He then dragged the boss away to the opposite direction. Now that he had kited him away from Cherry, he could reduce the chance of him getting hit by Cherry's {Hail Storm}, since Cherry had shown the tendency to cast {Hail Storm} on an area with the most concentration of players.

30%...

"Fear not, for the Lord has laid down His blessing upon his loyal followers!" Dolor has finally come out of hiding. This time, as Fatty Han had speculated, Dolor had taken out a longbow and had fired one single arrow into the sky. The arrow then glowed with an intense radiance and burst into countless light arrows which fell back down to the earth, targeting the area with the most players.

It was another barrage of attack which dealt the same 10,000 basic damage.

Everyone started to run around, again! They were so mad and tired at the unfairness the bosses had displayed. First, they fought with human-like cooperation, now they had cheating skills which could deal AoE attacks! None of that was fair!

"The Lord's judgment shall be delivered!" All three bosses cried out in unison, casting the golden light, the ice clouds, and the barrage of the arrows.



Just when they had thought to solve the problem, a new one arose. After having Endless Starlight pull Rayleigh away, the boss would automatically leave Endless Starlight and runs back to Cheery and Dolor. After a series of trial and error, the party had discovered that 30 meters was the maximum distance between Rayleigh and the other bosses before he would start running back. The battle was designed that way, so that all three AoE skills would be stacked atop one another to increase the difficulty.

"This is the limit guys! I can't kite him any further. You guys will have to make do with it!" cried Endless Starlight.

"How troublesome!" said Fatty Han as he continued to fire arrows.

The only advantage that Zhang Yang could find was the HP. Luckily, the bosses were only Yellow-Gold tiered. All of the HP combined would only be, at most, 9,000,000. If they were Violet-Platinum tiered, it would be a whole lot more troublesome. Probably, even losing the fight before 50%!

20%...

10%...

The AoE multi-target magic attack skills were strong, but the damage inflicted on every target was not too life-threatening. The healers of the party were still able to keep everyone alive and well. However, it took so much effort that their MP expenditure was off the charts. Fantasy Sweetheart had already emptied her MP gauge

for a number of times. Han Ying Xue had to step up to heal Endless Starlight many times around, or he would have already died!

The final push arrived when the boss was left with only 10%, and so was Han Ying Xue's MP bar.

"Are you sure we're not using {Dance of Heaven and Earth}?" asked Han Ying Xue.

"No." said Zhang Yang even when he was tempted to. "There're still five more bosses to go. We must keep our trump card for the worse! Please hold on! How long till you can use an MP potion?"

"21 seconds!"

"Fantasy?"

"38 seconds."

Zhang Yang nodded his head and call out to Endless Starlight. "Starlight! Come to me! Use your {Vanguard's Aggression}!"

"Got it, boss!" Endless Starlight dashed towards the center of the party and activated the skill there. A bluish-white barrier expanded 3 meters out from where he stood.

Upon activation of the shield, all bosses had cast their AoE onto the crowded party. Since {Vanguard's Aggression} was used, each

of the bosses' skill had only managed to damage the party member with more than 1,000 damage.

There was a change in the skill. Before the patch, the skill was made to look like a stationary barrier. This time, the skill was like a user's aura. It could be moved when the caster did.

6%...

After Endless Starlight's {Vanguard's Aggression} ended, Zhang Yang took over and used his, and also {Shield Wall}.

2%...

"The Lord shall beseech eternal life upon his followers!" Cherry cried. "Rayleigh, protect me!"

"I hear and obey! The Lord shall provide and serve!" Rayleigh cast {Sacrifice} on Cherry, as she started to chant {Holy Starburst}!

"Oh no!" Zhang Yang panicked. "Kill the boss, quick! End this fight before the boss could cast that skill!" Zhang Yang jumped at the boss and activated {Killing Cleave}.

Due to {Sacrifice} protecting Cherry, the damage was dealt by Rayleigh. However, it was still directly hurting Cherry since all the bosses shared the same HP bar. Zhang Yang and his team would have to deal 180,000 in 5 seconds to prevent Cherry from finishing her chant for her healing spell. Yet, during this decisive moment,

two of the healers had already expended all their MP and could not do anything!

150,000! 110,000! 70,000! 10,000!

Besides their trump card, the party had used all their skills, small or big, they used it, as long as it dealt the strongest amount of damage in the shortest time.

5 seconds...

o!

Just as Cherry was about to strike her staff onto the ground to cast the light, the party had successfully depleted the boss' HP!

"Ack!"

"Ufffhh!"

"Urgh!"

Three thuds were heard as the three bosses fell to the floor.

"W-We've done it." Lost Dream dropped his daggers and fell to his knees.

Everyone did the same and fell to the floor due to their immense fatigue. This boss fight was too tiresome. Everyone sat down on the floor to relax for a moment. But not for Wei Yan Er.

She is just like a chirpy little plaything, with a perpetual mood of seeking joy in everything. Giggling and laughing with the happiness of defeating the bosses, the little brat skipped and hopped over to the loot.

## Chapter 425: Requiem

---

"Weepee! I hope that the bosses will give us some awesome stuff!" said Wei Yan Er with an innocent smile.

Zhang Yang, still huffing from the fatigue of the fight, said, "Don't get your hopes high girl, lest you be disappointed. If Yellow-Gold bosses drop Violent-Platinum gears, I'd be running all day searching for them! If the boss does drop Yellow-Gold equips, then...wait for it. There're no Yellow-Gold equip stronger than a Violet-Platinum!"

Wei Yan Er listened but Zhang Yang had already lost her halfway through his explanation.

Daffodil Daydream interjected in and said, "Yan Er, don't worry too much. A Yellow-Gold drop is still worth a lot of money!"

Only after Daffodil Daydream had explained it that way, Wei Yan Er had smiled and walked away happily.

"Daffy. I heard that you're moving out of your old house?" asked Han Ying Xue, while waiting for the little brat to pick the loot.

"That's right. Before guild master had hired me, my previous job's salary was too low for me to have a room of my own. That is why I have been sharing a room with someone else. However, I was having a bad time, since my roommate is a lazy, sloppy... woman."

Daffodil Daydream had suddenly got agitated. There was a glint of anger in her eyes.

"We had already agreed to clean the place once a day, on alternate days. However, when it was her turn to do the cleaning, she would always give all sorts of excuses to skip the work! In the end, I had to do it myself. The girl had always been taking advantage of me. Whenever I did some cooking, she would always invite herself for dinner and eat for free. Worst of all, she would leave without even saying thanks! If I were to have one of her fruits in the fridge, she would be nagging at me for a week!" said Daffodil Daydream.

Everyone was stunned. Never have Daffodil Daydream expressed herself at that level of magnitude, besides trashing Endless Fantasy.

"Well. There're 9 billion people in the world and you've just happened to bump into one of the scrappiest!"

"What a tool!"

"I'd slap her but I'd rather not get dungs on my hands."

Everyone nodded their head.

"I'm not finished!" said Daffodil Daydream. "Last week, when I had not logged into the game due to a major flu, I had asked for her help to get some medication but she didn't even care! That b\*tch

even blasted the stereo for the entire day! GRAH! I'm so mad!"

"Now that I have some money in my bank account, I decided to get myself a room of my own, and live there peacefully!"

"Sister Daffy, why don't you come to Zhao Su?" said Wei Yan Er. "It so happens that noobie wants to buy a house. Let's get a bigger one and live together!"

Huh?

Zhang Yang frowned at the little brat's endless means of disrupting his peaceful life. On the other hand, there was a slight happiness in Daffodil Daydream's eyes. She looked interested but did not say anything.

Han Ying Xue joined the conversation and said, "Daffy, my girl. Living alone is not safe for a girl. Come and live with us. I'd say, the more the merrier! Plus, it's easier for us anyway!"

Daffodil Daydream smiled happily and nodded her head. "I'll get a plane ticket tomorrow, then."

Zhang Yang literally cried. These three women had made their decision without Zhang Yang's opinion. Han Ying Xue had invited Daffodil Daydream to live in his house without asking him first! He then sent a private message to Han Ying Xue saying, "Aren't you a little worried about her making a move on me?"



"Please, don't flatter yourself. You're not a rare specimen and not every woman would want you! Then again, if she does make a move, could she even compete with me?" said Han Ying Xue. She then winked and sent a flying kiss to Zhang Yang, which made his heart skipped a beat. It was of fear.

"You minx, don't play with fire! I'm still staying with you under one roof!" said Zhang Yang with anger.

"Come at me! I'm not afraid of a monk! By the way, I never lock my door when I sleep. You already know that I wear nothing beneath the blanket," said Han Ying Xue with a sinister smile.

"Tch. Prepare to get dirty tonight, then."

"Oh please. Like you would."

Wei Yan Er had picked up three hammer fragments and had given them all to Endless Starlight. She had also picked up two rather strong Yellow-Gold equipment.

[Abyssal Mask] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +302

Strength: +121

Dexterity: +274

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 90

"Phew! These Level 90 equipment sure are strong!" said Fatty Han. "That's probably worth a mountain!"

"Erhm. Fatty bro. Could you please be a little more open-minded? Why are you always thinking of money?" said Fantasy Sweetheart. Since they both were in the secondary party, her relationship with Fatty Han was as close as Zhang Yang and Daffodil Daydream. Close, but not too close, like Han Ying Xue.

"Perhaps, he's trying to earn enough money to get a certain part of him enlarged! HAHAAHAHA!" said Endless Starlight.

"WHAT!? I don't need to get it enlarged! I can prove it to you! Mine is the biggest! The biggest!" Right then, Fatty Han proceeds to strip all his equipment.

"Stop! Please Stop! Alright! You have the biggest one! Alright!" said Endless Starlight. If anyone laid eyes on that Fatty Han's manly part, no one would have any appetite for a week!

Everyone laughed it off.

[Hell's Lord Chest Plate] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +312

Strength: +121

Dexterity: +60

Equip Effect: Absorb 115 damage on attack.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 90

"Tank's equip! Hell yeah!" cried Fatty Han, whilst jumping with joy. Fighting a boss would definitely require a strong tank. Thus, tank equipment were always expensive, especially strong ones. It was one of the reasons why Zhang Yang had worked so hard to get the recipe to craft the shield in the Level 10 dungeon.

"Hm...I'd say, it would be worth 300,000 to 400,000 gold coins." said Daffodil Daydream. She was the treasurer of Lone Desert Smoke, working with money had made her exceptionally sensitive to the appraisal of items.

"Jackpot!" Fatty Han screamed.

This was the benefit of being ahead, in terms of level. Having a higher level than the average player gave you the advantage of farming higher leveled equipment. One could sell the highest leveled equipment in the game before anyone could and would manipulate the economy. On the other hand, when players are already reaching Level 90, how much could the Level 60 strongest sword could be sold for? When it first appeared, it could be sold for the same price as the chest plate, but now, it could go for as much as 10,000 gold coins.

"Have you noticed anything? Ever since we had fought here, the number of equipment drops have been getting lesser and lesser!" cried Endless Starlight.

"Yeah!"

Level 80 Yellow Gold bosses would normally drop 2 to 3 Yellow-Gold equipment and 6 to 8 Gray-Silver equips. However, in Level 90 maps, Julio had only dropped 1 Yellow-Gold equipment, and 2 to 3 Gray-Silver drops. It was a significant drop in value.

The Three Saints had dropped 3 Yellow-Gold equipment, and 6 Gray-Silvers. It was much less than what a Level 80 map boss would drop.

[Skill Book: Requiem]

Use: Teaches you [Requiem]

Class Requirement: Priest, Sacred Knight.

Level Requirement: 90

"What does this skill do?" everyone asked. Even the name of the skill seemed special for a Priest and Sacred Knight to have.

"Noobie tank, what is that skill?" asked Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang laughed bitterly and said, "Even if I am a beta player, it does not mean that I know every single detail of the game!"

There were too many skills for every class and sub-class in the game. There was no way for Zhang Yang to remember every one of them, when he still had other details of the game to remember in the first place! At most, the only class that Zhang Yang could clearly remember was the Guardian's and Warrior's skill.

Having more skills did not harm a character. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart rolled the item, which was won by Han Ying Xue who learned it immediately after obtaining it.

[Requiem]: Sings a despair requiem. Converts all HP to MP. Limits to 1 HP at minimum. Cooldown time: 10 minutes.

"Holy....This is good skill! I won't have to worry about MP anymore!"

In normal circumstances, a player's HP would always be higher than their MP. In a state of full health, it could recover all MP back. Han Ying Xue had over 30,000 HP. She would only consume close to 800 MP to restore herself back to full health. Her maximum MP was 16,000 in total (Sincerity Set effect: Increases MAX MP by 5,000 points).

If the skill had a lower cooldown rate, she could practically have an endless supply of MP!

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "It's good. Yes. But be careful when and before you use the skill. Don't stand in the attack range when you use it, or you'll be killed!"

"Please. Do you think I'm as dimwitted as that little brat?" said Han Ying Xue while she pouted her lips.

"Erhm...sister Daffy. What is dimwitted?" asked Wei Yan Er as she nudged Daffodil Daydream.

"Well...erhm...it's a synonym for stupid..." said Daffodil Daydream awkwardly.

"Hey! HAN YING XUE! CALL ME DEEWITED AGAIN AND I'LL CUT TIES WITH YOU!" cried the little brat. She had even mispronounced "dimwitted".

Everyone laughed. Hundred Shots quickly interjected everyone's happy time before things got out of control. "Guys, let's continue with the quest. Remember, the clock is still ticking. Even though the quest does not have a time limit, but time in real life is still flowing."

Everyone nodded and Zhang Yang was proud of what Hundred Shots had turned out to be. The party hurried on, and made their way to the ninth pool.

The guards were as easy to deal with as before, making it easy for the team to proceed with the rescuing of the prisoners. After releasing them from the cages, the party proceeded to the boss room only to find it empty again, for the third time! Knowing that, the team had no reactions. Since it was already a norm, the team moved onto the next boss without hesitation. This time, before they knew it, the 10th boss was there, along with the 9th boss.

The pair was a couple. The man was stoic, bold, well-built, and handsome. The woman was beautiful, tall, and had long red hair. Both of them were sitting in one chair, cuddling each other lovingly.

[Ezali] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 95

HP: 9,500,000

Defense: 2,600

Note: One of the 12 Disciples. Logan's wife.

[Logan] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 95

HP: 9,500,000

Defense: 2,600

Note: One of the 12 Disciples. Ezali's husband.

As it was with the previous group boss battles, Ezali and Logan shared the same HP gauge. However, this time, they were both Violet-Platinum tier, with a massive 19,000,000 HP!

"Yes! Finally! Violet-Platinum!" everyone was excited at the opportunity of fighting a Violet-Platinum boss. However, they had only seen the rewards of it. Neither of them besides Zhang Yang had a full set of Violet-Platinum equipment. They were blinded by the rewards, but not the path to getting it.

"Looks like we are lucky to have, not one, but two Violet-Platinum bosses! It seems after the 9th and 10th, from here on out, the bosses would be all Violet-Platinum!"



"Haha! One Sword Stroke can suck my d\*ck! He would be jealous of us!"

"Sigh...why must there be two of them! Why can't they just live alone!" said Han Ying Xue. She had always loved to slack in battle and heal only with {Regeneration}. She hated battling tough opponents since they required actual, constant healing!

"Starlight. Which one would you take on?" Zhang Yang asked with a smile.

"Heh! I'm surprised that you still need to ask me, boss. I'll take on the woman!"

"Haha! I like your style! Perverted fox!" cried Fatty Han.

"Bro! You're calling me a pervert? It's like a pot calling a kettle black!" said Endless Starlight.

"Oh please shut it! Both of you have the brains of a tuna fish!" said Daffodil Daydream. "Could you at least think of a way to defeat the boss? We just had our butts served to us by three Yellow-Gold bosses! Right now, there are two Violet-Platinum, that will, probably, be even tougher to defeat?"

Everyone agreed with Daffodil Daydream's angry statement. Especially when she had confessed about being smacked around by the previous bosses. No one knew how the two boss this round

would kick their sorry butts.

Zhang Yang laughed and calmed everyone down. "Relax. Never try, never know. Starlight! Take on the woman. I'll handle the wolve—I mean...Logan. Yeah. Sorry about that. Alright! Drink up your potions and let's get started."

Zhang Yang went ahead but waited for Endless Starlight to match his speed. At the same time, both Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight cast their first skills.

{Spear of Obliteration}! {Shield Toss}!

"What is this bunch of rats!?"

"You dare to defile the Holy grounds?"

The bosses were greatly annoyed at having their "cuddling" session disturbed by the party. Both of them stood up and growled loudly like a certain character from a certain Japanese animation film. There was a glow of light which seeped out of their body and soared upwards. At the beginning, the light shared the same color, but eventually, both Ezali and Logan gained their own specific colors of light. Logan released light of snow white, while Ezali emitted light of crimson red. Both lights expanded and shot out as far as 40 meters and remained there.

‘Ding! You have received the effect: Icy Touch (Stack 1). Receive 500 Ice Damage every 3 seconds, for 10 seconds. Icy Touch can be

dispelled by Burning Touch after 10 stacks.'

'Ding! You have received the effect: Burning Touch (Stack 1). Receive 500 Fire Damage every 3 seconds, for 10 seconds. Burning Touch can be dispelled by Icy Touch after 10 stacks.'

Since both of the bosses stood together, both Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight had received both Icy Touch and Burning Touch at the same time. Sadly, the melee attackers who were following Zhang Yang closely behind had also received both the DoT effects.

"Starlight. Kite your boss further away!" cried Zhang Yang as he kited Logan away from Endless Starlight as he kited Ezali in the opposite direction.

Even though Icy Touch and Burning Touch repelled each other, they still required a certain condition. The DoT effects had to be stacked by up to 10 stacks. Before the stack count reaches 10, none of the DoT skills could be dispelled and will continue to stack further.

One or two stacks posed no problem. But when the stack counts reach a dangerous number, it could prove fatal.

'Ding! You have received the effect: Icy Touch (Stack 2). Receive 1,000 Ice Damage every 3 seconds for 10 seconds. Icy Touch can be dispelled by Burning Touch after 10 stacks.'

Even though Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight had retreated

rapidly, the boss' DoT auras were triggered once every 6 seconds. On the second time, Zhang Yang had only taken the Icy Touch, while Endless Starlight had only taken the Burning Touch.

"Snowy B\*tch! Heal that boy! Fantasy! You're with me!" said Zhang Yang. Since Zhang Yang's equipment was much stronger than Endless Fantasy, Fantasy Sweetheart's weaker healing could keep up with Zhang Yang. Vice versa, Han Ying Xue had the better healing power, which was suitable for Endless Starlight since his equipment was weaker, and would take more damage from the boss' attack. If it was the other way around, it might be fatal for Endless Starlight. This matching was the best since it was to balance out the differences in both tanks and healers' capabilities.

Fatty Han started laughing. "Little Yang. You can't behave like that. I know the number 1 rule is "New is always better". But you can't always stick to that!"

"What number 1 rule? I never said that! F\*ck you, f\*cking fatso! You could keep quiet and 1 hour and no one would call you a mute!"

"That's right! Fatty bro always loves to make things up!" said Fantasy Sweetheart, pouting her cheeks.

## Chapter 426: A Tight Battle Spot

---

Logan stomped down onto the ground thunderously, looking simply heroic. As he presented himself out like a prince battling evil dragons in a fairy tale, it had made him look more like the good guy and Zhang Yang and his gang looked more like a bunch of evil goons who were trying to cause havoc!

"Intruders, this is as far as you can go!" Logan spoke with a powerful voice. He then swung the long sword in his hand with brute force towards Zhang Yang! It was like a flash of lightning, flashing through!

But Zhang Yang was even quicker! His shield was raised up high right before the sword could even touch him.

{Block}!

‘-59!’

"Hell yea!" Seeing the number of damage reflected back on the boss, the gang could not help themselves but cheered for Zhang Yang. The attack of the boss was extremely fast! And to be able to react so fast, and to activate {Block} at the very last moment, like one millisecond, or maybe one centisecond right before the attack hits, required extremely great reflexes and perfect timing for one to do that!

Unfortunately, the defense of the boss was 2,600 points! Even though Zhang Yang had {Eagle Eye} that ignored 50% defense, but

without 5 layers of {Cripple Defense}, the boss would still have a total of 1,300 defense points. That was why the reflective damage from his shield was only 59 points.

{Cripple Defense}!

‘-319!’

{Shield Bash}!

‘-4,396!’

Zhang Yang smashed the first layer of {Cripple Defense} onto the boss before he gave a ‘free’ blow of {Shield Bash} on the boss. That instant bash attack gave a satisfying damage!

With his initial move to secure the aggro of the boss all onto him, Sun Xin Yu and the rest of his gang immediately unleashed everything that they had, rounding up on Logan and attacking the boss madly with their weapons.

Endless Starlight was left in tears, "Why didn't you guys come and attack the boss that I'm kiting?"

"Hehe, you're too noob! It won't be safe for us!" Wei Yan Er giggled.

It actually wasn't because Endless Starlight was a noob or that he

was not good enough for them, the main reason was that his equipment grade was a little weak compared to the equipment of the attackers on the party, like Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er. Tankers do not only rely on their skills to pull the aggro of their targets, they also need good equipment to support them in doing so. Without good enough equipment to boost their damage output to a satisfactory value, the attackers will be bringing more damage to the targets, and when that happens, the targets will switch their aggro onto the players that unleash higher damage values! In this situation, Endless Starlight will only lose the aggro of the boss over to any of the hard-hitting attackers!

Zhang Yang tried to comfort him, "The main reason being, Defenders do not have skills like {Cripple Defense}, so the physical damages that can be done to the boss will be reduced steeply!"

Endless Starlight immediately recovered to his complaining, self-righteous attitude, "That's right! The system is biased! All the good and useful skills have been given to the Warriors!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "You can't say that either because Knights can also learn a skill similar to {Cripple Defense} later. However, the skill is aimed at the magic resistance of bosses, so Knights will have to work closely with Warriors!"

"However, the bosses in {{God's Miracle}} have high defense, and very few of them have high magic resistance!" Hundred Shots added in a hurry.

Endless Starlight was excited to know that he could still learn a new skill regarding defense reduction, but his excitement was soon

‘extinguished’ by Hundred Shots’ words. Everyone was laughing at him.

"Bunch of weak and pathetic humans, I can crush you all with only one of my fingers!" Logan let out an outburst of raging roars and began to swing his long sword even more violently. The sharpness of the blade cut open the air as swirls of air were formed into masses of air balls, emitting out some intense sonic booms!

"Come at me! Come ‘crush’ me with your fingers!" Fatty Han tried to provoke the boss, as he took the time he had left after shooting the boss, turning around and shaking his big fat ass at the boss! He even slapped his booty a few times without any sense of rhythm!

Logan was instantly enraged. Although there weren't any changes on the aggro list of the boss, the boss switched his target to Fatty Han all of a sudden and pointed one of his fingers towards Fatty Han. The fingertip of that finger of the boss seemed to have a bloody vague light glowing on it.

Fatty Han laughed as he saw how the boss reacted, and then he showed the boss his middle finger, "Who doesn't know how to pose? Haha!"

"You imbecile! You must die!" Logan shouted, and a stream of light radiating in the color of blood was shot out from his fingertip, straight at Fatty Han at a very unusually high speed!

Switch!



The attack landed on Fatty Han, but a damage value of 14,694 points appeared right on top of Zhang Yang instead!

Fatty Han was very shocked. If it wasn't for Zhang Yang activating {Vanguard's Aggression} on him in time, he would have to suffer the damage. Although he wouldn't die just yet, he still carried 6 layers of {Touch of Frost}, that had placed him in a very dangerous situation! And Fantasy Sweetheart was focused on healing Zhang Yang as her priority target, she would only throw a {Regeneration} onto the other players around and activate {Mending Prayers} to heal a player nearest to her at random. So, it would not be possible for her to cast the tanker aside and focus on healing any other attackers!

After Logan struck out that attack, he no longer put his attention on Fatty Han and turned his attention back on Zhang Yang.

"Brother fatty! Please don't provoke the boss without any reason!" Fantasy Sweetheart was not Han Ying Xue. Although she had been tagging along with Zhang Yang and his gang for a while and had obtained quite a number of good equipment, she was still no Han Ying Xue. The main reason being due to the number of skills she had been far lesser than the skills that Han Ying Xue had. So, whether it is her capability of emergency healing, or to sustain the endurance of the entire party, she would still not be as good as Han Ying Xue.

The little lady was so busy that she did not even have time to scratch her head! She was currently required to heal Zhang Yang with everything she got, while having to heal the others with her

{Regeneration} whenever she is able, to prevent the effect of {Touch of Frost} from further reducing the health points of her remaining party members - other than Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed, "That should be a random skill from the boss. It should be a coincidence that Fatty Han was struck. Maybe the boss was already trying to use the skill on us randomly, and Fatty Han went on to provoke him! Haha!"

"Haha! Wretched fatty! Literally 'an open mouth having the tendency to catch flies in the mouth!'" Wei Yan Er was making fun of Fatty Han.

'Ding! You have been affected by Touch of Frost (10 Layers), receive 4,500 frost damage every 3 seconds, lasts for 10 minutes. When Touch of Frost has been stacked up to 10 layers, it can be deactivated with Touch of Flame!'

The battle went on for 60 seconds, and both effects of 'Touch of Frost' and 'Touch of Flame' had been stacked up to 10 layers! Each of them will be receiving 5,000 damage every 3 seconds, but for a healer to heal all 10 of them - it's a heavy task!

Zhang Yang pulled Logan over towards Endless Starlight, "Starlight, time to undo the effects of the skills by stacking them together!"

"Roger!"

The two tankers who were kiting a boss of their own began to move towards a point where the two of them would intercept. The other members of the party were naturally following them closely. In just a short moment, they met with each other at the intercept point, and so did the two bosses!

Boom!

A frosty white stream of light emanated right out of Ezali, while a scorching crimson stream of light emanated right out of Logan. Then the lights slid across the head of everyone around.

‘Ding! You have been affected by Touch of Frost (1 Layer), receive 500 frost damage every 3 seconds, lasts for 10 minutes. When Touch of Frost has stacked up to 10 layers, it can be deactivated with Touch of Flame!’

‘Ding! You have been affected by Touch of Flame (1 Layers), receive 500 frost damage every 3 seconds, lasts for 10 minutes. When Touch of Flame has stacked up to 10 layers, it can be deactivated with Touch of Frost!’

Everything went according to plan, and Zhang Yang and his party members were able to loop the effects on them from ‘10 layers’ all the way back to ‘1 layer’ for the first time, and now they just had to wait for the effects to stack up to 10 layers before they do it again. As long as they can repeatedly loop the effect cycle by splitting up and regrouping at the right timing, it didn’t matter if the health bars of the bosses are very long. It was just a matter of time before the bosses have to give in and die!

"Phew! Finally, we have come across two bosses that are easier to fight!" Fatty Han let out a breath of relief.

However ---

"Logan, hurry up and get rid of these useless pests!" Ezali was getting impatient.

"Yes love, I shall follow everything you planned for!" Logan replied her immediately.

The two bosses raised up their long swords in their hands and clashed the two swords into each other. Two streams of lights, the white one gushed into the body of Ezali while the red one gushed into the body of Logan.

‘Ding! Ezali has acquired Defiant (1 Layer), physical attack increased by 10%!’

‘Ding! Logan has acquired Defiant (1 Layer), physical attack increased by 10%!’

The two bosses instantly acquired an additional beneficial effect on them as they were raising up their swords up in the air, and let out some raging roars!

"What the f\*ck! Your mouth! You f\*cking wretched fatty!"

The two bosses split up again and the battle returned to the previous rhythm. The only difference was that the physical attack of the bosses had increased by 10%. Fortunately, the damage of the debuffs {Touch of Frost} and {Touch of Flame} were not increased as they were considered as magic type attacks!

The shared health bar of the two bosses was currently at 87%.

Zhang Yang made a rough calculation in his own mind. At their current situation, it would require them to repeat the cycle for 8 times in order for them to empty out the shared health bar of the bosses! After 8 times of this repetitive cycle, the physical attack of the bosses will increase by 180%, boosting their basic attack up to about 38,000! Let alone potions, the healing capability of Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart would not be able to catch up with the damage done to their party members!

And if they don't kite the two bosses to intercept and meet each other, then the effects of {Touch of Frost} and {Touch of Flame} will be stacking up indefinitely until the healers no longer can keep with their healing!

What the f\*ck! This situation is like pushing people to choose whether to jump off a building or jump into a river and drown! Neither of the choices were beneficial!

"Zhang Yang! We will not make it if this goes on!" Zhang Yang wasn't the only person to see the problem. Hundred Shots quickly spoke to Zhang Yang about it.

Zhang Yang nodded, "Maybe it's time! Everyone! Take your [Power Potion] and get ready, it's time we hold nothing back and activate our {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} together!"

They could still crunch their teeth together and get through the previous bosses without much of a problem, but these two bosses had an extremely long shared health bar, or maybe it's just too long!

Everyone followed Zhang Yang's instruction and took their [Power Potions], and then they unleashed their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} and other whatsoever hell onto the bosses.

In the brief 10-second of time, the two bosses were inflicted with a massive number of damages, however, those were just a number of hits. Even though everyone had already taken [Power potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)]. they could only inflict a damage of 140,000 to the bosses. Yes, it is indeed a disastrous damage for the players, but for a boss with an extremely long health bar, especially having a shared health bar with another boss that made it even longer? No so much. They only managed to reduce the shared health bar of the bosses by 7%.

Zhang Yang was trying to take out all of the scrolls available in his inventory as he was holding on against the boss. He would just throw any scrolls that can reduce attributes or stats onto the boss, as he kept on using the scrolls that can increase damages onto all of his party members! In short, he was clearing out everything in his possession in an attempt to take down the bosses!

The reason he was willing to go so far was that he will not be able to meet Madran - The Son of God. And to not be able to meet Madran, he would never get his hands on the seventh piece of the [Dimensional Key Fragment]. Be reminded that all seven pieces of the [Dimensional Key Fragments] must be in one place to form a complete piece of [Dimensional Key] which was required to access the treasure vault in the void!

Zhang Yang had been busting his ass trying to complete this main quest. And now that he is just one fragment short from completing the quest, he was never going to let everything go to waste, just because he was just trying to be stingy about the items in his inventory! So he's throwing everything he had out like a Santa Claus!

With Zhang Yang's contribution regardless of the price to be paid, the firepower of the entire party got boosted up by a notch immediately! They were able to bring down the health bar of the bosses even faster.

70%, 50%, 30%... as the shared health bar of the two bosses were reducing rapidly, the beneficial effect on the bosses' {Defiant} was stacking up layer by layer, and their damage output were increasing as the effects were stacking up!

"Here you go!" Zhang Yang tore the last piece of [Fatigue (Scroll)] on hand and threw it straight onto Ezali --- as he had more life-saving skills and better equipment compared to Endless Starlight, he made the choice to throw the final piece of [Fatigue (Scroll)] that reduced the attack of the boss onto the boss - Ezali, that Endless Starlight was engaging.

# Chapter 427: Knock Down!

---

"Boss, I'll love you for eternity for taking care of me so much!" Endless Starlight let out a weird cry.

"Get lost!"

The effect of the {Defiant} had been stacked up to 6 layers, and the attack of the bosses had become a little too powerful for the players to handle. One single hit onto Zhang Yang could inflict about 20,000 to 30,000 damage! Fortunately, {Block} could immunize the user from any damage every 6 seconds, and it did not matter how strong the attack was. That reduced the DPS of the boss down to about 7,600 points.

Although this amount of DPS was still beyond the healing capability of Fantasy Sweetheart, with appropriate timing, using life-saving skills and some [Potions] on hand, Zhang Yang could still manage! On the other hand, since that the [Fatigue (Scroll)] had already reduced the attack of the boss by 10% and he had Han Ying Xue the super healer to back him up, Endless Starlight could still manage to hold on.

"Brothers and sisters! Increase your damage output even more! I've used up every single thing including the cost for marrying a wife and the cost of my own funeral! If we can't take out these bosses, I'm literally going to become naked poor!" Zhang Yang roared out in tears, trying to inspire his members one more time.

Everyone was laughing, as they already realized that it is already



impossible to increase their damage output, even more, they were already doing far more than they have ever done in the past!

20%!

Enter the 'slaughtering' state, everyone suddenly got a leap on their firepower when they were supposed to not be able to perform even better already! Especially Wei Yan Er! As she was activating her skills without even thinking about the consequences, her damages were mostly critical attacks! Whenever she attacked, she inflicted the bosses with about 80,000, each hit, with her giant axe!

So there she went, elevating all the way to number one on the list of personal damage output! But the damage done by [Mounts] and [Servants] are calculated as part of the damage output of their owners. When the calculation goes that way, although the personal damage output of Zhang Yang was lower than that of Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu, with the aid of a Violet-Platinum [Mythical Turtle] and a [Devastator], he became the number one on the list of total damage output!

As Sun Xin Yu and the others did not have the skill {Pet Taming}, they could not use [Pet mounts] in an indoor environment. All they could do was to stare at Zhang Yang as his Turtle wreaked havoc in the indoor environment.

Wei Yan Er was irritated by the fact and she clenched her teeth, "Noob tank! I'll give you 3 days to get me one Violet-Platinum [Pet Mount]!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "I won't do something that does not benefit me!"

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er continued to slash the boss without holding back and she said, "You give me a Violet-Platinum [Pet mount], and I shall give Cousin Snow or sister Sun, or maybe sister Daffodil as your wife! Or if you want, you can have sister Fantasy as well! You can pick!"

"No way you getting Sweetheart! She belongs to our second party!" Fatty Han quickly shook his head and responded.

Endless Starlight was triggered as well, "That's right! I can use my body and strip naked for the boss! But Sweetheart is the spiritual support of our second party! Boss cannot lay his finger on her, not even one finger!"

"F\*ck! When did you guys learn to talk so much nonsense! Focus on the boss, now!" Zhang Yang roared in fury.

16%, 12%, 9%!

In the 'slaughtering' state, the health bar of the bosses was reducing very rapidly.

6%, 4%!

The effects of {Touch of Frost} and {Touch of Flame} on everyone had already stacked up to 10 layers once again!

"Don't mind about it anymore, just continue!" Zhang Yang did not bother neutralizing the effects this time around. The reason was simply because picking and rolling would consume a lot of time, which would undoubtedly prolong the battle even further. Now they needed to end the battle as soon as possible, so there was no time to waste at all, not even one small millisecond!

3%

"The followers of the gods will never perish!"

"Devotion of faith will bring us back to life once more!"

The two bosses began to state their final words as if they already knew they are going to meet their doom.

2%!

It still remained uncertain if Zhang Yang and his gang members would win for sure! The two bosses were still left with a total of 380,000 health points on their shared health bar. If any of the tankers suddenly fell and died, it would give Logan and Ezali enough time to slaughter up everyone for a couple times over!

1%

As they are on the brink of tasting victory, everyone was even

more focused on slashing and bringing the bosses down to their knees. There was once a wise man who said, the last part of an endeavor is the hardest to finish. If they are to be wiped out by the bosses when their health bar is only left at 1% health points, everyone will surely sink into depression!

0%!

Finally, the health bar of the two bosses had been emptied out! As the two bosses let out a miserable cry, both of them collapsed onto the ground at the same moment.

The moment right after the bosses were dead, everyone quickly sat down and had their [Snacks] to heal up. They were all carrying 12 layers of the negative effects on them, half of them were carrying {Touch of Frost} while the remainder were carrying {Touch of Flame}. Every single one of them was inflicted with 6,000 health points in every 3 seconds, and the effects would last for 10 minutes!

"What the f\*ck, man! One [Snack] cost 10 gold coins and it's more expensive than a meal of fast food already!" Fatty Han revealed a very painful expression on his face, like he just felt a sting in his heart! So by the end of the day, he decided not to use any of his {Snacks}. Because one death only reduces 10% durability of all equipment, and it only takes about 50 gold coins to repair them all. Although one [snack] seemed to be cheaper than the repair fee, the problem was that the DOT effects on them lasted for 10 minutes long! It meant that each of them had to take about 30 [Snacks] to stay alive until then! So it would be wiser to just die and respawn later if a player ever wanted to save some money.

The effect of these two negative effects cannot be deactivated with skills like {Warrior's Will}, {Ice Barrier}, and {Sacred Protection} as well. So, there are only two ways to stay alive while carrying these negative effects. One, is by having [Snacks], and other than that, either - players are being healed by healers, or they will have to report themselves back at the nearest graveyard.

"Sis, heal me up while I pick our loots up." Wei Yan Er could not sit still anymore while knowing that their 'trophies' were still lying on the ground. So, she quickly went up to pick up all the equipment and the items the two bosses had dropped.

[Frosty Freeze Boots] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +151

Intelligence: +137

Spirit: +60

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

"This pair of boots is not bad at all, having no rubbish kind of

attributes!" Zhang Yang nodded.

Unfortunately, the three professions that required clothing armor have not yet reached Level 90 yet. Although Daffodil Daydream called it and took it for herself, she would not be able to equip it for the moment. However, the player with the lowest level among them was Fantasy Sweetheart, and she had already reached Level 87, while Sun Xin Yu had just been elevated up to Level 89. That being said, everyone was not far from becoming Level 90 already.

[Robe of Lividity] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +302

Intelligence: +274

Agility: +121

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

The attributes of the equipment are very good, but when everyone saw the shocking name of the equipment, everyone was looking at each other. They were all shocked by the special design

of the equipment.

"At least pretty ladies will not be wearing this piece, I guess!" Endless Starlight took up the robe and turn the robe around to take a closer look. In {God's Miracle}, it did not matter if it is a robe or a dress, the equipment will show out as a robe on its appearance when male players equip it, while the equipment will show out as a dress on its appearance when female players equip it.

The robe seemed to be unclean as if it has not been washed for very long, and there are patches of plaque on the chest part, the back part and the butt part of the robe. There was an uncomfortable vibe just by the looks of it. Male players did not care so much about appearance, so they could just put it on. But for the ladies who worried about every single inch of makeup on their faces, they would definitely die first then put it on.

Unquestionably, Han Ying Xue and the ladies shook their heads, decisively refusing to take the robe. So, this robe could only be sold at the Little Merchandise.

"What a waste!" Zhang Yang kept the [Robe of Lividity] into his inventory. Judging by the attributes alone, this robe was definitely the best Level 90 Yellow-Gold cloth armor there is, in the current game!

[Crimson Blaze Hand Guards] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +318

Strength: +91

Agility: +210

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

After seeing the attributes of the handguards, Fatty Han widened his eyes and stared straight at it, "What exaggerated attributes!"

In {{God's Miracle}}, equipment for the head, the chest, and the leg added the most value of attribute points to a player. The gloves and the boots, handguards, and greaves? Not so much. They only added half of the attribute values to a player even though they were the same grade, same level as the equipment of the head, the chest, and the leg. Next were the necklaces, capes, and rings. These equipment added even less value of attribute points to the player, about half compared to the handguards and greaves.

Compared to the [Frosty Freeze Boots], the attribute points that this [Crimson Blaze Hand Guards] can provide is almost two times that amount! It seemed that Violet-Platinum grade equipment are really so much more powerful!

But, after tossing the dice to decide who gets it, this pair of hand guards went to Lost Dream, and Fatty Han could only drool on as



he witnessed Lost Dream keeping the equipment into the inventory.

[Perfectly Smithed Greaves] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +635

Strength: +181

Agility: +90

Equip: Absorbs 179 damage points when being hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

The moment when the attribute points of this equipment were presented, it was Endless Starlight's turn to widen his eyes and stare straight at the equipment piece, "Great stuff! What an incredible power up it would give!"

Zhang Yang smiled, and then he took the equipment over from the little girl and threw it to Endless Starlight, "I already have my [Titan Set Armor], I'm not going separate my Armor Set pieces to

equip this. So you can have it."

Normally, tanker equipment that gives agility attribute points should go to Warriors, while tanker equipment that gives intelligence attribute points should go to Knights. But, the main attribute of a defensive equipment that tankers seek were the vitality attribute points and the damage absorption points. Because some mere agility and intelligence attribute points would not make much difference for a tanker.

Other members had given up on tossing the dice, so Endless Starlight got to keep the much-wanted equipment.

Unfortunately, the two Violet-Platinum bosses only dropped two pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment. Everyone was ranting and complaining about how stingy the system was. They felt that they had put much more effort and deserved better than that!

There were 4 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment in total. Other than the {Frosty Freeze Boots} and the {Robe of Lividity} that came out earlier on, the other two Yellow-Gold equipment were a little underwhelming to look at as their attribute points were a little weaker. The gang basically ignored the two pieces. Of course, the two fragments of [Hammer of Sanctions - Body Hammer] were nevertheless presented to them as their rewards as well. So from there on, there were finally 10 pieces of fragments of the [Hammer of Sanctions] in the inventory of Endless Starlight!

"I believe that the bosses in the upcoming battle won't be squeezed in one stage anymore, would they?" Fantasy Sweetheart was speaking out of her hopes.

"Very hard to tell!" Wei Yan Er began to speak her 'special' mind out loud, "And the final boss might come out together with the two remaining bosses!"

If that's the real case, everyone should just wash their heads and get ready to die!

As the gang proceeded forward, they killed a couple dozens of monsters and completed the great rescue of the Followers by the 11th Blood Pool.

With their restless hearts, everyone charged into the boss stage to meet the boss.

A middle-aged man wearing a set of red-blood armor stood right in the middle of the room, with an unusually awesome aura. The man was very tall and sturdy, and his two arms that were exposed on the outside of his armor were so thick that they were comparable to the size of an ordinary man's thigh! His hands were holding a hammer that was half of his own height, and he had golden hair that was about one foot long, floating softly in a gentle breeze. There were strange looking runes on the hammer itself, blinking from time to time, looking extremely mysterious.

[Roxburgh, the Warbringer] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 95

HP: 9,500,000

Defense: 2,600

Note: One of the 12 Disciples, representing the strongest force.

"Luckily, it's just one boss this time!" the gang let out a breath of relief.

"Don't let your guard down so soon. Although it's just one boss, this boss is definitely not going to be easy to take on!" Hundred Shots reminded the gang to stay cautious.

"Let's get on with this and complete the 'Breakthrough the Cage of Prison' quest! This quest has a limited time frame!"

"Right, and we have no idea what kind of skills or tricks this boss has on his sleeves, let's test it out once and check it out!" Zhang Yang pulled out his sword and shield as he charged towards the boss with big steps.

So, it began with a with a {Spear of Obliteration} that shot out straight from Zhang Yang's hands.

# Chapter 428: The Warbringer

---

Roxburgh, the Warbringer let out a burst of thunderous roars as he lifted up the hammer backhandedly. Then, he charged towards Zhang Yang right after he took up his hammer.

"You insolent piece of sh\*t, how dare you touch me! The deity of the divine servants shall not be offended! Intruders must be eliminated at once!" Roxburgh had arrived in front of Zhang Yang with only a few steps, and he lifted up his heavy hammer up into the air and smashed it down with brute force!

Boom!

Although Zhang Yang had already raised his shield and blocked the attack of the boss, the strength of the boss is just too great! That smash actually staggered Zhang Yang back for about seven to eight steps back before Zhang Yang could regain his balance and stand firm! He could feel that his legs were numb, and it seemed that he could not even take another step at the moment!

"Hahaha! With that little strength in you, you dare to stir things up on my turf? What a bold move indeed!" Roxburgh wielded up his hammer once again and with a swift movement, he swung the hammer in the opposite direction and smashed at Zhang Yang again.

‘-12,721!’

Zhang Yang was inflicted with a high damage, and a small little

crack appeared on the Titan Armor's spot where the hammer hit! He was being staggered backward once again to the point that he lost balance in his stance!

"What a fierce boss! The hammer is like a high-speed moving truck straight on the face!" The gang was shocked to see Zhang Yang being pushed to a tight spot like this!

A boss with such brute strength, although its attacks were not really that terrifying, but the brute force of the boss had the effect to stagger players and blast the players backward, forcing the players to lose their stance! And the automated attack function in this game required a 'Lock On' for the attack to be precise. So, when a player is staggered, there was no way the player can hit the target, no way at all!

Fortunately, Zhang Yang was already got used to handling these sorts of overbearing bosses in his previous life. Although he was being staggered about, but the sword in his hand would still land precisely on the body of the boss. He did not waste any single chance of attacking!

"Wow! My boss! You're doing awesome!" Endless Starlight was praising Zhang Yang.

This time, no one 'accused' Endless Starlight of trying to butter up Zhang Yang, because what he said was the truth that lay before their own naked eyes. If they were in Zhang Yang's position right now, they knew that they couldn't have done as well as he was doing right now!

"You weak imbeciles, pests! I will crush every single bone you have in you!" Roxburgh let out a course, mad laughter as the variety of runes on his hammerhead began to radiate in blinding light, an unintelligible, virtual shadow of a hammer suddenly swung towards Zhang Yang and landed solidly on him!

‘-76,038!’

Zhang Yang was inflicted with a very high value of damage! Although his maximum health points had already reached 87,670 points, but he had been wounded earlier and was left with only about 68,000 hitpoints when he was hit by this attack! He was instantly killed on spot!

‘Ding! You are killed!’

‘Ding! You are resurrected by the {Rise Anew} effect!’

The main benefits of {Rise Anew} for the tankers was the ability to resurrect the tankers once, while still maintaining the aggro of their targets!

Everyone was frightened by what they just witnessed. What did they boss just do? Is it some kind of skill? How is the damage so high and powerful? Zhang Yang still had about 80% of his health bar on him, and he was instantly killed in one single hit from the boss! Plus {Rise Anew} can only be used once per hour!

Zhang Yang quickly brought up the battle logs: Roxburgh used {Heavy Assault} and inflicted you with 76,038 physical damage (21,856 damage points reduced, 2,106 damage points absorbed).

The basic damage had reached over 100,000 points!

Zhang Yang frowned for a bit and said, "Starlight, come stand by me!"

"Alright!" Endless Starlight was not stupid, he had already figured it out, " So the damage of that hit from the boss can be shared?"

Zhang Yang nodded, "It should be, or else, who on earth can sustain that amount of damage points!"

Although the {Heavy Assault} of the boss had a clear method of telegraphing, the sign would only appear at the same time as the assault comes out. It would already be too late to activate {Shield Wall} by that time! Furthermore, no one knew how long the cooldown period of that skill is. If this skill could be activated once per half minute or sooner, then the cool down period of the {Shield Wall} would definitely not be enough to allow players to use {Shield Wall} frequently enough to counter this {Heavy Assault} from the boss!

However, if the damage of this hit can be shared among players, then it would make better sense at least. The maximum health points of Endless Starlight was somewhere up to 42,000 points, and he also had an 85% physical damage immunity. He could share



the load of about 50,000 damage points once.

Endless Starlight came up and stood side by side with Zhang Yang. They tried to be as close together as possible.

Roxburgh gave another blow over onto Zhang Yang with his hammer. Other than inflicting about 13,000 damage points onto Zhang Yang, the attack also added one negative effect to him --- that attack was a {Destructive Smash} that reduced healing effects by 50%!

That actually made the situation worse and even more dangerous!

So, this {Destructive Smash} basically follows closely right after the activation of {Heavy Assault}. Even if the {Heavy Assault} does not instantly kill the target, it could still inflict a great amount of damage on the target. With an additional negative effect from the {Destructive Smash} that follows closely right after, players will be inflicted with a 50% reduction in their healing effects, and it would be much harder for the player to heal so much HP after being damaged by the powerful skill - {Heavy Assault}! Any tanker might snap anytime and die!

"Hahaha! Useless pests! Cry before your own demise!" Roxburgh laughed madly, and with a sudden rise of his heavy hammer into the sky, countless shadows of the hammer were radiated out into the surrounding like arrows!

‘Ding! Roxburgh unleashed the {Hammer Shadow Assault}!’

‘-19,800!’

‘-19,800!’

...

As the {Hammer Shadow Assault} struck them, everyone was inflicted with a basic damage of about 20,000 points!

"What the hell! This boss is just mean and violent!" everyone was shocked and exclaimed at the same instant.

A boss with super AOE skills such as Roxburgh does not fear being rounded up by players. At the current stage of the game, a basic damage point of 20,000 can directly kill at least 90% of the players in the entire game!

"Haha! So tell me, Roxburgh, what can you do other than brag!" Zhang Yang gave his sword a flourish, "I'm still standing here!"

"You bastard!" Roxburgh was enraged, and his face turned twisted and ferocious, "A mere mortal like you, I will smash with ease!"

"I'm waiting!" Zhang Yang slapped out a {Shield Bash} on the boss and inflicted about 5,400 damage points.

"Useless pests! How dare you! You will regret it!" Roxburgh let out a mad roar and began to swing his hammer about.

Wei Yan Er could not help but to laugh, "Noob tank, you're so noob! You actually squabbled with the boss, an NPC, not a real person! You cracked me! You made my day! Haha!"

‘-36,038!’

‘-39,466!’

The runes on Roxburgh's hammer began to radiate brightly again, and countless shadows of hammer began to emerge from the surrounding and flew towards Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight, inflicting the both of them with massive damage points!

"Haha! You were right! The damage can be shared!"

Everyone began to smile, because the most fatal skill of the boss was no longer a threatening factor to them! Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart quickly healed up Endless Starlight, as he was only left with 3,000 health points on him after the attack. One more hit and he would have surely been dead!

Right after the {Heavy Assault}, the boss chained a {Hammer Shadow Assault} that made everyone yell in alarm.

"Haha! Feel despair! Cry in misery! And tremble before the absolute power!" Roxburgh saw that the gang was jumping up and

down yelling for help, and he instantly burst into his mad laughter again. Then, he wielded his hammer and swung it towards Zhang Yang again.

90%, 80%... although Roxburgh has been acting powerfully all the while ever since they engaged him, the threat that he posed to Zhang Yang and his gang was not really that great --- of course, forgetting about the one moment where Zhang Yang was instantly-killed because they haven't understood the features of the {Heavy Assault}.

"Haha! This boss only knows how to brag!" Fatty Han laughed out loud because he only needed to stand at the same spot and unleash everything that he had onto the boss without having to worry or think about anything. It did not require any pick and roll, or any formation at all! Undoubtedly, the difficulty of battling this boss was greatly reduced, and it suited the style of Fatty Han who loved to play as part of a team. As his damage output was not that bad himself, he was not ditched behind by the other 5 DPS profession players in the party.

Zhang Yang said, "After encountering so many hard bosses, now it's a good time to give us one boss that is easy to take on!"

"Hehe, picking up soft fruits, like soft persimmon! I love it!"

70%, 60%, 50%... Roxburgh only had one health bar, and it would not be enough to hold against so many players if his health was lower than 10,000,000 points. In just a brief moment of time, his health bar was reduced to below 50%. This boss didn't seem to have any other new skills, Roxburgh was just repeatedly spamming

his {Heavy Assault}, {Destructive Smash}, and {Hammer Shadow Assault} over and over again!

For a party with regular equipment pieces on them only, the {Heavy Assault} and the {Hammer Shadow Assault} would have been fatal to them! Especially the {Hammer Shadow Assault}, that skill could wipe out every single DPS profession player with average equipment on them, which would later lead to the wipeout of the entire party! But, to engage with a top-tier party, Roxburgh could only sit back and wash some vegetables while waiting for the party to send him to his demise.

40%, 30%, 20%... the health bar of the boss was getting close to the bottom as they attack, as the boss had no chance to fight back at all before the strongest players in the entire China server!

"You damned pests! Cowards! Face me alone, if you dare!" the boss was beaten to the point that he could only roar in anger, waving his hammer around like the sunset was about to end, he was just trying to prolong the inevitable, for he was about to meet his end.

10%, 7%, 4%... finally, the final drop of health points of Roxburgh was depleted! After letting out an outburst of an angry roar, the boss collapsed onto the ground heavily and dropped a few pieces of loot.

Although this boss had managed to K.O Zhang Yang once, being the boss that performed the best among the 11 disciples that they had encountered so far, the process of battling Roxburgh was actually so far the easiest boss battle, compared to the previous

boss battles! This boss was only designed to test the equipment of the players. If the players fulfilled the requirement in terms of equipment, then this boss battle would become very easy. But, if the equipment of the players did not meet the requirement, well, no matter how many players are sent forth to the boss, they would all perish under the powerful skills of the boss!

After the boss died, Wei Yan Er walked up to pick up the gold coins and the loot with a joyous smile on her face.

[Boots of Loyalty] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +151

Strength: +137

Agility: +60

{Unidentified}

Level Required: 80

"Yo! This is one high grade pair of boots for DPS profession players, man!" Zhang Yang exclaimed. But of course, it would only be high grade, without comparing to other equipment of the Violet-Platinum class! But there weren't many Violet-Platinum

equipment at the current stage of the game yet!

Wei Yan Er made a funny face and stuck her tongue out at Zhang Yang, "Noob tank, you really are getting old now. You forgot that I have already acquired a [Titan Battle Boots] already, haven't you?"

"Oh! Then, you finally have 3 pieces of your Armor Set already then?" Zhang Yang asked her.

"Of course I do now! It gives me additional 500 points of strength!" Wei Yan Er was feeling proud.

"Haha! No wonder your damage output today is so incredible, that explains it!" Zhang Yang smiled. With the current equipment Wei Yan Er had on her, 500 points of Strength could give her a boost of 10% attack.

"Humph humph humph! When was I ever weak? I'm always strong!" Wei Yan Er threw the boots over to Zhang Yang. Any equipment or item that no one wanted to claim would be thrown over to Zhang Yang. Then, Zhang Yang would take them and sell them at his Little Merchandise Shop for profits. Therefore, Zhang Yang had gotten stuck with another new nickname, the 'Rubbish Collector'.

[Mark of Remorse] (Yellow-Gold, Necklace)

Vitality: +76

Intelligence: +68

Spirit: +68

Equip: When you use a healing skill, there is a 10% rate to recover 100 mana points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

Unfortunately, everyone had an Armor Set Necklace piece on them already. So, Zhang Yang could only take the ‘not-so-bad’ healing necklace and sell it in the Little Merchandise Shop.

Right after that, Wei Yan Er picked up a hammer that had many rune signs around the head of the hammer. It looked very similar to the hammer that the boss wielded.

[Hammer of Raging Fury] (Violet-Platinum, One-Handed Hammer)

Attack: 1,312 - 1,712

Attack interval: 2.5 seconds

DPS: 605



Equip: After striking the target, there is a 2% rate to inflict 14,000 physical damage points to the target and other enemy targets around. This physical damage cannot be blocked or dodged!

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

"Huh! The special effect of this weapon is the downsized version of the {Heavy Assault} that the boss used!" Han Ying Xue took the hammer over from Wei Yan Er and then tossed it aside.

"What an incredible attack this weapon has!" Hundred Shots was praising the weapon, "This weapon is really worthy to be a Violet-Platinum weapon! It should have almost the same DPS as the [Sword of Purging Devourer] that Zhang Yang wields, after it is identified!"

"Unfortunately, it's a little on the fast side, so the damage of this weapon might be a little bit lower than expected."

Zhang Yang could not help but to laugh, "Starlight, do you want to take this hammer, or do you plan to try out your luck to see if the Hammer of Sanctions is a one-handed or two-handed after it's completed?"

"... I think I shall keep both, I'll use whichever that is better!" Endless Starlight was speaking without any sense of shame.

Everyone was laughing at him.

After passing the fragment of the [Hammer of Sanctions] over to Endless Starlight, Zhang Yang said, "Alright, let's make haste, and continue our quest. We only have to rescue one last batch of Believers, and that does not require us to battle any bosses at all, so we should be able to complete the quest quickly!"

The gang proceeded forward as they pushed on and arrived at the location of the final blood pool. After clearing up all the monsters in the area, they succeeded in releasing the Believers from all the cages that they came across.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Break Through the Cage of Prison, total death of Believers, 388. You have acquired 5,000,000 basic experience points, and acquired an addition of 5,100,000 experience points!’

Everyone received the system notification in the same instance.

"Huh? Just experience points?" Fatty Han was feeling mistreated, "After battling so many bosses, and they didn't even give us a few pieces of equipment! What a stingy game developer!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "This is actually an additional side quest. Whether we do this quest or not, we will also have to clear out the monsters in the areas we passed through earlier on. So, this is like a convenient ride for all of us, without having to do extra work! 10,000,000 experience points aren't that

bad either. Just think about it, how many monsters do you need to slay just to get 1,000,000 experience points?"

"Now that you have laid it out so clearly, this quest is indeed a bonus for all of us!"

"Alright, let's go now, we only have two bosses left to deal with!" Daffodil Daydream was trying to hasten them up.

"Alright! Let's move!"

The gang proceeded forward.

Zhang Yang was actually more eager about getting the final piece of the [Dimensional Key Fragment], because he was just two steps away from getting it now!

The party charged into the boss stage and they laid their eyes on the final Disciple, right before them.

It was a middle-aged man with a very refined look, dressed in light gray robes, while holding a blue staff in his hand. He was not huge nor small in size, just the average size of a regular person.

[The Apostle of Wisdom - Shaloni] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 95

HP: 9,500,000

Defense: 2,600

Note: One of the 12 Disciples

## Chapter 429: Shaloni

---

"Do you want me tank the boss?" Endless Starlight took the initiative to propose. He had just acquired two pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment. Although he still could not equip them, his confidence level had been boosted very much! Furthermore, the boss before them was a Spellcaster type boss, so it was also more suitable for a Knight to tank the boss, in theory.

Wei Yan Er could not help but laugh, "Hold up there, you have not even reached Level 90 yet! That means you can't even equip them yet! So, what are you trying to show off then?"

"Lost yourself in the excitement eh?"

"You people just love to blow me in the face!" Endless Starlight smiled sheepishly, and he also sucked up his butt cheeks while doing that.

"Argh---" the ladies could not bear to see him do that, so they shouted out in unity.

Zhang Yang pulled out his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and said, "Old rules, try it out first, figure things out along the way!"

"Silly Yu, just be careful, the effect of my {Rise Anew} is still under cool down period. It can only be used again after 5 minutes." Han Ying Xue reminded Zhang Yang.

"Alright, I'll keep that in mind." Zhang Yang nodded, and then he charged towards the boss at a high speed. As he was charging, he swung out his right arm forward and threw out a {Spear of Obliteration} straight towards the boss!

‘-4,382!’

Shaloni was inflicted with damage by the attack, and the attack succeeded in provoking the boss. Shaloni waved his staff up and aimed the tip of the staff at Zhang Yang, and shoof! A stream of dark light emanated out and formed a gigantic skull. The gigantic skull had its gigantic jaws wide open, and it seemed ready to crunch on Zhang Yang!

‘-14,694!’

The skull came through, and Zhang Yang was inflicted with a high damage value. Since the attack was a magical type, the skill {Block} was totally useless. Zhang Yang could not do his usual move, that is to activate the superb skill {Block} that immunized him from receiving damage, followed by a {Shield Bash} right after.

After the first attack landed on Zhang Yang, Shaloni began to move towards Zhang Yang with big steps. He spoke in a very low voice, "You little ants, how dare you crawl all the way in here! Roxburgh is a fool to allow ants to pass his defense, he was too weak! He is not worthy to follow in the footsteps of our ‘Son of God’!"

Wei Yan Er immediately reacted, "Stinky boss! What are you so proud of? You're about to be stepped beneath our feet!"

"Haha! Other than the great gods and the great 'Son of God' who can make me lower my head, other mortals are just like dust to me!" Shaloni took a few steps back and took up his staff to point at Zhang Yang again, and then he sent another gigantic skull attack at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang kept moving backward until the boss moved forward to a spot about 3 to 4 meters away from the Turtle, before he charged to engage the boss. About 10 meters from the boss, Zhang Yang used {Charge} and clashed into the boss.

There it began. Zhang Yang began to pull the aggro of the boss, while the rest of the gang stepped up and unleashed their assaults on the boss. They channeled every single drop of their firepower onto the boss, as if they were unleashing tsunami waves and volcanic explosions onto the boss.

"Mortals, you can stop your useless act and struggle, tremble before the great power!" Shaloni raised his staff up high, and a casting bar of a 3-second chanting spell appeared right below the boss's head. The spell attack was called the {Stardust Explosion}.

"A large 'explosion'?" everyone was intimidated by the name of the skill for a while there. The Fatty Han said, "Little Yang, where should we hide?"

"...just follow my lead! From behind!" Zhang Yang almost got

choked to death by what Fatty Han just said. This wretched fatty has experienced so many boss battles already, why is he still such a wimp?!

The boss finished the chanting of his spell very quickly. In just an instant, many oval white balls with smooth and shiny surface appeared all around the ground, they looked like a bunch of large white eggs standing straight up. Some of the white balls were crowded in some spots, but some were further away from each other. There was nothing else much about the situation.

The face of Zhang Yang immediately changed, the moment he saw these white balls, "Get as far away as possible from those white balls! Quickly! Do it now! Those white balls will definitely explode!"

Dodging around like a bunch of chickens dancing around, the gang realized that those 'eggs' were not really placed into the surrounded evenly, as some of the spaces between the 'eggs' were a little 'wide'. So, they quickly scattered out and scrambled, looking for a safe zone to stand.

5 seconds later!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

All of the white balls exploded at the same time, and the flashes of explosions were blinding! Fortunately, the radius of each explosion was only about two meters out. As long as they find a spacious spot in between the white 'eggs', they could dodge the



impact of the explosions. On the contrary, if they stood in between the spaces where the white 'eggs' were concentrated around, they might even get 'lucky' and get blown up by two or three, or even four explosions at the same time!

As no one was blown up by this skill, Zhang Yang could not predict the damage that these explosions could cause to players. But, they would definitely cause super high damage, because regular skill attacks from bosses won't be 'cheap' on trying to kill the players! After all, the boss had already wasted 3 seconds to chant a skill, and they were given another 5 seconds to get clear of the explosion zones. If the damage of these explosions were not high and merely ranging by the thousands, then it would be very humiliating for the boss!

Shaloni kept himself close to Zhang Yang, while trying to bash Zhang Yang up with his spells. As his regular attacks did not require any chanting period of time, he only needed to point his staff at Zhang Yang and launch his assaults at Zhang Yang. However, there was a 2 seconds cooldown for every attack that the boss launches, so, it might as well treat these cool down period as the same thing as 2-second of chanting time!

But, the benefit of using instant spells, is that players would not have the chance or the time to interrupt the boss with their long ranged attacks, because the boss can instantly launch the attack without having to chant!

"Hahaha! Let us have some fun!" Shaloni let out a loud laugh and raised his staff high up in the air, pointing it towards the sky.

Shoof shoof shood!

Suddenly, 13 streams of dark light were shot right out of the staff of the boss, burying themselves deep into the bodies of Zhang Yang and his gang, including the three pets among them!

‘Ding! You have been affected by the {Touch of Soul}, lose your mind and blur the line between friends and foes, all damage from the player will be converted into health points of Shaloni, lasts for 10 seconds!’

After the system notification, black chains formed from dark lights appeared around the 10 players and the three pets! Their body masses were enlarged by a few times! Everyone lost control over their own bodies, and they could only see their own in-game avatars attempting to slaughter their own friends.

What that was even worse was that this skill could not be canceled or nullified! Although Zhang Yang and Daffodil Daydream activated their skills such as {Warrior’s Will}, {Ice Barrier} and {Sacred Protection}, they were just wasting their skills. Well, trying was better than doing nothing.

Fortunately, after being turned into ‘puppets’, their attacks were greatly reduced. It did not matter whether it’s the tankers, the DPS profession players or the healers, all of them became melee type players for the time being. Every single attack only inflicted about 2,000 damage points, and the defense points of the players did not affect the damage received as well.

Shaloni did not take advantage of them as they were vulnerable 'puppets', he only stood aside and laughed like a madman. If the boss actually joined in and unleashed hell on them, then it would have become a total mess for them! Even Zhang Yang would be killed within the 10 seconds of chaos!

As they observed familiar faces hitting each other like enemies, everyone was filled with anxiety. And finally, the weird and fearsome moment of 10 seconds had passed! The chains around everyone vanished into thin air and the size of everyone's body had returned back to normal. They had finally regained control of their own bodies!

"Hahaha! Are you having fun yet?" Shaloni resumed his assault on Zhang Yang, pointing his staff, shooting black gigantic skulls that tried to crunch Zhang Yang alive.

"The boss recovered about 100,000 health points!" seeing that Shaloni only managed to recover about 1% of his health bar, everyone felt relieved. Actually, the calculations were simple enough for everyone to realize. The attack of everyone had been reduced down to about 2,000 points, and everyone was able to hit once every 2 seconds. Because everyone had been turned into melee type combatants, they would need to approach their targets in order to hit, which required time. Therefore, each of the players could only attack about 3 to 4 times within that 10 seconds.

However, although the 10 players and 3 pets only recovered about 1% of the boss's health, think about it, what would happen if more players were in this battle against this boss? If there were more players around, when the skill of the boss activates, surely the

amount of health points that the boss can recover would be far more!

Furthermore, if there were too many players joining into battle this particular boss, then it would become much harder to dodge the explosions! The reason was simple, the 'safe zone' of the area was limited, and the body mass of the players in {{God's Miracle}} could not overlap each other. If players cannot get themselves a spot in the 'safe zone', then they would have no choice but to suffer the impact of those explosions!

"I can see that the bosses in this area are very cocky! They love to show off and throw empty insults! Haha!" Wei Yan Er laughed.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Little girl, are you sure that you're not talking about yourself?"

"Humph! You stinky, noob tank! Are you asking for another big tortoise to be stuck on your back?" Wei Yan Er said fiercely.

"Alright, you win! Fine!"

"Ancient Demonic Souls, pay heed to my summons, and get rid of these disgusting pests!" Shaloni suddenly paused all his attacks and once again, he raised the staff in his hands up high in the air and began to chant a new spell.

'Ding! Shaloni has summoned Demonic Souls, lasts for 30 seconds!'

Immediately, 10 monsters with entirely black bodies dug themselves out from the ground. Their heads were especially huge, about one-third of the mass of their entire bodies. Their bodies were triangular in shape, and they had no legs at all, hovering in the air.

[Ancient Demonic Soul] (Normal, Summoned)

Level: 1

HP: 50

Defense: 0

Hoof! The legless monsters began to float towards Zhang Yang and the gang. They weren't particularly fast, and they ignored the pets and went straight for the players.

"Hehe, what kind of funny business is this! Level 1 monsters? Are they here to serve us? Let me handle them!" Fatty Han finally felt like picking up soft fruits again. So, he released an arrow at one of the monsters that were floating towards them.

Pak!

The arrow landed on the Ancient Demonic Soul, and the monster shattered into pieces. But, the pieces then began to move and

reform, becoming two Ancient Demonic Souls!

Seeing that Fatty Han did not believe in ghost tales and stuff, and that he was ready to shoot again, Zhang Yang quickly shouted, "Fatty! Stop!"

"Huh?" Fatty could not understand, "Little Yang, these monsters are just Level 1, what are you so afraid of?"

"Are you sure it is that simple?"

Just as they were arguing, Shaloni began to chant the spell for {Stardust Explosion}!

Pak pak pak! In just an instant, countless oval-shaped white balls, with smooth and shiny surfaces, appeared all around the ground just like before, filling up the area.

"Get clear! Get clear!" Everyone began to pick and roll, searching for safe spots.

This time, things were a little different. 11 Ancient Demonic Souls were pursuing them as they were trying to avoid touching the 'eggs'!

As they were in a hurry to search for a safe spot to avoid being blown up, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots did not manage to avoid the Ancient Demonic Souls that blocked their way forward. They charged through the Level 1 Ancient Demonic Souls, thinking that

these low-leveled monsters would not inflict any high damage.

However!

‘-33,420!’

‘-34,180!’

Two high damages were inflicted upon Fatty Han and Hundred Shots! What a coincidence that the values of the damages were the upper limit of their health points! So, the two were out of luck and they were instant-killed on spot!

"Owh ---" the two Ancient Demonic Souls that killed Fatty Han and Hundred Shots suddenly expanded in size, and they opened up their dark mouths, screeching out chilling roars. After that, they began to pursue the other remaining players in the surroundings, at high speed!

[Bloody Ancient Demonic Soul] (Elite, Summoned)

Level: 95

HP: 300,000

Defense: 500

"Starlight, lure the two monsters in, and kite them!" Zhang Yang quickly made arrangements to handle the two Bloody Ancient Demonic Souls. Although the two monsters had acquired much more health points, it also meant that their attacks had become 'normal' as well!

"Understood!" Endless Starlight quickly activated his {Finger of Justice} and {Shield Toss}, hooking the aggro of the two 'new species' Ancient Demonic Souls over to him.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Right at that moment, the smooth white balls suddenly began to explode, spreading out blinding and glittering streams of white lights all around the area!

"Very good! Two dead! And more will follow! By the end of this, everyone will be dead!" Shaloni let out a thunderous, mad laugh.



# Chapter 430: Ancient Demonic Souls

---

Hundred Shots and Fatty Han quickly reflected on what that just happened.

But what that had happened had already happened, nothing good would come from blaming anyone! Fortunately for the remaining surviving members of the party, the {Stardust Explosion} was over, leaving behind a spacious area for them to avoid being touched by the Level 1 Ancient Demonic Souls that had the ability to instant-kill!

Endless Starlight kited the monsters away to a quiet side of the area, while everyone else felt not hurry attack the two monsters, because these summoned Ancient Demonic Souls would just last for 30 seconds. So, all Endless Starlight had to do was to kite them around until the time was up, and let them vanish on their own.

Soon, 30 seconds had passed.

Pak! Pak! Pak!

The summoned Ancient Demonic Souls let out a screech and vanished into thin air. However, the two Ancient Demonic Souls that already tasted blood did not vanish like the others, they were still beating Endless Starlight up!

"What the f\*ck! So these Ancient Demonic Souls will no longer be restricted by the time limit and vanish! Let's turn our attention towards the little ones!" Lost Dream quickly said.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Everyone, DPS players! Focus fire on the two 'little ones'!"

Sun Xin Yu and the others quickly turned their attention over to the two Bloody Ancient Demonic Souls and began their heavy assault! As the healers on the party were experiencing tremendous stress in keeping everyone alive, they only had one choice, that was to slay the two monsters first. Only were they able to lighten the stress that was being placed on Lost Dream!

Hundred Shots and Fatty Han were feeling even more embarrassed, as they were the ones who caused all this. If it wasn't for their carelessness, the others would not have to turn their focus away from the boss and onto the other two monsters instead. They had to do extra damage and extra healing just to take down the two monsters.

Although the two DPS players in Zhang Yang's party had been killed, Sun Xin Yu and the other 3 DPS players were very powerful. It only took 15 seconds for them to take down the first Bloody Ancient Demonic Soul! Fortunately for them, the monster did not die and reform back into two! Or else, the 'crime' that Hundred Shots and Fatty Han committed would have become even more serious!

However, when they brought down the health bars of the Bloody Ancient Demonic Souls to 7%, Shaloni suddenly let out a thunderous roar and raised his staff high up in the air, pointing it towards the sky again, "Hahaha! Let us have some fun!"

In just an instant, 9 streams of dark light shot right out from the staff of the boss, burying themselves deep into the bodies of Zhang Yang and his remaining gang members, including his pet Turtle!

‘Ding! You have been affected by the {Touch of Soul}, lose your mind and blurs the line between friends and foes, all damage from players will be converted into the health points of Shaloni, lasts for 10 seconds!’

What the f\*ck! The boss is using {Touch of Soul} at this time? What a great timing!

Everyone lost control of their avatars once again, punching and kicking at each other mindlessly, causing as much havoc as possible.

Fortunately, the Bloody Ancient Demonic Soul did not lose its aggro on Endless Starlight. It was still beating on Endless Starlight without any moment of pause!

1 second, 2 seconds, 3 seconds...

Everyone worriedly they kept their eyes on the health bar of Endless Starlight. If he was to be killed by the Bloody Ancient Demonic Soul within that 10 seconds, everything would become hell for them!

"Little Starlight! You better don't fall asleep!" Fatty Han was lying down on the ground in his soul state, but he had been

entertaining himself, talking to Starlight.

"Brother Fatty, if I ever become a king, I shall take you in as my queen!" After being chained down and controlled by the {Touch of Soul}, Endless Starlight could not do anything other than to stare at the surroundings. So, he took the time to have fun with Fatty Han, as they began to talk nonsense!

9 seconds! 10 seconds!

The control has been lifted! Endless Starlight was only left with 892 health points! He was still alive!

Right before the palm of the Bloody Ancient Demonic Soul could land on his face, Endless Starlight quickly activated his {Sacred Protection}, protecting himself with a semi-transparent force field that made him invincible for 5 seconds!

Ching Ching Chiang Chiang! Under the heavy assaults from everyone, the Bloody Ancient Demonic Soul had finally been slaughtered! And finally, they have gotten rid of the mess that Hundred Shots and Fatty Han had left behind for them!

Turning their focus back towards the boss, now!

"Ancient Demonic Souls, please answer my summons and get rid of these disgusting pests!" after a brief moment of battle, Shaloni suddenly paused all his attacks and once again, he shouted to the sky and summoned another 8 Ancient Demonic Souls from the

ground!

Everyone had learned their lesson well from the first time, so no one was stupid enough to run into the seemingly harmless monsters. Everyone was avoiding any contact with the monsters, staying away from the monsters, as far as possible.

However, Shaloni would also activate his {Stardust Explosion} right after summoning these foul creatures, making the players dance even more vigorously - like a bunch of loose chicken! Maybe the boss was designed to enjoy such a sight!

Pak pak pak!

In just an instant, countless oval white balls, with smooth and shiny surfaces, appeared all around the ground just like before, filling up the area. They may look nice and smooth on the outside, but they were deadly from the inside!

Zhang Yang frowned and said "Avoid touching the Ancient Demonic Souls. If you really can't avoid touching those explosive eggs, you can at least activate your life-saving skills to stay alive. Although I'd say that the explosions will still inflict great damage, it would definitely be better than getting killed by the Ancient Demonic Souls and turning them into something far more dangerous!"

Everyone nodded to express their acknowledgment, and they made it their first priority to avoid the Ancient Demonic Souls at all costs.

Boom!

10 seconds later, every single one of the oval white balls exploded! The white flashing lights were terrifying and beautiful at the same time!

Wei Yan Er was caught in one of the explosions as she was trying to avoid all the Ancient Demonic Souls that were pursuing her. Her health bar was reduced by a lot, about 20,000 health points lost!

"If I had known earlier, I would have rather been blown up than to feed myself to the monsters and make them stronger!" Fatty Han regretted charging straight into the monsters. If he was well and alive now, he would definitely be kicking the boss hard and contributing more now. If not for his 'dead' status now, he would have thumped his chest and stamped his feet to express his sorrow and anger.

"One white ball inflicts about 20,000 damage points, so if you're hit by two at the same time, the explosions will still kill you!" Zhang Yang calculated and told Fatty Han.

Following the boss' spamming of the 3 skills over and over again, Zhang Yang and his party members familiarized themselves to the assault pattern of the boss. After all, everyone who has arrived at this stage of the game in this very boss stage is not an idiot --- well, the idiots have already been killed in action by now!

80%, 70%... the health bar of Shaloni was reducing slowly, but

constantly. Because of the {Touch of Soul}, the boss could still recover a small portion of its health points, and everyone needed to pick and roll at the right timing to avoid taking unnecessary damage. Plus, they needed to bear with the 10 seconds of being controlled like puppets, hitting on each other. All these factors had caused the reduction of boss's health bar to be super slow!

The boss only had a total of 9,500,000 health points. If everyone could just stand their ground and unleash their damage straight onto the boss without much interruption, they could have taken down the boss in about 4 minutes! But now that they are picking and rolling for around two-thirds of the entire time during the boss fight, and the boss could recover its health over time, and they took about 10 minutes to take out half of the health bar of the boss!

Tactically speaking, everyone was very clear about what they needed to do. However, being clear about the tactics is one thing, carrying it out perfectly is another! Especially when the duration of battling the boss is prolonged, not many people can actually keep their concentration up all the time. Most people would feel anxious and frustrated. So, some of them could not avoid touching the 'eggs', and they were hurt by the impact of the explosions.

Fortunately for them, none of them had been struck two explosions at the same time - yet. Other than the two tankers, Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight, only a few players had more than 40,000 health points. So if they were to be caught in between two explosions at the same time, they would surely be killed in an instant!

40%, 30%!

"Wa! Ya! Ya! What the hell! This stinky boss really has a long health bar there!" Wei Yan Er got caught up in another explosion, blowing her up, until she was shouting in pain.

If the difficult part about the previous bosses that they had encountered before along the way was their horrifying damage output, then the difficult part about fighting this boss was the duration of time required to defeat him. Players cannot afford any single mistake during this long duration of time, because that one small mistake would risk getting the party wiped out!

"Come, tell a joke!" as everyone had just avoided the {Stardust Explosion} and the situation seemed to be stable at the moment, Zhang Yang smiled and asked for a joke in an attempt to ease down the tensed mood of everyone.

To be in an intense and yet stressful battle, only Sun Xin Yu would be able to handle it with a calm mind. As for Zhang Yang, he was already used to such boss battles, as he had already encountered many similar boss battles in his previous life. Sun Xin Yu could do it because of her profession in real life. Compared to being a trained cop, a mere tens of minutes of stress is a walk in the park for her!

Fatty Han was immediately riled up the moment he heard Zhang Yang asking for a joke, so he quickly said, "Let me tell first! Let me!"



"No! Don't! Anything that comes from this wretched fatty is definitely 'tainted'!" the ladies were trying to stop Fatty Han from saying another word.

"Endless Starlight too! No jokes from you!" Just as Endless Starlight was about to open up his mouth, he was shot straight down. He blushed after being shut up by a bunch of ladies!

"Then, allow me to tell you guys a joke!" Lost Dream took over this 'sacred' mission and said, "It all happened yesterday when my little brother came back home. He came to me and said to me with pride, 'Bro, I'm no longer a virgin!'"

The ladies blushed when they heard the words 'no longer a virgin', while Zhang Yang and the other men were all revealing their 'wolfish' faces and smiled like a bunch of perverts.

"So I told him to sit down and tell me slowly." Lost Dream continued his story, "But my little brother tightened his teeth and clutched up his ass, and he said, 'I cannot sit, Ow!'"

"Pff --- " Zhang Yang and the men started to laugh out loud.

Han Ying Xue and the ladies were looking at each other, as they were not aware of the meaning of the joke.

Wei Yan Er did not get it at all and asked, "Is that some sort of joke? What's so funny about it?"

Zhang Yang gave it a long thought and said, "A man will never understand what is pain, until they are poked from behind!"

"It's 'girl'! You moron!" Wei Yan Er immediately corrected Zhang Yang.

At that moment, Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream and Fantasy Sweetheart had finally got the meaning of the joke, and they blushed. Only Wei Yan Er was still trying to understand the meaning of the joke, scratching her own head.

After fooling around for a while there, everyone eased down a little, and they felt more relieved, increasing their efficiency in battle.

20%!

Time to enter the 'slaughtering' state of time! Everyone in the party immediately unleashed everything they had, and the health bar of the boss began to reduce a little faster.

"Impossible! You are just a bunch of ants! How can you manage to hurt my sacred body!" Shaloni, who was already wounded badly, started bleeding more. Although it did not affect the boss's capability to battle, but he was looking really fatigued.

"Stinky boss! Just give up already!" Wei Yan Er swung her axe until strong currents of wind could be felt. She went in irrationally, taking her [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation )]

that filled up her rage gauge and went on to activate all her skills without considering anything else at all!

‘-90,440!’

Within that 10-second period, the damage output of this little girl was terrifying! Even Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream or Daffodil Daydream could not go near her damage output!

16%, 13%, 9%!

"Ancient Demonic Souls, please answer my summons and get rid of these disgusting pests!" Shaloni was almost out of breath, this particular summon seemed to be his final attempt to summon the foul Ancient Demonic Souls!

Everyone quickly started scattering to avoid any contact with the foul monsters. They had already reached this far, if they failed there, it would definitely be a crime that cannot be forgiven for a thousand years!

7%! 4%! 1%!

"I... I'm the.. in.. invincible... in..."

Pak! The health bar of the boss was finally emptied out! Shaloni collapsed onto the ground and dropped out a number of loot all over the ground.

"Haha! Stinky boss is finally dead!"

Everyone let out a breath of relief. It took them almost 30 minutes to defeat the boss, everyone was exhausted! Another word to describe this is - tedious!

Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart quickly went up to bring Hundred Shots and Fatty Han back. When it came to Fatty Han, the two ladies decided to use 'paper scissor stone' as the deciding factor --- of course, the loser would have to do it! Naturally, Fatty Han started sobbing there and then. After being rescued, he went to a corner and drew circles on the ground to reflect upon himself.

"Yo! Time to reveal the equipment!" Wei Yan Er was filled with joy, even her face showed it all. She had already leaped over to Shaloni's dead body and began her 'touch' on the loot.

# Chapter 431: The Resurrection of The Ancient Demonic Statue

---

[Brutal Onslaught Chest plate] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +302

Strength: +274

Agility: +121

{Unidentified}

Required level: 90

Wei Yan Er uncovered the first piece of equipment among the loot, which was a piece of Chest Plate that glittered in a gold complexion, looking dazzling. The piece was just magnificently beautiful to look at.

"Haha! I'm calling dibs for this one!" Wei Yan Er was grinning broadly as she held the equipment in her hands. Everyone saw how badly she wanted the Chest Plate, so they gave up on trying to take it from the little girl. Pleased with herself, she kept it in her inventory. After that, she was ready to uncover the second piece of equipment.

[Staff of Wisdom] (Yellow-Gold, Staff)

Magic attack: 1,372 - 1,772

Equip: 10% rate to add 50 intelligence points when hitting a target, can stack up to 3 times.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream already possessed their very own Level 80 Violet-Platinum staffs, and the quality of their staffs were so much higher compared to this [Staff of Wisdom]. Of course, they did not have any need for it, so the staff went to Fantasy Sweetheart.

"Little girl, time to take out a Violet-Platinum and show us the power of your 'lucky hands'!" Zhang Yang teased Wei Yan Er.

"You're really dumb, noob tank. Of course, we are viewing the stuff starting from the worst to the best! If we have already taken a look at the best stuff in the beginning, then when we are looking at the remaining stuff, we would feel disappointed!" Wei Yan Er shot back immediately.

Then, the little girl put her hands back into the loot and took out

an ancient looking ring that radiated in a faint purplish light. The glow was pleasing to look at.

[Ring of New Hope] (Violet-Platinum, Ring)

Vitality: +159

Intelligence: +105

Spirit: +105

Equipment: Increase critical rate by 2%.

Use: Heals yourself and recover 50,000 health points in an instant. Cooldown: 12 hours.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

"Wow! This is one fine, magnificent Magic Ring!" Wei Yan Er exclaimed immediately, and then she looked at her own hands and said, "Sigh, my hands are just too lucky! Lucky hands! These hands must be the best of the best!"

The attributes of this ring were indeed magnificent, it was definitely the best Magic Ring at the current stage of the game! It

provided a substantial amount of attributes, and also gave an additional of 2% critical rate for free! The main attraction of this ring was that it had a life-saving special effect function that gave a total of 50,000 health points immediately upon activation! The amount of HP this ring could recover was actually 5 times of what [Merlinda's Appreciation Ring] could provide!

"At least, the system did not mistreat us! We have been through so much hardship, killing so many bosses already!" Han Ying Xue quickly selected the button 'Need'.

As expected, Daffodil Daydream and Fantasy Sweetheart weren't that kind to give the ring away to Han Ying Xue. All of them took out their dices and started rolling for it. May fortune favor the bold!

In the end, Han Ying Xue won, with 100 points!

Everyone could only admire the superb luck that this Witch Snow had. Every single time good stuff drops, this witch would definitely win the Dice Toss with the highest value!

She did have her shortcomings - she was only Level 88 now, so she would have to wait for a while longer before she can equip the ring.

After Wei Yan Er picked up another small piece of the [Fragment of Hammer of Sanctions], the remaining loots were a few pieces of [Inscribed Cloth] and a piece of Tailoring Profession Blueprint, which was taken by Daffodil Daydream. She then tapped it on her



chest and learned to make whatever it was on the blueprint.

[Incandescent Electrical Robe] (Violet-Platinum, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +16

Vitality: +907

Intelligence: +601

Spirit: +259

{Level 3 Socket 1}

{Level 3 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases attack by 2%.

Required Level: 90

After viewing the attributes of the final product that Daffodil Daydream made, everyone was stunned. This piece of equipment was just too good to be true! A magnificent piece of work! Definitely a great masterpiece!

Fatty Han was drooling, "If you make this equipment and sell it, you can definitely sell at top price! Pretty Daffodil, please take me

in as your 'Mistress'!"

Indeed, at the current stage of the game, any Violet-Platinum equipment is super rare! Any piece of Violet-Platinum equipment can reach up to hundreds of thousand dollars!

Furthermore, this [Incandescent Electrical Robe] has very powerful attributes. If the seller bumps onto a rich person, the seller can actually sell it for up to millions of dollars without any problems!

So, if one can sell hundreds of this, that person would become a millionaire already!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Do you think it's really so convenient? Daffodil, take a look at the ingredients required to make this robe. Are they really that easy to gather?"

Daffodil Daydream picked her way through onto the ingredient required menu and showed it out to the others: Inscribed Cloth X 1000, Azure Pearl X 10, Mythical Pearl Silk X 5, Sacred Thread X 1.

"Holy!" Zhang Yang took in a deep breath and said, We can get as many [Inscribed Cloth] as we need because they're easy to come by, but these [Azure Pearl] and [Mythical Pearl Silk]... these two items are definitely very rare, and extremely hard to come by. Price is not the problem, the problem is that there is only a limited number of these items in the game! And the final item [Sacred Thread] is even 'better'! I have never even heard about it before!"

"If it's so easy to make a Violet-Platinum equipment, then Violet-Platinum grade equipment would become very common in the game. The system will not make such mistakes!" Hundred Shots nodded and said.

"Alright, settle down. Time for us to meet our 'Son of God'!" Han Ying Xue stretched herself and gave a good yawn, "After all this, I'm getting myself a great meal!"

While she was talking, she gave glanced at Zhang Yang with her sexy eyes. Obviously, she had not forgotten about how she got one big meal from Zhang Yang previously.

Zhang Yang took a peek at Sun Xin Yu without saying anything. This piece of 'ice' was basically invisible all the time, other than when they are engaging a boss. But as a police, her eyes and ears must be very sharp. So she might have heard Han Ying Xue and would invite herself later!

As predicted, the end of her mouth twitched a little. If Zhang Yang had not actually paid attention to her, he would not have seen that!

It's going to be 'merry' later on!

The gang proceeded forward. The terrain in the area was a little different from the terrain that they had gone through earlier on. Before that, everyone was running on a platform where the path coiled up in many layers of large rings that led up to the top - as they followed the path, and from there onwards, the path stopped

halfway across like half a circle. There was a long straight path that led straight towards the center point of the half circle.

There were no signs of any monsters along the way. Everyone was charging through as quickly as they could, trying not to waste a single second. After passing through the long straight path that led straight to the middle of the area, they found themselves standing on a vast, underground space!

The area had a surface area of at least 5 kilometers squares out, being about two hundred meters up from the lowest floor. The place looked just like a large palace hall, similar to a sanctuary! Right in the middle of the area, there was a sturdily stationed gigantic metallic monster, and the head of that metallic monster was about to touch the highest spot of the entire area! It was huge!

[Ancient Demonic Statue - Cazacrol] (Inactive, Servant)

Level: Inactive

HP: Inactive

Defense: Inactive

Well, who would have thought that there actually was an undated product in an unaddressed factory! The grade, the HP bar, the Defense, were all still unavailable from view!

There was nothing else in the area, other than that large demonic

statue. The final boss Madran seemed to have vanished into thin air!

Zhang Yang and his gang waltzed up to the statue. As they approached the statue from about a hundred meters away, there was a low voice coming from within the demonic statue, saying "No wonder Cazacrol has stopped restoring itself, you imbeciles must have ruined the sacrificial altars!"

So, the boss was hiding inside the demonic statue all along!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Yes indeed we did! All 12 of your disciples have been defeated by us! And, we also freed all of the Believers! So Madran, prepare to die!"

"Imbeciles!" a cold humph came from within the statue, "Although the power of the demonic statue has barely been restored, it will be enough to crush you! It can recover its lost power with bloodshed while killing any living human! Then, Cazacrol shall return to its full potential state! Unfortunately, I can no longer wait for Cazacrol to recover more power before revealing it to the public! Since you imbeciles are so eager to die, then let us use your blood to celebrate for the birth of this war machine!"

Boom!

The sturdy lifeless demonic statue suddenly opened up its eyes and revealed a pair of crimson bloody eyeballs within the eye sockets. An outburst of its aura revealed it's thirst for blood. It went across the entire area like a storm in all directions. Boom!

Boom! Boom! As the berserking aura passed through, the ground trembled, as if the ground itself was in fear.

Right beneath the head of the demonic statue, a bar saying 'Activating' appeared, and the progress of the bar was swift! It only took 1 to 2 seconds to complete loading!

Boom!

Cazacrol took its first step, and that stomp instantly cracked the ground in half, trembling the ground to the point that Zhang Yang and his gang lost their balance!

[The Ancient Demonic Statue - Cazacrol] (Mythical, Servant)

Level: 110

HP: 1,028,903/30,000,000

Defense: 4,900

"Rawgh!" Cazacrol let out a thunderous roar that shook the heavens, and the roar emitted out, wave by wave, echoing throughout the surroundings, and pak pak pak! The walls in the surroundings began to crack! It showed how powerful the intimidating aura of a Mythical grade boss was!

"Holy cow! A Mythical boss! How are we going to fight against

this thing!" Lost Dream was screaming in shock.

"Zhang Yang, can you see the level of the boss?" Hundred Shots asked Zhang Yang. Because in {{God's Miracle}}, players can only see the information of NPCs and monsters that were 20 levels higher or less, or else, all players could see are question marks.

Zhang Yang nodded as he charged forward to engage the boss, "It's a level 110 Mythical boss, with 4,900 defense points. However, it only has about 1,000,000 health points left, it's not like we stand absolutely no chance at defeating this piece of junk!"

"4,900 defense points!" everyone was frowning and sweating in cold fear. Without any {Cripple Defense}, the two dagger wielding Thieves, Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dreams will not be able to even break through the defensive armor of the boss. They would only be able to inflict 1 damage point to the boss - even by brute force!

Furthermore, there was also a damage penalty in effect, when players and the monster are 10 levels apart. Now that they were 20 levels lower than the boss, how much of their damage would be reduced as an act of the penalty then? Time to try it first and worry about it later!

{Spear of Obliteration}!

‘2,012!’

This {Spear of Obliteration} that ignored defense could initially

inflict a damage of about 4,000+ points, but now its attack has been reduced by about 50%!

"Hahaha! Mortals, dedicate your bodies as tributes and let your deaths be meaningful, at least!" Madran laughed madly from within the Servant. As he was laughing, Cazacrol reached out its hand and slammed at Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

Boom!

The strength of Cazacrol was just too powerful, to begin with. Although Zhang Yang raised up his shield in time to block that slam from the boss, he was still slammed into the ground as his two legs sunk into the ground up to his knees!

"How unfortunate. We have already used up our {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} in our previous battle. Or else, we could have released our super skills on the boss, and even a Mythical boss will have to die." Endless Starlight sighed.

"Hahaha! Can you feel the power of the Ancient Demonic Statue?" Madran was laughing out loud while Cazacrol reached out its hand and gave Zhang Yang another slam.

‘-48,038!’

Shoof! Zhang Yang lost half of his health bar in just an instant!



"What the hell! So this is the power of a Mythical boss! It's worthy of its title! The attack is just way too powerful!" Everyone was in shock!

Such a powerful attack! Even Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart will not be able to keep up in healing so much health even if they worked together! After all, the equipment of these two pretty ladies were still mostly Yellow-Gold grade, with a few pieces of Violet-Platinum grade. So, their tiers were basically only half of Zhang Yang's, at the current situation!

Zhang Yang quickly made up his mind, and he commanded, "Witch Snow! Let's use our paired skills {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}!"

Under the activation of {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}, the two of them be invincible for a full 30 seconds!

Han Ying Xue responded and quickly ran to the side of Zhang Yang.

"Hahaha! Give up on the futile attempt to struggle! Every attempt you make is hopeless, right before the absolute power!" Madran laughed madly again, and launched another slam over at Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue!

{Blizzard Sky}, {Luna's Dew} activated!

In just an instant, the ground was covered by the petals of snowflakes falling from the sky, and a moon rose up high in the sky!

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

...

Cazacrol was beginning to be inflicted by a continuous chain of damages, and the damage values were appearing right on top of the boss - constantly!

Chaos Damage was not affected by any Defense, Magic Defense or even the Level Difference. It would strike squarely with its full power!

Sun Xin Yu and the remaining members saw the opportunity, and they rushed in around the boss, taking their own [Power Potions], and begin to unleash their full assault onto the boss.

This 30-second duration of time is the best time to channel damages to the boss. And if they cannot empty out the health bar of the boss within that period of time, then when Zhang Yang is no longer under invincible state, he will definitely be instant-killed by the boss and squeeze him into something else!

As Zhang Yang needed to supervise the {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna’s

Dew}, he only managed to smash one layer of {Cripple Defense} onto the boss. So, Wei Yan Er continued his work and smashed 4 more layers of {Cripple Defense} as a start, reducing the Defense of the boss down to 2,500 points before everyone could begin their full assaults onto the boss! Well, that managed to increase the damage output of the entire gang, which increased the efficiency on reducing the boss's health bar!

800,000, 600,000, 400,000!

Although there was a level penalty that reduced their damage output on the boss, the firepower of these players wasn't that bad themselves, their attacks were still very powerful and sharp! However, when the boss spawned, it's health bar was already lower than 20%, which caused the gang to enter their 'Slaughter Mode' immediately, adding a substantial amount of firepower which made up with the firepower loss due to the level penalty suppression effect!

300,000! 200,000! 100,000!

"No! No! Stop!" Madran let out an angry roar, "You idiotic mortals! Stop at once! Heed my warning and stop!"

"Hahaha! Stinky boss! Don't you love to laugh? Laugh more now! I dare you!" Wei Yan Er wielded her giant axe over and over again, and she ignored all defenses of her target when the special effect of her weapon triggered! It was really effective and convenient to use such a weapon with such a special effect on bosses that had super high defenses!

"Bastards! You idiotic imbeciles! You will regret this! I will make you regret this!" Madran's voice was at its breaking point.

50,000! 30,000! 10,000!

Boom!

At the same instant when the {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew} ended, the health bar of Cazacrol was totally emptied out as well! The gigantic demonic statue collapsed and scattered into pieces across the ground!

"Look at what you imbeciles have done!" looking at the wreckage of their deed, an old man in a red robe appeared among the pieces of the statue. He had a size of a regular person, with a regular human face, and he had an ancient-looking staff in his hand. His face was filled with unspeakable rage at the moment.

"You have destroyed everything that I have worked on for 20 years!" the old man roared into the sky and his veins were popping out of his forehead. It was obvious that he was inconsolable at that moment! "I will tear you all into pieces, like how you did to my demonic statue!"

[Madran - The Son of God]

Level: 96

HP: 9,600,000

Defense: 2,600

The final boss has finally revealed himself!

# Chapter 432: The Beginning of a Bitter Battle!

---

"Argh ---" Fatty Han suddenly screamed like a little b\*tch - as if his parents had just died in front of him. His scream was miserable.

"You f\*cking fatty! Why did you suddenly scream like an animal shouting out a mating call! The boss has not even started poking your ass yet!" Zhang Yang asked and laughed. The two of them had already gotten used to joking around with each other.

"... the boss died, but there was no loot!" Fatty Han let out an enraged roar.

"The boss hasn't died yet --- Oh, you mean Cazacrol?"

"Yes! We just managed to take out a Mythical grade boss, and nothing dropped from it! What the f\*ck, man! Is this some sort of prank, or what!" Fatty Han was very angry with the fact he did all the hard work for nothing.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "The boss only had about 1,000,000 health points, the system put it in just to raise the difficulty of the battle by a little. So what can you expect? Do you think you just took out a fully-powered Mythical boss? Haha."

"Pui! Even if the boss only has 1 point of health when it spawns, it also counts as our kill! Of course, the system must award us with

something! Some fine equipment will do too! Fatty Han was really pissed and he tried to argue.

"Haha! Then unleash your anger onto this boss!" Zhang Yang charged in on Madran, and with a slash of his [Sword of Purging Devourer], he swung out a regular attack onto the boss and hooked over the aggro of the boss to himself.

Madran had already given up so much for the past 20 years to build up his pet project, and all his efforts have gone to waste in just one brief moment - because of Zhang Yang and his gang. He was already on the verge of exploding as his rage was at the limit. His face was very savage, and scary and the same time. As a Spellcaster, he actually used his staff as a stick to hit his enemies. He had obviously lost it! He rapped the head of Zhang Yang as hard as he could, as if he wanted to mince Zhang Yang into a ball of minced meat with his own bare hands! Otherwise, he would not be able to release his anger!

{Block}!

Zhang Yang did not have to be polite as well, and with his shield raised, he blocked the attack from Madran's staff, followed by a {Shield Bash} that scored a critical hit, inflicting a damage of 3,732 points onto the boss.

"Argh!" Madran felt the pain and he let out a roar. His eyes were flashing with murderous intent as he raised his staff, pointing the tip of his staff right at Zhang Yang.

"Let the lightning swallow your souls!" the boss waved his staff around and activated a skill!

‘Ding! Madran has unleashed {Lightning Storm}!’

Shoof!

A stream of blindingly white light shot out from the tip of the staff, and the light traveled at Zhang Yang just like a bolt of lightning. It was really fast! That light inflicted a damage of ‘-14,694’ onto Zhang Yang. After that, the lightning jumped from Zhang Yang and struck Endless Starlight, who appeared to be the nearest to Zhang Yang at the moment. That attack inflicted Endless Starlight with a damage of 45,750, which instantly-killed him and sent him straight to his demise!

And it was not over yet! That same stream of lightning then jumped from the dead body of Endless Starlight over to Lost Dream who happened to be the closest to Endless Starlight! An even more terrifying damage value was inflicted onto Lost Dream! A total of 126,000 damage points was inflicted on him, sending him straight back to the graveyard!

The killing streak continued, as the lightning jumped on from the dead body of Lost Dream over to Sun Xin Yu, then onto Wei Yan Er! First, Sun Xin Yu was inflicted by a damage of 378,000 points, followed by Wei Yan Er who was inflicted with a damage of 1,134,000 points, sending both of them straight to the graveyard as well! Those amount of damage could have killed the two ladies over a couple of times already!



With just a round of attack, the only ones left were Zhang Yang, Fatty Han, Hundred Shots, Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream and Fantasy Sweetheart! Other than Zhang Yang, all of the DPS profession players had been wiped out clean!

"Holy mother of god, this boss skill is too sick to be true!" Fatty Han put his hands on his head and screamed like a squealing piggy!

Han Ying Xue calmly speculated, "Every time the lightning jumps, the damage it can inflict will be multiplied threefold! So, after the second jump, it can already instant-kill any one of us!"

Calculating based on Zhang Yang's amount of damage immunity, this {Lightning Storm} of Madran had a basic damage of 21,000 points. However, with every single jump, the damage of the skill will increase by 3 times! Furthermore, it seemed that this skill would chain on until everyone is dead, there was no limit to how many times the lightning can jump! So after jumping a few times, the damage that it would inflict would reach the millions!

"The leaping should have a limited range!" Zhang Yang was having deep thoughts on it while he was engaged with the boss, slashing and cutting the boss as much as he can, "Or else, after killing the little girl, the lightning should have leaped on to another one of us, even though we were very far away from her."

"I wonder, how far can the lightning jump?!" Fatty Han was just being random.

"Oh, if you want to find out, of course, it won't be easy! Come over here!" Zhang Yang laughed and called Fatty Han over.

"Argh!" the face of Fatty Han immediately became bitter, "Little Yang, I'm not planning to die so young!"

"Don't worry! I will take good care of your pretty wives, you can go peacefully!" Zhang Yang told a joke, trying to ease him up, and then he went back to the topic, "Get to a spot at my back, 10 meters from me to be exact. Let's see if the lightning will charge over to you after hitting me! Since there is an 80% chance that we are going to be wiped out this round, let's just try to understand the skill of the boss as much as possible!"

"Argh! Why do I have to suffer so much? Is it because I befriended a bad person?" Fatty Han walked carefully up towards Zhang Yang, and he stopped on a spot about 10 meters away from Zhang Yang. Then, he continued to shoot his arrows at the boss.

"Aiyak!" Han Ying Xue suddenly filled her face with shock and fear at the same time, then she said, "Silly Yu, something invisible is attacking me!"

"Me too! I felt it too!" Daffodil Daydream and Fantasy Sweetheart were also saying the same thing.

"Hundred Shots, Fatty, do you guys feel anything wrong?" Zhang Yang quickly asked.

"Yes, there's something invisible attacking us. The damage isn't high, it's just about 1,000 damage points per hit!" Hundred Shots nodded and told Zhang Yang.

At that moment, Zhang Yang also noticed it too. He was inflicted with '-0' damage. If it was an attack from the boss, then the damage wouldn't be so low!

"The damage isn't high, but there is a slow effect!" Han Ying Xue was annoyed.

Madran let out a cry and raised his staff at Zhang Yang. A stream of dark light emerged from the staff and turned into a black skull. The black skull flew over and struck Zhang Yang's chest, inflicting him with a damage of approximately 15,000 points.

However, this boss was really annoying. Right after using a magic attack, he would immediately use his staff to swing at Zhang Yang's head!

"Let the lightning swallow your souls!" the boss waved his staff around and activated the {Lightning Storm} for a second time. Zhang Yang and the remaining members of his party had been anticipating this.

'-14,694!'

Zhang Yang was inflicted with an expected damage value, but the attack stopped there! The lightning did not leap over to anyone!

"Fatty, come closer to me! Move 3 meters closer!" Zhang Yang said.

"My life is just like a dining table that is occupied with many breakable utensils!" Fatty Han was trying to express his feelings with his lame joke as he moved a few steps forward.

"Hey, wretched fatty! You should be happy that you can still battle!" Wei Yan Er was very bored and judging from her impatient characteristic, it was torturous for her to just lie down and watch others battling the boss.

"Eye of the Illusive Soul, swallow their souls, and leave nothing behind!" Madran finally activated his second skill.

‘Ding! Madran has unleashed {Eye of the Illusive Soul}!’

Instantly, a large black eyeball homed in on Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream and Hundred Shots! The eyeballs on their body would twitch and turn a little randomly, and it was really disgusting and terrifying to look at!

[Eye of the Illusive Soul]: Allows you to see and attack the Illusive Souls. If you can kill one Illusive Soul within 30 seconds, the [Eye of the Illusive Soul] will be lifted. Or else, you will be transformed into an Illusive Soul by the [Eye of the Illusive Soul]!

Hundred Shots quickly informed everyone, "So it was the Illusive

Souls that was attacking us earlier on, we cannot see them without the [Eye of the Illusive Soul]!"

"Quickly, we only have 30 seconds to kill them, or else we will become one of them!" Daffodil Daydream quickly said.

"How many are there? Are their attributes powerful?" Zhang Yang could not see the Illusive Souls, so he asked Han Ying Xue and the other two who had the [Eye of the Illusive Soul] on them.

"Three!" Han Ying Xue then posted the attributes of the Illusive Souls onto the party channel for everyone to see.

[Illusive Soul] (Normal, Summon)

Level: 95

HP: 100,000

Defense: 0

Zhang Yang gave some deep thoughts about it, then he said, "Hundred Shots, Daffodil Daydream, Witch Snow, you three combine your attacks and focus on only one Illusive Soul, but stop your attacks when the Illusive Soul is only left with about 10,000 health points. Then, Witch Snow will take it out first and release herself from the [Eye of the Illusive Soul]! As for Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream, you two have enough firepower to take out your own Illusive Souls. So after you guys help Han Ying Xue,

you guys just have to focus on killing your own Illusive Souls. It shouldn't be hard for you two!"

"Alright!"

Han Ying Xue was a healer, a profession that was weak on attacking power. Although her equipment was really powerful, she lacked skills that could inflict higher damage. So, if she ever went into battle on her own, she would be at a disadvantage! Furthermore, the longer Han Ying Xue is 'tied down', the more stress Daffodil Daydream was going to have. Because Daffodil Daydream would have to cover Han Ying Xue's part to heal up Zhang Yang and also the other remaining members of the party. Her stress would become tremendous!

Han Ying Xue, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream worked together and focused on one of the Illusive Souls, and then they attack the monster that was only left with about 10,000 health points. After Han Ying Xue slaughtered the monster with ease, Daffodil Daydream and Hundred Shots turned to their own Illusive Souls and began to focus their assaults onto the monsters. With their strong attacks, it would still take about 15 seconds to kill a monster with 0 defense and 100,000 health points. There was still about 5 to 6 seconds left when they managed to kill the Illusive Souls and unbind themselves from the effect of the [Eye of the Illusive Soul]!

Other than that, the Illusive Souls would only attack players without the [Eye of the Illusive Soul]. So, Han Ying Xue, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream could focus on slaying the monsters.

"Let the lightning swallow your souls!" Madran waved his staff around and activated the {Lightning Storm} for the third time.

‘-14,694!’

Zhang Yang was struck by a lightning until he was crispy on the outside, tender on the inside, just like the previous encounter with the lightning strike. However, Fatty Han was still alive and well, shooting arrows towards the boss.

"Fatty, come two more steps closer to me!" Zhang Yang laughed as he spoke to Fatty Han.

"Go away! I don't want to do this anymore! I'm not listening to you! La la la!" Fatty Han roared.

"Haha! Brother fatty, just take two more steps and everything would still be fine." Endless Starlight could not help himself, as he was basically a talkative person with no tendency to shut his mouth. He immediately laughed after saying it.

"Endless brat, are you looking to be beaten up?"

"You have destroyed all the efforts of my life, my entire life! You pests! Imbeciles! It would still be hard for me to calm down even after I crush you all into dust!" Madran let out a thunderous roar and continued to swing his staff at Zhang Yang repeatedly. This annoying boss actually turned out to be pretty lethal in melee combat. His physical attack actually reached up to about 20,000

points! Because physical damage tended to be reduced or lowered due to the defense and armor of players, the damage inflicted onto the players would be slightly lowered. But, the annoying part about this boss' melee assaults was that the staff had a certain rate to stun the players, and the rate was not that low either!

However, Zhang Yang could also use his {Shield Bash}. Because currently, his {Shield Bash} could deal double damage, making it one of the strong damage skills that can contribute to bringing down the boss as quickly as possible!

"Embrace my wrath and die!" Madran suddenly pointed his staff towards Daffodil Daydream! Right after that. The body of the little beauty with a pretty face and a pair of huge boobies suddenly surged with sparkling lightning, making her look like 'The Flash'. It looked very fantastic. But what was even more 'fantastic' is the additional negative effect that was suddenly added onto her.

[Strength of Madran]: explodes after 10 seconds, inflicts you with 1 point of Nature Damage, but inflicts all targets within a 10-meter radius with 50,000 Nature Damage, with you as the center point.

"Holy sheet, get away from everyone now, Daffodil Daydream!" Everyone was screaming at her, telling her to get away from them after reading the negative effect that she is carrying.

"Alright! I'm going, I'm going!" Daydream quickly nodded and turned around in a rush. As she was turning very fast, her pair of papaya-sized heavy boobs jiggled through the air and bounced up and down. The 'scenery' was really stunning!



Among the members of the party, one would be able to recall the drooling sound coming from Fatty Han and Endless Starlight after witnessing that ‘scenery’.

# Chapter 433: A Smooth Clearance

---

10 seconds was enough for Fantasy Sweetheart to run into the 'safe zone' area.

Boom!

Immediately, a stream of white dazzling light emanated from the entire body of the pretty faced pair of huge boobies, radiating out into the surrounding. But there was no one around within the effective range of the effect, so the attack was the equivalent of shooting bullets into the ocean. Pak! Fantasy Sweetheart was inflicted with 1 point of damage.

Right after the effect faded, Fantasy Sweetheart returned to her position and continued to do her duty on the battlefield.

Although Zhang Yang and his party were lesser in number now, that was also an advantage for them, as there was no more space for them to run, when someone is being inflicted by the {Strength of Madran} effect without having to worry that others would be wounded when the skill explodes!

"Although we are slow in progress due to our small numbers, we have the time to slowly torture the boss!" everyone saw a glimpse of hope to win the battle.

"Let the lightning swallow your souls!" the boss let out another roar and pointed his staff at Zhang Yang to activate another {Lightning Storm}!

‘-14,694!’

‘-63,000!’

After the lightning landed on Zhang Yang and inflicted him with about 15,000 damage points, it leaped straight over to Fatty Han and instant-killed him!

"Wah! You bastard, little Yang! You sacrificed me now! Are you happy now? We are now short of yet another DPS player in the party!" Fatty Han could not accept his own death.

"Don't worry! You died with honor, and the honor is mine! Because you have confirmed for us that this lightning attack can only jump by about 5 meters long!" Zhang Yang laughed while raising his shield up to block the staff assaults from the annoying boss.

Another DPS player has died. There were only 3 players with high DPS left, that was Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream. The total DPS of the entire party had been reduced down to less than 20,000 points! So, the progress of reducing the health bar of the boss had become extremely slow.

90%, 80%, 75%!

"My followers, reveal yourselves, and fight for your master!" Madran raised his staff up high in the sky and commanded loudly.

12 streams of dark lights came out from the staff and shot across to the 12 different corners of the area.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Skeletons were breaking out of the ground one after another. They looked really familiar! Each of the skeletons had a different sort of weapon on their hands. Four of them were riding on skeletal horses! The skeletal horses were stomping their hoofs on the ground, roaring out angrily!

It turned out that, these skeletons were actually the 12 disciples that Zhang Yang and his gang had met and engaged! Their names were labeled on each of them, crystal clear! However, they were now no longer bosses, instead, they were just elite monsters that have 200,000 health points on each of them. Even though their strengths are much weaker now, but to battle one boss with 12 elite-grade disciples at the same time, Zhang Yang and his incomplete formation of his gang would definitely be faced with an extreme challenge! The boss and the monsters had an absolute advantage over Zhang Yang and his gang!

"Slaughter them all!" Madran let out a furious roar and pointed his staff at Zhang Yang and his gang. He gave the command for the 12 disciples to launch their assaults towards Zhang Yang and his gang!

Instantly, these 12 skeleton monsters let out a miserable screech and stomped their way through, charging towards Zhang Yang and his gang.

Zhang Yang quickly left the boss aside for the moment and used {Charge}, aiming for the skeleton monster that was nearest to him, followed by a {Thunder Strike} that inflicted quite some damage to all of the monsters within his attack range.

"Rawgh ---" the 12 skeleton monsters were enraged, and they wielded their weapons, charging at Zhang Yang. Although some of the disciples were Spellcasters, they were all currently melee type monsters after having been resurrected.

Zhang Yang quickly flitted left and right, moving between the 12 monsters, dodging as many attacks as possible to minimize the damage he received.

"I shall not rest my rage as long as you pests are still alive and well! I'll tear you into pieces!" The skeleton monsters weren't actually scary at all, what really scared them was the fact that there was a boss commanding these skeleton monsters! Although Madran did not have a mount, and he was a Spellcaster that was supposed to be weak and slow, he was spry and fast! After using a ranged attack with his spell attack, he ran very swiftly to Zhang Yang before Zhang Yang could even react! Then, the boss swung his staff at Zhang Yang!

{Block}!

Zhang Yang blocked the attack, but the boss seemed to be addicted to melee attacks! Tock! He immediately swiveled and gave another knock on Zhang Yang with his staff.

If it was just an attack from a mere regular monster, Zhang Yang could have dodged the attack with ease. But, the attack of the boss was swift and merciless! It seemed almost impossible to dodge that attack!

‘-12,732!’

Zhang Yang felt the knock of the boss’ ‘stick’ in his head, and that attack actually stunned him! Although he had activated {Warrior's Will} right after that, the luck of Madran struck the jackpot! Out of 7 hits from the boss’s staff, 2 of them that triggered stun effect on Zhang Yang, rendering him immobile! The monsters started ganging up on him!

The assaults from the boss were unceasingly unleashed onto Zhang Yang and his gang. {Eye of the Illusive Soul}, {Strength of Madran} and {Lightning Storm} were spammed thorough the battle. The powerful oppression from the boss had finally crippled the party of Zhang Yang. At one time, Han Ying Xue was healing up Zhang Yang. But one of them was inflicted with the {Strength of Madran} and they did not manage to isolate the explosion from the remaining members of Zhang Yang’s party! The explosion took out all of the remaining party members, except Zhang Yang himself, and Han Ying Xue!

Ching chiang ching chiang! Zhang Yang activated his life-saving skills one after another and fell under the claws of the boss and his 12 disciples, an expected outcome.

"Finally! Everyone got wiped out! Haha!" Wei Yan Er was happy, "I can finally join into battle the boss!"

Only this little girl would be so happy after the entire party has been wiped out!

"Haha, only our little girl is truly enjoying the fun of playing this game!" Everyone released their souls and began to run back to the boss in their soul states. Zhang Yang sighed a little and said, "Every one of us has already obtained a certain level of material gain, so now, we should be more focused on getting more equipment drops from the bosses, not savoring the process of battling bosses!"

But Fatty Han said shamelessly, "I'm just a regular guy who loves to count gold coins, silver coins, or whatever coins that are valuable! That's the most interesting part of the game, for me!"

The Graveyard was just located at the upside of the island. So, it did not take long for them to get back to their own dead bodies. After approximately 10 minutes, everyone in Zhang Yang's party had arrived back in the lair of Madran, and resurrected themselves. Then, they quickly picked a safe spot and took [Snacks] to recover their initial states.

"Fortunate for us, that Mythical grade boss was not reset!" right in the middle of the boss area, Madran was still standing there with an angry face, whilst surrounded by his 12 skeletal disciples. Meanwhile, Cazacrol remained as a pile of shattered stones.

If Cazacrol was also resurrected, they would have a lot of

problems battling all of the monsters together! One must not underestimate the remaining 1,000,000 health points on the Mythical boss! The penalty oppression on the levels' significant difference between the Mythical boss and Zhang Yang's party members was the largest problem that they had! If they did not have the paired skills such as {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}, it would be extremely difficult for them to defeat the boss!

"After we begin to engage with the monsters, I'll kite the monsters, while Endless Starlight kites the boss! Everyone will focus on taking out the monsters first!" Zhang Yang commanded. As they had already spent a significantly long period of time understanding the skills of Madran, Zhang Yang then decided on how they should carry out the boss battle, "If any healers or tankers get affected by {Eye of the Illusive Soul}, then DPS players will need to step in and replace the healer or the tanker to hold off the boss for the time being!"

"Then, what should we do if 1 tanker and 2 healers are being affected?" Wei Yan Er blinked her large pair of eyes and asked.

Zhang Yang immediately roared at her, "Can't you be more optimistic about this?"

"We should always be ready for the worst! If we can handle the worst scenario already, then what else is there to be afraid of?" Wei Yan Er was huffing at Zhang Yang.

Everyone was laughing at their conversation. Then Zhang Yang praised the little girl and said, "I can't believe this little girl is wiser now, and she might be as wise as a gorilla, now!"



"Wah! You stupid noob tank! Would it kill you to not insult me for once!" Wei Yan Er growled at Zhang Yang.

"But, if we really encounter such a fate, what should we really do?" Hundred Shots was beginning to feel worried.

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "So, let Endless Starlight be the main tanker. We can assume that the boss won't inflict the main tanker with his skill effects. If the boss really picks me and the two healers of our party, there will be nothing to fear as well!"

After considering, based on the damage output capability of Zhang Yang, everyone nodded without any worries on their minds.

"Alright, everyone knows the deal about {Lightning Storm} right? This skill will strike the player with the boss's aggro first, then it will start jumping about! So, listen up! Any DPS profession player must not get the first aggro of the boss. Everyone has to make sure that you are at least 5 meters away from the main tanker, then nothing bad will happen to us!" Zhang Yang reminded everyone.

"Take note! Anyone who is inflicted by the {Strength of Madran}, you will have to stay away from everyone, as far as possible! Don't be like a certain someone and just stand there!"

"Silly Yu! What did you say? I dare you to say it again!" Han Ying Xue also growled at Zhang Yang with rage.

"Hahaha! Get ready for the battle guys! Time to kill some monsters!" Zhang Yang raised his shield and sword up, "Starlight, let's rock!"

The two tankers maintained a space of 5-meters in-between them as they were engaging the boss. Together, they charged towards Madran!

Pak! With a {Shield Toss}, Endless Starlight initiated the first attack at the boss, grabbing hold of the aggro of the boss.

"It's another bunch of imbeciles that knows no fear about death, eh!" Madran let out a thunderous roar. It seemed like Madran had totally forgotten about Zhang Yang and his party members. Madran raised up his staff and pointed the tip of his staff at Endless Starlight, "Kill them all!"

The 12 skeletal disciples charged at Endless Starlight immediately, after Madran gave the command.

Zhang Yang charged straight up and crashed into one of the elite monsters, followed by a gulp of an entire bottle of his {Rage Potion}. He activated his {Thunder Strike}, delivering a powerful strike on the ground, dealing damage to all surrounding enemies within his attack range, successfully hooking over the aggro of all the monsters!

Right after that, he quickly kited the monsters away from the boss as far as possible. After his 1-second common cool down

period had passed, he immediately activated {Blast Wave}. With the special effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] triggered, more damage was inflicted upon all 12 skeletal disciples, and Zhang Yang succeeded in maintaining their aggro on him.

Wei Yan Er had lost her patience long ago as she sat on the floor, while waiting for the party to be wiped out earlier on. Of course, she would charge in with her, er, {Charge} and begin her onslaught on the monsters!

The attack power of the 12 elite skeletal monsters was not that bad either. However, without their boss to command them, they were all but a dozen of skeletal soldiers without an aim. They could be inflicted with stuns, and movement reductions! One more assault of {Thunder Strike} was enough to make them suffer. With Zhang Yang's exquisite skills of dodging around, all of them could only roar around in misery.

But Madran was not standing by the side idly. Although his {Lightning Storm} would only affect Endless Starlight alone, his other skills like the {Strength of Madran} and {Eye of Illusive Soul} could still affect the remaining members of Zhang Yang's party, giving all of them some chaotic moments in the battle.

1 minute later, the 12 elite monsters were finally cleared out. Everyone was finally able to focus back on bombarding the boss with everything they got.

"You bunch of damned imbeciles! Kill one and another comes back! It's worse than killing cockroaches!" Madran began to curse, and he was waving his staff round and round, throwing a bunch of

skills at Zhang Yang and the gang!

The most threatening skill of the boss was summoning his 12 disciples! Fortunately, that skill would only trigger once each time the boss loses 25% of his health bar. If that skill was activated randomly, then Zhang Yang and his party would have to waste a lot of their firepower on taking out the disciples, and through that process, a substantial amount of mana points would be exhausted, and healing would become impossible in the latter stages of the battle.

75%. 50%, 25%!

After surviving the assaults from that wave of summoned disciples, everyone already knew that victory is within their grasp! Everyone was already agitated with joy as the battle would soon be coming to an end!

Zhang Yang was even more agitated, as he was about to obtain the final piece of the [Fragment of Dimensional Key]! This long-winded Main Quest is about to come to an end! This is the final step already!

10%!

4%!

1%!

"No ---" Madran let out a scream of despair as his last drop of health points were blown away by Daffodil Daydream with a fireball. The boss collapsed onto the ground and stayed dead.

# Chapter 434: Herb Foraging Familiar

---

Wei Yan Er was still sulking, and she kicked and stomped on the dead body of the boss, "Stinky boss, how dare you try to kill me and waste so much of my time! Humph! Now you should know, I'm not a person you should be meddling with!"

Fatty Han laughed and said, "Little Yan Er, you're actually raping the dead body of a boss! Careful and don't spill out of the stomach of the boss!"

"Aiyo!" all the ladies could not stand that wretched fatty anymore, even Sun Xin Yu could not help but twitch in anger.

Wei Yan Er was about to bend down to pick up the loot that had been dropped from the boss, but, the moment she recalled what Fatty Han just said, she could not bear to bend down anymore. If she really did accidentally 'squeeze' something out from the stomach of the boss, then it would be horrifically disgusting!

"You wretched f\*ck! You're so wretched that you're almost on the same par as a master of the century already! How could we never discover your true 'talent'?" Zhang Yang shook his head and took over Wei Yan Er's job of picking up the loot.

With a touch, Zhang Yang grabbed up a piece of heavy armor that glittered in a gold complexion. This piece of equipment looked simple and unsophisticated.

[Greaves of Giant Elephants] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +302

Strength: +274

Agility: +121

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

Zhang Yang laughed, and then he threw the piece over to Wei Yan Er, "Little girl, catch! This pair of greaves suits you very much!"

Wei Yan Er was very happy at the beginning, but she immediately jumped in rage when she realized Zhang Yang's intention, "Stinky noob tank! You're saying that my legs are as thick as the legs of an elephant, aren't you! Rawgh!"

"Aiya! When did you become so clever, little girl?"

"Humph! Humph! Humph!" Wei Yan Er rolled her large eyes in disdain. Although she did not speak anymore, it was obvious that she was not willing to give in to Zhang Yang's teasing.

"Silly Yu! Don't always bully little Yan Er!" Han Ying Xue stepped up for the little girl.

"Sister Snow is always the best!"

"Yan Er can only be bullied by me and me alone!" Han Ying Xue giggled as she used her two hands to pinch and rub Wei Yan Er's face.

Wei Yan Er, "..."

Zhang Yang reached out his hands again and picked up another piece of golden equipment.

[Demonic Whirlpool] (Yellow-Gold, Accessory)

Use: Exiles the target into a chaotic whirlpool full of demonic aura. Targets that are within the Demonic Whirlpool cannot be inflicted with any damage, at the same time, the targets will be immobile. Lasts for 15 seconds.

Required Level: 90

"It's great for PK battles! You can go one against two with this precious piece!" Zhang Yang weighed the accessory in his hand and asked everyone, "So, who wants this?"



"Me! Me!"

Everyone was trying to talk at the same time with the attempt to get the accessory piece from Zhang Yang as most of them were PvP maniacs. Furthermore, with this piece of accessory, a player could activate miraculous effects when battling two or three enemy players at the same time! While in the dungeons, the player who holds this accessory can also use it to restrict the movement of a monster when there are too many monsters around. In that sense, the player can reduce his or her own stress in dealing with many monsters at the same time.

After rolling for who gets the accessory, this masterpiece was finally taken by Sun Xin Yu herself. Han Ying Xue tried to provoke her, because she wasn't happy with the result of the dice-throwing, "The dog that bites never barks!" That enraged Sun Xin Yu to the point that she almost lost herself to her own rage.

Zhang Yang was having a headache about these two pretty ladies. Although the two of them were not close to each other, at least, these two would not provoke each other in the first place. However, as time had passed, the two of them have begun to show signs that they could not 'co-exist'! Whenever they meet, they would cross eyes like two enemies about to slaughter up each other!

Sigh, if only the two ladies would succumb to his 'charm', then his life would have been so much easier.

Zhang Yang put down the thoughts for the moment and went on picking up the loots. He bent down and picked up a shield that

radiated with a purplish light.

[Kingdom's Heart] (Violet-Platinum, Shield)

Defense: +1,512

Vitality: +1,058

Equip Effect: Absorbs 537 damage points when being hit.

Equip Effect: Increases 2% of the damage immunity.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

"Holy mother of cow! This equipment is dope!" Endless Starlight was already madly admiring the piece of work. He charged down and hugged Zhang Yang's legs and said, "Boss, boss! Please give me the shield! You're like a father to me! I'm willing to do anything for you! I can die for you, cry for you, and 'come' for you!"

Zhang Yang was disgusted by Starlight and tossed the shield straight into the face of Endless Starlight, "Get lost!"

After taking the shield into his hands, Endless Starlight went aside with joy. Although he was not hurt or wounded in any kind

of way, there was an obvious mark of a shield on his face. But, he was contented, as he had already gotten his hands all over the shield.

Everyone chose to give up on the shield, and he quickly put the shield into his inventory with much joy on his face.

"This [Kingdom's Heart] is definitely the best shield there is in this game at the moment!" Hundred Shots said, "Starlight has finally become more powerful!"

Zhang Yang nodded to express his agreement. Judging from the attributes of this shield, it was actually even better than the [Titan Wall] that Zhang Yang had! However, after considering the Armor Set effect, Zhang Yang would definitely not break up his Titan Set Armor just to equip this [Kingdom's Heart] as his shield. It just did not make sense, as the special effect of the Titan Set Armor would give him a lot more advantage! Well, at least he won't be doing this until he gets his hands on the Mythical grade equipment.

And there came the shameless Endless Starlight again, "I've always been very powerful, alright?"

"Haha!" everyone laughed at him.

Zhang Yang reached out and picked up another piece of equipment. The final boss Madran was not stingy on dropping good loots at all. Zhang Yang actually picked up another piece of Violet-Platinum equipment! This time, it was a piece of leather armor with a simple and unsophisticated design. There were

countless runes crafted all over the leather armor.

[Chest Plate of the Abyss] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +635

Strength: +181

Agility: +420

Equip: Increases 2% rate of healing or damage inflicted.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

"No wonder this is only dropped after we slay the final boss! It's just too powerful!" Fatty Han was staring at the attributes of the equipment without even blinking at all! He looked just like Endless Starlight did when he saw his previous shield. Fatty Han charged up and snatched the chest plate from Zhang Yang before anyone could react.

"Let's decide who gets it with the dice!" Zhang Yang nodded.

The four of them who wore leather armor did not have to be polite at all. They tossed the dice one, after another to try out their luck. At the end of it, Lost Dream was the winner in securing the chest plate.

"Anymore Violet-Platinum grade equipment?" all of them were looking forward to see what came next.

"Let me see!" As Zhang Yang was looking through the loots, he suddenly came across with another piece and smiled, "There's another one!"

[Cloak of the Dark Wings] (Violet-Platinum, Cloak/Cape)

Vitality: +159

Equip: Increase 3% healing or damage inflicted.

Use: You can fly! Increases movement speed by 300%! Lasts for 10 minutes. Cool down: 1 hour

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

"... it can make us fly!" The gang widened their eyes after seeing the special effect of the item!

It was every human being's dream to be able to fly in the sky! Although Zhang Yang mentioned before, that players can capture a flying battle mount after they enter the Chaos Realm, that would be in the far future as they still had 10 levels to go before they could enter that realm, which would take approximately 3 months to achieve! And now, this item was offered a ticket to early access of that! Of course, everyone would be agitated with excitement! Who wouldn't want to fly now?

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "This equipment also boosts attack, other than vitality, so any profession can have this. Let's throw the dice and decide who gets it, then!"

"Hehe, One Sword Stroke will definitely be jealous when he finds out about this! He might even bang a wall after knowing about this!"

Pak pak pak! Everyone tossed their own dices, and by the end of this, it was Han Ying Xue, the lucky witch, who won the prize! She took the equipment, taking away everyone's dream of flying!

Zhang Yang did not join in on tossing the dice. Firstly, he already had the [Titan Cape], which was actually almost as good as the [Cloak of the Dark Wings]. Secondly, he was already tired of flying in his previous life, and he did not care if he could fly a little earlier in this life. However, although Han Ying Xue got the [Cloak of the Dark Wings] already, Zhang Yang took it over from her, saying that he would return it to her when she reaches Level 90, because she cannot use it until then, anyway.

Han Ying Xue spat at Zhang Yang and said, "Filthy Yu! You expect

me to wear it after you use it? But nevermind, I'll just take it as the offer you made, to help me identify this cloak first!"

‘Ding! You have acquired the Dimensional Key Fragment 1!’

Finally, the final piece of the Dimensional Key Fragment had fallen into Zhang Yang's hands. What a long journey! He had given so much time into committing to this quest!

And after Zhang Yang picked up one [Sacred Thread] and a [Hammer of Sanctions - Hammer Handle], there was nothing left on the ground anymore.

"So, it seems that the [Sacred Thread] can be obtained from Madran. Then, does it mean I would need to wait until Madran respawns first before I can get enough materials to make one [Incandescent Electrical Robe]?" Daffodil Daydream let out a sigh. She was planning to start gathering the required materials once she returned back to the main city. She intended to make two [Incandescent Electrical Robes] and give them to Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart.

"Like I said, the system won't let the value of Violet-Platinum equipment be washed away." Zhang Yang nodded as he said.

"Let's go. We need to turn in our quest to the old fisherman! Completing an S-rank quest should be very rewarding! At least give us something better than what we just got here!"

After Madran died, the magic barriers outside vanished without a trace. Zhang Yang and his party got onto the island without any difficulties at all. At that time, the Island of the Sacred One had already descended into chaos, as a large number of Believers were engaged with the guards already. The once peaceful and beautiful island had been filled with fresh blood and miserable screaming. It looked more like a hellish island now!

"Good job!" King of Naga - Psyborna revealed himself before Zhang Yang and his party all of a sudden, as he was lurking from the shadow with his long snake body. He slapped Zhang Yang on the back for completing the quest.

"It's another Violet-Platinum boss! Should we slaughter him up?" Fatty Han had already killed so much that his sanity was already going.

"Stupid wretched fatty! Even if we are really going to do it, we must wait until he gives us the rewards of the quest first!" Wei Yan Er is a battle maniac. She held her giant axe in her hands, ready to smash the fatty.

At the same time, 10 Nagas lurked out from behind Psyborna. All of them were above Level 90, and all of them were Yellow-Gold graded! They lined up neatly behind the King of Naga, cutting off the steam of Wei Yan Er and Fatty Han who had planned to attack them.

"Fellow adventurers, you have taken down Madran and averted a major crisis!" Psyborna looked at everyone and praised them with joy and sincerity, "You did not just save mankind, but you have



also helped us, the Nagas! I hereby represent the entire race of Naga in expressing our highest form of gratitude, to you all!"

The King of Naga bent his back down a little and bowed towards Zhang Yang and his party members.

"Look at you! They are so sincere, and you intended to kill them and take their fortunes away! You should be ashamed of yourselves!" Zhang Yang teased the two of them.

"Pui! They're not sincere at all! Look at how they bowed at us! They did not even bow completely! It's not like they have backaches or something!" Wei Yan Er quickly started to defend herself.

"These are just some small gifts, I hope you will like it!" Psyborna waved his hand and 10 streams of light ascended onto Zhang Yang and the remaining 9 members of his party.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Bury the Secret, acquired 5,000,000 experience points! Completion Rating: Perfect!'

'Ding! You have acquired items: Whistle for a Herb Foraging Familiar!'

Zhang Yang was shocked and he took out the item in a hurry. It was a whistle that glittered in a silver complexion. Judging from its appearance, it did not differ much from the other regular whistles.

## [Whistle of Herb Foraging Familiar]

Use: Blow the whistle to summon a Herb Foraging Familiar. Herb Foraging Familiars will search for [Herbs] on its own and gather the [Herbs]. One hour later, the Herb Foraging Familiar will return to you and put the [Herbs] that it had managed to gather into your inventory. You must make sure that your inventory has enough space in order to acquire the [Herbs] collected, or else the [Herbs] collected will vanish. The Herb Foraging Familiar is very good at keeping its tracks hidden, so it is very difficult to be discovered by monsters. You are required to pay 1,000 gold coins for each summon of the Herb Foraging Familiar. Last for 1 hour. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Bound upon pick up.

A new item had just appeared in the game!

So this was exactly like obtaining an auto function on gathering [Herbs]! Zhang Yang could not help himself but to laugh in joy. Having a Herb Foraging Familiar was like having a Herb Collecting assistant. Furthermore, he would not have to worry about the level of this little fellow. This little fellow would follow Zhang Yang into any area or territory, no matter how hostile the environment was. This little fellow could gather herbs in any area in the game!

But, the only weakness of summoning this little fellow was that one would have to pay 1000 gold coins!

Now, Zhang Yang still had no idea on how capable this little fellow was. Was it efficient enough to keep up with Zhang Yang's capability in gathering herbs? If its capability is about the same as a player, then it would be an absolute loss in terms of gold coins! Because no player could actually collect herbs that are worth 1,000 gold coins within an hour!

But the main problem was that, there were no Herbalists in the entire game at the current stage who can keep up with Zhang Yang's level now! So, there is no way that Zhang Yang can just bring someone weaker, and charge into high-level maps to gather herbs! Zhang Yang was also a Herbalist himself. He would not spend so much effort and time in gathering herbs. So, with this little fellow around, Zhang Yang would save a lot of his time, and Zhang Yang was willing to pay for that!

For him, this was really a great fortune that would benefit him for a very long time!

Zhang Yang looked at the remaining members of his party, and he saw that everyone was very joyful. It seemed that everyone had acquired something good for themselves as well.

He smiled and asked, "What good stuff did you guys get?"

"Haha! I got an 'exclusive' hammer that can be used to forge equipment. It would give a 1% additional effect to the equipment I forge!" Wei Yan Er was beaming with joy.

Daffodil Daydream, "Hmm, I got a sewing needle instead. While

crafting clothes, there is a certain rate to boost the attributes of the clothes!"

"Mine is ..."

Everyone announced their quest rewards from the NPC.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "It seems that the reward of this quest is rewarded to the players, based on the specialized skills of their own professions!"

"What a fortune for everyone!" everyone was cheering in joy. They were all so joyful that they did not realize that Psyborna and his Naga people had left the scene.

As all of them had acquired a few pieces of equipment from the quest completion, they departed back to the main city in a hurry, so that they could identify their equipment as soon as possible. They tore their own teleportation scrolls and teleported back straight to the Thunderstorm Castle.

As Zhang Yang wanted to test out the efficiency of this [Herb Foraging Familiar], so he summoned Turtle and entered a water territory on purpose. Then, he took out the [Whistle of Herb Foraging Familiar] and blew it hard.

‘Ding! You have chosen to summon Herb Foraging Familiar. For that, you will be paying a sum of 1,000 gold coins, accept or decline?’

Accept.

Shoof! A small fellow that looked like a cross between a bunny and a raccoon immediately appeared right at the side of Zhang Yang. It had a pair of wings. The creature was covered in silver fur, and was most lovely and cute! But, this cute little fellow immediately drowned in the ocean sea water, after having a few gulps of sea water, the little fellow died, with its belly facing upwards!

Zhang Yang frowned intensely. He did not see this coming. There was no notice or description about the [Herb Foraging Familiar] drowning in water!

There goes 1,000 gold coins, for nothing!

Zhang Yang wasn't stingy about saving up this 1,000 gold coins, but to lose the money like this, was just totally not worth it! He scooped the little fellow up, tore his teleportation scroll and teleported straight back to Thunderstorm Castle.

After leaving the water territory area, the [Herb Foraging Familiar] actually came back to life! It fluttered its pair of wings and began to fly around in the air lightly. Then, it flew out from the Thunderous Castle. It was probably going out to gather herbs already.

Zhang Yang intended to perform an experiment with his [Herb Foraging Familiar]. He went up to his teleportation circle and

teleported himself over to the White Jade Castle. He wanted to find out whether the little fellow would actually follow him over to the White Jade Castle when the summon time period ends.

## Chapter 435: Sun Xin Yu's Old Man

---

Zhang Yang did not intend to cause any unwanted trouble to himself, so he lay low, standing at one of the corners of the elevator.

However, the elder man set his extremely sharp eyes onto Zhang Yang, giving him an uneasy feeling, as if countless cold needles were stabbing into his heart. Zhang Yang intended to turn his head away from the old man, but after giving it a thought, they barely even knew each other, so what is he being so afraid of? So, he did not hold back and returned the stare.

The elevator was fast, it already reached the 15th floor in just a brief moment. Ding! The doors of the elevator opened. But, when Zhang Yang was about to set out of the elevator, a hand intercepted him and blocked his way out from the elevator. Zhang Yang traced the arm back to its owner, and realized that it belonged to one of the bodyguards of that old man!

Zhang Yang frowned in frustration and said, "Please, give way! I need to get off the elevator!"

However, the bodyguard did not move a muscle and remained as still as a statue, as if he had not heard anything he said.

Zhang Yang was enraged. Although he did not intend to stir things up, he was not afraid of getting his hands dirty if necessary. So, he reached out and caught the hand in a vice grip!

That bodyguard immediately reacted as well. He reached out his hand to grab Zhang Yang. As his palm reached out swiftly, Zhang Yang could hear the sound of the air by his ears as the hand came at him!

Pak! Pak! Pak!

Zhang Yang began to fight back, and the two of them started fighting in the narrow space of the elevator. But, the bodyguard was really skilled! Zhang Yang tried everything to break himself out of the elevator, but he could not succeed. He was totally trapped inside the elevator by that bodyguard!

‘Ding!’

The door of the elevator closed, and the elevator continued to elevate.

"What the fart!" Zhang Yang was in extreme rage as he began to act more violently towards the bodyguard. The bodyguard held his own, and they continued fighting to a standstill. Finally, Zhang Yang gave in and stopped fighting. Judging from the situation, he had no chance at all in winning, because the other 3 bodyguards had not joined in yet!

The bodyguard did not force Zhang Yang's hands as well. After seeing that Zhang Yang had stopped fighting, he too stopped and returned to his position with his three other colleagues forming a formation to protect the two men in the middle.



‘Ding!’

The elevator stopped at the 19th floor, and the door opened.

"Here you go, sir." one of the bodyguards gestured Zhang Yang out of the elevator.

"What the fart is going on!" Zhang Yang knew that this must be an order given by that old man, so he could not help but to curse and scold the old man deep within his heart.

"Young man, you are scolding me deep in your heart, didn't you?" the old man suddenly spoke up, with an intimidating, but calm aura.

"That's right!" Zhang Yang admitted it without any hesitation, because he was really angry at the moment.

The old man laughed out loud and uncharacteristically put up a gesture of peace with two fingers and walked right out of the elevator.

Zhang Yang had no choice but to be escorted out of the elevator as well, under the supervision of two of the bodyguards. They all followed the old man. But there was a distance between them and the old man, and the distance was definitely a safety precaution.

The old man stopped at the front of an apartment and rang the doorbell.

Huh? Zhang Yang was surprised and shocked because this was actually Sun Xin Yu's house! He finally understood the situation. This old man must be Sun Xin Yu's old man! Her father!

The door was opened and Sun Xin Yu appeared with her pretty, cold face. When she saw the old man, the slightest bit of shock being betrayed by her mask of a face, "Dad---" her eyes scanned the surroundings swiftly and she saw Zhang Yang. A familiar annoyed expression immediately popped up.

As expected!

The father and his daughter went into the apartment, but the four bodyguards and the secretary man all remained at the doorsteps of the apartment.

"Zhang Yang --- " that secretary turned to Zhang Yang and said, "Come, let's have a talk."

So it seemed that they have already looked into his background and knew all about him! Zhang Yang let out a sigh and walked with the secretary away from the doorstep.

"Allow me to introduce myself, my name is Gong, Gong Ru San. Or you can just call me by my sir name, Gong." The secretary took out a packet of cigarettes and offered it to Zhang Yang.

Gong? As in [Lao Gong](#)? Zhang Yang felt a chill through his body

and said, "Well, you're elder than me, so I'll just call you brother Gong!" Knowing that the old man is Sun Xin Yu's father, Zhang Yang was no longer dissatisfied about what the old man did to him. He also had a rough idea of why he was brought here.

"Haha! Suit yourself!" Mr.Gong was being frank and open-hearted, "Brother Zhang, you're indeed 'skillful'! I really have to admire your luck! You could actually win the heart of that prideful woman!"

Zhang Yang already knew that Sun Xin Yu must have come from some influential family background, but he had no idea at all how influential it was. So he could not help but to ask, "Brother Gong, so what's the deal with Sun Xin Yu's father?"

"Sun Xin Yu never told you anything about him before this?" Gong Ru San was slightly shocked, then he smiled and said, "Then, I must keep my mouth shut! If Xin Yu ever finds out, then I'm as good as a dead man! Haha!"

What the fart! Zhang Yang cursed within his heart and said, "Brother Gong, do you have any advice for me, then?"

"Well, there's no advice I can offer you. Secretaries like us exist to share the burden of our leaders. So, I hope to understand some of the situation from you, Mr.Zhang!" Gong Ru San suddenly became serious as his own intimidating aura started flowing out.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely. Because he had already died once, this was not something that would scare him anymore! However,

since that he had nothing to hide at all, he decided to entertain the secretary.

The two of them were asking questions and answering questions in turns. Unaware of the time, half an hour had already passed. If it wasn't because Sun Xin Yu and his father coming out from the apartment, their conversation would have went on.

"Let's go back now." Mr.Sun said softly. Gong Ru San bowed down instantly at the old man and said yes. The old man then looked at Zhang Yang with a deep meaning behind his eyes, "Young man, let us talk when we have the chance!"

"Dad ---" Sun Xin Yu snapped in frustration.

"Fine, fine, I'm not that forgetful yet. I will not forget what I promised you!" Mr.Sun crossed his hands by his back and walked up to the elevator. After just a brief moment, the elevator arrived, and Mr.Sun left the place with his six men, very swiftly.

Zhang Yang walked up to Sun Xin Yu and said, "What the hell! What's with your dad? I was almost beaten up!"

Sun Xin Yu seemed to hesitate for a moment, but then she opened up her apartment door and said, "Come in and talk."

"Yo, you're finally letting me into your apartment!" Zhang Yang walked straight into the apartment and changed into a pair of slippers. He looked around, studying every inch of the place.

Before this, he only knew that Sun Xin Yu lived here, but the Ice Queen had never let him set his foot into her apartment. Ever!

"Stop staring!" Sun Xin Yu felt annoyed, but she was blushing, especially when Zhang Yang opened up her bedroom door. After Zhang Yang saw the cute fluffy bear on her bed, she blushed even more.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and turned around, "Don't hug the bear anymore, I can sacrifice myself and let you hug me!"

"Do you wish to die?" Sun Xin Yu tightened her teeth as she spoke in disdain.

"Aaah!" Zhang Yang sat onto the sofa and put the groceries aside, and then he put his legs on the coffee table and said. "I was being 'interrogated' by the secretary of your father to the point that I have almost told him everything about my ancestors! So, I think you owe me an explanation."

Sun Xin Yu kicked his legs off the coffee table, and sat down with a cold expression on her face and said, "My father's name is Ma Ding Kun, he is the Secretary of a provincial Party Committee for the Province of Su Jiang."

"Pff!" Zhang Yang had just taken a sip of water, and had nearly spat it out. Nearly. No wonder she could ask the party secretary to do as she asks. She was actually the loving daughter of the Secretary of a provincial Party Committee for the Province of Su Jiang! But thinking about it, something was still not right.

Previously, Sun Xin Yu had already exhibited her large network connection in the entirety of Shang Hai. Although this Ma Ding Kun was a Secretary of a provincial Party Committee for Province of Su Jiang, he would not have the power to put his hands on the affair in Shang Hai. Shang Hai was the capital of the international metropolis of China!

Sun Xin Yu saw Zhang Yang's thoughtful gaze, so she continued to explain, "My second uncle is the mayor of Shang Hai!"

"Cough!" Zhang Yang was choked by the water he was trying to drink. He coughed on and tried to continue the conversation, "Just tell me everything at once! Stop revealing stuff like that one after another! My heart can't take it!"

"My grandfather is Ma Tian Hang!"

"Pff ---" Zhang Yang had finally lost it and spilled the water from his mouth. Holy god! Ma Tian Hang was the Chairman of the Standing Committee for the entire China! So, this entire family is not simple at all! Zhang Yang coughed for a long time, before he regained his breath and continued to ask, "Then, why is your surname Sun?"

"I followed my mom's surname." Sun Xin Yu spoke softly.

Illegitimate daughter? A mistress? Zhang Yang began to think out of the ordinary and messed up his own mind.

"Don't think so damn much on that. My mother is the legitimate wife of my father. They love each other very much, and they got married legitimately!" Sun Xin Yu told Zhang Yang with a serious face, "It is just that my father loves my mother too much, so he decided to allow his daughter to follow the surname of his wife if they ever got a daughter."

Zhang Yang then asked, "But I can see you and your family aren't that close, right? Or is there something that I missed out?"

"My grandfather wants me to marry an A-hole! That's why I moved out and stay here. I don't want to listen to his whining and scolding every day!" Sun Xin Yu snapped coldly.

My gawd! Zhang Yang had so much thought about Sun Xin Yu and he had come up with a number of theories about her background. But now that he knew about her, he could not accept that everything was actually so simple and uncomplicated! She was merely staying away because she felt annoyed!

Zhang Yang put his legs up on the coffee table again and placed his chin on his hands and said, "Then, why did your dad look at me as if I was a thief? He wouldn't really believe that you and I have already... you know... Haha! If I really got you as my girlfriend, then I would become the Son-in-law of the 'Emperor', won't I?"

"Tsk! Who would actually like you in the first place!" Sun Xin Yu shook her head without restraint.

This beauty had fair, pearl white skin, and she was definitely hot

as f\*ck! And when she's in her police uniform, she was pretty in much more different ways. Zhang Yang could never fathom on why he had actually turned himself away from her.

He tapped on the sofa right beside him and said, "Pretty girl, come over here and give me a quick rub on my thigh!"

Sun Xin Yu suddenly looked very angry, but she actually went on to sit by the side of Zhang Yang. A powerful punch landed on Zhang Yang's thigh, Zhang Yang felt the excruciating pain on his thigh to the point where he started breathing in cold air!

"You really used a lot of force in this massage..."

Sun Xin Yu remained silent for a moment, then she suddenly said, "Don't stay with that woman from now on!"

Zhang Yang was shocked, at first he thought Sun Xin Yu was talking about Yu Li, but he instantly reacted and realized that Sun Xin Yu was most probably talking about Han Ying Xue. He let out a breath of sigh and said, "Did you really think I wanted to? I have to cook for two super duper lazy 'worms'! And I'm about to become their personal cook in their house!"

"It's obvious that you're just reluctant to leave because of your lust for sex!" Sun Xin Yu spoke out coldly.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Then I shall show you my lust for sex!"



He made an intimidating gesture towards Sun Xin Yu as if he was about to kiss her.

But Sun Xin Yu remained undaunted. She did not even move! She just looked at him coldly.

"Coward."

Just when Zhang Yang was withdrawing his head backward, he could hear the low-voiced insult from Sun Xin Yu. Although her voice was really soft, it was enough for Zhang Yang to hear it. Zhang Yang was provoked, and he planted his lips straight onto the red and sexy lips of Sun Xin Yu.

"Hmm ---" Sun Xin Yu let out a soft mutter, and surprisingly, she did not struggle or fight back at all.

Lips to lips, touching each other only on the surface, feeling each other out, and slowly the action got more vigorous. The two of them started to breathe heavily as they started moving more violently by the seconds. Their hands were already unconsciously, passionately groping about. Their body temperatures were rising.

After a long time, their lips parted from each other, and they looked into each other's eyes.

Sun Xin Yu did not show any sign of shame. And then, she nonchalantly blurted out, as if she had just had a walk in the park,

or something, "Zhang Yang, I like you!"

Right after she confessed, she chased Zhang Yang out of her apartment and closed the door shut, leaving Zhang Yang outside the door of her house dumbfounded

Lao Gong - Means 'husband' in Chinese literacy.

## Chapter 436: Realm of Sacred Glory

---

As he headed to the ground floor in a daze, Zhang Yang felt a rush of joy in his heart, but he also felt an unexplained sense of pure terror down his spine.

Deep down his heart, the shadow of Lin Yu was fading by the second. And on the other hand, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue had earned more ground in his heart. He could not help but think, it was possible that he might end up like the main character [Zhi Zun Bao](#) in the story of 'A Chinese Odyssey: A Pandora's Box' who finally finds his true love after time-traveling through 500 years of time?

But speaking of true love, one was enough as it is! If there were two true loves in one's life, then the troubles would be endless!

Zhang Yang walked into the house to find Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er fighting over for a bottle of perfume that was deemed to be a limited edition, like their lives were depending on it. They did not realize that Zhang Yang had spent a longer than usual period of time outside.

After finishing up with his cooking in the kitchen, the three of them sat at the table and enjoyed the food. In the afternoon, they would be heading out to check on a new house. It seemed that Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had finally picked a place for him.

The new house was located in an urban area. The environment was very good. Of course, transportation was convenient as well.

There was an indoor swimming pool and a tennis court within the premises around the house. There were 21 bedrooms in the house itself! And as expected, the price of that house was really ‘something’! It would cost Zhang Yang about 40 million dollars!

However, the moment when Zhang Yang got off the car, he realized it straight away. This was definitely not just a coincidence! The house that the two ladies picked for him is actually the same house that he had stayed for two years in his previous life!

Well, this must be the will of god, or some butterfly effect that caused the timelines to fixed itself.

After entering the large house, the three of them began to pick their favorite rooms. Of course, Zhang Yang would naturally pick the one that he had stayed in in his previous life. But what he did not expect was that Han Ying Xue had also picked the same room as him. Both of them really had similar tastes when it came to picking rooms! Both of them did not plan to be polite, as they both wanted the same room. Han Ying Xue insisted that even if she had to sleep with Zhang Yang for the night, she will do it just to secure the room to herself!

Zhang Yang was left helpless, so he could only give in to the demands of Witchy Snow and let her have the room.

Peace was always a temporary state. Before the night fell, Sun Xin Yu had invited herself over, and she carried a small luggage with her as well, popping up at Zhang Yang’s new house. She seemed to have made herself at home, and planned to stay in with them. As she did not even greet any one of them, Han Ying Xue was furious,

placing her hands on her waist.

The next morning, Daffodil Daydream took a plane and rushed over to pay a visit to Zhang Yang and the ladies. So, Zhang Yang and the ladies went to the airport to pick her up, then they escorted her over to the house. The initially quiet large house had suddenly become a 'bird nest'! The smell of flowers were in every corner of the place, and there were many sights for sore eyes in the house now.

Safe to say, his house is now a barbie house full of pretty dolls!

Another fortnight had passed in just a blink of an eye. Zhang Yang and his small party had all been elevated up to Level 90, However, the Level 90 dungeon Rock Frost Palace was designed for players to explore in a large-scale of 50 players. Although there were only 6 bosses in the entire dungeon, they were extremely difficult.

Zhang Yang wrote down some battle tactics and passed it over to Endless Starlight. He planned to let Endless Starlight lead a party to explore and clear the dungeon. Meanwhile, he was making potions for future use, and he would also tease Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu once in a while, while bullying the little girl out of boredom. His days were considered very casual.

One Sword Stroke, Liu Wei, and Humbly Gentleman had been laying low. They did not try to stir anything up. It seemed that everyone was trying hard to level up. Everyone was focused on becoming strong enough to breakthrough Level 100 so that they could explore the Realm of Chaos even further.

Now that everyone was still below Level 100 at the moment, whatever the players did were merely small things. To be known by everyone in the world, one must achieve great heights in the Realm of Chaos! With that, only then would players become recognized by the world!

Even though Endless Starlight had already acquired the battle tactics from Zhang Yang, they were progressing very slowly in clearing the dungeon of the Rock Frost Palace. They had not been able to take down the first boss, even after seven or 8 days of trying! Of course, one of the main reasons was because they were short in numbers. Only 34 members of the guild were over level 90.

And again, another fortnight passed, and Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage, Imperial Sky and other large-scale guilds had gathered enough number of players who were at least Level 90. Once again, the competition of securing the First Clear of the dungeon in Hardcore Mode had begun once again. Although Level 80 and Level 90 was just 10 levels of difference, players had spent about 3 months, just to close the gap and elevate themselves up to Level 90 and above!

For most of the players, the last time they had competed for a First Clear had been a lifetime ago. So, when the competition sparked up once again, players were all agitated with excitement. There would be people posting on the forums and walls of the game's official website. Countless players appeared to predict the outcome as they were guessing who would get the First Clear of the dungeon this time around!

However, the Rock Frost Palace was extremely difficult to manage! Although players had only taken about 2 days to clear the Hard Mode, the first boss of the same dungeon in Hardcore Mode had stopped all guilds, possibly for good. No one had been able to break through the defense of the first boss, until now!

The main reason being, the boss had too many AOE skills that he could use to wipe out players in seconds! The entire party had to make sure that they ducked and rolled perfectly in order to survive the attacks of the boss. None of them could afford any mistake, not even a small one! If any of them made a small mistake, the entire party could be wiped out!

A boss like this required absolute precise coordination among the entire party, which meant that 50 members of the entire party had to remain perfect throughout the battle!

Even Zhang Yang was helpless. It was impossible to single-handedly take out these kinds of bosses that turn the sky upside down. So all Zhang Yang could do was to let all of his guild members practice, and practice.

After filtering out the good and the bad, the 50-member party had been reduced down to a 42-member party. Although their numbers were a little smaller, their efficiency had greatly increased. After a dozen times of being wiped out, the Lone Desert Smoke had finally succeeded in slaying the first boss, being the first party to ever slay the first boss of the Rock Frost Palace.

Although the remaining 5 bosses were very difficult to deal with, after experiencing the excruciating suffering in battling the first boss of the dungeon, everyone had already gone through a hellish nightmare that trained them to become stronger. Their efficiency in clearing the remaining bosses of the dungeon had obviously increased a lot. They were breaking through hordes of monsters like a hot knife cutting through butter, solving their problems with their crushing force! In just a brief moment, they had already slain the second, the third, the fourth, and the fifth boss of the dungeon, heading straight into the deeper site of the dungeon, ready to face the final boss.

On the other hand, Imperial Sky, Crimson Rage, the Radiance and other guilds were performing with the strength of a large-scale guild. They had also managed to slay the first boss and progressed through the remaining bosses, heading straight to the final boss. Now that everyone performed outstandingly, it remained unclear on which guild would be able to secure the First Clear of this dungeon!

Just when things were getting hotter, Zhang Yang and his party members joined the fray! After making up the strongest formation of the party, they took down the last boss Longrich Doc like an unstoppable trunk hitting straight into the face of the boss! There, they had secured the First Clear of another dungeon.

With everyone acquiring an additional skill point, having their Level 90 equipment, and slaying quite a number of Violet-Platinum bosses over the month, the capability of the party had increased tremendously, in terms of equipment!



Zhang Yang was planning to activate the [Dimensional Key] and lead his party into the Heavenly Might Imperial Kingdom to acquire the [Ancient Godly Weapon, Meteor Sword]. With that sword, he would be able to complete the long-winded Main Quest that Princess Serena had bestowed upon him. However, it was really a bad timing for {{God's Miracle}} to celebrate their one year anniversary since their launch. And for that, the official activated an event that rewarded players who participated.

After reading the description of the event, everyone went mad! Even Zhang Yang, who had lived twice, was agitated with excitement! Without hesitation, Zhang Yang postponed the 'Meteor Sword' quest and participated in the anniversary event!

According to the official announcement, in the upcoming three days from 28th June to 30th June, all monsters would have a certain chance of dropping an item called the 'Glory of Stardust'. This 'Glory of Stardust' did not have any function on its own. It could not be sold to the merchants in the game as well. However, on the 1st of July, the game would open up the 'Realm of the Sacred Glory'. Players would only need to turn in 10 of the "Glory of Stardust" to the NPC that would spawn in the main city during the period of the event in order to enter the Realm of the Sacred Glory.

In the Realm of the Sacred Glory. Killing a monster would give players 3 times of experience points. Furthermore, that map would spawn a large number of new treasure chests. Although most of the treasure chests did not give good equipment or items, but a very small number of the treasure chests did. They might drop top-tier equipment, skill books, or even skill points!

Other than that, treasure chests might even give ‘Glory Points’. Players would be able to collect the glory points, as much as they can. The game would keep count on the ‘Glory Points’ each player can collect every 12 hours. Players with the least scores would be eliminated and sent out of the realm. This process would be repeated 6 times, and the last player remaining in the realm with the highest score would be awarded with levels and the title reward!

The fact that the treasure chests had a certain rate of dropping attractive rewards like equipment and skill books, already motivated everyone to act on it. Now that they added rewards like a level and a title reward, players would, of course, be crazed over the event! Furthermore, the Realm of the Sacred Glory would only be opened once, so every single player in the eight main cities would only have one chance to compete in becoming the top 1 and claim the title of this event!

Number one in the world!

The glory of achieving this height was just mesmerizing!

The moment when the officials released the news, all players were boiled with excitement, and they were all sharpening their blades and cracking their fists.

The system did not seem to trouble the players at all. Although the drop rate of the [Glory of Stardust] wasn’t really that high, at least it wasn’t too low to the point where players would not get even one after an entire day of killing the monsters. To get 10 [Glory of Stardust] in 3 days time was just like a walk in the park.

Anyone could complete the task very easily!

Therefore, on the 1st of July, 90% of the players have managed to collect 10 [Glory of Stardust]!

On the night of 30th of June, almost every player was already waiting at the site of the Teleportation Circles of the main cities where the NPCs were going to spawn. They were all eager to enter the Realm of Sacred Glory the moment it opened, because the earlier they could enter the realm, the longer they got to stay in the realm to progress on their accumulation of the 'Glory Points', and the more 'Glory Points' they would be able to collect.

Zhang Yang had also gathered his usual party members and waited at the site, just like the others.

The moment when the clock struck 12 and marked the beginning of the 1st of July, a beautiful lady NPC in a crimson red chinese traditional wear 'Qi Pao' spawned right in the middle of the crowd. The lady looked gentle and lovely with her outfit. A few male players around her were trying to put their dirty hands on her boobies and her ass with some dirty thoughts in their mind. However, thunder strikes came out of nowhere and struck those players until they were all fried. Then, the system locked them up in the prison of the main cities, forbidding them from taking part in the event!

The beautiful NPC did not waste any time and she went straight to the point. With her hands waving in the air casting the spell, a large portal appeared right in the middle of the city square in an instant.

‘Ding! The Realm of Sacred Glory has been opened. You can use 10 ‘Glory of Stardust’ to enter the realm. Note: You only have 1 chance to enter!’

"Let's go! Time to go in!"

Zhang Yang and his remaining 9 members stepped into the portal at the same instant, as the portal was as large as the widely opened mouth of a big blue whale! The portal was ‘sucking’ in the players into the realm like a gushing tidal wave. The width of the portal did not seem to be narrow at all, even with all the players being ‘sucked’ in at the same time.

‘Ding! You have entered the Realm of the Sacred Glory!’

Everything that Zhang Yang saw in front of his eyes instantly changed, and now, he found himself on a mountain. He could see a few zombies lurking around the vast space of the area from afar. The zombies seemed like they were wandering about without any sense of purpose. But he suddenly frowned and shouted out into the party channel all of a sudden, "Witchy Snow, Ice Queen, little girl, are you guys standing together next to each other now?"

"I'm alone all by myself!"

"Me too!"

The remaining 9 members of his party were shouting into the

party channel as well. They had entered the portal at the same time, however, they had all been teleported into a different area of the realm. Furthermore, there were no coordinates at all, they could not access their world map! They could only see about a 200-meter radius of the area around them.

"Then, let's proceed on your own and see who's luckier!" since things had already been laid out, Zhang Yang could only accept the fate.

"Wa! Healers like us will definitely suffer more than you guys! Not fair!" Han Ying Xue let out a miserable sigh.

Healers had weaker DPS capabilities compared to all other Classes, so they were at a major disadvantage.

But there was no point in complaining any further. As Zhang Yang attempted to activate his [Party Summon Order], the system notification popped up, informing that it cannot be used. Well, it was understandable. The initial intention of the system is to separate all players from each other and let all players proceed by themselves individually. If players could easily work in a group, then the purpose of the event would be defeated.

Zhang Yang deduced that the system was doing all this is to prevent some players from helping other players to gather the 'Glory Points'. Or else, if all members of one entire guild helped only one player to collect the 'Glory Points', then it would become a competition between guilds already!

Zhang Yang summoned out Whitey and charged straight up to the zombies around him.

With a blast of {Spear of Obliteration} striking out, a damage of ‘-5,499’ was inflicted on the monster nearest to him. That blow actually took off half of the health bar of the monster!

Zhang Yang was a little bit shocked, and he suddenly said, "The damage output of the tankers and healers are boosted in this realm!"

On the other side, Han Ying Xue had also realized that her attacks had been increased by 30%. That increment could already make up for the weak spot of the Priest's in their magic attacks.

Zhang Yang swung his sword at the zombie and killed it. Upon his kill, he acquired about 20,000 experience points! Outside of the Realm of Sacred Glory, players could only acquire about 9,000 experience points in similar situations. So, the experience points that they can acquire in this realm was about two times more!

Unfortunately, the monsters in this realm were rather scattered, with one in the north and one in the east. If Zhang Yang could lure the monsters to one spot and kill them all in one shot, then he could have earned tremendous experience points!

The loot that the monsters dropped was very normal. They would only drop some copper coins, and some [Inscribed Clothes]. Zhang Yang progressed forward and slew another seven to eight zombies. Then, he found a scarlet treasure chest lying quietly right

behind a large rock!

He quickly hustled over there on Whitey. As he arrived closer to the treasure chest, he jumped down from Whitey and began to put his hands on the treasure chest, trying to open it up.

A 10-second progress bar appeared right on top of his head and began to fill up by the seconds. That was a process of opening up a chest. Players would not be able to make any movements while the progress bar is filling up, or else the process would be interrupted, and the players will have to restart the process all over again.

"Wa! I've just got a Yellow Gold equipment! And 12 'Glory Points'!" the cheerful voice of Wei Yan Er was heard through the party channel.

That little girl really had good luck this time!

'Ding! You have opened a Glory Treasure Chest!'

'Ding! You have acquired Inscribed Cloth X 3!'

Right after that, the treasure chest closed automatically and vanished after 1 second.

What bad luck!

Zhang Yang let out a sigh, but then he gave it some thought. If

equipment and ‘Glory Points’ were easy to come by from opening up treasure chests, then {God’s Miracle} would descend into chaos!

As he proceeded forward, Zhang Yang slew all the monsters that he came in contact with and opened up all treasure chests that he found along the way. After opening up 11 treasure chests, the best he could get from the chests was a Green-Copper grade equipment. He was so infuriated! Even the Hard Mode of the Rock Frost Palace would drop Gray-Silver grade equipment or items at the very least! Following the increasing numbers of Level 90 over time, the Green-Copper equipment would eventually be phased out by the Gray-Silver equipment, and the Gray-Silver grade equipment would become the accepted norm for regular players soon enough!

To give him a Green-Copper equipment at this time was like throwing rotten sludge straight at his face!

As Zhang Yang was struggling in such regard, the exciting voices of his party members filled the party channel. Most of them were bragging about their finds. The luckiest one was, of course, that Witchy Snow, who had already managed to collect 89 ‘Glory Points’ at the moment. That number was about two times of the number of ‘Glory Points’ collected by Sun Xin Yu, who was the second highest achiever in the entire party!

Unfortunately, Zhang Yang was still stuck at having zero ‘Glory Points’ at the moment. If this went on, he would definitely be among the first batch that is going to be eliminated and be kicked out of the realm!

Zhi Zun Bao - the main male character in the story of ‘A Chinese Odyssey: A Pandora's Box’ where he travelled through time 500



years earlier and miraculously met his true love.

## Chapter 437: Level 4 Gem Stone

---

"Nyehehehe! In your face, noobie tank! How does it feel to be trampled over! Hahaha! This is

the payback for your bullying ways!" the little brat laughed like how an audience laughed at a

clown.

Zhang Yang remained unfazed. Based on Han Ying Xue and everyone else's progress, he had

deduced that the Glory points found in chest varied from 1 points to 20 points! It was not

completely random either. If the chest was found nearby an area with normal tiered monsters, it

will produce Glory points ranging from 1 to 10 points. Most of them had not even spawned any

Glory points! On the other hand, if the chest was found in an area with elite monsters, the Glory

points found inside would be between 11 points to 20 points. These types of chests would more

likely spawn Glory points.

Since the start, his luck had not been that good, since he had only been able to find normal

monsters. However, Zhang Yang had faith that his luck would turn for the better.

‘Server Announcement: Light flashes to all corners of the realm. Rainman has found an Ancient

Treasure Chest and obtained a powerful equipment: Star Dragon Boots!’

[Star Dragon Boots] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +806

Strength: +540

Dexterity: +230

<Level 3 Socket>

Level Requirement: 80

The server channel was filled with the announcement notification. The system notification had

even posted the item properties, allowing every player in China to be able to read and check on

the item.

Across the entire server, players from all around different cities got heated up, for the item tier

was Violet-Platinum! The best and strongest equipment tier in the game, so far! Now that one

player had obtained the item, everyone got fired up. For the item could be obtained from a chest,

and not just from a boss!

From Zhang Yang's perspective, he did not care about the item. He had bigger problems at

hand. Just how big is this Realm of the Sacred Glory? All he had been able to see was the never-

ending scenery of mountains and grassy plains. This event takes all players from all servers of

the game! The numbers could easily reach 100 million, yet all Zhang Yang had encountered

were monsters, and not a single player! Just how large did the developers make the map up to

be?

Zhang Yang could not comprehend the sheer vastness of the map, and decided to go with the

flow. After a certain number of chests, Zhang Yang finally managed to open one and score his

first Glory point. The points did not require player to pick, open, or do practically anything at all.

As long as players opened the chest, the points would automatically be added to the poll and be

displayed at the side of the player's head's up display user interface.

1 point...2 points...20...50...

As slow as Zhang Yang's progress was, it was entirely controlled by the system random number

generator system. There was really nothing Zhang Yang could do to boost the numbers. Based

on Zhang Yang's current equipment build, he had not needed to take any breaks and could go on

forever in killing monsters and opening chests. Right now, to maximize the effort of earning

more Glory points, Zhang Yang had placed the monster killing as his second priority and had set

his main goal into finding more chests instead.

He rode the bear everywhere, and if there were no chests among the group of monsters he

encountered, Zhang Yang would not stop and continued to run towards the next chest. If the

monsters could not chase after him, Zhang Yang would not bother to turn around. The time

allocated for him to be in this "realm" is limited. Even though the monster did give extra

experience points, they wouldn't matter if he could not earn

enough Glory points in the first

place.

After continuously collecting items from chests, Zhang Yang had finally filled up most of this

inventory space. Although he had 190 slots in his inventory, most of the slots were filled up with

many kinds of different potions and their different transmutation grades. In the end, Zhang Yang

had to resort to discarding lower tiered items in order to make way for better items.

‘Ding! You have opened a Glory Treasure Chest!’

‘Ding! You have obtained Level 4 Dexterity Gemstone x1!’

‘Ding! You have obtained 16 Glory Points!’

Zhang Yang was stunned at the word [Level 4 Dexterity Gemstone] and quickly examined his

inventory. There, sitting quietly at the corner of Zhang Yang’s saturated inventory, was the item.

Zhang Yang took it out and felt the glossy surface of the gemstone. Like other gemstones, it was

extremely smooth on the surface, and fit just right in the palm of his hand.

[Level 4 Dexterity Gemstone] (Usable)

Use: Place this Gemstone in a Level 4 Socket or higher, to grant 50 Dexterity points to an

equipment. Socketing has a 40% chance of failure.

Zhang Yang smiled happily. It was a jackpot. Gemstones that were level 3 and below could be

bought from a Gemstone store. However, Level 4 Gemstones and higher could only be obtained

from monsters, chests, or Hardcore Mode Dungeon Speed record reward. Still, if one had the

wallet of Donald Trump, one could easily fuse Level 3 Gemstones into Level 4 Gemstones.

However, that percentage chance and money would only be burning a hole in pockets!



In most games, including ‘God’s Miracle’, players could invest a fortune and be able to "win"

the game easily. Those who insisted in not spending any cash in the game would have to rely on

talent and effort. Either money or effort could bring a player to victory, and if players had

neither, gaming would be extremely tough for them. There were games that would give players a

huge advantage for investing money, while other games had little to no benefits for cash players.

‘God’s Miracle’ was both pay-to- win, and play-to- win. It was balanced in both ways; put in

enough effort, you can earn enough money in the game to re-invest in it again to earn more.

After that, Zhang Yang had opened more chests and had obtained a [Level 4 Vitality Gemstone],

[Intelligence Gemstone], and [Spirit Gemstone]. None of them were in bulk. Zhang Yang had

only managed to haul two counts of [Spirit Gemstone] and one count of the aforementioned

Gemstones. Worst off, he had not obtained any [Strength Gemstones]! Since Vitality was

considered to be the most universal attribute in all 5 major attributes, the [Level 4 Vitality

Gemstone] granted a bonus 100 Vitality points, double that of others.

"Yo! Boss, how much is your current Glory points?" asked Endless Starlight out of the blue.

"129 points." Zhang Yang casually replied.

"D\*mn! That's a lot! You have more than I do!"

"Can't help it. I'm handsome, that's why!"

"Please! 129 points? That's far from what I have!" the little brat interjected in the party chat. "I

already have 153!'

"Haha! You're saying that you're beautiful?" said Zhang Yang.

"Nyehehehe! At least you have good eye sight!"

Without realizing it, Zhang Yang had already spent more than 2 hours in the realm. Only then,

Zhang Yang had spotted the first player in the map. The opponent was not a China player.

Instead, he had a tag behind his name saying: "North America".

Even though the other player was only Level 78, Zhang Yang had still jumped atop his mount

and killed the poor player in a few hits. In the game, the enmity between players across the

continent and server would forever be hostile. That was why, Zhang Yang would kill anything

that did not bear a red flag, even if he was Level 78, or Level 1!

‘Ding! You have obtained 1 Honor Point!’

Zhang Yang obtained Honor points after killing the player. Honor points were collectible points

that could be earned when a player kills another player of a different server. Points collected

could be used to exchange items and equipment that would be bound to a player. It was another

method of obtaining equipment if one could not kill a dungeon boss. Honor points would only be

given if the player killed is from another region. Players from the same region, for example,

China's Emerald City and White Jade Castle cannot earn points by killing each other. Normally,

players can earn 1 Honor point by killing NPCs, players equal or lower than the player's level.

Players could earn more points by killing more important NPCs like army generals or Kings or a

ruler from another kingdom. In this case, the King would grant up to 10,000 Honor points! The

problem was, it is not easy to just jump into the vast army and target their king. Unlike chess, the

Kings in the game were one of the strongest entities.

Slowly yet surely, Zhang Yang had gathered more Glory points and had reached above than 300

points. With no sense of security since the game did not provide a means to check one's current

position in the ranking list, the only way Zhang Yang could convince himself that he is in the

ranking list was to open more and more chest. By the time the system was close to revealing the

rank, Zhang Yang had the urge to ask his friends.

"Hey guys? How much points do you guys have?"

"421!"

"583!"

Everyone reported their collected points and to put in comparison, Han Ying Xue, the ever so

lucky lady had collected 682 points with Fatty Han at the lowest with only 398.

"Aww. Fatty bro. I don't understand, why do you have such luck!"

"Nyahahahaha. I'd say, remember to wash your hands every time you're done with the loo!"

"Sadly, Fatty bro might be kicked out!"

Amid the jokes around, by the time the clock struck 12 noon, every player's character was frozen

in place.

'Ding! The system is currently calculating the system rank. Please wait...'

'Server announcement: Current number of players in Realm of the Sacred Glory: 687,349,832.

Players with Glory points of 400 and less will be eliminated from the Realm of the Sacred Glory.

Player elimination will start in 30 seconds. Please be ready.'

Without much delay, the system announced the result.

"ARGH! What a waste! I was only 2 points behind! 2

motherf\*cking points!" cried Fatty Han

disgruntledly. Cry as he may, the system ruthlessly kicked players out without a second thought.

After much discussion and inquiry, it was found out that almost 90% of Lone Desert Smoke

guild members had been kicked out of the map.

The longer you spend inside the Realm of the Sacred Glory, the more benefits you could reap

from it. It would serve as a great chance to improve the status of the guild. Yet, after finding out

that 90% of the members of the guild had been kicked out, it would not help much, but only a

tiny fraction of that.

Zhang Yang asked Snow Seeker and even Greensleeves Prince, and found that their guilds had

suffered from similar losses. Both guilds had 90% of their guild members kicked out of the

Realm.

The second portal opened and the second round of the "Treasure Hunt" started. This time, many

players who had not participated were first to arrive. Since they had not joined the first round,

they had lost a great deal of time to find and gather Glory points. Unless they had the best of

luck, they would not have much time to compensate the 12 hours lost from the previous round.

This round, Zhang Yang was extremely lucky. The Glory points that he had obtained from most

of the chest were all 10 and above. He had even surpassed Han Ying Xue! Even though the real-

time ranking list was hidden away from players, Zhang Yang had found out that he was the

highest in the guild.

After the second round, the elimination condition was set to 1,000 Glory points and below. The



number of players left to join the third round was only around 7,000,000, which was not even

enough to fill one major city!

From the third round onwards, the ranking list was released to the players. At the same time, the

system had made an announcement, eliminating 90% of all the players inside the realm. Those

who were listed in the ranking list had to push themselves to the limit, to position their names at

the top of the list, in order to prevent elimination. With the threat of elimination hanging over

their necks, players who were listed lower in the list had to force themselves to run amok in

panic to search for chests.

Zhang Yang had the experience. Now, instead of just blindly searching, he completely ignored

fighting the monsters until he could find another chest. If the monsters still chased after him, he

would kill them all in one wave. With his battle mount and his combined strength, monsters

stood no chance. Only strong tanks like One Sword Stroke and Endless Starlight might be able to

follow his method.

After the third, fourth, and the fifth round of elimination, only 10 players, including Zhang Yang

was left in the realm. The only player from Lone Desert Smoke to remain in the field was Zhang

Yang alone!

Initially, the little brat had a chance to enter the final 10, however, she had encountered a

European player and had been in a fierce fight. They had spent more than 2 hours just to have a

go at each other and in the end, both of them were eliminated.

# Chapter 438: Captain America

---

In this final round, the format had changed.

All 10 players were teleported to a small hillside. The method to obtaining Glory points remained the same, that was to open as many chests as you can find. However, the chests were all buried deep in the earth. Moreover, one must first hunt monsters to obtain maps that would reveal the locations of the chest. Without a map, players would have no means of finding the chest. In one instance, only one chest is spawned. Many maps that lead to the same chest would be dropped by the monsters. There would be situations where two, three, or even all players would end up searching for the same chest. During this time, players will be placed in a battle royale style combat, and the players who are killed would be unable to revive until the chest is opened, and only then would they be revived at a random point around the hill.

A battle royale, and only the strongest shall remain!

The time limit was still 12 hours. When the event ends, the players with the highest Glory points will be awarded with a Level +3, SP +1, and a title "Warrior of the Sacred Glory". The reward for the second place is Level +2 and SP +1. The third place will be awarded with Level +1 and SP +1.

Zhang Yang opened the event ranking list and examined the 10 players' identity.

1. Dusk Phoenix (Europe, Glory Points: 2,930, Level 93, Bandit.)

2. Captain America (North America, Glory Points: 2,881, Level 92, Berserker.)
3. Caesar the Great (Europe, Glory Points: 2,849, Level 91, Sniper)
4. One Sword Stroke (China, Glory Points: 2,789, Level 91, Guardian)
5. Musashi Ou-sama (Japan-Korea, Glory Points: 2,713, Level 92, Templar)
6. Zhan Yu (China, Glory Points: 2,702, Level 94, Guardian)
7. Saabo (South America, Glory Points: 2,647, Level 91, Witch Doctor)
8. Lord Mandala (India, Glory Points: 2,613, Level 92, Pyromancer)
9. Xindalu (Africa, Glory Points: 2,589, Level 91, Beastmaster)
10. October Miracle (Australia, Glory Points: 2,547, Level 91, Cryomancer)

The way to collect more Glory points was not ensured by opening chests. It was still highly dependent on luck. Zhang Yang knew his own speed. He was sure that no one could keep up with him.

However, most of the chests he found were empty. At most, the elite chests could cough out around 11 or 12 Glory points. Speed was no longer an option for him.

However, now that things have changed to only one chest at a time, the battle required guts and intellect. The first to obtain the map would not definitely get the chest. Those players who had manage to keep themselves in the game so far must have a certain level of equipment prowess and skills. Zhang Yang could take on 2, or 3 at a time. But if he goes overboard, all 9 players might gang up on him, and that would be too much for Zhang Yang to handle. He could not do the standard 'Zhang Yang' charge in and fight style.

With only a few seconds of preparation time, all 10 players had their characters unfrozen from their spots and were free to move around. Luckily, all 10 players were not spawned at the same spot. In fact, all of them were spread far apart from each other. This round, the system was rather generous. Instead of little to no monsters, monsters in this final round were spawned close to each other in great numbers. Zhang Yang did not think twice and gathered them together and had wiped them all clean. Zhang Yang gathered close to 20 and more elite monsters, and rounded them up with {Thunder Strike}, {Blast Wave}, and {Heroic Jump} before finishing off the entire herd with {Horizontal Sweep}. With such a concentrated swarm of monsters, the sword effect proceed endlessly until most of the monsters were killed.

In 2 minutes or less, Zhang Yang had killed most of the monsters and had killed a few stragglers individually. Zhang Yang was actually disappointed. Not because of the immense experience points that he had just obtained was not enough, but due to the time limitation and also at the fact that he was in an event. If he

could just ignore the urge to win, he could spend the rest of the event farming the monsters, easily leveling up to Level 95 in just four days. Sadly, in just 12 hours, there was not much time for Zhang Yang to even gain 10%! Might as well go on with the event and win the rewards.

Zhang Yang hurriedly went to the pile of battle loots and searched for the map. There were many piles of coins and cloth material which he had completely ignored in order to save space for the map and items from the chest. He was moderately lucky to obtain a map during just the first wave of monsters. He picked it up and examined the piece of paper quickly. The paper quickly vanish and reappeared in his U.I. There was a treasure chest right in the middle of the map, with Zhang Yang's position marked with a blinking light. Without thinking, Zhang Yang jumped on the bear and made his way to the chest.

After a small distance, Zhang Yang was about to arrive to the treasure spot when he encountered another lucky player. Captain America was seen from afar, rushing to his position. Zhang Yang did a quick calculation in his mind and realized that there was not enough time for him to dig and open the chest. In the end, Zhang Yang equipped his shield and sword and charged towards the man.

"Huh? Look what the cat dragged in. Ain't you one of those China pigs, huh? Welp, might as well kill ya!" Captain America had an odd and ferocious look. From afar, Zhang Yang could already identify the man, since he was riding a large black panther, while brandishing a huge axe. Along with his chosen Orc's race, he had a fierce strong look, with a killing aura so strong it could literally split leaves apart.

"Hmph. Call me all you want. You're the one going down." Zhang Yang replied and charged towards the enemy.

{Wild Charge}!

{Pounce}!

‘-4,301!’

‘-5,574!’

The bear and the panther jumped towards each other, knocking them out in the same time. Their owners had also launched {Spear of Obliteration} at the same time, down to the second. Both of them had received damage, but Zhang Yang had taken more of it. During a PvP fight in the Realm of Sacred Glory, a tank would not receive the 30% increase in attack buff. That was why the attack from Captain America had dealt more damage than Zhang Yang.

When both sides had taken damage, both their HP gauge had only dropped a fraction. Since Zhang Yang had the experience of a lifetime, he was able to immediately judge the amount of total HP that the enemy had from the drop of his HP. From his guess, Captain America would have a total of 70,000 HP and more.

Although {Pounce} and {Wild Charge} had different names, their effects were the same. Both skills would stun the target for 1 second. However, since Zhang Yang was wearing the accessory - [Heart of the Death Knight], the stun duration was halved, and he

regained control in just 0.5 seconds, allowing him to slash at Captain America first.

‘-3,863!’

Zhang Yang gained 32 Rage points, but since all skills shared the same global skill cool down, Zhang Yang was unable to cast a second skill. Without wasting time, standing there to wait for the skill to refresh, Zhang Yang leap to his feet and moved behind Captain America.

"F\*cking piece of China pig!" Captain America regained his senses quickly and was enraged. He knew about the skill, but how could it be that he was stunned for 1 whole second while the china pig was only stunned for half a second?! It did not add up! Captain America turned around as fast as he could, borrowing the momentum of the heavy axe, and smashed at Zhang Yang.

"Hmph! You're strong!" Zhang Yang could not help to compliment the American fighter. Even when Zhang Yang was already behind Captain America, he was still able to maneuver around swiftly and attack Zhang Yang with such precision, proving that he was no ordinary fighter. Unfortunately for the Captain, Zhang Yang was a tank, a super tank at that.

{Block}!

‘-1,052!’ Block Reflect damage.



‘-4,838!’ {Shield Bash}

"What the f\*ck!? I'd smash your head in, you chink!" cried Captain America angrily. Before Captain American could deal any damage to Zhang Yang, he had already taken close to 10,000 damage! With enough Rage built up from taking damage, Captain America activated {Tornado Cleave} and attacked Zhang Yang swiftly. Zhang Yang was highly impressed, as he had not seen the attack coming.

Zhang Yang was rather impressed at Captain America. {Tornado Cleave} was an AoE attack skill that did not require lock-on. As long as the skill is activated, every target within 3 meters range would received damage. In his position, Captain America could not lock on to Zhang Yang, since he was standing too close to him! The decision to use {Tornado Cleave} was fast and wise.

Since Zhang Yang had already used {Block} less than 2 seconds ago, he had to take the skill head on and received 9,094 damage which caused his Rage to fill up. With quick foot work, Zhang Yang leaped around and got behind Captain America. With the bear joining the attack, its attacks followed closely with another claw attack. Both attacks had dealt more than 5,000 damage each.

"Crap! Sh\*t! F\*ck!" Captain America continued to throw insults and profanities as he tried to turn around to catch Zhang Yang, but kept on failing.

For Zhang Yang to achieve this feat, he had to be much better than Captain America. Fortunately, Captain America was very much weaker in controls, compared to Zhang Yang. Even though

he was the top player in North America region, he was unable to keep up with Zhang Yang. He tried his best to adjust to Zhang Yang footwork but could never position himself in time. It was like a futile attempt to chase after your own shadow! With nothing but sword attacks striking his back, Captain America was helpless against Zhang Yang.

Even though Zhang Yang was a Guardian, his attacks were too strong, since his current equipment was the best so far! No one could match his equipment! His attack power was unparalleled to anyone at that current time!

"Captain America? Hmph! You're nothing. Go rot back in your homeland and be a hero there." Zhang Yang slashed down vertically from above and activated {Killing Cleave}, successfully killing Captain America and turned him into a pillar of light. Sadly, Captain America did not drop any equipment, or else Zhang Yang could have earned a fortune!

"Watch it you! I'll be back! When I do, I'll gorge your eyes out, china swine!" said Captain America before he release his soul to be revived by the system.

"Please. Who you think you are? Arnold Schwarzenegger? You should have named your character T-100 then." Said Zhang Yang right at the moment when Captain America disappeared from the battle field. He then jumped from his mount and started to dig into the dirt with his sword.

Luckily, digging was simple in the game. As long as you have a treasure map in your inventory, you could dig out the chest with

just a few digging strokes. Zhang Yang foregone lifting the chest out of the ground and directly jumped into the hole to open the chest.

10...9....8...3...2...1...

‘Ding! You have opened an Ancient Glory Chest!’

‘Ding! You have obtained [Level 5 Vitality Gemstone] x1!’

‘Ding! You have obtained 97 Glory Points!’

Jackpot!

Zhang Yang had remembered that in his previous life, the [Level 5 Vitality Gemstone] could be sold for at least 5,000 gold coins! As expected of the price, since the supply for the item would never meet the demand of the market. This particular Gemstone granted a bonus 1,000 Vitality points. Sadly, it could only be socketed into a Level 5 Socket of a higher level equipment. If he could, he would have socketed all 11 sockets of his equipment with the [Level 5 Vitality Gemstone], and enhance at least 50% of them! That was a bonus of 160,000 HP! Coupled with the current 16% Vitality Aura, the bonus would soar even higher!

What a shame...

Zhang Yang opened the inventory window and stared at the blue [Level 5 Vitality Gemstone] in awe. There was strong sense of

satisfaction.

This chest had granted Zhang Yang with a luxurious amount of Glory points, unlike the previous rounds. He had gained 2,799 Glory points, pushing his rank from the fifth to the second place in one go.

If the next chest was as the same as this, Zhang Yang only needed two more and could rank first!

## Chapter 439: Raising Rank

---

After Zhang Yang emptied the chest, he got out of the hole that he had dug and got to ground level. Just then, he saw the silhouette of a man walking away. He selected the player and examined him. It was Caesar the Great. The player must have obtained the map to the chest but was one step too late. Since every one of them were still enemies, there was no reason for him to find trouble when there was none. Caesar the Great had only observed the situation and when there was nothing else he could do, he bailed. Now that it had come to this, there was no point putting up a brave front.

Zhang Yang jumped on his bear and moved on to the next group of monsters to kill.

"Dummy? How are you?" Han Ying Xue asked in the party channel.

"I'm fine. Though I'm still at rank 4," said Zhang Yang. After 3 to 4 minutes, he had encountered another swarm of monsters and had proceeded to slaughter them all.

"Not bad for a noobie tank! If I had not gotten a fight with some bastard, I would have scored much higher than you!" cried the little brat disgruntledly.

"Ah huh. Yeah. Great. You're the best." Zhang Yang replied dismissively.

Zhang Yang had killed all the monsters as he was talking but had not found any piece of map. Still, he was not disappointed. He still had 12 hours to slowly farm his way. Zhang Yang rode the bear far and wide, and stumbled across another swarm of monsters. He killed them all swiftly and easily, and had managed to obtain a new treasure map. Once obtained, there was no more time to lose, so he turned around and headed towards the map's location. The hill was not too large, but to get from one end to the other end would take about 10 minutes or so. The second treasure chest was not too far from where he had picked the map from and had only taken him 7 to 8 minutes to get there.

The place that the map had directed Zhang Yang to was a deserted plain with no trees nor boulders to shield oneself from an attack. Zhang Yang arrived and quickly hid himself to prevent the other three players who were already at the chest from seeing him. Quietly, Zhang Yang got himself in a prone position and carefully observed the players. All of them were at least standing 20 meters away from each other and had formed a perfect triangle formation, facing each other in a Mexican standoff.

All of them did not move, nor made any aggressive actions. Neither of them wanted to engage or the third player would be able to reap the benefits from the fight. The three were Dusk Phoenix, Musashi Ou-sama, and Xindalo. All of them were human males, except Dusk Phoenix who was an Elven female. Like all female elves, she was sexy, tall, and had a body that could captivate men. She was not as hot as Sun Xin Yu or Han Ying Xue, to be honest. Still, her body and the way she looked had reminded Zhang Yang of his university life.

As expected the triangular standoff. No one moved for such a

long time! With a sudden inclination to do something, Zhang Yang stood up, got on his bear and rode towards the trio slowly. He approached them slowly, allowing the trio to notice his presence.

When they noticed Zhang Yang's presence, all of them frowned, but immediately relaxed. If the three of them continued their standoff, it will eventually be dragged on forever. But if one more player joined the fray, it would break off the stagnant which will force them to take out some of them. Unfortunately, the chances of them having any form of cooperation was literally 0.

The stagnant position was suddenly broken off when Dusk Phoenix summoned her White Lion mount and leaped towards Xindalo. Shocked, Xindalo jumped to his feet and leaped on his mount. He quickly shot an arrow at Dusk Phoenix and withdrew a few steps. Xindalo was a Hunter class player. With a 3 meter blind spot, he had to make space between him and his target in order to attack.

With Xindalo and Dusk Phoenix busy fighting each other, Mushashi Ou-sama was still afraid to dig up the chest, due to Zhang Yang's suspicious presence in the scene. Since he did not have the skill {Beast Taming}, he could not keep the battle mount in the field to attack in his stead. The battle mount would at most for 2 seconds before disappearing.

Zhang Yang did not want to waste any time and decided to attack Mushashi Ou-sama instead. He leaped to 30 meters range and threw a {Spear of Obliteration, dealing 4,000 damage to the opponent. At the same time, he had gauged the enemy total HP and found out that he had more HP than Captain America, at around

80,000.

"Puny Jap!" cried Zhang Yang as he attacked the man, with a face ready to maul the man.

"Urusai!" said Mushashi, untranslated by the system. Musashi raised his hammer and brought it down like a true samurai.

"HMPH!"

Zhang Yang raised his shield and blocked the hammer, with a quick turn and slide, Zhang Yang moved to the side and borrowed the momentum of the hammer's strike to spin around, and sliced Mushashi for more than 4,000 damage, gaining more Rage points.

Two men and two animals started attacking each other with vengeance and fury.

"I detest Japan thugs like you!" cried Zhang Yang as he stopped relying on moving around. He wanted to fight the Japanese players head on to release all his fury.

"Anta koso. Nani mou shiranai kuseni!" cried Musashi. Finally, after a while, a translated text come in, "We, Japanese are the most elite race in the world! You, Chinese dogs who only love to sit and wait for someone to spoon feed you shall fall! The cars you ride are built by us! Everything from computers, phones, camera, and many other digital appliances were made by us! One of these days, the economical power house of China shall fall into our hands! I'll



be there to see your family and descendants be our slaves!"

Zhang Yang was ticked off. How could a person such as him be so closed minded? Not everything in the world was invented by the Japanese. Zhang Yang could name many other brands to rebuke Mushashi, but it would be of a waste of time. Zhang Yang gave up reasoning with him and decided to provoke the man. "Yea? You and your AE86 thugs can screw yourself! When I'm rich, I'll buy every single one of your precious Japanese companies! Talk to me, when you can do the same thing!" Zhang Yang laughed. He knew that in the near future, 'God's Miracle' would be a mega industry with 2 to 3 billions of players! The chance of pioneers emerging out of this game would be extremely high! As long as Zhang Yang had the keen eyes to spot them, he could build himself an impregnable business fortress and earn billions!

"Hmm. Don't be too full of yourself, China dog!" Musashi retracted his hammer and place it against his waist, prepping himself for a sword drawing style. The man was obsessed with the samurai path, as if he was one himself. Still, Zhang Yang was not going to look down on the man. Only players with ability and skills could survive this long in the event. With a Guardian as an opponent, Musashi withdrew. He knew that exchanging blows with him would only be a waste of time, and he would run out of juice. He pulled the reins of his Raptor and moved away from Zhang Yang.

Hmph!

Zhang Yang scoffed. Was he trying to lure him in? Noob Japanese, Zhang Yang had not brought out his real game yet and

that was already kind enough for him! Zhang Yang leaped to the front and stuck to Musashi's movement, and followed him wherever he turned. Like a shadow following the owner, Zhang Yang stuck to him and slashed him with every chance he got.

"Konnoyarou!" yelled Musashi.

In theory, there was no way a melee fighter could keep up with a tank in terms of equipment. A tank's Defenses were so strong that it could reduce the bursting damage a melee fighter had. However could a melee fighter match with a tank's HP? If this slugfest continued on, the first person falling down would definitely be the melee fighter!

Musashi knows this, that was why he was trying his best to keep away from Zhang Yang. While controlling the battle mount, he was performing evasive movements that was on even match with Zhang Yang. However, Zhang Yang was much better in every way. There was no way a person could defeat a PvP veteran with so much additional experience from the "future", like Zhang Yang! The slugfest continued between Musashi and Zhang Yang. A hammer would drop and a sword would come slicing. Both sides suffered damage, but it was Musashi who was raging. Zhang Yang was calm and cool, even though the urge to flatten the Japanese's face was overwhelming. Still, he was able to quench his battle lust by occasionally slamming his shield in Musashi's face. It was not {Shield Bash}, since the skill could only be activate after a successfully {Block} occurred. It was just a physical movement that would not deal any damage. However, it was a move that had greatly angered Musashi.

After a few more shield slamming, Musashi had snapped. "You are a disgrace! There is no honor in your fight! You do not deserve to hold that sword! How dare you call yourself a fighter!"

That was the only translatable sentence that Musashi had uttered. The rest was in Japanese that Zhang Yang had only managed to hear, but not understand.

Zhang Yang laughed. It was true. Zhang Yang had slammed the shield in his face just to humiliate the man. There was no honor with his battle style, but that had not gotten to Zhang Yang, since the opponent was an enemy in the game, and not in real life. Musashi did not deserve his respect!

"Chikushō!!!" Musashi was practically shouting in desperation, as he was already out of means to win the battle. All sort of skills were used to survive, but none of them had managed to keep him alive. He was about to lose the fight!

"AHhh Mouu!" Musashi stopped fighting all of a sudden and swiftly withdrew.

"You can have the chest. I'm done!" said Musashi as he runs in a different direction.

Zhang Yang chased after the man and said, "Please. It's not the chest I want. I'd rather give the chest up to kill your head!"

"Kisama!" Musashi drew out his hammer. He had not expected

for Zhang Yang to give up the chest just to kill him.

"You are going to far!" said Musashi bitterly. His experience bar had already reached 85% so far. If he was killed by Zhang Yang, he would lose all his experience points and would have to start from the bottom! It had taken him 10 days in real life just to collect that much!

"There's never too far in a battle! All I want is your head to roll!" cried Zhang Yang with a sinister smile. With little effort, Zhang Yang hacked at the man and killed him off.

"Watch your back! I'll be back for you!" said Musashi as he turned into a white light, to be revived at a random corner of the hill.

Zhang Yang felt odd. Almost all defeated players would say the same thing after being defeated.

Having killed Musashi, Zhang Yang got out of battle mode and gazed towards where Dusk Phoenix and Xindalo, and found that Xindalo had already been killed. She sat down to rest and recovery herself. Just then, she noticed Zhang Yang glaring at her. She quickly entered stealth mode.

Zhang Yang was not worried. As a Guardian, he was not scared of being ambushed by any melee class attackers. Plus, he had the [Heart of the Death Knight], so all status effect debuff will be halved! Not even two Thieves could tie him down!

Without any hesitation, Zhang Yang walked towards the ground where the chest was buried and unearthed the soil. A violet-aura was emitted when the soil on the chest was removed.

Zhang Yang was excited. If the chest could give more a few more [Level 5 Gemstones], that would be swell!

Just when he bent over to open the chest, he was stunned. It was {Ambush}!

Although he could not move, he could still see Dusk Phoenix's character appearing behind him. She first attacked Zhang Yang with her swords and then summoned her battle mount.

Impressive. Attacking normally without skills had global cool down as well. By summoning the battle mount after attacking, it would not waste any time at all since she could not attack nor cast any skills during that duration. Furthermore, being idle would only recover 20 Focus points for her, which could replenish her Focus points after using {Ambush}.

The bear beside Zhang Yang had not remained stationary. Knowing that its master was being attacked, the bear hurl itself towards Dusk Phoenix and attacked her.

"Huh!?" Dusk Phoenix was astonished. In the beginning, she felt that it was extremely odd for his bear to remain active in the field even after dismounting it. But she was even more surprised when the bear could even be used like a Hunter's pet and attack an enemy! It was a first for her!

Being attacked, her summoning was lengthen from 2 seconds to 2.3 seconds.

In that brief period, Zhang Yang had awoken from his stunned state and said, "Thou art but a fine missus, wherefore art thee a thief?"

Even though the game had a translator embedded in the conversation tool, but such an old form of language was unnecessary to translate, since it was fairly understandable. Dusk Phoenix raised an eyebrow and said angrily, "Man, how dare you insult me for being a thief!"

Without any further exchange of words, Dusk Phoenix attacked Zhang Yang swiftly, along with the female panther beside her. Zhang Yang parried her sword strike with his. Fighting against a high attack interval player, the efficiency of {Block} was greatly reduced. However, since he had extreme Defenses and a high Damage Absorption passive, Dusk Phoenix had only manage to deal less than 1,000 damage to him without a skill.

That was the main reason why a melee attacker would never win against a tank in a slugfest. Having high attack intervals would mean a lower attack output per strike. Each strike would then have their attacks reduced by the defense and skills of the tank. On the other hand, having a two-handed weapon would have lower attack interval, so {Block} would be extremely effective against this type of weapon carrier!

That was, if a player did not possess {Eagle Eye}! If a player had {Eagle Eye}, they could easily defeat a tank since they could ignore some of the tank's extreme Defense!

When Dusk Phoenix was not able to deal devastating damage to Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang was able to hack away Dusk Phoenix's HP bar away like an axe to a tree. Dusk Phoenix was good. She footwork was excellent. She was light as a butterfly, floating in the battle field and stinging like a bee. She was strong enough to make someone of lower prowess to grow dizzy trying to chase after her. Her speed of moving around was good to a point that a player would be sliced to death without even landing a sword on her! However, that was against someone who was "noober" than her. Zhang Yang was someone who had already reached the pinnacle of PvP combat. Instead of being made like a fool, Zhang Yang had turned the tide of the battle and made her suffer the wrath of a Guardian!

Still, Zhang Yang mentally nodded at her prowess. Ever since the end of the first Professional League, top players made a giant leap in terms of their own progress. Since Zhang Yang had already reached the pinnacle of PvP, there was little to no room for him to progress anymore! How could he, when he is the strongest in the entire game! In order for one to become stronger, one would have to fight stronger opponents! With no space for him to improve himself, many players in the game had move on closer and closer to where he stood. Right now, he could still fight these players, but how about in 6 months time? Could he still hold them back?

Why 6 months? That's because 6 months later, the final fight for the 8 Regional S class Professional League would take place. The winner of the battle team would walk away with the strongest

battle team of the world title! In his previous life, China had many talented battle teams, but could not stand among the world's league. The best result China had hauled was only the second place, and it was won by the all-female battle team, Crimson Rage. Almost all male players in China had to bury their face in the ground for allowing that to happen. They could have done better. That was why, Zhang Yang would die hard to win the world Professional League! No matter what it takes!

Back to the battle, Dusk Phoenix realized half way that Zhang Yang was too strong. Having more than half of her HP left, Dusk Phoenix activated {Sprint} and {Vanish} to escape from the fight.

Hmph!

{Thunder Strike}!

No response...

Zhang Yang rushed to where the opponent had disappeared and stomped the ground to cast a net of electrical current. However, there were no response. Dusk Phoenix had probably left the battle field instead of trying to make a comeback. For him to chase after and reveal a hidden Thief in this wide-open field, it would be like searching a speck of dust in a pile of snow!

Zhang Yang smiled bitterly and went back to the chest. Killing others was important in this event, but opening chests to earn Glory points came first.



‘Ding! You have opened an Ancient Glory Chest!’

‘Ding! You have obtained [Level 5 Intelligence Gemstone] x1!’

‘Ding! You have obtained 82 Glory Points!’

D\*mn! It was an Intelligence Gemstone! Zhang Yang wanted Vitality or Strength! Zhang Yang sighed heavily and decided to give the Gemstone to Han Ying Xue to earn some happy points from her.

Still, the 82 Glory points was so good that it had pushed him over Captain America. He had collected 2,881 Glory points so far, putting him at the second place with only 48 Glory points behind the first place, Dusk Phoenix!

Just one more! One more chest, and he would be at the first!

# Chapter 440: A Mess

---

The number of monsters in the valley were constantly respawning at an alarming rate. Zhang Yang had mentioned it before, if he had not wanted to hunt for the chest, grinding levels here would be a sweet dream! However, no matter how much experience points the monsters would give, the Level reward from being the champion or even the second place was extremely valuable! Furthermore, the chest would have a chance to drop [Level 5 Gemstone] of any kind! There was even a chance to open up a Violet-Platinum equipment! Who would want to waste their time hunting monsters when such a luxurious booty awaits them! Hence, the battle between 10 players was a silent rage.

After 1 hour in the battle, the game developers had received requests from many players around the world to have a look at the current battle through "God Mode". Players were allowed to watch the game but were locked from carrying out any conversation of any kind.

It was when Zhang Yang had found out that almost all channels, including the guild, party, private message, and other means of communication through the outside "world" was blocked. The only means to communicate was the "talk" function which was opened to the public. The "talk" function mimicked reality. The louder you shout, the further it can be heard. Although there was a limit, and it was distance.

Over time, a few more chests were revealed. Zhang Yang was rather unlucky, since most of the treasure map he had farmed had already been dug out by other players. Sometimes, whenever he was rushing to the chest, the map will be destroyed out of the blue,

indicating that the chest was found and had been looted of its contents. Luckily, Dusk Phoenix and Captain America, once more being ahead of him, had not made any chest discoveries. All three of them had not made any progress! However, the remaining seven players had been crawling up. Although their rankings had been a little messy, the problem was, all of them were gaining Glory points.

For the next chest discovery, no matter who was the one who made it to the chest, the entire ranking list would have a major change. Even the 10th place, Lord Mandala could rank first!

While he was busy worrying about the rank, his sword sliced through many more monsters and had earned another treasure map. Zhang Yang smiled and quickly hopped to his bear, and made his way as swiftly as possible towards the chest. Just as he arrived to the destination, he discovered that the place was filled with seven more players and two dead bodies on the ground. Zhang Yang was the last person to arrive to the spot! Technically, before the chest is opened, none of them was the first, nor the last!

The two dead bodies belonged to Saabo and October Miracle. Since the reviving condition in this event is special, neither of them could release their souls from their body and had to wait there until the chest is opened!

One Sword Stroke glared at Zhang Yang and said, "Zhan Yu! Please put aside our conflict and team up! We are both of the same side here! I hope we could temporary set aside our quarrel and face them all together!"

Zhang Yang laughed bitterly and said, "I had never know you could speak in such as gentlemanly way! Fine. I agree. Let us deal with the outsider and till the two of us stands last!"

Zhang Yang had high confidence. He had two ulti skills, {Dance of Heaven and Earth} and {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}. He strongly believed that none of the others had such an OP skill in their skill tree. He had not used the skill before when he faced Musashi, Captain, and Dusk Phoenix, because the situation had not reached to such high tension. Having such a high cool down, the skill could never be used so casually!

Even though the two of them had joined forces in dealing with the rest of the players, all eight of them had not moved a budge! The opponent were still the 6 strongest players! If they could split up and take on three players each, it would be a huge gamble! Since no one knew each others abilities, it was best to resort to chaos and pick at straws from there!

Dusk Phoenix smiled bitterly and laughed. "Well, since no one willing to make a first move. I'll be glad to wait. Neither of us are rushing, right?"

"Hush lady, how dare you speak for me! It would be your wish for all of us to remain idle, no?! You're currently at rank 1, if this goes down without a fight, you would surely be winning this event!" Captain America scoffed and pointed at the two dead players on the ground. "Look at those two idiots. They must have fallen for your provocation. Hmph! They must have died in vain. I'd say, you best take care of yourself. I might accidentally smash your head in."

Over Zhang Yang side, he tried to start a fire by provoking the Japanese player. "Ooi! Shorty! Mushi Mushi! Come over and I'll mush you!"

"Kisama..." Musashi Ou-sama remained motionless.

"Pussy! You should change your name to Pusashi instead. It suits your behavior, since you're such a pussy!"

"Shut your mouth!"

Both Musashi and Zhang Yang remained motionless. Musashi knew that Zhang Yang was deliberately trying to provoke him. If he had resorted to fleeing instead of fighting, it would put his country to shame!

Finally, after having thinking it through, Musashi pulled the reins of his mount and leaped at Zhang Yang. Captain America followed behind him and attacked Zhang Yang as well. "Musashi Ou-sama, I shall assist you!"

Before the commotion, all seven of them, except Zhang Yang, had remained passive, since anyone who tried to stick out would be hammer down like the two dead players on the side. Secondly, if they were to start the battle among them when Zhang Yang had not arrived, it might place them all in a disadvantage situation where Zhang Yang could easily kill them. Now that Zhang Yang had arrived, there was no more hesitation. Captain America had crossed path with Zhang Yang before, and he knew that he could

not defeat him alone. Thus, when Musashi had blatantly jumped to fight him, Captain America had proposed his alliance with Musashi.

"Hm! Happy to know that both U.S.A and Japan still has some good ties!" said Musashi. He too, was aware of his own capability. Hence, when Captain America offered his help, there was no reason for him to reject.

Zhang Yang faced both of them fearlessly and rode into the fight with the bear.

On the other side, Dusk Phoenix, One Sword Stroke and the rest had their equilibrium disrupted. There was five of them. If someone offered an alliance, it would be three vs two or even four vs one! Knowing this, One Sword Stroke acted first and struck Dusk Phoenix with a preemptive attack!

"F\*ck!" Dusk Phoenix cursed. She was offended, that instead of anyone else, she was the first person being attacked. Instead of having her to fight alone, she used {Fan of Blades} to attack everyone in the vicinity. She was not afraid of triggering the entire battlefield since she had the skill {Vanish}. On the contrary, she had purposely attacked all of them to invoke a fight. Only through the chaotic battle could she make use of her stealth to slip out. Guile was the main factor to being a true Thief!

Even though Zhang Yang was facing with two players alone, his strong equipment had made him bear to invincible! Coupled with all sort of status affecting skills laying down on them, including the passive stunning by the Titan equipment set, both Captain

America and Musashi Ou-sama were being pressured further!

Having thought that gaining an extra player to fight Zhang Yang would be a piece of cake, Zhang Yang's array of skills had proved them wrong! Zhang Yang utilized the skill {Beast Taming} efficiently where and when a situation called for it, for Zhang Yang could dismount at any moment to stomp the ground, casting {Thunder Strike} and then hopping back up the bear to run away! Zhang Yang's overwhelming skill had greatly humiliated the Japan-America partnership!

Those that were watching had mixed reaction. Audiences from China was cheering happily while audiences from, Japan-Korea and America had fallen silent. How could the two of them be forcefully shamed by only one China player! What sort of partnership is that?

The longer the battle dragged out, the better Zhang Yang fought. Having to fight two professional player at the same time, his prowess had been elevated to its full potential. At one point, he was even better than he ever was! 100%? No! Zhang Yang had surpassed that! He was at 150%!

Zhang Yang was focused on killing Musashi first, and had laid down all sort of skill bombarding him while maintaining status effect skills on Captain America to weaken him. Since Zhang Yang had a "thick" skin, he could prolonged the battle by first weeding out the weaker one!

Being beaten down like a wild dog, Musashi was raging and cursing while Zhang Yang hacked him down to his last bit of HP.

Since he had already died once, losing all his experience points in the process, there was nothing left for him to lose!

"Prick! If I die, I'm taking you down with me!" cried Musashi.

Zhang Yang laughed, "Sorry, but I have to interest in joining the kamikaze squad!"

"GRAAH!" Musashi raged on and unleashed as many skills as he could, including the skills that he had reserved for later use. Although all the skills were unleashed, Zhang Yang had not noticed any abnormal skills such as {Dance of Heaven and Earth} coming from him. Putting that aside, although outwardly, he was behaving rather barbarically, the man was calm on the inside. He knew that even though he could kill Zhang Yang, he could not ensure that he would be the one opening the chest later! He might be killed immediately after this fight!

The clash between Musashi, Zhang Yang, and Captain America had reached its climax, and Zhang Yang had suffered major HP loss. If Zhang Yang had not been a tank, he would not have lasted this long.

The main reason Zhang Yang was not in deep trouble, aside from the fact that he was a tank, was because the cooperation between Musashi Ou-sama and Captain America was not perfect. After all, the two of them were fighting together for the first time. Neither of them have had the chance to engage in a proper discussion. Additionally, the two of them were professional players who often engaged in battle alone. In a combined attack, one had to be the main, while the other would be the secondary filler. With both of



them being highly arrogant with their own skills, neither of them were willing to take on the support role!

Two minutes into the fight, Musashi had become the third player to be eliminated in this chest hunt.

Zhang Yang laughed and quickly activated {Berserker's Heal}. However, he had failed to noticed that he had the debuff {Destructive Smash} on him and had only managed to heal 25% of the intended recovery rate. Captain America had succeeded in proclaiming the S score for his job class quest, granting his {Destructive Smash} to deal a 75% reduced healing rate! It was the same score in which Zhang Yang had obtained.

With Musashi's death, Captain America attacked faster than he ever did and growled. "Zhan Yu! You will die by my hands!" If he had not be able to kill Zhang Yang, having teamed up with Musashi, Captain America's loss would be the loss of both Japan and North America all together!

Even though Musashi had died, he was able to force Zhang Yang to use his recovery skill, providing a battle advantage to Captain America.

"Don't let it got over your head though..." said Zhang Yang coldly. With Musashi out of the way, he was able to fully focus on Captain America alone. His sword danced around like a dragon in the sky and a snake in the ground, forcing Captain America to turn around frantically to avoid getting hit, but failed ever so miserably.

Blood splattered everywhere as Captain America was being sliced and diced repeatedly by Zhang Yang.

"Bastard! You Bastard!!"

Zhang Yang merely laughed at his feeble attempt to retaliate. Within two minutes, Zhang Yang had forced Captain America to use all his skills and had killed him after a short fight.

All the players that had saw the fight gasped in awe. How could one player defeat two professional players when they were both considered to be the best of their own countries?! Even though their classes countered each other, Zhang Yang's ability was still impressive, nonetheless.

Zhang Yang sat down to quickly recover himself and gazed at the other ongoing battle. Two other players had already been killed, leaving One Sword Stroke, Dusk Phoenix, and Lord Mandala in the field.

Since the equilibrium of the battle field had been broken, Zhang Yang felt a little Déjà vu when the three of them were standing at the edge of one another in a perfect triangular shape.

Zhang Yang rode towards One Sword Stroke on his bear and said, "One Sword Stroke, lets make a deal. Each of us pick a player. The first person who manages to down their opponent gets to open the chest."

"Sound like a good idea," said One Sword Stroke.

Zhang Yang laughed. "In that case, pick your foe."

# Chapter 441: A Sabotage

---

One Sword Stroke did not hesitate and immediately rushed towards Dusk Phoenix. A Guardian [ate](#) Thieves for breakfast, by default. Even though One Sword Stroke was a proud man, he would not jeopardize victory for the sake of pride. He purposefully left the harder target for Zhang Yang to handle as he took on the easier one.

Zhang Yang crossed his arms and nodded with a smile. He left One Sword Stroke alone and decided to accept the challenge.

"Curses!" Dusk Phoenix cried. She did not wait for One Sword Stroke to come to her, but instead she leaped forward and swung her sword hard to parry One Sword Stroke's attacks.

On the other side, Lord Mandala muttered something under his breath and instantly cast a fireball at Zhang Yang, dealing close to 2,000 damage. That attack was a Pyromancer's {Fire Blast}, an instant-cast skill which did not require any chanting. The skill allowed Lord Mandala to ride away on his mount, while attacking at the same time.

Although a Spellcaster did not have a blind spot, however, like a Hunter, it would be over once an opponent manages to get close to him. Similar to all ranged attackers, once a melee fighter gets into their range, ranged attackers would face a dangerous situation where the melee attacker could finish them.

An instant-cast skill had a long cool down rate, Lord Mandala

could not rely on the skill to kite Zhang Yang. The main reason being that Zhang Yang, or rather, all Warriors had the skill {Berserker's Heal} which only had 2 minutes of cool down time. If Lord Mandala relied solely on {Fire Blast}, he could only take out 1/3 of his HP before Zhang Yang could use {Berserker's Heal}.

After a good distance, Lord Mandala jumped down from his mount and started chanting a spell.

‘-5,094!’

A blast of fire came down from the sky in a form of a huge meteorite. It smashed into Zhang Yang, dealing close to 5,000 damage and even stunning him for 3 seconds. The skill was called {Fallen Meteor} which caused 150% Fire damage and stunned a target for 3 seconds. The casting time was 1.5 seconds.

After stunning Zhang Yang, Lord Mandala activated {Heart of Flame} and proceeded to chant the Pyromancer's strongest spell, the {Explosive Flame}.

Zhang Yang smiled.

{Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang immediately regained his movement and rushed over to Lord Mandala. Since the bear was close to him, Zhang Yang had mentally commanded the bear to use {Wild Charge} on him. The bear rushed towards Lord Mandala at an insane speed and

stunned the man and his mount for 1 second, canceling Lord Mandala's chanting animation and spell.

Zhang Yang laid down his first attack on Lord Mandala, dealing 4,223 damage. After 1 second, Lord Mandala regained his senses but just as he was about to cast another spell, Zhang Yang stunned him again with {Brutal Smash}.

"What the f\*ck!" Lord Mandala cried. He immediately used {Apparate} to remove the stun on him and teleported 10 meters away from his current position. Since his character had teleported, Lord Mandala's mount had regained its senses as well, but had to run towards its owner.

Zhang Yang laughed at his futile attempt to run away. Zhang Yang swiftly jumped down from his bear and used {Charge} to "fly" to Lord Mandala.

Like an arrow head, Zhang Yang glided through the dirt and stunned the poor man again. Closely after the brief second stunning duration, Lord Mandala was about to use {Fire Blast} when Zhang Yang had stunned him again with {Blast Wave}!

If he could cry, Lord Mandala would have done so. Since the start, Lord Mandala was only attacked once, but stunned repeatedly! What was the use of {Apparate} if the opponent could stun him continuously for all eternity!

"Hehe. I'm not done yet." Zhang Yang muttered.

{Thunder Strike}!

Just when Lord Mandala had regained his movement, Zhang Yang had stomped on the ground, sending a wave of electricity that slowed Lord Mandala down, leaving him speechless.

Spellcasters were supposed to counter tanks! But how could Lord Mandala kill Zhang Yang when he possesses so many stunning skills?! Even though Lord Mandala had {Fallen Meteor} to stun Zhang Yang, the stunning duration was halved by Zhang Yang's [Heart of the Death Knight]! There was no way for Lord Mandala to keep a safe distance from Zhang Yang.

Lord Mandala had battled other players before, and none of them were as annoying as Zhang Yang! At the very least, Lord Mandala could still deal some damage to the opponent! Zhang Yang had too much HP to begin with! By the time he had blasted half of Zhang Yang HP off, Lord Mandala would have only 10% HP, or even lesser than that!

Sighing with great despair, Lord Mandala could not help to have the urge to put up the white flag. The guy was a tank, a walking turtle! They were supposed to be tough, that Lord Mandala would agree. But how could anyone explain a tank that could ditch out nuclear like attacks!? His opponent had the HP of a super tank, the attack of a raging Berserker, and the stunning skills of a sneaky Thief! What do you call such a player? A hacker? A mother f\*cker?

Even though Lord Mandala tried his best to retaliate, he was unable to escape the fate of being killed by Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang had not even needed to fully bring out his true potential and

had killed the poor Pyromancer in less than a minute.

Zhang Yang turned over to One Sword Stroke and observed the man. There was no one else besides One Sword Stroke who was looking all too nervous on the battle field. Zhang Yang felt something was off only for half of a second before he realized what was going on there. Dusk Phoenix had entered stealth mode and had been playing hide and seek with One Sword Stroke!

Zhang Yang had to laugh. "Looks like I win this round."

"Hmph." One Sword Stroke scoffed. He was a little disgruntled. Even though he had picked Dusk Phoenix as his opponent, he had not expected Dusk Phoenix to run away in mid battle. Disappointed, One Sword Stroke accepted his loss and accepted his defeat.

Zhang Yang proceeded to dig out the chest and opened it as quickly as he could, while being on alert at all time. He was eyeing left and right to make sure One Sword Stroke did not play dirty, or that Dusk Phoenix does not do anything funny. Fortunately, Zhang Yang had managed to open the chest, and loot everything out without any trouble from either of them. This time, Zhang Yang had obtained enough Glory points to push him up to 2,966, making him the first on the ranking list.

After the chest was emptied, all the players who had been killed were finally given the option window to revive. One by one, all the bodies around disappeared and the field. One Sword Stroke glared at Zhang Yang disgruntledly and went on his way.



After the ordeal, all 10 players had their chances of opening a chest each, causing their rankings to go up and down each time they opened a chest. No one had their ranking holding onto one position. Sadly, after the previous ordeal, Zhang Yang had become public enemy number one. Whenever there was a situation where three players were present around the chest, they would automatically come to a silent agreement and attack Zhang Yang altogether.

Zhang Yang was torn. If all of them were melee class, he had the utmost confidence to defeat them with all of his skills. However, if any of them were Hunters or Spellcasters, Zhang Yang would not dare to take the heat. There was a high chance for him to actually be killed by them! After all, all surviving members in this realm were the top players, the best of the best, even in all eight regions.

Lucky for him, Zhang Yang had {Shadow of the Void}. If he couldn't win the battle, or have a chance of being killed, he could use the skill to escape the field at any moment he wanted. Zhang Yang was smart enough to keep {Burrow} at hand. The 10 minute active duration skill was too good to reveal now. If he still had the [Cloak of the Dark Wings], which was already taken by Han Ying Xue, he could have gained one more means of escaping!

Right now, the tension in the field got higher and wilder. Players tended to attack whenever they saw each other. As time passed on, the tension grew as well. 3 hours...6 hours...eventually, the entire battle had reached the 11th hour and 45 minutes point.

At that moment, all 10 players had one thought circulating in

their mind. The next chest would be the last, and that chest would determine the winner.

So far, Zhang Yang was ranked at the highest, but that position was not at all secure. Captain America, ranked at second was only 24 Glory Points away from Zhang Yang, and even Musashi Ousama was only 82 points away from Zhang Yang, and he was ranked at the last. Technically, if he opened the chest before anyone else, Musashi could be the winner. That is, if he were to obtain 82 points or more for the last chest.

When Zhang Yang obtained the treasure map, he remained stationary and smiled. Instead of rushing to the chest, Zhang Yang took his time and observed the area, before barging in. He waited and loitered around until the timer had ticked in the last 10 minutes, before activating {Burrow}.

Like a Thief, {Burrow} forbade any interaction with objects, or it will forcefully dispel the skill and reveal him. Zhang Yang had no intention of opening the chest. Instead, he wanted to prevent other players from opening the chest! Since he was leading, to win the event, he only needed to make sure that no one else could open the chest!

Zhang Yang knew that he was the main target, thanks to all his grand performances. A nail that stuck out would get hammered. In this case, he would be hammered really hard, if he were to appear right there and then. No matter how strong he was, he was just one man. How could he tank 9 more players that were slightly lower, if not at the same level as him?

Zhang Yang submerged into the earth and "walked" beneath the other players. This magical {Burrow} was able to detect players and hear their conversation.

"Now that's that. I suggest that everyone stays put for now and wait for Zhan Yu. We will pool together and kill him."

"I agree. Even though I do not like this idea, that guy is far beyond our league. 1v1 or 2v1 is no longer an option."

"I see. For now, it's a truce. Until he dies, we will not fight each other, for it would only benefit him."

Amidst the conversation, two more players had arrived and joined the armistice. The internal fight that Zhang Yang was waiting for did not occur after all.

Another minute went by and the last three participants joined the group, leaving them all staring at each other blankly.

"Where the hell is Zhan Yu?"

"Maybe he spotted us and had decided to pull out?"

"What now? If we wait, he will be the winner!"

Even after much argument, none of them came to a final decision, much less do anything. As the timer ticked on, their

patience ran low. So far, everyone had accumulated Glory points to a point where their scores were merely one or two points away from each other. If any of them could get their hands on the chest, it would be a victory for them. Finally, the temptation of wanting to obtain the Level reward and title had surfaced.

"Let's dig it up first."

Zhang Yang did not know who was the person who suggested it, but the idea was approved by everyone almost immediately. Once the chest was unearthed from the ground, October Miracle was the first to show his hands. With a quick cast, he activated a spell that materialized a large water elemental being.

The water elemental was about 10 meters tall, with a blue, bulky, semi-transparent body. Right at the moment of his appearance, the blue monsters spread its blue slime and blasted a white light at everyone in the vicinity. All eight players around the chest were encased in ice.

[Ice Prison]: Frozen in place. Unable to move. Effect can be dispel by receiving an attack. Lasts for 20 seconds.

What a strong immobilizing skill!

Zhang Yang gritted his teeth. It was good that he had never looked down on anyone who he did not know. Even though he had the experience from his past life, which encompassed many aspects of the game, other players from other parts of the world had experienced things that Zhang Yang was never able to learn.

Naturally, October Miracle did not attack anyone and took the chance to open the chest.

10%...50%...70%...80%...

The entire process would have taken him 10 seconds to complete. But by the 8th second, Saabo emerged out of the ice and blasted October Miracle with a shadow whip. Cursing in a foreign language, October Miracle was disgruntled when his attempt to open the chest was interrupted. He then cast a [Frost Dragon] towards Saabo and commanded the water elemental monster to attack him as well.

Zhang Yang sighed at the sight of two element Spellcaster blasting each other with arcane power. More importantly, there were many other players who could still hold in the urge to strike!

How would one not own a dispel skill at this current stage? Everyone would have it! Except for Saabo, everyone else were patiently waiting for the right time to strike! However, Zhang Yang did not care about attacking. He had already have a plan to strike out at the last 0.1 second.

Boop! Boop!

One by one, the icy blocks that encased all players were broken down, forcing them to participate in a chaotic war that could not be avoided.

Food. A jargon in the gaming industry. Food means an easy target or a specific target that was meant for a person/individual/entity to kill. For example, Rabbits are Food for Eagles since eagles could easily snatch the poor rabbit from the sky.

## Chapter 442: When the Dust Settles...

---

Zhang Yang was all too busy enjoying himself from beneath the ground.

Whoever who gets their hands on the chest would inevitably be the winner for this long draggy event. Level +3 and a one of a kind title would surely be enticing to many players. The same thought lingered in everyone's mind, the last chest belonged to them! So what, if they were killed after opening the chest? The reward alone was more than enough to compensate for that!

The battle raged on with everyone at their limits. No one would want to keep their ultimate skill on reserve when this battle is the last battle! Skills that were similar to {Dance of Heaven and Earth} were used, so frequently, that Zhang Yang was finally made to believe that luck was not really on his side after all! If he had already appeared in the scene a short while back, he would surely have been killed! Even if he would to activate {Rearm} to reset his skill's cooldown to reuse them again, it was impossible for him to survive 9 counts of {Dance of Heaven and Earth}-like skills!

Furthermore, Zhang Yang had carefully observed, and found out that there were players who had more than one {Dance of Heaven and Earth} type skills. He would have guessed that, like himself, the skill originated from an accessory or an equipment.

Although these folks were the top players of their represented region, when two or more players decided to work together to defeat one, they would. Musashi Ou-sama was one of the poor guys that were killed by three players altogether. Naturally, he would be

pissed, but what made him angrier was the fact that Captain America, the same guy that spouted bull crap about the Japan-America friendship, had joined the party in killing Musashi!

In the ground, Zhang Yang was wishing that he could get some popcorn, since the "show" was too good to miss. Out of the corner of his eyes, he suddenly spotted one character vanishing from the field. It was Dusk Phoenix. She had taken the opportunity amidst the chaotic battle and had disappeared from sight.

As the battle reached its climax, everyone had to remain on high alert at all times. Unlike Zhang Yang, who could sit back and relax, they had to keep an eye on the field for players, and another eye on the sky to evade incoming attacks from afar! Once a player's HP dropped to a certain extent, players would be like sharks in the water that would target the player with the lowest HP and kill them first!

Defense came before offense in a free-for-all group battle!

As the chaos continued, October Miracle, Xindalo, Caesar the Great all fell, one by one. The ordeal went on until the last 2 minutes!

What that was left of the massacre were a few players, which eventually led to the fall of Lord Mandala and Saabo, and even China's second strongest player, One Sword Stroke was killed. The last person standing among the dead bodies was Captain America. Fresh blood was dripping down from his two-handed axe, as he roared to the sky!



"U.S.A! U.S.A!" He turned to One Sword Stroke and spat on his corpse. Captain America was able to defeat the man because of a hidden ulti killer move that he had saved up. If he had not, and if One Sword Stroke was to fight him fair and square with the use of extra skills, it would be difficult to predict who would have walked out the victor. One Sword Stroke could not do anything but stare with great disdain at Captain America. He was so angry, that he could just log out immediately and throw his gaming helmet!

After a barbaric laugh, Captain America walked towards the chest. With the mindset that he had already won the battle without counting the dead bodies, Captain America opened the chest.

Just when the chest was about to snap open, a ring of stars appeared on his head, and he was unable to move. The boobilicious body of Dusk Phoenix emerged from the shadows behind Captain America. Without delay, the Bandit continued slashing the Berserker.

"You f\*cking c\*nt!" Captain America could not move. Still, it was his mistake for not counting the dead bodies first before opening the chest. He had not even healed himself before proceeding to open the chest, leaving 30% HP for Dusk Phoenix to end his life. As expected, Captain America had not lasted for more than a few hits, and was already plunging down to his last 20% bit of HP. Dusk Phoenix added a {Kidney Shot} right after {Ambush} ended. She took a bottle of Stamina Potion and restored all her Stamina altogether!

Pak Pak Shush Shush!

20%...15%...10%...0%!

Being stunned from the moment he opened the chest, with his dispel skill still in cooldown thanks to the commotion from a few moments back. It couldn't be helped, to counter a Bandit with a handful of status effect skills, one must have an anti-status effect at hand! Poor Captain America only had 30% HP after the bloody ordeal, and had his {Warrior's Will} still on cool down. There was no way for him to turn the tide around!

After dealing with Captain America, Dusk Phoenix stood there unmovingly and spoke to the sky. "Come out, Zhan Yu. I know you're there."

Zhang Yang smirked. The woman was smart. She had not let down her guard, even after everyone was killed.

"A man like you should not play like a rat. Have you no shame?" Dusk Phoenix provoked Zhang Yang with a stern face.

Zhang Yang complied and floated up from the earth behind her. Currently, all his skills were ready to use, and nothing was in a state of cooldown. If he was to lose a 1v1 match with her, he could just buy a tofu and smash his head to death with it.

"Bloody hell! You really are here!" cried Dusk Phoenix, with an astonished face. She turned around slowly. Both her swords were

sheathed on her back. "Now that it's just the two of us, let's talk business."

Zhang Yang chuckled and pulled out his sword. "Might as well just kill you. Talking sounds troublesome."

"Sigh..." Dusk Phoenix smiled. "No wonder I could never find a man who can satisfy me." She smiled seductively and cupped her breasts together. "Looks like the rumor that Asian men are romantic was nothing but a rumor."

Imagine yourself watching the same comedy over and over again. Now, imagine someone telling the same joke. How would you react? That was how Zhang Yang reacted to her seduction. Nothing. He had too much of it from all women in the guild, and in real life, and Han Ying Xue's company...Too much that he was numb from it. Still, he frowned. "What are you implying?"

"Let's make a deal. I take this chest, and in exchange, I'll be your woman. Since you're already in the first place, you would be second when I've taken the chest. At least, the second place reward is as good as the first. Minus the title and one Level reward," said Dusk Phoenix as she playfully rested her hands on her waist, while bending over to reveal her cleavage to Zhang Yang. Slowly, the woman cat-walked like a super model on a runway, towards Zhang Yang and placed her hands on her waist. No wonder they say that Europeans do know how to make a man steamy.

The problem was, she had no idea that there were close to 100 million players currently watching their every move!

Zhang Yang laughed boldly. "Come on. What are you trying to sell? Bottled Swiss Mountain Air? You live somewhere in Europe, I live in China! How could you possibly be my woman? Furthermore, you don't speak my language. We can understand each other now, all thanks to the game's auto translation mechanism. Do you expect me to carry a Google Translate app with me every time I want to talk to you? I am a man who wishes to bring glory to my motherland, I can't be having wet dreams every night now, can I?"

"Hmph! What a down to earth guy!" Dusk Phoenix walked towards Zhang Yang and stopped one foot from his face. Her face was blushing greatly, and she puckered her lips. "Kiss me."

"You know what?" Zhang Yang paused.

Dusk Phoenix closed her eyes, expecting the man to fall into her trap.

"Kiss this."

Zhang Yang lifted his leg up high and kicked the woman away. Normally, any actions that do not utilize weapons would only cause 1 damage to the target. The same happened to his kick. Other than the pitiful damage, the kick was backed by Zhang Yang's 1,262 Strength points, which had forcefully sent Dusk Phoenix flying, 7 to 8 meters away.

"What the hell!?" Dusk Phoenix cursed. There was a glint of anger

and a little shame in her glare. Even though being kicked or being slashed at would not generate much pain, as a woman, she was still enraged at being kicked by a man so crudely.

Zhang Yang chuckled. "I know what you're trying to do. Silly kid. You are trying to utilize the system's anti-harassment feature to forcefully kick me out of the event! I guess, two can play that game. How did my kiss feel? Was it romantic enough for you?"

Her face changed from anger to a stoic, poker face.

She had fought Zhang Yang a few times before and had realized that she was not up to his standards. Furthermore, Zhang Yang was a tank, which made her attacks feel like cotton fluffs. It was a sudden spark of idea that got her to make use of the system anti-harassment system to kick Zhang Yang out of the event. She only needed to be slutty for a few moments to seduce Zhang Yang and send him out of the realm, and into prison!

Why fight head on when you can lure an enemy into a pit of spikes? Dusk Phoenix had wanted to draw Zhang Yang into her trap, but little did she know that Zhang Yang was an expert in springing such traps!

The woman had failed so miserably that her shame had turned into rage. The woman's puffy red cheek and her eyes started tearing up! She did not summon her battle mount, nor enter stealth mode, but instead, she charged head-on towards Zhang Yang, crying out her battle cry as if she had lost it.

"Calm down. No one like a berserk woman. Well, that's not exactly true, all sorts of men exist. Though most of them wouldn't like this," said Zhang Yang as he raised his shield and sword, ready to intercept her attack.

Right at the moment before her blade was about to strike Zhang Yang's shield, Dusk Phoenix twisted and turned in the air, and managed to side-step into his blindspot. Her angry face suddenly turned into a sinister laugh.

Boom!

A fiery dragon burst out of her necklace and charged towards Zhang Yang.

{Shield Wal}!

Zhang Yang activated his ultimate defense skill right at the millisecond the dragon had burst out. He knew that the woman had something hidden. He knew that she would not be agitated that easily, with such a lame provocation. Hence, even when she was putting up a fake crying face, he was wary. His thoughts were just an impulse away from triggering {Shield Wall} if something was to happen. And he had guessed right.

‘-18,894!’

Even when the ultimate defense skill was unleashed, Zhang Yang had still taken close to 20,000 burst damage! Without the magical

barrier protecting him, the damage would have reached as high as 80,000! Zhang Yang own maximum HP was only 88,000 HP, and it had already been reduced down to around 72,000 HP before the dragon had even dealt the damage. If he had taken the hit without the {Shield Wall}, he would have been a goner.

Dusk Phoenix's 'damsel-in-distress' tactic was truly brilliant. But, it was not good enough to weaken Zhang Yang's alertness. The woman must have thought that Zhang Yang having 70,000 HP was good enough for her to kill him with a single skill burst, making Zhang Yang feel like a complete fool for not utilizing his defensive skills beforehand.

Having one plan foiled foiled after another, Dusk Phoenix was stunned. That was her last trump card! Zhang Yang knew that women always had backup plans. If he had not had the experience of two lives and an abundance of gaming experience, he might have fallen for her act and gotten himself killed by the dragon skill. Still, it was not time to let down his guard. Only god knew that Dusk Phoenix might still have some other plans in hand.

{Dance of Heaven and Earth}!

Shush!

The shadow emerged out and rushed at Dusk Phoenix!

Immune!

When the shadow reached to where Dusk Phoenix was, it bumped into an invisible wall and could not move closer. However, it did not stop nor cause the shadow to dissipate. The shadow swordsman continued to slash his way in and attacked Dusk Phoenix despite not being able to touch her physically.

Immune!

Immune!

No matter how much the shadow struck, Dusk Phoenix was not able to take any damage. At the same time, she took out her swords from her back and attacked Zhang Yang.

‘-o!’

‘-o!’

Zhang Yang had guessed that Dusk Phoenix was using some sort of equipment that granted her temporary immunity. Likewise, Zhang Yang’s {Shield Wall} was so strong that Dusk Phoenix was not able to deal any damage at all! On the contrary, Zhang Yang had been recovering 10% HP per second, and was recovered to full HP in a matter of a few seconds.

10 seconds later, {Dance of Heaven and Earth} expired, and the shadow swordsman vanished. At the same time, Dusk Phoenix started to move back. It seemed like her invulnerability skill lasted around the same time.



In that case...

{Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}!

Zhang Yang activated the ring's skill and summoned an old orc magician. The orc pointed its staff at Dusk Phoenix and chanted a spell.

"Oh god!"

Dusk Phoenix panicked. Right at the moment the first bolt blasted off, Dusk Phoenix had disappeared in a puff of smoke, making use of the I-frame from {Vanish} to negate the skill's damage.

Zhang Yang wanted to praise her, but he best remain quiet for now. The woman was good. Her reaction speed was as good as Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream. Or rather, slightly better than Lost Dream, but slightly weaker than Sun Xin Yu.

Now that Zhang Yang had forced Dusk Phoenix to use {Vanish}, there were no more skills for her to use. She was no longer a threat to him. A Thief's strongest skill was {Ambush}, combined with the chaining of {Kidney Shot} to deliver a long stunning duration. Zhang Yang had no fear of Thieves. Why should he be afraid of Dusk Phoenix?

Zhang Yang moved towards the chest. If Dusk Phoenix continued

to play hide and seek, she would lose her last shot for the chest. But if she did appear to attack Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang would bring down hell from above. Even if that took them over the time limit of the event, it did not matter! He was already at the first place!

When the coast was clear, Zhang Yang did not hesitate to open the chest.

‘Ding! You have opened an Ancient Glory Chest!’

‘Ding! You have obtained [Level 5 Dexterity Gemstone] x1!’

‘Ding! You have obtained 91 Glory Points!’

Zhang Yang had opened the last chest. Since there was only 1 minute left on the countdown timer, there was nothing left to fight for. When the dust settles down, there will only be one winner.

"Zhan Yu. Mark my words. When we enter the Chaos Realm, I will have my revenge!" From afar, Dusk Phoenix was yelling from the top of her lungs.

Zhang Yang laughed and shouted back at her. "Next time, if you do see me! I'll smack that \*ss so hard that you'll be begging for more!"

"F\*ck you!" Dusk Phoenix screamed back. Zhang Yang could have sworn that he noticed a red blush on her cheeks before she left the area. She had no need to leave, since the event would end soon.

However, she just could not stand the sight of the Chinese man. She feared that she might actually succumb to her anger and beat the crap out of him. Or was it the other way round?

‘Ding! Server Announcement: The event Realm of the Sacred Glory has ended. The top three winners will be announced shortly!’

‘Ding! Server Announcement: Player Dusk Phoenix has won the third place. Obtained reward: Level +1, SP +1!’

‘Ding! Server Announcement: Player Captain America has won the second place. Obtained reward: Level+ 2, SP +1!’

‘Ding! Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu has won the first place. Obtained reward: Level +3, SP +1, and a Unique title: Warrior of the Sacred Glory!’

## Chapter 443: Dimensional Key

---

Once the system made the announcement, Zhang Yang's character glowed brightly and gained 3 Levels instantly, pushing him up to Level 97!

Zhang Yang was suddenly assaulted with deep fear. If he had been a little more diligent, he would have gained more levels before the Sacred Glory event had started. If so, he would have shot up to Level 100! That was good, in a sense, but what would happen to the "Dimensional Key" quest? Would it not be available to him, forever?!

Zhang Yang place the SP on {Shield Wall}, making it Level 9, with only 3 minutes of cooldown time!

At first, Zhang Yang was never interested in the title "Warrior of the Sacred Glory", but when he found out its hidden features, he equipped the title without hesitation. The title effect was: 10% increase attack when attacking Spectre and Demons. It was a great boost to him, since most of the enemies in the game were Spectres!

Zhang Yang opened his inventory to consolidate all his items. From the chest, he had obtained 78 pieces of [Level 4 Gemstones]! Sadly, he had only managed to procure 8 pieces of [Level 5 Gemstone]. It did not matter, since they were extremely valuable! The main factor that made the item priceless, was the fact that they cannot be bought with gold coins! In the future, it would be a huge advantage for Zhang Yang. Whenever he farms equipment with Level 4 Sockets or Level 5 Sockets, he would not need to buy Level 3 Gemstone to compensate for it!

Within a brief moment, Zhang Yang was teleported out of the Sacred Glory Realm, and back to White Jade Castle. Once he arrived, his messenger rang on and on, like there was an emergency call from the hospital. He received many calls of congratulations from all his friends and guild mates. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had even asked for Zhang Yang to treat them to a big fancy dinner, which Zhang Yang had no excuse to reject.

Even though he had agreed for the big dinner plan, Han Ying Xue and the other ladies in the house got lazy. In the end, their big dinner was only a fancy takeout meal.

After playing for so long and remain indoors, Zhang Yang realized that it was mid summer. Even though the air conditioning in the house was turned on, all four ladies in the house wore their summer dresses indoors! Nothing but the most simplest, thinnest fabric plastered against their skin! Their slender bodies were totally exposed. All thanks to the so-called "summer dresses". Sun Xin Yu was the special case. When Zhang Yang saw her right after he had logged out of the game, she had just come back from the gym down stairs. At first, she wore sports bra and spats, which was quite revealing, yet normal. But when she was done bathing, she wore a mini Tee! Nothing more! There was not even a bra beneath that thin cloth! Her forbidden peaks were clearly shown to the world, which would entice any normal man!

Zhang Yang nearly spat out his drink when he saw Sun Xin Yu coming out of her room after changing. Ever since she had confessed her feelings to Zhang Yang, the woman had gotten bold. She had been lackadaisical about Zhang Yang and treated him less like a stranger. Was that a good thing? Zhang Yang could not

answer his own question...Perhaps, did she not mind about Zhang Yang being able to take a peek under the hood?

Zhang Yang turned back and saw that Han Ying Xue had noticed his response to Sun Xin Yu. She merely scoffed and took out a fat banana out of the fruit basket. After peeling the skin ever so seductively, the women sucked on the banana slowly, from the tip, all the way down to the shaft. Instead of biting down the banana, she merely pulled it out and slobbered over it while winking at Zhang Yang. Unlike Sun Xin Yu's unintentional show, Zhang Yang was immune or rather, annoyed at how Han Ying Xue was constantly teasing him! Still, her actions were greatly seductive. Wouldn't hurt just to look at, would it?

There was a fiery sensation going on down south...

Now that Han Ying Xue knew that she had managed to get his attention, she bared her teeth and bit the banana forcefully. The glare in her eyes spelled doom to a certain part of Zhang Yang...

He could not help but feel extremely scared for some reason. What a complicated person...What does she want? For real!?

Anyhow, the food arrived and everyone dined in. On the dinner table however, there was a cold war going on between the bombalicious babe Han Ying Xue and the stone-cold Sun Xin Yu. If Zhang Yang were to wear a heat reader, he could practically see sparks zapping across the two women. Those two were at each other's throats, spiritually. It was so intense, that the air-head Wei Yan Er was able to detect the hostility between those two. While chewing down the lobster meat in her mouth, the little brat stared

at Sun Xin Yu, and Han Ying Xue, her eyes going back and forth. Her gaze then turned to Zhang Yang and she snickered. Zhang Yang had no idea what is going on in her tiny little mind, but he knew that it would not be good. Daffodil Daydream on the other hand, played an award-winning role of being invisible to the crowd.

After finishing the dreaded dinner, Zhang Yang pushed all four ladies back to their rooms and urge them to go online. He still had the Dimensional Key quest to complete, which would lead him to the Imperial Heaven's Empire Royal Palace to search for the Meteor Sword.

Zhang Yang had recruited all four girls into his party. The reason why he did not invite the other core members, was due to the party member limit of the portal entry. He had to pass on Fatty Han and the rest. Naturally, he picked the four of the girls because of their innate talents. That, and it was much better to have an all-girl company for once.

After gathering, Zhang Yang took out the Dimensional Key and focused his thoughts into the key. The red color gem-like object burst out a stream of rainbow light which formed into a light portal. The doorway of the portal was extremely small, which could only fit in one person at a time.

"Enter, now!" Zhang Yang cried. He needed to stay focus on controlling the portal, which required him to be the last person to enter. Han Ying Xue and the rest of the party entered the portal, one by one and when the last person entered, Zhang Yang held the key tightly and entered with his back facing the portal. Once the

light engulfed his body, Zhang Yang turned around quickly and forced his way in. There was a light, pushing current that was not too strong. It still required them to lean forward and put a little force in their forward movements.

‘Ding! You have entered the Fallen Land, Imperial Heaven's Empire Royal Palace. Monsters that are killed inside this realm will not respawn!’

The white light faded away, and his vision returned to him. Zhang Yang realized his footing was little more solid than usual, and found out that he was standing right at the entrance of golden castle. There were beautiful decorations to his left and right. Almost everything was made of gold, and had given off some sort of blinding effect.

Zhang Yang's mini map had a good overall layout of the Imperial Heaven's Empire Royal Palace. Zhang Yang opened the world map up, and his position was currently at the North West of the entire Royal Palace. The Treasure Cove was located at the South East of the entire Royal Palace. To reach there, they would have to travel diagonally for a long time...

Luckily, this time, the portal had sent the party in as a whole, instead of spawning them at random places.

"Wow...This place is beautiful." Wei Yan Er was stunned by the dazzling beauty of the palace. She started to spin around playfully. "Noobie tank! Let's just move here! This place is much better than your cooped-up apartment."



Zhang Yang frowned. He was annoyed at her statement. Was not it her fault that his place was cooped-up?

"Activate your auras. We're going to start raiding the palace now," said Zhang Yang. He did not wait for Wei Yan Er to obey him, and proceeded on further into the palace.

"Hmph. Dummy, how long exact have you spent doing this quest? For as long as it worth, there better be some good rewards waiting for me at the end!" said Han Ying Xue.

"Erhm. You meant, for me. Anyhow. The quest should be lucrative," said Zhang Yang nonchalantly, as he shrugged.

Daffodil Daydream said, "Well, even if the quest itself does not give any good rewards, the Violet-Platinum bosses in here should be good enough for us!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Well. Don't be too pessimistic there, Daffy. I did spend a great deal of time in this quest. If the quest was to reward me with just experience points, it better be worth at least half of a level, or I'll call it a huge waste of my time."

Everyone made jokes and teased each other as they proceeded deeper into the palace. It had been a long time since they had entered the palace, but there were still no buildings, just an extremely large courtyard, filled with trees, chairs, tables, and a place to drink tea! It did not take them long to find the first monster to fight.

[Restless Guard] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 95

HP: 200,000

Defense: 500

The skeletal soldier was dragging a huge sword over the floor of the palace grounds. The sword looked like a regular sword. However, what made it different from the rest was the fact that sparks were created just by dragging its tip across the ground, even though the ground was tiled with stones. Instead of a metallic, clinging sound, the stone tiles were torn apart!

"This...place...not for...the living...intruders...death...kill..."

With a low, barely audible tone, the skeletal said something that triggered the battle. The skeletal soldier picked up the sword that it was dragging along and slashed at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang was expecting the sword's attack to be slow and sluggish. However, the skeletal soldier proved itself to be an elite tier monster by swinging the sword at such a fast speed, forcing Zhang Yang to react just as quickly. He swiftly raised his shield to block the strike, but was forcefully sent backward. The sheer power of the strike had made Zhang Yang lose his footing. With quick reflexes, Zhang Yang borrowed the momentum from the

backward force and spun around. At the same time, Zhang Yang returned the attack with a counterattack from the side, via a sword slice!

‘-4,387!’

After the sword sliced through the skeleton, its armor was caved in with a deep horizontal hole, breaking the armor down into two pieces. That was just a cosmetic appearance and nothing more. The defense value of the skeletal soldier did not change. However, the armor breaking effect would not have occurred if the sword was of White-Wood grade. Only high tiered weapons could create such an effect on lower tier armor.

"Did you guys hear the skeleton talking?" said Wei Yan Er surprised.

"Well. I'm not surprised. This place exists only temporarily. I won't be surprised, even if the grass could talk! Remember, players can only enter this dungeon three times!" Zhang Yang explained, as he continued to fight the monster.

"Tch... If only we can find, capture, and rear a talking monster!" said Wei Yan Er with her puppy eyes. Zhang Yang shook his head. He had always felt that Wei Yan Er had a whole, other-worldly taste compared to other people.

Sun Xin Yu and everyone else laid down their attack and quickly terminated the monster. The monster had dropped a few coins, a few [Inscribed Cloth], and even silvery, shiny boots!

[Hallowed Greaves] (Gray-Silver, Leather Armor)

Defense: +12

Vitality: +76

Strength: +38

Dexterity: +84

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 90

"Aiya! What a noob equipment!" said Wei Yan Er with disgust. Even though the boots had not yet been Identified, the stats would only increase by 50% after Identification, it was still quite weak, compared to her current equipment.

Zhang Yang laughed. "Come on. What do you expect? It's just a Gray-Silver equipment for Pete's sakes! Appreciate for what it is. We could sell the bloody thing for a few hundred gold coins. If the monsters here could drop that many equipment, even if they are all Gray-Silver, it would still be worth quite a fortune!"

When the word "fortune" got out, both Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er chuckled. Zhang Yang could swear that those two had

money symbols appearing in their eyes!

The party of five proceeded deeper into the palace, and found many similar skeletal soldiers around. Without the need to provoke the monsters, they would automatically target them and launch their attacks. Even though these elite monsters were stronger than the regular elite monsters in the "outside" world, their difficulty was greatly compensated with a vast number of drops. 10 skeletal soldiers had already dropped 4 counts of Gray-Silver equipment!

Everyone was happy. Since this place did not limit the duration you spend in the area, they could easily wipe all the monsters at leisure! Even the monsters that were not in the palace could be farmed for their lucrative drops!

After Fatty Han and the others knew about it, they too wanted to have a part of the haul. Zhang Yang added them into the party and tried to exploit a possible loop hole by using the [Party Summon Order] to "pull" them into the world. However, when Zhang Yang activated the accessory, the system responded. "Failure to summon party members due to Imperial Heaven's Empire Royal Palace participant limit."

Zhang Yang was not disappointed. Somehow, he knew that the developers would not make a silly mistake like that. Now that Fatty Han and the rest of the core party members were all together, Zhang Yang had not bothered to kick them out.

Fatty Han suddenly let out a loud cry. "F\*ck me! I swear that I ain't gonna touch booze no more!"

Zhang Yang laughed as his sudden sweeping declaration. "Why the sudden accent. It does not suit you. Isn't booze harder to quit then asking you to have a diet?"

"Grah! It's not that." Said Fatty Han. "You got it all wrong. It's... well...Yesterday, when I went over to Xiao Wei's house to meet her parents. On that day, I can't remember how much I have drunk. But the next morning, Xiao Wei had glared at me like she could just stab me with her fingers. I asked what's wrong and she revealed to me what I had done. Last night, when I was at her place, I drank so much that I was heavily intoxicated."

"Huh...that's normal."

"Wait. I'm not done. Her father asked me this question. "What do you think of my daughter when you first met her?" You know what I said?"

"Oh f\*ck."

"Yeah. I said, "Girl's got buns, hun!" I said that!"

Everyone burst out laughing and even Zhang Yang had to stop, rolling on the floor while clutching his stomach.

# Chapter 444: Sweeping Gold

---

The Royal Palace was too huge to explore. Honestly, Zhang Yang felt that if the monsters did not drop those lucrative equipment, he would not even want to explore the entire place! Not even if you paid him! After spending close to 24 hours of real world time, Zhang Yang and his party had explored only 20% of the entire Royal Palace. The total equipment that they had amassed had already reached the thousands.

Inevitably, all of their inventory slots were not enough to store that much. Zhang Yang remained inside the Royal Palace while the four of them went back to the main city using the [Teleportation Scrolls]. After depositing all of the equipment in the guild storage and personal storage, Zhang Yang had recalled them back into the Royal Palace with the [Party Summon Order]. Zhang Yang was not afraid of the item now working, since he had tried it previously. The system had not allowed him to summon more than 5 of them. That was the only condition.

Luckily, the [Party Summon Order] had only a 1 hour cooldown time. They had no worries of farming more equipment over and over again, and could repeatedly go in and out of the Royal Palace once their inventory was full again. The party continued onwards and arrived at a small building by the second evening. Inside, there was the first boss of the world. Truthfully, they could go around it and skip the boss fight. But, who would want to skip when they could kill it for its drops, with their eyes closed!

[Steamy Little Gu Gu] (Yellow-Gold, Spectre)

Level: 96

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 1,700

The boss was only a Yellow-Gold tier. Zhang Yang could solo the boss with his hands behind his back! Considering the fact that most of the players in the entire game had endured many hardships, they could easily defeat this boss as well. Perhaps a strong team would be required to kill a Violet-Platinum for now. Hence, this boss was placed there like a bonus!

Swinging their weapons half-heartedly, the party killed the boss without no effort. The boss had dropped one Yellow-Gold equipment and two Gray-Silver equipment. After collecting the equipment, Zhang Yang felt that something was a little odd. The Royal Palace was not terribly difficult as he had imagine it would be. The monsters were not tough to defeat, and would bestow them a heap of equipment! It was like this place was a reward in itself. A reward for entering the place for completing the Dimensional Key quest! Besides the equipment, there were many herbs that were available for harvesting in this place. How could a place in a different dimension produce such an abundance of herbs? That did not matter for him. All he had to do was to pay yup 1,000 gold coins to summon the tiny little critter to harvest the herbs, while he went around killing more monsters.

The little critter was undeniably cute. When Zhang Yang first summoned it out, Wei Yan Er had let out a deafening shriek and had hugged the little thing! The Herb Foraging Familiar was so



annoyed at the little brat that it had squirmed out of Wei Yan Er's arms and had disappeared into the palace ground. One hour later, the Familiar returned and deposited all the herbs that it had gathered into Zhang Yang's inventory, before disappearing from the world.

"Hm...Noob tank? Where, and how does that little cutey store all the herbs?"

"Erhm..." Zhang Yang frowned. How does one explain the mystical concept of online gaming to a naïve little kid. "I think, it has some sort of a backpack with him?"

"Huh? Really? I want to see!" said the girl with wide, unblinking eyes.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and decided to ignore the girl.

After spending 5 more days of real world time, the team had finally explored every inch, every nook and cranny of the entire Royal Palace. Zhang Yang could guarantee that he had killed every single one of the monsters inside this realm. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were diligent in doing so; they had even turned over stones and trees just to make sure they could squeeze in all available drops from the monsters in this place. In these 5 days, they had collected a total of 3,532 Gray-Silver equipment and 17 Yellow-Gold equipment!

Even though the price for Gray-Silver equipment had plummeted drastically, it was still normal to sell one Gray-Silver equipment

for a few hundred gold coins. When the equipment was special or had slightly higher stats than a regular one, it could be sold for hundreds or even a thousand gold coins. With such an abundance of Gray-Silver equipment in hand, they could at least sell them all for 600,000 to 700,000 gold coins! With the few Yellow-Gold equipment that they had acquired, their total earnings could reach a million! In truth, Zhang Yang was happier about the number of herbs in this place! There were so many varieties and rarities of herbs, that his Familiar had collected. Zhang Yang felt that after a thousand years of being isolated from the real world, all these untouched herbs that grown ever so wildly, and benefited Zhang Yang alone!

Zhang Yang and his party had spent 5 days in real time, which would be 360 hours in the game. Taking away the time that they took to eat and workout, Zhang Yang had summoned the Familiar to harvest herbs for a total of 350 times. Although he had spent 350,000 gold coins for it, all the herbs that the little critter had collected for him were worth more than a million! On the bright side, the best herbs he collected were so rare that no one was willing to sell them! The rarest herb he obtained was the [Mythical Fruit].

[Mythical Fruit] could be used to concoct a potion called [Growth Potion], and the potion would permanently increase all Attribute points by 10! This potion effect was the same as the [Fate Crystal] found in the 10,000 Phantoms. However, 10,000 Phantom's respawn rate was 10 days (real world time). Besides, the monsters there were mostly Level 50. Since the spawn point was randomized, no super guild could monopolize the place, since anyone could easily wipe the place clean. It all depended on luck, and luck alone. Hence, the reason why the [Mythical Fruit] is priceless.

All Zhang Yang required was to obtain the recipe to craft the [Growth Potion]! On a side note, Zhang Yang had the skill {Alchemist Intuition}, providing the chance to craft out a [Transmuted Grade 10 Growth Potion] which would, probably grant the user 20 points of all Attribute!

After the party went out of the Royal Palace to empty their inventories, they moved deeper into the Royal Palace and came to the Treasure Cove. The entrance was blocked by a 50 meters golden door. Wei Yan Er tried to pushed the door open, but failed do to so. The door did not even budge when she had pushed it till her face was red. Disgruntled, the little brat had swung her axe and bashed the door, and as a result, the door remained unscathed while the little brat's axe was notched! The system reported a loss of 10% Durability for her axe, making the little brat as angry as a little boar.

Zhang Yang laughed for a good while before he took out the Dimensional Key and slotted it into a hidden keyhole on the side. A loud mechanical cog cracked away and the door was unlocked. The key popped out and the golden door cracked opened into two panels. The doors opened wide and revealed a darken hallow. There was nothing. Zhang Yang could not see anything from his side.

"Erhm...are we supposed to go in there?" Daffodil Daydream asked.

"Yeah..."

Foom!

Zhang Yang stepped back immediately on reflex, like a knee-jerk reaction. It was the sound of the torches hanging on the walls of the interiors being lit up. It was a passage way with many other routes, left and right. However, before Zhang Yang could go in, the only path he saw from outside the door was a straight pathway with no end.

"Get ready. This is why the real danger lurks."

"Hehe! Somebody is being a scaredy cat!" Wei Yan Er playfully taunted Zhang Yang.

"Yeah. I'm soooo scared! Woo~ Please, lead the way then!" Zhang Yang shot back with a sinister smile.

"Hell no." Wei Yan Er immediately regretted her decision of taunting Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed for a good while before stepping into the darkened room. Unlike the exterior of the palace, the Treasure Cove was dark and gloomy. It felt like a whole other world where the exterior was a cheerful and happy place, while the Treasure Cove was a world where despair and death loomed. Zhang Yang swallowed his saliva and pulled out his sword and shield out, which he had forgotten to do so, before entering the Cove. There was a sense of danger in this place. Even though he wore what was currently the strongest tank equipment in the world, he had never heard of a team that had managed to complete this quest in his

past life, thus the lingering fear in his mind. Zhang Yang strongly believed that the team that tried to raid this place was not just a simple team, it had to be a strong and well-equipped team. At least, better than his current party.

Zhang Yang kept his guard up high, and his alertness at its peak, as he walked through the dark passageway. Halfway through, the system made an announcement.

‘Ding! You have entered: The Treasure Cove. You have 12 hours to search for the Meteor Sword. Failure to located the sword in the designated duration will result in expulsion from the Imperial Heaven’s Empire Royal Palace. You can use the Dimensional Key to reenter the Palace after expulsion. The Treasure Cove has 5 floors. There will be a strong boss to guard each end of every floor. The Meteor Sword is located on the fifth floor. Good luck!’

A countdown timer popped up in everyone’s U.I, along with a buff icon called, {Expulsion}.

Before the area of the Treasure Cove, there was no time limitation. The time limitation was only implemented upon entering the Treasure Cove. No wonder the previous raiders had failed to complete the mission. Once the battle with the boss took up too much time, it would waste the players’ time, and would eventually lead to expulsion. Players could try again for 2 more runs, and if they failed after that, this place would forever be sealed.

While he was thinking a way to solve the time problem, a loud stomping sound echoed though the entire room. A fully armored

soldier marched to where Zhang Yang and his party was. The sound of his footsteps were terrifying. It was not the sound of his metal armor slamming hard against of the floor, but the sound of his ominous hum. It felt like he had survived numerous battles and had never lost one!

[Treasure Cove Guards] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 95

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 2,000

"Defend the Cove! Kill the intruders!" cried the soldier bravely. From the tiny gap of his helmet, Zhang Yang could see a lick of green flame. It was a higher leveled Spectre. No wonder it had so much HP.

"Wait! Is that an elite monster? It doesn't make sense. His HP and Defense are stronger than a Yellow-Gold boss!" Daffodil Daydream cried angrily.

The soldier pulled out his sword and slammed into Zhang Yang. "Yeah. I get that."

Zhang Yang was too lazy to explain why this monster was so strong, neither did he attempt to understand it. No matter how strong it was, there was no escaping the fight.

"Old man! They say, all work and no play makes Jack a dull man. Well, at least you'll get paid if you work. But now, you're already dead! Why are you still fighting!? What about retirement? Go and relax somewhere!" cried Wei Yan Er as she tried to persuade the monster to give up on the fight. Zhang Yang wanted to chip in, but he knew that if he said anything at all, this little brat would figure out a way to ask something else. The chain will never stop if he starts it!

The fight continued, and Zhang Yang realized that the soldier was no ordinary elite monster. Each strike contained so much force, that it managed to push Zhang Yang away! The force was so strong that it felt like his legs would snap at any time if he resisted. Even further into the fight, Zhang Yang realized that the monster had a certain level of intelligence. When there were other melee fighter around him, the soldier would prioritize them before Zhang Yang. Luckily, Sun Xin Yu was extremely quick. She realized the issue and had managed to find a solution almost immediately. She found out that when the monster was not attacking Zhang Yang, it would almost instantly switch to her. With lightning speed reflexes, Sun Xin Yu would use {Vanish} to eliminate all the aggro on her and give Zhang Yang enough time to build more aggro on the monster.

After that turn, both Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er found a way to negate the monster's attacks. When the monster was attacking Zhang Yang, they would join in and attack. At the moment the monster stopped, they would leave his attacking range and allow the monster to attack Zhang Yang instead.

With the abnormal lengthy HP, and the absurd battle style of the

monster, the party had taken close to 3 minutes to kill him. Luckily, Zhang Yang himself had found a better solution to kill the monster faster and more efficiently. Whenever a monster like that appeared, Zhang Yang would lure it to the corner, and Zhang Yang would attack him with his own back on the wall. That way, Zhang Yang could negate the knockback effect, which allowed him to remain "stationary," to fight him better.

After killing more than 10 monsters, Zhang Yang started to frown worriedly. If this continued on, they could not reach their destination in time! They were already at their fastest pace, there was no way to squeeze more DPS out of them!

For now, Zhang Yang moved the problem to the back of his head. The team proceeded on, killing their way into the Treasure Cove and arriving at the end of the floor, after 4 hours. Almost instantly, another problem arose. There was no passageway that led them to the next floor! The boss that was supposed to be there, was nowhere to be found! Where was the promised passageway and the boss!?



# Chapter 445: The Fourth Prince Ludovic

---

"Let's search for it!" Zhang Yang cried annoyingly.

Everyone spread out and started to search in all directions. Some thought that it must be some sort of switch mechanism that could open a hatch, or reveal a secret wall.

"Nyahaha! I found it!" Wei Yan Er laughed happily. Right at where she stood, there was a large humanoid statue. At the base of the statue was a glowing jade. In the game, items or objects that could be interacted with would be highlighted with a glowing aura. Items or objects such as herbs, minerals, and even switches would be highlighted to help players spot them.

"WAIT! DON'T TOUCH IT!" Zhang Yang stopped her. The stupid and reckless little brat might kill herself by triggering the boss alone. Zhang Yang and everyone else rushed to Wei Yan Er's side. Zhang Yang nodded and Wei Yan Er twisted the jade. Cracks started to form on the statue and fall down from the top. With a loud crack, a hand burst out and slammed downward.

"Aiyaya! What is that!? Monster? Ghost?!" Wei Yan Er cried out randomly.

With stones raining down from above, Zhang Yang and everyone started to jump away to safety.

The statue cracked even more violently after some time. It seemed that the source of the great vibration was coming from

within the statue. It was so powerful, that the entire floor was trembling like a subwoofer! Everyone was forced to stagger about like drunkards!

Crack! Crack! The statue continued to "peel" off its stone skin and reveal its main body. After all the stone had been removed, the boss appeared in gold, shining armor. He was carrying a gigantic axe behind him.

[The Fourth Price, Ludovic] (Violet-Platinum, Spectre)

Level: 100

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 2,900

"Oh...my...god...Level 100 boss..." Zhang Yang gaped. First, he had goosebumps. Trembles of fear followed next.

Level 95, or 99 would not have much difference from each other, but when a boss reaches Level 100, like Ludovic, the prowess and difficulty was on a whole other level. It was the game's setting. Every 10 Level gap, equipment, itemd, monsters, players, and even bosses would undergo an upgrade. Hence, this boss had already gained that fore mentioned upgrade, and would be extremely difficult to defeat. A Level 90+ Violet-Platinum boss would have only around 2,600 Defence. Ludovic had an extra 300!

No wonder the previous team in Zhang Yang's previous life could never make it alive! Just the minions alone would already take too long a time to defeat. Yet, now came a Level 100 Violet-Platinum boss! It would not be such a problem if they were not restricted with time and level limitations. This "dungeon" ... this place had a Level 100 limitation, and also a 36 hour duration for them to conquer. Was it impossible? No. But it was close to impossible!

The Level 90 dungeon Rock Frost Palace had already caused players to be stuck in there for more than 2 months! Players had actually taken 2 months to figure out a way to defeat the entire dungeon. Yet, this Level 100 "dungeon" Treasure Cove had forced players to complete it within 36 hours! How!?

Ludovic's entire body was revealed to the party. It was massive, like a professional, heavy weight MMA fighter. An emerald-green flame burst into his eye sockets, indicating that Ludovic had come back to life. Slowly, Ludovic stared down at Zhang Yang and everyone else, and said in a low husky voice. "Are these the descendants of the seven traitors? Death, shall it be!"

Without saying anything else, Ludovic drew out his axe from behind his back and swung it hard at Zhang Yang and everyone else.

Zhang Yang jumped into action and embraced the oncoming attack with his shield.

PANG!

Sparks burst into the air when the gigantic axe pummeled the shield. Although Ludovic's attack was nullified, Zhang Yang was sent flying. Instead of knocking him back a few meters, Zhang Yang was literally sent flying backwards. It took a great deal of strength to get back up on his feet, which eventually ended up with Zhang Yang spitting blood out of his mouth.

"Augh!" Zhang Yang struggled to remain on his feet.

"Woah. Noobie tank! What are you throwing up blood for! It's not like you have cancer!" Wei Yan Er teased.

"Bloody brat! There's a time and place for everything, and now is neither the time nor the place!" Zhang Yang scolded her sternly, which made her quieten down. He regained his strength and sprinted towards the boss.

"Hmph. No hero, no villain, could ever harm the great prince. Your resistance is all but for naught!" said Ludovic in a very snobbish manner.

Zhang Yang was careless. While sprinting with all his might, Zhang Yang had forgot to guard his side. Ludovic had sent a powerful soccer kick towards Zhang Yang, hitting him right in the chest area, which sent him flying like a bullet. He ricocheted against the wall and fell down to earth, throwing up more blood as he got back up his feet.

"Grah!" Zhang Yang was getting annoyed at tasting the rust in his mouth. He quickly got up to his feet again and glided towards

Ludovic with a {Charge}. A quick slam was avoided, with Zhang Yang extreme reflexes, and he managed to land his first hit on the boss. His sword struck the boss' armor, sending out sparks everywhere, and the word "-3,182" floated up.

Enraged, Ludovic picked up his axe and swung it hard at Zhang Yang.

SPLISHH!

‘-15,238!’

A fresh pool of blood dripped down from Ludovic's axe after he had chopped Zhang Yang.

Beep

Zhang Yang's Rage gauge was filled almost instantly after he had taken the devastating attack. He quickly jumped towards the boss, avoiding more attacks and landed {Cripple Defense} on the boss to support his team mates. All this time, beside Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu and everyone else had remained idle to allow Zhang Yang to build more aggro on the boss before they could attack.

"Feeble bugs! I will squash you with my fist and feet! Your death will be quick and painless!" Ludovic bellowed. He picked up his axe and spun it around in circle. A bright flash of light shot out in a horizontal sweep and dealt damage to everyone close to the boss' melee range.

‘Ding! Ludovic has used: Tornado Sweep, all target within the attacking range will receive 25,000 Physical damage!’

Zhang Yang had thick defense, it would not matter for him. But the others had taken close to 20,000 damage. Even though they had Level 90 Violet-Platinum equipment on them, their 50,000 HP was instantly halved. The girls jumped backward instantly and withdrew to the side to heal themselves with [Bandages] and Han Ying Xue’s heal.

"Behold! Feast your eyes on my strength! Bow to the power of absolute force!" Ludovic was talking too much, that even the little brat had gotten annoyed. Zhang Yang was about to approach him to attack, when an axe swung by. Zhang Yang took the axe attack, and was sent flying by another kick to the chest!

Zhang Yang saw the kick coming to him. With quick breathing, Zhang Yang relaxed his body and avoided the incoming "wrecking ball" simply by bending backwards, like Mr. Anderson from the Matrix.

Almost all the girls present on the scene gasped in awe and surprise. Daffodil Daydream cried out immediately, "Guild master, how did you do that? How did you avoid that attack?"

From her perspective, the boss’ attack was too fast to dodge. Unless players were to use special skills to induce a sudden movement, it was impossible to physically dodge the attack!

"That kick attack is not an actual attack. It's not considered to be a boss attack. That is why there is a flaw which you can exploit. Its easy to dodge once you had grasp the technique." Zhang Yang explained.

The kick that sent him flying the first time had not caused any HP damage. It was all merely an effect. But the effect had a knockback effect, which could send him flying off his feet. It was troublesome, since he could not counterattack!

This type of attack was not alien for Zhang Yang. Ever since the game had undergone the first update, the effect was already added in. It was similar to the knockback effect from bosses and stronger monsters. As long as the Strength value is higher than the target, one could easily induce a knockback effect. In Ludovic's case, the effect was placed in its kick attack. Since the attack was not an attacking skill which could cause HP damage, the movement speed of the leg was fixed to allow players to avoid it physically.

These kinds of movement in a fight was extremely common after the Chaos Realm threshold. Zhang Yang had been reborn, and it was close to a year since he had fought such a boss. That was the reason why Zhang Yang had made a few mistakes with Ludovic. Not that he had gotten used to it, but he was using everything in his power to avoid being sent flying again.

This type of fighting style is actually applicable in PvP. Zhang Yang had used a similar method of fighting Musashi Ou-sama in the recent past event. Taking a shield to the face would not cause damage, but it could disrupt the opponent's vision. However, when Zhang Yang was slamming his shield into Musashi's face, it

was all to humiliate him and throw him off his game.

To slam someone off their feet would require the attacker to have a much higher value of Strength compared to the victim. Right now, Zhang Yang could send a player off their feet, provided that the player was equipped with Yellow-Gold equipment, or lower tier. This sort of attacking style was known as the Supporting Attack. In his past life, players around had crafted a series of supporting attacks and incidentally caused a huge uproar about it. There was a case where a random rank-less player, equipped with only a beginner dagger, killed an A-class Professional League PvP fighter solely by using the "supporting attack".

Hence, after the incident, many professional players had adopted the style and utilized them to enhance their fights.

...

"Die! Pest!" Ludovic bellowed again. This time, he spun his axe in circles and created many afterimages of his axe around his body. With a loud battle cry, the mirror images of the axe blasted off in all directions.

‘Ding! Ludovic has used: Axe Barrage. Inflicts 20,000 Physical damage to all targets within the vicinity. Lasts for 10 seconds!’

"To me!" Zhang Yang cried out as he casted {Vanguard Aggression}. The attack would deal 20,000 damage per seconds. That meant it could deal 200,000 damage in total! How could anyone survive that?



With Ludovic as the center, the axes shot out to all directions, and even to the edge of the gigantic room. Zhang Yang frowned at the sight of it. This time, he could use {Vanguard's Aggression} to save everyone. He could use {Rearm} and use it again for the next {Axe Barrage}. But what about the third one? Right now, the boss still had 92% HP. If the skill was activated at regular intervals instead of by the HP percentage of the boss, {Axe Barrage} could be repeat endlessly, and it would be impossible to survive that!

How could a 5-men party win this round? The system would never design such a broken boss fight! There must be a way to survive the skill, without using counter skills!

Zhang Yang frantically scanned the entire room and found a abnormally large pillar at the far side of the room.

"Guys! I will kite the boss over to that pillar. When the boss uses {Axe Barrage} again, you can avoid the skill by hiding behind the pillar!" said Zhang Yang. During the skill activation, Zhang Yang had observed and found that the skill required the boss' channeling. Hence, when everyone runs behind the pillar, the boss would not chase after them. Furthermore, he noticed the axes that had flown out were stuck in the pillar and had not phased through.

10 seconds later, Ludovic raised his axe up high and swung it hard towards Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang then kited the boss. Slowly but surely, he managed to drag the boss over to that pillar. He stopped 3 meters away from the pillar, providing enough space and distance for everyone, including himself, to escape the skill, if the boss were to use {Axe Barrage} again.

Now, the boss was not stupid. The raging soccer kick was used repeatedly. If Zhang Yang did not possess his past life experience, he would have faced this sort of attack for the first time and would be kicked so far and so often that the boss could have joined the World FIFA competition. Even when the players were standing close to the pillar, the boss was not stupid enough to let them stay there forever. With all sort of kicks coming from different angles, the boss' prime objective was to keep everyone from staying at one place for too long. Tanks could not rely on the pillar to prevent the knockback effect!

If another tank were to replace Zhang Yang, they would surely be kicked until he becomes a football (not American football). With him away from the pillar, the boss would then use {Axe Barrage} to kill everyone easily.

This is the main point of surviving the skill. Players would have to figure out a strategy to stand close to the pillar, during and before the {Axe Barrage} is used. If they had figured that out, any less-than-average tank, healer, and attack could defeat him.

"Death to you, insolent fool!" cried Ludovic as he thrust another kick at Zhang Yang.

"Again, with the same trick?" As light as a feather, Zhang Yang twisted and turned, effectively moving away from the kick. Right after the kick was thrown into the air, Zhang Yang moved to the side, and slammed his shield right in Ludovic's helmet.

Pang!

The slam had successfully knocked off Ludovic's helmet, and revealed his half-rotten face, just like Two-Face in the Batman. Some of his hair got stuck on the helmet, causing some of his skin on the head to be ripped off as the helmet was blown away. Zhang Yang had not intended to do that. He had wanted to knock Ludovic back, so that he would have more space to start a hit combo. It was a pity that his Strength was lower than Ludovic.

"Ugly snob!" Wei Yan Er cried out and laughed.

"Ugly?" Ludovic heard her laughed and was enraged. "Did you just call me ugly? I am the fourth prince! The most handsome man under the heavens! You ignorant fool! How dare you deny the gift of gods? Are you blind?"

"Nishishishi! Ugly snob! Ugly snob!" Wei Yan Er continued to teased and jumped around as she did.

"I am the most handsome man! Handsome, I'll tell you!" Ludovic rage built up, and he swung his axe around like a tornado!

'Ding! Ludovic has used: Axe Barrage. Inflicts 20,000 Physical damage to all targets within the vicinity. Lasts for 10 seconds!'

As the afterimage of the axe started to form around Ludovic's body, Zhang Yang and everyone else started to make their way to the back of the large pillar.

"Are you daft? Why did you purposely anger a lunatic?! D\*mn girl, know what you're doing, please!" said Zhang Yang as he took the chance to wrap himself up with a [Bandage].

"Okay..." Wei Yan Er sounded like she had learnt her lesson. "Does that mean that I should stop teasing you as well?"

Wei Yan Er smiled, and Zhang Yang sighed. Sometimes, Wei Yan Er was pretty smart in insulting someone. She did not even need to utter a single profanity!

To ease the burden on Han Ying Xue, everyone took out their own [Bandages] and heal themselves. Compared to a bottle of [Healing Potion], a [Bandage] was much cheaper. Zhang Yang had always preferred to use [Bandage] to heal himself since he had the title - "A Physician's Friend" that granted him a 100% increment in [Bandage] effectiveness.

The four ladies were impressed. Han Ying Xue, however, was extremely jealous. Back when she had saved Zhang Yang to defeat the Python King, she had not realized that it was the last step of the quest. If she had known that, she would have done the repetitive quest before that!

After Ludovic had finished channeling {Axe Barrage}, he picked up his axe, and chased after the party behind the pillar, and started attacking.

## Chapter 446: Spider Silk Dress

---

With the all-powerful pillar standing there, Ludovic's {Axe Barrage} was rendered ineffective on the second time. In the 10 seconds of channeling duration, Zhang Yang and everyone were able to heal themselves with their own [Bandages] to save Han Ying Xue's MP. 10 seconds later, everyone shot up, with Zhang Yang taking all the heat, like an indestructible punching bag.

70%...

"I will smash you into mincemeat!" as the battle dragged on, his temper tantrums got frequent. By the time that boss was damaged to 70%, its normal axe attacks were imbued with powerful forces, that the wind generated after swinging it could cause damage when it struck everyone else.

"What a disgusting face! Stupid Yu! It's all because of you! You just HAD to knock his helmet off! Well, have a good look now! Dammit! Great...I just lost my appetite!" said Han Ying Xue.

"You dare to mock my beauty!? You're nothing but peasants! No! You're nothing but insects! I will never forgive you!" Ludovic continued to throw a fit.

"Buddha once said, charm is deceptive, and beauty does not last; in the face of Time, nothing will last." Zhang Yang quoted. He wanted to sound wise, but failed so miserably due to his laughing, not-taking-it-seriously kind of tone.

Everyone fell silent as they did not know how to react to Zhang Yang's random, sudden speech.

The team had 3 attackers, and Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, and Daffodil Daydream were not the average, run-of-the-mill attackers. They were the best there were, currently. With Zhang Yang matching their damage output, and the Mythical Turtle attacking, the team's firepower was as strong as a 10-man party. Along with the inexhaustible number of Grade 10 Transmuted Power Potions in hand, the team was able to maintain a shocking amount of damage output.

Even though the materials to craft Power Potions were expensive, as the game had progressed into the Level 90 threshold, lower leveled materials, including the herbs to craft Power Potions had become less of a scarcity, hence the lower price of them. Because of that, Zhang Yang was able to find a large number of herbs in the market and purchase them all to craft Power Potions in large quantities. All Grade 9 and Grade 10 Transmuted Power Potions would be reserved for his team mates, while the rest would be placed in the Little Merchandise Shop to be sold. Some of them were also placed in the guild's storage as a motivation to allow guild members to farm more Contribution Points in order to exchange them.

10 minutes into the battle, Ludovic had finally been hacked down to his last 20% HP.

Once his HP range had entered the {Killing Cleave} bracket, Wei Yan Er had consumed another Grade 10 Transmuted Power Potion, activating {Indiscriminate} and whacking the boss with {Killing

Cleave}. Her attack had even managed to land a Critical Strike!

"I'll be d\*mned. A Berserker is really powerful!" cried Zhang Yang. Even he was impressed at the damage Wei Yan Er had just dealt.

"Yeah! I wish that other classes would have skills like {Indiscriminate}!" said Daffodil Daydream. She was slightly envious of Wei Yan Er.

"Hahaha! Relax. All classes do have that sort of skill as well!" Zhang Yang explained. "I remember a skill called, {Scorch} for Pyromancer. Upon activation, it would cause a 100% increase for all attacks on targets with 20% HP or less. It's much better than a Warrior's {Indiscriminate}!"

100% increase in attack is almost the same as having a 100% increase in Critical Strike. Both dealt double the original attack. However, even since a 100% increase in attack power could have the potential to have a Critical Strike. If the caster is lucky, the attack could trigger a Critical Strike which will cause the original attack to have 4 times the attack power.

"B-But...The Instructor did not teach us the skill..." said Daffodil Daydream sadly.

"Hm. In that case, it must be a skill that requires a skill book, which could be farmed from monsters!" said Zhang Yang.

The team continued blasting, hacking, stabbing and slicing. Eventually, Ludovic had reached the end of his line.

"Pests! Insects! I would never lose to such scums! I am but a royal member of the Cylonia Royal Family! The blood in my veins are of that of the highest of nobility! I will never allow myself to be defeated by the likes of you!" cried Ludovic as he entered a berserk state.

Wei Yan Er laughed. "Noble blood? What are you talking about? You're rotting from the inside, literally! Blood or not, there's no nobility in your veins right now."

"You bastard! Humiliate me or my family honor, and I shall kill you!"

"Oh, shut up already. Kill, die, kill, die. Could you at least come up with a better way to intimidate your enemy? You're like a kid!" so said the kid.

"GRAHHH!" Ludovic was greatly angered to the point where he could no longer come up with any more insults. If the boss was a human player, Wei Yan Er could have been the first person alive to kill a man by forcing his blood veins to pop via anger alone.

When the boss' HP dropped to 1%, it stopped there. Ludovic's character glowed with an intense red hue. Along with his battle cry, Ludovic bellowed. "If I am to die! You will be coming with me!"



BOOM!

The boss' huge body exploded in a massive explosion, like a human-size H.E. grenade. The impact of the shockwave had sent everyone off their feet, and into the walls. The explosion was too quick and everyone, not even Zhang Yang had any time to prepare for it. Each of them was left with only 1 HP left.

Zhang Yang made a split-second decision and activated {Berserker's Heal} to restore all his HP, in case anything else was coming to get them. Fortunately, his intuition was right on spot. Right after the boss died, there was tunnel that revealed an underground tunnel at the very same spot where the boss had exploded. Over 10 soldiers, clad in metal armor had rushed out of the tunnel, and had charged towards Zhang Yang and the party.

Han Ying Xue quickly made her way to the back of the party and cast a {Healing Shower}. Zhang Yang quickly used {Charge} to rush into the group of enemies, and used {Thunder Strike} to slow them down and provide enough time for the team to heal up.

[Armored Guard] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 95

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 2,000

All the soldiers were heavily armored with metal cuirasses and long spears in hand. Zhang Yang had not dared to charge directly into the fight with these elite soldiers that were as strong as Yellow-Gold bosses! Instead, Zhang Yang engaged in a kite-and-chase strategy. There was one factor that had made the monsters weaker than Yellow-Gold bosses. Despite being more powerful than them, the monsters could be affected by status effect skills!

Zhang Yang had kited the monsters around the pillar and had used {Thunder Strike}, {Blast Wave}, {Heroic Leap}, and other skills that could induce a slow or stun effect on them. With that, Zhang Yang's kiting strategy was a success. Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er both had joined Zhang Yang after being healed by Han Ying Xue. Daffodil Daydream had not required much healing, since her attacks were ranged.

Each monster had 3 million HP, so 10 of them would total up to 30 million HP. It was much longer than a boss's! However, since they could take on status effect skills, the battle was only made harder by the draggy fight. However, their attack power rivaled that of a Yellow-Gold boss. Hence, if the kiting was not done properly, the entire party could be wiped out if the stunning or slow was not done perfectly. Luckily, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, and Daffodil Daydream each had their own unique status effect skills. In any situation where monsters had managed to keep up with Zhang Yang, they would proceed to stun them.

Eventually, since this was a matter of cooperation and time, the battle ended with a consecutive fall of the Armored Guards. Every soldier was defeated only after 20 minutes of constant running and stunning. As soon as they were done, Zhang Yang made sure that the coast was clear, before dropping to all fours and resting. There

was a wet, sticky feeling behind his back. He was not sure if it was an effect in the game, or if he was really sweating in his bed!

As such, Zhang Yang now understood more about the reason why the previous teams had never been able to clear this Royal Palace dungeon. The previous boss was already tough to begin with, coupled with the sudden explosion and 10 ambushing soldiers with the power of Yellow-Gold bosses! That was only the first floor! There were four more to go! Just how high would the escalation of power be, after this floor, and the one after?

While everyone was resting, Wei Yan Er hopped jubilantly towards the loot. After picking up the gold coins, Wei Yan Er flipped open a loot and had obtained a beautiful, tight dress.

[Spider Silk Dress] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +336

Intelligence: +302

Spirit: +134

Equip-Effect: Increases your attack and healing effect by 2%.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 100

"I want it!"

"Mine!!!"

"I like it."

"Erhm. Can I have it?"

All four ladies of the party voiced out their intention to own the dress. Zhang Yang felt that it was a little strange. Although the dress did have good properties, it was a Level 100 equipment. Furthermore, this dress was not much stronger than a Violet-Platinum Level 90 dress. So, why the request? It made sense on why Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream would want it, but why Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu?

After a while, Zhang Yang understood why. It was because Wei Yan Er had tried it on and had showcased the dress' beauty.

The dress was a good replica of a Chinese traditional women's attire, called the Qi Pao. It was made with a light green color fabric and had beautiful woven purple-red trims on it. Since the dress would adjust itself according to the wearer's body figure, it would emphasize the women's figure naturally, without overdoing it.

It couldn't be helped, the artist that designed the armor and equipment of the game did not have much sense of creativity and concept for fashion. Many equipment were designed to be extremely plain. Dresses like the [Spider Silk Dress] were extremely rare. No wonder the ladies would want to get their hands on it.

Since everyone wanted the dress, all they could do was to roll for it, fair and square. As they continued rolling for it, Zhang Yang had a sudden urge to roll for it as well. He was extremely lucky, and rolled 100 points, and gained the dress.

"Give it!"

"Dummy, what are you doing? I want it!"

"I like it."

"Erhm...guild master? Could I have the dress?"

Zhang Yang frowned at first, but he had a sudden idea to pull a prank.

"Haha, the first person who kiss me will have the dress!"

"What!? You want me to kiss an old uncle?! YUCK!"

"I'll kill you."

"Erhm...guild master...."

Everyone except Han Ying Xue protested. Han Ying Xue raised an eyebrow at his proposal and walked towards him. With quick motions, she grabbed his head closer to her and kissed Zhang Yang on his cheek.

"Hmph. Now, for my dress," said Han Ying Xue with a sinister smile as she held her hands out.

Zhang Yang immediately regretted his decision to pull the prank, as he was immediately assaulted with a killing glare by Sun Xin Yu. After him, she turned her gaze and glared at Han Ying Xue. This time, her glare carried a heavier killing intent. Han Ying Xue noticed her glare and responded, by tilting her head provocatively. The two of them knew that they had feelings for Zhang Yang. Before this, it was unclear, since women would only leave subtle hints at their target. But now, Han Ying Xue's public kiss to the cheek was a public declaration of her love for him. The real battle had started.

Sun Xin Yu continued to glare at Han Ying Xue. The two of them did not waver.

"Zhang Yang!" Both of them turned to Zhang Yang, since there was no other way to solve this conflict.

Both Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream were snickering by the side, watching silently, hoping for some popcorn to eat.

The phrase "A silent tiger would look like a sickly cat" could clearly describe this situation. Both girls thought that they could "grab" Zhang Yang quietly. But when one tries to do so, the other would retaliate. Now, both of them had to reveal their claws in order to claim Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang gulped down his saliva, walked towards the two of them with an earnest smile. He pats their shoulder side to side and say, "Let's kill some monsters first, shall we?"

Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue bashfully turn away from each other. Although they were unsatisfied with his answer, neither of them could do anything for the moment. Wei Yan Er on the other hand, looked disappointed, as if she had just missed the chance to watch a live soap opera unfold.

## Chapter 447: An Upgrade in AOE

---

Wei Yan Er continued to pick up the loot that had been dropped by the boss. The second Yellow-Gold equipment was a pair of leather boots, with additional of fire resistance attributes, so everyone just ignored it. They deduced that even if they placed it into the Little Merchandize to sell, no one would actually spend a dime to purchase this pair of boots. So by the end of it, Han Ying Xue took it and dismantled it into materials for making a Runestone.

But afterwards, the little girl picked up a staff that was aquamarine in colour. This aquamarine staff radiated with a vague violet light, presenting it's fascinating appearance like a crystal jade. Everyone already knew that this was one fine staff, just by looking at it.

[Staff of Nostalgia] (Violet-Platinum, Staff)

Magic Attack: 2,321 - 2,921

Equip: Increases 10% of damage and healing effect.

Equip: When you succeeded in casting a spell, there is a 0.1% chance of having a nostalgic experience which recovers you back to 100% of your health and mana points.

{Unidentified}



Required Level: 100

Looking at the attributes of the staff, everyone took in a deep breath. Staffs of the same level and same grade and tier did not have much difference. Unlike other types of weapons, players would have to look at their attacking speed to determine whether it's good or not. Therefore, the key to judging whether the magic type weapon is good or not, depended on its additional attributes or effects.

This staff actually added 10% damage and healing points of the wielder! Judging just by this additional attribute, this staff was already very powerful! The second additional attribute that this staff provided was even more awesome than the first one could offer! There was a rate of recovering 100% of both health and mana bars! Any player should know, this was one attribute that could really turn the tide of the battle around during PK battles!

The rate was low, and it was a reasonable rate. Because if the rate was high, the wielder of this weapon would single-handedly break the game!

Daffodil Daydream gave it some thoughts and said, "Ms.Snow, I think you should have this staff. Think about it! If the duration of a boss battle is a little longer, you won't have to worry about having not enough mana with this staff."

Although Daffodil Daydream would face the same problem as Han Ying Xue, having the need to worry about having insufficient mana points during a boss battle, she was more of a DPS player in the party, and there were still other DPS players on the party to

cover her part if she ever ran out of mana points to use. But it was a totally different story when it came to healers being in a boss battle, especially a battle involving only 5 players as a party. If a healer of the party had insufficient mana points to activate skills that kept the party members healed up well and alive, the entire party would be wiped out in just a brief moment, unless the boss had only 1% of health bar left at that time!

So, after Daffodil Daydream did some math on it, she decided to let Han Ying Xue have this awesome staff.

The two of them were being polite at first, but the staff was taken by Han Ying Xue by the end of the discussion, though the day she is eligible to equip the staff was still a little far away.

Wei Yan Er reached her hands into the loot, and she actually picked up a piece of [Aura Stone]!

[Middle-tier Aura Stone] (Consumable)

Use: Improves an Aura Skill by 1 level, the skill must not be higher than level 6.

Required: Aura Skill

[Low-tier Aura Stones] could only be used to level up an Aura Skill up to Level 4, after that, they would not be able to level up the Aura Skills further. So it had become meaningless for Zhang Yang and his party members to hold many [Low-tier Aura Stone] after

their Aura Skills had been leveled up to Level 4. They could only wait for the appearance of [Middle-tier Aura Stones] before they could level up their Aura Skills even further. However, Daffodil Daydream and Sun Xin Yu had not learned any Aura Skills at the moment, so they could only stare at Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, fighting to get the stone by throwing dices!

In the end, the stone went to Wei Yan Er! This little girl placed her hands on her waist and laughed out loud like a mad girl, looking extremely cocky!

But it actually did not matter if it was the {Vitality Aura}, the {Life Aura} or the {Strength Aura}, any improvements on any of the Aura Skills would be very practical in battle. And since that they would be staying together in one party whenever they go on a quest, they could all enjoy the beneficial effects of the Aura Skills on each of them!

After cleaning up the loot from the ground, the five of them came up to an entrance of an underground passage. After they walked along the staircases that led them down, they arrived at the second floor of the Treasure Cove. The environment of this floor was a little different from the first floor. The entire area of this floor was supported with long thick pillars. These pillars were like fluorescent tubes, radiating with bright and yet soothing lights all around them. These pillars were the reason why the floor was so bright that everyone could see every inch of the floor!

In this vast area, there were countless skeleton monsters wandering about, without any sense of purpose. The number of these skeleton monsters was so high that people would feel

goosebumps just by looking at them!

[Skeleton Rangers] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 95

HP: 500,000

Defense: 1,000

"Oh my gawd! There's... there's so many monsters here!" Daffodil Daydream could not pronounce her words properly as she was really shocked to see so many Level 95 elite monsters in a single area. Every single one of the monsters had a total of 500,000 health points. Although their health bars were a little lower than the health bars of the monsters in the previous floor, their number were tenfold, or maybe hundreds of times higher than the number of monsters on the first floor!

"Even if we were to activate our paired skill {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}, I don't think we can clear this much monsters!" Han Ying Xue was beginning to complain.

Zhang Yang looked around and said, "Haha! We're going to be rich!"

"Noob tank! Are you mad? There're so many monsters here! I think, we need at least 2 to 3 days to clear everything out. And you will definitely not going to finish that stupid quest of yours in

time!" Wei Yan Er said it with a humph.

"You are right! It is definitely not possible under normal circumstances! But there is a staircase here! As a wise man once said, this is a pass that one man can hold against ten thousand! I can block at the entrance to this staircase. In that way, only two or three monsters at most will squeeze into the available space before me and attack me. Then we shall control everything from thereon!" Zhang Yang reached out for Han Ying Xue and said, "Give me the [Cloak of the Dark Wings], I'll go to lure the monsters here."

If Zhang Yang charged in blindly, and if he lured too many monsters to the point that he couldn't make it back to his party members, or too few monsters to the point that AOE attacks would become meaningless, at the least he would have the ability to fly in the air. Although the cloak could not be used to attack the monsters, it was ideal to be used in situation like this, where players need to lure a large number of monsters and get away when needed.

Zhang Yang put on the [Cloak of the Dark Wings] and activated the special effect of the cloak. He immediately opened up a pair of large wings on his back and commanded them with his thoughts. He instantly fluttered up away into the air and flew straight towards the direction of the Skeleton Rangers.

"Rawgh --- " the monsters below reacted quickly as Zhang Yang flew into their range of aggro. They began to chase after Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang fluttered with his pair of wings in the air as he soared through the air. Although the Treasure Cove was quite vast, however, the movement speed of Zhang Yang had increased up by 300% while he is in the state of flying. In less than 5 minutes, he had already arrived at the bottom of the Treasure Cove's second floor. Right after he arrived, he immediately flew back up straight to the entrance of the stairwell at a high speed, with an entire army of monsters tailing him very closely!

Boom!

Zhang Yang landed on his feet and took off the cloak, and then he quickly passed it to Han Ying Xue. Then, he quickly equipped his [Titan Cape] back on and summoned his [Mythical Turtle]. The man and his turtle began to stick themselves in between the narrow entrance of the stairwell, making sure that nothing passed the entrance.

With his blazing speed, the monster army only managed to catch up with Zhang Yang on the entrance of the stairwell after about half a minute. The scene of monsters marching up towards them was really magnificent to look at. What they saw right before them were countless skulls, with their eye sockets lit up with the green flames of spectres. It was really terrifying, to the point that the four ladies felt a tingle on their skulls!

"Get ready!" Zhang Yang had been in battle mode all along, so he was regenerating 2 rage points in every second. By the time he informed everyone to get ready, he had already accumulated 120 rage points. He wielded his shield and sword up and threw out a shot of his {Spear of Obliteration} from afar like he usually did.

"Rawgh!" the Skeleton Ranger that was shot by the attack let out an immediate roar with its jaws wide opened. The width of the opened jaws was so wide, that the Skeleton Ranger could actually swallow a mature pig whole!

"Argh ---" Wei Yan Er let out a scream, and she humphed at the Skeleton Ranger, "Do you think that you're the only one that knows how to shout?"

Piak! Piak! Piak!

The monster army had finally crashed into them, like a strong tidal wave!

{Blast Wave}!

Zhang Yang wielded his [Sword of the Purging Devourer] across the monsters right before him, inflicting a damage of '-1,030' onto each of them within his attack range! The numerical numbers were so dense! The higher the number of monsters there are, the more packed the monsters were in one spot, and the more effective the {Blast Wave} would be! Because this skill could penetrate and spread across all the monsters within the attack range, all the monsters within the attack range would have to suffer the damage inflicted by Zhang Yang!

This skill had struck at least 50 monsters, and the special effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] would of course be triggered without mercy! Another wave of damage was inflicted across the

monsters within Zhang Yang's attack range, again and again!

In just a brief 5-seconds, the damage of {Blast Wave} was repeated for 7 times, inflicting a total of at least 360,000 damage points upon the monster army! Although this amount of damage value did not really mean a lot when it is done onto the Skeleton Rangers, Zhang Yang's DPS had already reached a terrifying height for the moment!

"This is really a god-like AOE weapon!" the four ladies were feeling envious over the sword that Zhang Yang wielded, especially Daffodil Daydream!

Daffodil Daydream had an AOE skill called {Hellrain}, inflicting damage upon all enemies in a 10x10 meter square. Although the {Hellfire} did not have a penetration attribute, it rained down hellfire onto the monsters, straight from the heaven! No monsters could escape that! Undoubtedly, if she got her hands on a fine weapon like Zhang Yang's [Sword of Purging Devourer], then her AOE attacks would become insanely powerful!

Zhang Yang was being disgusted, over and over again. As the number of Skeleton Rangers was too many, and with the monsters from behind consistently pushing the monsters at the front further up, some of the skulls of the monsters came into contact with Zhang Yang!

Seeing Zhang Yang's face squeezed against the skulls of the monsters, Wei Yan Er actually laughed out loud without any remorse! As she was laughing, she stood on top of Turtle and began her assault towards the army of skeleton monsters. Sun Xin Yu had



also clambered up the Turtle and had activated her {Fan of Blades}.

The monsters in the game would never attempt to get onto the [Mythical Turtle] like how the two ladies did. So, they rounded up on Turtle from all directions and began their assaults. This was the difference between a player and a monster. On the contrary, if the monsters were as clever as the players, then there would be no telling who the players were and who the monsters were, already!

"Haha! Eat my cannons to the heavens! And my thunder strikes across the earth! I shall be the only one that is puffed with all glory in all directions!" Wei Yan Er was giggling as she slashed up the monsters.

"Hehe!" Zhang Yang took a peek at Wei Yan Er, with a face filled with bad intention.

The little girl was sharp, and instantly sensed it, so she asked, "Noob tank! What are you looking at!"

"I think you are trying to be like the [maiden of the Heavenly Mountain](#), aren't you!"

"Oh! Are you just beginning to realize that both of us are pretty ladies then? Haha!" Wei Yan Er proudly proclaimed!

"Well, I didn't feel that way actually. All I see is that you two are the type of girls who have not fully 'developed' yet! But, the maiden of the Heavenly Mountain was framed by one of her fellow

sister apprentices. So, who framed you? Sigh. I can't tell your front from your back!" Zhang Yang could not hold his laughter anymore as he finished his sentence.

"Noob tank! You're as good as dead! Rawgh!" Wei Yan Er looked at Zhang Yang with a ghastly face.

"Silly Yu! Please don't always bully little Yan Er! Grow up, man! You're not a little boy anymore, so stop bullying little girl!" Han Ying Xue stepped up for Wei Yan Er.

"Wah! I'm not a little girl anymore! I'm already 18 years old! 18! I'm a big girl now!" Wei Yan Er was enraged, "It's all just because you have more meat on your chest! What's there to be proud about?!"

Although the number of monsters was very high, they could not break through the defense line of Zhang Yang and Turtle, they could only stand at the blockaded entrance and let out their roars at Zhang Yang and his party members. The monster could only stand there, waiting for their health bar to be emptied out and collapse onto the ground. Each monsters only had a total of 500,000 health points, with 5 of them acting on slaying the monsters, each of them only needed to take out 100,000 health points to carry out their parts!

The experience points are acquired was definitely increasing, like a rocket shooting up. Every few minutes, with more monsters collapsing down to the ground one after another, the experience bars of Zhang Yang and his party members were progressing so rapidly that even the naked eye could see the bar visibly going up!

If One Sword Stroke and other opponents of the Lone Desert Smoke could see how much experience points they were getting from killing this monster army, they would surely be envious!

After battling for a full 2-hours, the monsters on the second floor were completely being wiped out! Zhang Yang and the ladies sat down on the ground, exhausted. Right before them were countless dead skeleton rangers piled up all across the ground. Some of the monsters that died in the early battle had already been removed from sight by the system!

Other than Zhang Yang, the four ladies had leveled up once. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang only had about 10% left in his bar before he hits Level 98! His experience bar showed it all!

Zhang Yang could not help but to feel shocked and excited at the same time. If the next 3 floors of the Treasure Cove also had this amount of monsters for them to slay, then he might have the chance to level up past Level 100! If that happened, would he be kicked out of the realm by the system?

Maiden of the Heavenly Mountain - a maiden in the story of 'The Dragon Chronicles - The Maidens of Heavenly Mountain'. This maiden was betrayed by her own fellow female apprentice who she trusted the most. Then she became obsessed with becoming the best in the world.

# Chapter 448: The Third Prince, Marlin Frodo

---

As the dead bodies of the monsters were far too vast, all five of them were involved in picking up all the loot on the ground. But, although the monsters in this area were harder to deal with, the loot that was left behind after they died were considerably good. Or, one should say that the loots that are dropped in this area were a little more mediocre. Well, these monsters were all elite grade, after all.

The only problem was that, Zhang Yang and his party members were being pampered too well by the monsters out there. They would feel uncomfortable or unhappy if the monsters they slew did not drop any equipment. It was a dissonance of standards!

As time was a pressing matter, Zhang Yang and the ladies could only pick up the valuable loot from the ground. As for the coins and cloth, they just left them all on the ground. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had to bear the 'pain' of seeing the coins being left behind to the point that their faces were twitching all the way as they were leaving! They kept on looking back with their reluctant faces!

The movement speed of using two legs to walk was definitely incomparable to the movement speed of flying with two wings. The party took about 30 minutes to arrive at the bottom-most area of this floor. The main reason being, there were still some 'leftover' monsters intercepting them as they were on their way, and that had delayed some of their time. If it weren't for those monsters, they could have arrived at the place about 10 minutes

earlier.

The boss that is guarding this floor is a man with a macho and large body. Unlike Ludovic, who came out as a statue in the first place, this boss held a golden sword, while sitting still on the throne. With one of his hand pressed on his forehead, it seemed like the boss was in deep thought.

[The Third Prince, Marlin Frodo] (Violet-Platinum, Spectre)

Level: 100

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 2,900

"Haha! So the young and the old are all out now!" Wei Yan Er laughed out loud, wielding her giant axe and stated, "Come, let us slay him already!"

Encountering a boss without any information or description on him, the only thing that any player could do is to charge in and engage the boss directly, only then would the players slowly experience and understand the skills and the move sets of the boss. Players would be required to battle while they do some research on which tactics would be more suitable to be implemented on the boss.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Alright, let's do this!"

With his sword and shield ready in his hands, Zhang Yang charged towards the boss with large steps as he shouted, "This is a robbery! Give me your money and your beautiful ladies!"

Marlin Frodo was enraged by Zhang Yang's words. He stood up from his throne with anger, and his eyes were ignited with flames right in the middle, burning bright in the air. He reached out and launched a powerful attack at Zhang Yang. With both his shield and his sword ready in his hands, Marlin Frodo let out a thunderous roar and began to charge at Zhang Yang. From afar, the boss had already thrown a shot of {Spear of Obliteration} over at Zhang Yang!

‘-17,094!’

‘-4,976!’

It happened almost at the same instance. Zhang Yang had also thrown a shot of his own {Spear of Obliteration} over at the boss. However, the attack power of both sides were obviously different by a few notches! The difference was about 3 times! Although Marlin Frodo had a shield in his hand and looks like the Guardian type class, his attack was as powerful as the attack of a two-handed boss! This was totally insane!

Zhang Yang was cursing deep in his heart, as he continued charging.

{Charge}!

{Charge}!

The two of them charged and clashed epicly into each other, but the boss seemed to have an immunity against status restriction effects! Although the boss was struck in the face by the {Charge}, he wasn't stunned at all. Right after {Charge}, the boss already swung his sword at Zhang Yang.

It was fortunate, that Zhang Yang had [Heart of the Death Knight] that reduced the status restriction effect by 50%. So, Zhang Yang was only stunned for 0.5 seconds before he recovered! Right after that, he immediately swung his sword and began to fight back.

After Zhang Yang had succeeded in hooking the boss onto him, Sun Xin Yu and the remaining party members immediately took action and began their assaults on the boss. The battle was set ablaze in just an instant!

Marlin Frodo was a standard Guardian, so he had all standard skills that a Guardian should have. Just like Zhang Yang and other Guardian class players, this boss also had skills like {Block}, {Shield Bash},{Thunder Strike} and a variety of other skills as well! But of course, the intelligence of the boss AI wasn't very high. The boss would directly use {Block} whenever the cool down period of the skill was over. The boss never took the nature of the attacks on him into consideration.

However, the impact of the {Shield Bash} was so much more

ferocious than expected. One single bash of his {Shield Bash} could inflict a damage of 15,000 points on Zhang Yang! Furthermore, the boss really loved to bash his shield to the left and right of Zhang Yang's face. Zhang Yang's face was being bashed up really badly to the point that others could see purplish and greenish bruises being 'imprinted' all over his face! Zhang Yang looked really disfigured at that point!

Similar to the first boss, Marlin Frodo also knew to use 'Supporting Attacks'. However, he did not use his legs to do it, and instead, he used his shield to do it! Even though he wasn't using {Shield Bash}, he could still bash his shield straight onto Zhang Yang's face, and he looked like he was deliberately going for his face! Fortunately, Zhang Yang could still dodge all the attacks that weren't direct, so he wasn't exactly being raped by the boss.

Seeing Zhang Yang so troubled, Wei Yan Er felt a rush on her chest, and she could not help herself from laughing, "Hahaha! What an unfortunate event! I forgot to bring a mirror to show noob tank how 'awesome' his face looks, now! I believe, he might even be 'surprised' by his 'handsome' looks now!"

The other 3 ladies could not help laughing either. Although Zhang Yang could evade all the boss's 'Supporting Attacks', but the impact of the {Shield Bash} were unblockable. So, after being bashed up on his face a couple of times, he looked like a pig head, literally!

As Zhang Yang's entire face, including his mouth was swollen to the point that he could not even speak properly, "Yo leddle picoff gal (You little piece of girl)!"



"Yo! Yo leddle picoff gal!" Wei Yan Er tried to mimic Zhang Yang's words and repeated out loud what he had just said. Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream burst into laughter while even Sun Xin Yu cracked a slight smile.

Zhang Yang shook his head. The little girl had always been teased and laughed at, now that she got her chance to take her 'revenge', of course she would make the best out of this! So, the best way to handle her now is not to pay any attention to her! This little girl always had a brief period of enthusiasm on everything, so when nobody is paying any attention to her, she would 'cool down' on her own.

Boom!

Marlin Frodo stomped his left foot onto the ground and a surge of white light emanated out from his body, and formed a 30-meter radius bubble. Sparks of visible electricity were surging through, within the spherical area.

'Ding! Marlin Frodo has unleashed a {Thunder Strike}! Inflicts 20,000 Nature Damage to all targets within the effective area in every 2 seconds, lasts for 10 seconds. Reduces 100% movement speed and 50% attack speed of all targets that are hit. Lasts for 15 seconds.'

Reading the description of the system notification, everyone was frowning! Is this still known as a {Thunder Strike}? This was like an upgraded version of the {Thunder Strike} that they really knew!

Without having the need to inform, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er had already turned around and had ran like hell. The attack of the boss's {Thunder Strike} was extremely strong and painful, and it had its own movement restriction effects. If they did not run away from the effective range, it would become very dangerous, when they are affected by the movement restriction effect!

Fortunately, although the effect of the boss's {Thunder Strike} was extremely powerful, the effect only kicked in after 2 seconds, leaving enough time for Zhang Yang and the ladies to remove themselves from the effective area of the skill!

Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream were already standing far from the boss in the first place, so they only had to move a few steps backward to leave the effective area of the boss's skill. But Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er had to run like hell. The most unfortunate one was [Mythical Turtle]. It was already slow to begin with! So, Turtle could only cry in anguish.

Although 2 seconds wasn't really that long, as long as players could react in time, then it was enough for players to run for about 30 meters far out. Zhang Yang and the two ladies were quick on their reflexes, so they managed to get into the safe zone without any problems.

Buzz! Buzz! Buzz!

Two seconds later, the entire effective area of the {Thunder Strike} was surging with an electrical pool bolts. The light of the

electricity surged through every inch of the effect area, like silver snakes lashing out. The sound of it, was pretty scary!

Zhang Yang used his thoughts to command Turtle, having Turtle activate its {Turtle Shell Defense}, removing 90% of the damage that the Turtle received.

"What a poor turtle!" Wei Yan Er revealed a compassionate face and said, "Noob tank, I can't believe this! You were looking ugly on the outside, now your insides have matched that! How can you torture your pet like this!"

Zhang Yang quickly ran to a safe spot, and then he turned around and began to launch his assault at Marlin Frodo. The {Thunder Strike} of the boss did not require any control on the part of the boss. For that, the boss began to pursue Zhang Yang right after he saw Zhang Yang running. Zhang Yang engaged the boss as he looked at the little girl and said, "Little girl, are you planning to skip dinner tonight?"

Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue, but became more obedient after that.

"Silly Yu, it would be really great if your {Thunder Strike} could be upgraded to this scale!" Han Ying Xue let out a sigh.

What kind of nonsense is that? Can players learn the skills of bosses? If players could do that, then the PK battles would become chaotic in the future! Any player with a boss skill would slaughter many players just by stomping their feet onto the ground! It would

become a battle to see who is faster in activating skills!

Zhang Yang quickly shook his head. After the {Thunder Strike} of the boss had finally ended, Zhang Yang kited Marlin Frodo back to the initial position, allowing the [Mythical Turtle] to join the battle, unleashing its damage output onto the boss.

"Hahaha! Interesting!" Marlin Frodo wasn't like the first, talkative boss. While he was bashing up Zhang Yang's face with his shield, he was also laughing with pride, "For 1,000 years, we have been trapped for 1,000 years! Now, we can finally return to the human realm!"

"Stop daydreaming, dude! The world outside does not belong to you anymore! The Imperial Heaven's Empire that you once knew no longer exists! And you all don't have to be the ghost that stays! You can just die now and get reincarnated! Stop being inhuman and inghost at the same time, already!" Zhang Yang was really annoyed at being bashed on the face repeatedly.

"It's all the seven traitors' fault!" Marlin Frodo suddenly let out a burst of enraged roar into the sky, "The palace was sealed by the seven traitors! If you can make it here, that means that you must be the sons and daughters of the seven traitors! Hahaha! The seven traitors have already been reduced to dust! So, let me use your blood to make offerings to the gods!"

Marlin Frodo smashed his shield into one of the stone pillars that supports the ceiling of the floor. A loud booming sound spread across the area and the pillar was instantly split into two. In the midst of the dust flying in the air, the pillar came crashing down

onto Zhang Yang and the ladies, like an avalanche!

‘Ding! Marlin Frodo has unleashed {Debris Crush}!’

Zhang Yang and the ladies quickly scattered into the surroundings, trying to dodge the debris that came at them. But [Mythical Turtle] had short legs, and it could not evade anything at all. So, it could only accept its fate of being crushed by the debris. Turtle was being crushed into a slosh of mincemeat on the floor, in the matter of seconds! Even though Turtle still had more than 90% of health bar, it was instantly killed by the debris that crushed it, turning it into a stream of white light which later went straight into Zhang Yang’s inventory.

Although the boss did not cause any direct damage to Zhang Yang and his party members with his {Debris Crush}, the debris that came crushing down on them were actually much more terrifying!

Marlin Frodo laughed out loud. Instantly, the boss had become a professional demolition man! He began to destroy the pillars that supported the ceiling of the floor! Boom! Boom! Boom! The floor of Treasure Cove was experiencing a level 7 earthquake, the ground was trembling, without any pause!

Zhang Yang tried to kite the boss to a spot where there were no pillars around, but the boss would leave him and went on to find a new pillar to smash on his own. It seemed that the boss would feel uncomfortable if he did not smash a pillar once in a while! After a few more pillars went down, Zhang Yang came to a realization! "Oh no! Slay the boss! Quickly! Hurry up and slay the boss!"

Daffodil Daydream had also realized it all of a sudden, "When the boss smashes every single pillar on this floor, the entire Floor 1 will collapse on us, and we shall all be dead!"

The debris of one pillar could already kill the [Mythical Turtle], a pet as strong as a tank, almost instantly! If this entire Floor 1 collapsed on them, then all five of them would only have one way out of this, death! Therefore, the boss seemed easy to take on. Although the {Thunder Strike} of the boss was a little troublesome to deal with, that was not the difficult part of battling this boss, so it seemed! If the developer of the game had placed a time limit on this boss, meaning that the players needed to kill the boss within a certain time frame, or things would get really difficult!

There was a total of 36 stone pillars in the entire Floor 2, and 11 pillars had been smashed down. That being said, Zhang Yang and the ladies were only left with two third of the time to slay the boss. But, Marlin Frodo still had 75% of his health bar left! Judging from the total DPS of Zhang Yang and the ladies, it would be impossible for them to kill the boss within the time frame!

Zhang Yang quickly looked into his inventory and took out every single scroll that could improve their damage output efficiency. Even Han Ying Xue had to pick a suitable time to cast her {Putrefying Poison} whenever she could! All of them put in their best efforts to bring up their damage output efficiency, increasing their fire power to the max!

"1,000 years ago, we have conquered the entire land. So 1,000 years later, this land still belongs to us!" Marlin Frodo roared out at

the sky, revealing the golden hair beneath his helmet. He looked like a mad demon with his blonde, long hair moving across the air, even though there was no wind at all.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The stone pillars were smashed down one after another, and dust filled the air, as countless debris crumbled down upon the ground. The entire area of the floor was shaking violently, as if the floor would collapse down on them, anytime soon!

If this was reality, then Zhang Yang and the ladies would have ran as far as possible from the floor. Who would actually stay and fight, knowing that the entire floor above it is about to collapse down on you! But there was no need to consider about any architecture or physics when you are in a game. As long as the time is not up, no matter how shaky or tremor-riddled the entire area was, the place would not collapse!

18 pillars, 14 pillars, 9 pillars... the number of remaining pillars was getting smaller and smaller, by the minutes!

20%! The health bar of Marlin Frodo had finally entered the 'Slaughter Stage'!

Zhang Yang gulped down a [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] and said, "Time to use our {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}! There's no need to hold back, anymore!"

In just an instant, the fire power of the entire party suddenly soared up crazily! Their DPS got so high, that even the boss was crying in pain! 10 seconds later, they had brought down the health bar of the boss down to only 5%!

"I'll admit that I have underestimated you!" Under the bombardment of their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, the armor on Marlin Frodo had shattered so extensively, that Zhang Yang and the ladies could see the skeletal ribcage of the boss, beneath the armor. That was the moment when the boss became even more mad and kept bashing on Zhang Yang's face even more violently with his shield!

4%, 3%!

"Hahaha! We don't have to call for delivery tonight! As long as we cut off noob tank's head off to make some stew, then we shall have a nice and tasty pot of pork soup!" Wei Yan Er was slashing up the boss with her giant axe as she laughed madly.

Boom! Boom!

Another two stone pillars collapsed! And now, there were only 3 pillars left on this floor!

"Quickly! Faster!" Zhang Yang had no time to handle the little girl. Although the boss was only left with 270,000 health points, only 3 pillars remained. Furthermore, the boss had already been left with 20% of its health bar, so the rate of the pillars being broken down would increase!



2%!

Boom!

Another stone pillar crumpled onto the ground. Marlin Frodo began to laugh madly, "I shall bury you all alive!"

1%!

Boom! The final second stone pillar was also smashed to pieces and collapsed down to the ground. And now, the entire floor was supported by one final stone pillar, barely! Zhang Yang and the ladies could see that the ceiling of the floor was shaking violently, as if it would collapse at any time!

"A little more faster!"

"F\*ck the boss up!"

"Only 70,000 health points left!"

The five of them were shouting encouragements to each other. They were working their asses off, until their eyes had turned red!

50,000! 30,000! 10,000!

Marlin Frodo charged up to the final pillar in the entire floor and he raised up his shield! He then slammed his shield straight into the final pillar!

Slaughter time!

‘-18,924!’

Zhang Yang swung out his final hit onto the boss with everything that he had!

"Argh ---" Marlin Frodo instantly let out a miserable scream. The shield in his hand made contact with the pillar, but there was no sign of strength in that hit, at all!

Boom!

The boss collapsed against the final pillar on the entire floor, sliding down onto the ground in a very slow manner, lifeless!

# Chapter 449: Recovery Aura

---

Phew!

The moment the boss was slain, the five of them swayed weakly on their feet, and they sat onto the ground without a care about their unflattering positions. They could only spare the energy to breathe heavily!

That was really close!

Zhang Yang could not help but to wonder if he did not have {Alchemist's Intuition}, which allowed him to make potions with the highest level of transmutation to boost the firepower of his party up by 10% to 20%, would they still have made it? Furthermore, all of them had the super skill - {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, and they had 3 Aura Skills to boost them. Still, they had barely made it, after having all these perks!

It would not be far-fetched to say, that even among all eight main servers of the game, Zhang Yang and his party would still remain as the strongest party there is in the entire game! They were on the brink of tasting defeat when victory was within reach! Well, how many parties could actually clear this boss?

This was just the second floor of the Treasure Cove! God knows what kind of crazy powerful bosses lay in wait, in the 3 floors below!

Wei Yan Er always got agitated with excitement, whenever it was

time to pick up loot. She just sat there for a brief while, before regaining her bubbly energy, going on to pick up the loot dropped by the boss.

[Raging Sand Gloves] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +168

Strength: +67

Agility: +151

Equip: Increases your damage and healing effects by 2%.

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 500 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

"Wow, this little thing is awesome!" Zhang Yang nodded. Level 100 was the hard bracket of another level of difficulty in the game. So, whether it be in term of skills, the toughness of the monsters or the attributes of equipment, there would definitely be a groundbreaking difference. Although Yellow-Gold tier equipment

did have additional attributes on them, all these additional attributes were not in terms of percentages, just figurative values.

However, no matter how awesome a Yellow-Gold equipment was, it was still a mere Yellow-Gold tier equipment. It was definitely not comparable to Violet-Platinum Tier equipment --- unless the level of the equipment differed too much. Sun Xin Yu had a Level 90 pair of leather gloves, so of course she would not be interested over these [Raging Sand Gloves]. So, she passed this pair of gloves straight to Zhang Yang and Zhang Yang kept it into his inventory.

"Hmm, an awesome pair of gloves like, this can get us at least tens of thousands of dollars!" Daffodil Daydream nodded and said.

Wei Yan Er was thrilled, and she clapped her hands with joy, "Yea! I would finally have enough money to buy that set of limited edition perfume!"

Ever since the Silky Soft Holdings was struck by the sh\*tstorm, the two ladies of the company had been throwing their own money into the company to keep it running. Though they had already spent almost all of their money, they could not get enough to do it. That was why they asked Zhang Yang to invest, later on. Although the current Silky Soft Holdings was showing much promise and a certain depth of potential, the two ladies were not employed by the company to work and earn salaries, so they could only wait for the dividends to come during the end of the year. That was why these two ladies had almost dried their wallets up. If they had not been earning some 'pocket money' from the game, they surely would have been forced to sell their bodies to Zhang Yang, just to get a

good meal.

Wei Yan Er took her own sweet time in searching over the loot, and she finally picked up a longbow that glittered gold. The body of the longbow was magnificent, by the looks of it. There were countless engravings of animals crafted over the body of the longbow, and the bowstring is made of a crimson red, elastic material. Only God knows what that bowstring is made of.

[Nabula's Boar Hunter] (Yellow-Gold, Bow)

Attack: 1,313 - 1,913

Attack Interval: 3.6 seconds

DPS: 448

Equip: Increase your range attack by 5%.

Equip: Additional 5% damage to beast targets only.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

Note: According to legend, Nabula was squatting at one side feeling bored, so he picked off the edge of a section of the branches

from a tree and used it as the body of a bow, and he made the bowstring with the belt on his pants.

Han Ying Xue was initially fidgeting with the bowstring, but when she saw the note by the end of the bow's description, she immediately let out a squeak and threw the longbow to the ground, as if she was afraid that there was unclean 'stuff' left on the bowstring.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud when he saw how she reacted. As everyone decided to give up on the bow, Zhang Yang picked it up and kept it in his inventory.

Wei Yan Er did not stop there, she went on and picked up another jade-like necklace that radiated in a violet light. She then posted the description of the item on the party channel.

[Violet-Platinum Jade Necklace]

Vitality: +176

Intelligence: +116

Spirit: +116

Equip: Increases your damage and healing effects by 3%.

Equip: Increases your critical rate by 1%.

Equip: Increases Maximum Mana points by 300 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

"This is just beautiful!" Wei Yan Er put the necklace around her own neck, and she kept turning left and right, trying to show how good she looked with the necklace around her neck. This little girl was already a vibrant pretty little girl. So when she put on the necklace around her neck, she looked even more beautiful and young. Even though Zhang Yang had been soaking his eyes with the images of pretty ladies all around him, he was still amazed by the looks of the little girl.

"Your eyes are going to fall off if you keep on staring." Han Ying Xue humphed coldly as she glared at Zhang Yang's lower part of his body without a clear sense of purpose. Zhang Yang could actually feel the murderous intent coming from the direction of Han Ying Xue.

Zhang Yang could not help but recall the way Han Ying Xue had bitten into the banana without mercy. He felt a chill down his spine as the image was brought up from the depths of his mind. He quickly sent a private message over to Han Ying Xue, "You're jealous of a little girl? Shame on you!"

"Humph! Men are unreliable! Didn't you say that you wanted to 'earn honor' for your country by hooking up with a foreign babe?"



Han Ying Xue replied, with a tone filled with jealousy.

Zhang Yang could not help but feel a slight sense of embarrassment. He had not expected that there were so many pairs of ears hidden behind walls. Obviously, the words that he said about 'win honor' for his country, had already spread like wildfire, in the entire China server! He shook his head in shame and said, "I thought about it, but there are no foreign babes for me to win over!"

"You son of a b\*tch!" Han Ying Xue humphed.

The two ladies of Magic Class had their very own necklaces of their Class type Armor Set. Since Han Ying Xue wanted to keep 3 pieces of her Armor Set equipment on her so that her Armor Set effect would kick in, she gave the [Violet-Platinum Jade Necklace] to Daffodil Daydream. Daffodil Daydream only had two Armor Set equipment, so she couldn't activate the Armor Set effect, even if she wanted to. It was natural for her to get more powerful equipment first before she could collect other pieces of her Armor Set.

Wei Yan Er reached out for the loot, and she actually picked up another good item! A Skill Book!

[Skill Book: Recovery Aura]

Equip: Teaches you the skill {Recovery Aura}.

Required Level: 90

"Aura? As in Aura Skill?" The five of them lit up in excitement.

Zhang Yang gave it some thought, and he said, "Daffodil, Ice Queen, the two of you, discuss and decide on who should have this skill. Either one of you should have it."

Since everyone in the party would have the chance to enjoy the effects of the Aura Skill, along with the fact that a player was limited to activating only one Aura at a time, it was better if more players on the same party had Aura Skills of their own. That way, all players would be able to activate their own Aura Skills at the same time and boost the entire party.

After the two pretty ladies discussed at length, Daffodil Daydream was the one who got the Skill Book. After she learned the skill, she posted the description of the Aura Skill effect onto the party channel.

[Recovery Aura] (Level 1): Recovers 100 health points and 30 mana points of all party members within the effective range of the Recovery Aura in every 3 seconds. The range of effective area: 30-meter radius circular area, with the user as the center point. The effect will last until the user is dead, or the effect vanishes automatically. You can only activate one Aura Skill at the same time.

This Aura Skill was very good indeed. Not only could it recover health points but also can recover mana points. This skill would

definitely be beneficial to the players when it came to a lengthy battle. Although 30 points and 100 points weren't really that significant, but this was just the effect of a Level 1 {Recovery Aura}. When the level of this skill is increased, the effect will definitely become much stronger.

Lastly, Marlin Frodo had also given them the second piece of the [Middle-tier Aura Stone]. This time, Zhang Yang was lucky. He won the dice throwing and got the piece of [Middle-tier Aura Stone] to level up his {Strength Aura} to Level 5. Now, he can boost the vitality of all his party members by an additional 20%!

At that moment, they had already left the location where they battled the boss. They were carefully looking up at the ceiling on top of their heads, fearful that it might just collapse on their heads at any time! Deep in their hearts, they knew that it was just a visual effect, but those effects were just too convincing!

The five of them arrived at the location of the throne. However, none of them could locate the entrance that led to the third floor of the Treasure Cove!

Wei Yan Er got impatient as everyone looked up and down for the entrance, so she kicked the throne with brute force. Her kick was so powerful that the golden throne gave off a sound of 'Qiang!,' and vibrated for a brief second.

Zhang Yang turned his head over and took a look at the direction where the sound came from, and then he began to laugh out loud, "Little girl, you really did a great job this time! You actually found the entrance for us all!"

Wei Yan Er was stunned for a brief moment, and she did not know what to say for the moment. But her face was really thick, so she laughed out loud as well and said, "I'm so clever, nothing can stump me!"

At the same time, the three ladies walked up to the two of them. Zhang Yang reached out for the golden throne and pushed it with brute force. The throne only moved a little, and then it was once again stuck firmly on the ground.

The little girl just only realized it and said, "So, the passage is hidden below the throne!" She immediately realized her Freudian slip, so she quickly acted busy and used her two small hands to cover her mouth, acting away stealthily as she could.

"Little girl, your strength is the highest here, come quickly and help me!" Zhang Yang said.

Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream are Magic Class players, and their equipment were more focused on adding their Intelligence and Spirit attribute points. So the strength of both of them added up together were minuscule, compared to Zhang Yang's Strength! Sun Xin Yu had Agility set as the main attribute, so her Strength was limited as well. Even if these three ladies tried to help, they could not do anything as well.

Wei Yan Er was different, because her Strength attribute was even higher than Zhang Yang, after equipping her equipment. Her Strength alone was almost equal to the sum of Zhang Yang and the

three ladies combined!

The little girl rolled up her sleeves a little and walked up to Zhang Yang. She stood firmly by the side of Zhang Yang and placed her hands on the throne.

"One, two, three! One, two, three!" The two of them worked together and they managed to move the throne. As the throne constantly trembled while being pushed away, the width of the entrance was growing wider and wider, and finally, the throne was pushed aside.

Rumble! Boom!

The throne rolled across the ground for a while and stopped, and the spot where the throne was placed revealed a passage that led deeper into the Treasure Cove.

"Haha! What a loser, noob tank! Your Strength is not as good as mine! Sigh, I can't help but suspect if you are actually a man?" Wei Yan Er teased while she was shrugging.

Zhang Yang frowned as he turned his head around and looked at Han Ying Xue.

Han Ying Xue felt baffled as she realized Zhang Yang was staring at her, so she said, "Silly Yu, why are you staring at me like that?"

Zhang Yang switched to the private chat with Han Ying Xue and

said, "Little girl is suspecting whether I'm a man or not, so I'm thinking about how I should prove it to her! Haha!"

Han Ying Xue knew exactly what Zhang Yang meant, so she instantly blushed and scolded, "You perverted hoodlum!"

The five of them entered the passage and went down the dark passage. After a few turns of walking down the stairs, they arrived at the third floor of the Treasure Cove.

The floor seemed similar to the second floor. But, the number of monsters wandering about in the area was not as many as the number of monsters on the second floor. Furthermore, the monsters weren't skeleton soldiers anymore, they were maids, complete with frills and aprons. Of course, these maids were basically well-dressed, walking skeletons, without any trace of flesh on their bones remaining. The only item that had not completely 'decomposed' was their palace attire, which indicated that they used to be glamorous, pretty women when they still breathed.

[Gentle Palace Maid]

Level: 95

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 2,000

"Silly Yu, let's 'do' this!" Han Ying Xue put a {Holy Shield} on Zhang Yang. She had uttered 'do' in such a suggestive manner that nobody would have missed it.

That witch! She's trying to make things complicated again!

Zhang Yang gave himself into the temptation and pulled out his sword, and charged at one of the maids.

# Chapter 450: Take Both When You Can!

---

Although the name - Gentle Palace Maid had the word 'gentle' in there, these maids were anything but that! After being struck by the {Spear of Obliteration}, the maid immediately let out a deafening screech. Her mouth was large enough to swallow Zhang Yang's head whole!

The monster leaped towards Zhang Yang like a frog, similar to how those swordsmen in wire-fu wuxia films glided through the air! However, those swordsmen in the movies had soft, graceful landings. They could even stand on leaves and branches of the trees! But on the contrary, this so-called Gentle Palace Maid landed heavily, and the impact was so strong that the thick solid tiles beneath their feet cracked open!

Zhang Yang laughed, and then he said, "This 'gentle' monster should go and cut off some weight!"

"She has no flesh left, what is there to cut off?!"

"Throwing away a few bones and joints might do the trick just fine!"

The ladies began to tease the monsters like how Zhang Yang did it. They were giggling gleefully.

"Rawgh!" the Gentle Palace Maiden let out another screech and waved her 'soft' hands over, trying to choke Zhang Yang's neck!



Zhang Yang quickly raised up his shield to engage, and bam! The claws of the monster were repelled! Two seconds after the attack, this monster raised her leg at high speed and kicked at the forbidden zone between Zhang Yang's thighs!

The elite monster's regular attacks were not as fast as the attack of a boss. So, Zhang Yang managed to react immediately before it was too late, and by turning around quickly, he evaded the 'definitive' attack of the boss by less than an inch!

Han Ying Xue giggled hard and she said, "Only if you dodged it a little slower, you would have become the legendary leader of the swordsmen in the movie, 'The Legend of the Swordsman'!"

"But, cousin sister, you're the one at a loss if that really happens!"

Han Ying Xue blushed on the spot.

After putting a lot of effort into the battle, Zhang Yang and the ladies finally took down the monster. Daffodil Daydream could not help but to say, "Fortunate for us, the elite monsters outside this area aren't this strong."

"And also, thanks to Silly Yu for tanking it for us. If other tankers were tanking it for us, I think we would have really suffered!" Han Ying Xue nodded to express her agreement on this.

The party proceeded and cleared all the monsters along their

way. But as they progressed halfway across the floor, the "Banishment" effect kicked in, as the final second of the clock struck, kicking the five of them, one after another out of the Treasure Cove.

At first, Wei Yan Er wanted to use the [Dimensional Key] to return to the Treasure Cove immediately right after they were kicked out from the realm, and clear out the remaining 3 floors of the Treasure Cove! But her suggestion was shot down by the other 4 members of the party. Although 12 hours in the in-game time is equivalent to 4 hours in real time, they had already played the game for the whole day, and now, it was almost dinner time already. It would be wiser to make sure that everyone is well fed before they continue the game, without having the need to worry about dinner as they engage the bosses in the later stages.

Since that the monsters do not respawn, they could reenter the realm and continue where they left off at anytime they want --- of course, the one absolute condition for them was that none of them could surpass Level 100 before they clear the Treasure Cove!

The little girl was trying to beg Zhang Yang to prepare dinner, as she really liked to eat his cooking. After she persuaded him with soft and gentle words for a long time, Zhang Yang had finally relented and agreed to cook for her. He realized that some supplies were running low, so he had to go to the supermarket with Han Ying Xue to restock.

The two of them got at the supermarket as swiftly as they could. As they only wanted to buy some seasoning ingredients, they did not take any shopping carts along as they planned for a quick grab

and go. That was the initial plan, to search for the things they want, and grab them and go. However, Han Ying Xue became sidetracked by her cravings for junk food. She scooped up lots of junk food from her left and right, and shoved them over to Zhang Yang's arms. Zhang Yang could barely see anything in front of him, as the packets of junk food had piled up so high that they blocked his entire front view.

They were already halfway through their shopping trip, so it was not worth the effort for them to go all the way back just to get a shopping cart. Coincidentally, a 7-year-old boy came by, pushing a shopping cart. Han Ying Xue quickly stopped the boy. She took one packet of junk food from Zhang Yang's arm and beamed at the little boy with her angelic face, "Hey there, kid. I've got something yummy here, wanna trade your cart for it?"

"Okay!" The little boy agreed on the terms with excitement. Licking his lips, the little boy snatched the packet of junk food, as he was worried that the two strangers might suddenly turn their backs on the deal. After getting what he wanted, he left the trolley with Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang and vanished very quickly.

Han Ying Xue turned around and grinned at Zhang Yang, with the beauty and slyness of a fox.

Zhang Yang shook his head helplessly as he started transferring the goods into the shopping cart, "You really are a witch... you even tricked a child!"

The two of them continued to walk across the corners of the supermarket, and finally, they got everything that Zhang Yang

needed. But after they made the payment, Han Ying Xue insisted on dragging him over to the undergarment department!

Zhang Yang frowned, his temple moist with sweat as he tried to dissuade her, "You run an undergarment company, and you're worried about having not enough bra and panties to wear? Also, this is a mall, do you expect to find products of the same quality, they might damage your skin! That's a lot to lose!"

"Sigh! I'm poor now, so I have to save up as much as I can!" as Han Ying Xue saw the dismayed face of Zhang Yang, she pursed her lips and whispered gently into Zhang Yang's ears, "Oh, and I shall consult you after I try them on!"

Zhang Yang suddenly felt a rush that shot straight up into his brain as the boiling blood gushed up in between of his nose. Blood threatened to spurt out of his nostrils! He found himself nodding before he knew anything else.

However, the moment he stepped into the department, Zhang Yang immediately started regretting it. Almost all of the people around him were women. Even though some of them brought along their husbands and boyfriends, the men were standing outside the borders, waiting for their women. He was the only one who had actually ventured into the dangerous territory!

An auntie was holding up a large size bra as they walked by. She looked at Han Ying Xue and turned to Zhang Yang, giving him a thumbs up while saying, "Young man, your lady is fine and beautiful!"

Han Ying Xue was overjoyed, and she quickly took one packet of the junk food from the trolley cart and 'generously' gave it to the auntie, "How nice of you, auntie! This is for you!"

Zhang Yang and the auntie both stared incredulously. The witch was really acting as if the supermarket belonged to her! She's actually handing out 'gifts' to other people, not having paid for them yet, as if she was doing charity!

Han Ying Xue only took a look around, not even buying anything from the place. Zhang Yang frowned in annoyance, "You witch! You tricked me!" Han Ying Xue flashed him a flirtatious smile and said, "Well, people have said it before, to know if a man loves his woman or not, all you need to do is to see whether the man is willing to accompany you, while you go around buying your lady products!"

The two of them walked back home after that. Zhang Yang went straight into the kitchen, as the 'Chef' was his role in the house. In just a brief moment of time, he was done cooking. He placed all his delicious dishes on the table, and the four ladies could not stop praising him after they tasted the dishes.

After having their dinner, the four ladies started having a game of 'scissors, paper, stone,' to decide who should be the one washing the dishes. By the end of it, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er were that ones in charge in washing up the dishes and utensils. This rule is actually a house rule that Zhang Yang had set up after going through a lot of hardship. He had made it clear that he would be in charge for cooking all sorts of good food for them, however, the

responsibility to clean the dishes would belong to the four ladies. How they chose to do it did not matter to him.

After returning back to his room, Zhang Yang was just about to put his game helmet up, when he heard a gentle knock on his door. He put down the game helmet and walked up to the door. Han Ying Xue stood by the door, posing in such a seductive manner that could only have been equaled by Jessica Rabbit. As soon as the door was opened, she invited herself in.

"Yes! Come in!" Zhang Yang resignedly looked at her rear, shrugging, as she walked past him and strutted into his room.

As annoying and as befuddling as she was, she had one heck of a figure. Her waist had the perfect curves and slenderness, while her round \*ss perkily displayed themselves as she took each step. It was a such an irresistible sight.

"It's about time to gather around in the game, what are you doing in my room?!" Zhang Yang was annoyed and slightly cross, for he was really tired of this witch's ambiguous teasings.

Han Ying Xue smiled flirtatiously and said, "I got some new bras on, I was hoping to seek your opinion on them!"

Instantly, his nose heated up, and something thick and red threatened to leak out! He forced the thoughts away and snapped, "Witchy Snow! This is your final warning! Please stop playing with fire, if you really light me up, I might just take you, right here, right now!"

"Who's the pussy now! Come at me!" Han Ying Xue stood defiantly, like a fearless pig, unflinching in the face of boiling water.

Zhang Yang took a large step towards her and pulled the delicate creature into his arms, and then he said, "You better not regret this!"

Han Ying Xue put her hands around Zhang Yang and hugged him strongly, and started nuzzling against Zhang Yang's chest and said, "You really are stupid, why do I have to make the first move every time!"

Zhang Yang was shocked. This was not a topic he was prepared to discuss. It wasn't because he did not dare take the initiative to act, but because his heart had been in turmoil for the longest period of time! He had no clue about his feelings for the two women who had already confessed to him! Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue had already occupied a certain level of importance within his heart. Before he actually finds clarity on whom he really loves, Zhang Yang did not intend to do something that he might regret doing in the future.

"Are you thinking of that woman? That sow?" Han Ying Xue felt it immediately.

Zhang Yang did not intend to lie to her, so he nodded.

"Don't you dare think of other women when you're clinging on to

me like that!" Han Ying Xue was enraged.

Her soft plush and warmth in his arms, Zhang Yang could not help but begin acting. He was a normal man, his arms would not remain static, of course, they would start wandering about! He then shifted his thoughts over to the men of the ancient times, where a man could have up to 3 to 4 wives at the same time! Didn't he have high standards of his own? He would be much pleased if he could have one girl on each arm!

Since he was definitely reacting positively to both Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue, and they liked him as well, what was the point of twisting himself up, wrestling with himself on rejecting one of them! Why choose only one, when he could have both!

"I only want one on my left and another one on my right, people can't categorize me as a pervert, I guess." Zhang Yang tried to justify himself, as his hands buried themselves within the prideful pair of mounds that defined Han Ying Xue. It has been quite a while since his hands had 'traversed' this pair of mountainous boobies!

The abundant, fulfilling sensation of having his palms sink into such luscious melons, while having their elasticity wrap themselves around his fingers was heavenly! Zhang Yang could not hold himself back, giving in to his basic instincts, almost howling like a wolf! He could not stop his hands from kneading the dough!

"Alright. The time of counseling is over!" Han Ying Xue' eyes were very watery, her face was flushed red, like the deep crimson of a tomato, biting on her succinct lips. She summoned all her



remaining strength and pushed Zhang Yang away. Their mutual attraction was unmistakable. If things got any more heated, they might go all the way and end up together on the bed.

Zhang Yang grinned and pointed down at a certain something and said, "Bloody Witch. Look what you've done. Are you seriously going to leave me like that? You really need to take responsibility for this."

Han Ying Xue looked at him and then gazed down at the impressive bulge. She blushed even deeply, and muttered, "So, what do you want me to do about that?"

Zhang Yang grinned with evil intent and whispered into her ear.

"You pervert." Han Ying Xue looked at Zhang Yang with her dazzling eyes as she muttered.

"Then, I should just go to the Ice Queen!"

"No!"

Han Ying Xue let out a huff and said, "Close your eyes!"

"Hehe!"

"Don't laugh!"

...

10 minutes later.

"Are you getting there yet? My hands are getting sore!" Zhang Yang could hear her complaining.

...

20 minutes later.

"You pig! Why aren't you cumming yet!"

...

Half an hour later.

Han Ying Xue slunk out from Zhang Yang's room, her face totally red. She banged into Wei Yan Er who was humming a song while walking back to her room. The little girl gave her a characteristically chirpy hi to Han Ying Xue, which sent her blushing even further. She half-dashed straight back to her room and closed the door shut, without even looking back at the little girl. After the door was snapped shut, the little girl was left at the corridor of the room, with a lot of riddles in her mind, as she blinked her big, round, watery eyes and stared at the door.

After a brief moment, the five of them had met up in the game.

Zhang Yang's and Han Ying Xue's eyes met. Both of them were still thinking of the 'bad things' they had just done back in Zhang Yang's room. Zhang Yang felt another heatwave coming his way, while Han Ying Xue merely raised her eyebrows suggestively, which accentuated her 'enchanted' appearance even more.

Sun Xin Yu seemed to realize that something was going on between them, her eyes constantly flitting between their gazes. Something had magnetized their eyes together, and she could see it. She could not help but to emit out a sense of murderous aura.

Zhang Yang activated the [Dimensional Key] once again, and the five of them went into the opened portal, one after another. They then found themselves at the front of the palace once again. The moment they set foot in the Treasure Cove, a 'Banishment' effect appeared on their HUDs, displaying a time clock which started to count down from 11:59:59.

To save some time, Zhang Yang had asked Han Ying Xue to give him the [Cloak of the Dark Wings]. Then, he flew straight to the third floor and used his [Party Summon Order] to summon all four ladies straight to where he stood.

# Chapter 451: The Second Prince Rogalli

---

It took them about two hours to find themselves standing before the third boss in the Treasure Cove.

However, the boss on this floor was not alone. He had 11 underlings around him!

[The Second Prince Rogalli] (Violet-Platinum, Spectre)

Level: 100

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 2,900

[Royal Guard] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 95

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 2,000

Rogalli did not have a full set of armor on him, like the 2 bosses that Zhang Yang and his party had previously encountered. Instead, this boss wore a grand, magic robe, embroidered with

magical runes in gold thread. Instead of looking like a prince, this boss looked more like a priest from some sort of cult!

Right beside him were his Royal Guards, equipped with full sets of heavy armor. They seemed to be guarding the prince with everything they have.

The five of them stood in stunned silence. It was common for many players to bully one boss in a boss battle. But this time around, the situation is different. Currently, the boss had many powerful underlings with him, 12 to be exact! Furthermore, these underlings were all very powerful and tough! Although these underlings were labeled as elite grade monsters, all of them were as strong as Yellow-Gold bosses! They would be battling one Violet-Platinum boss and 11 Yellow-Gold bosses at the same time! How was it possible?

If Endless Starlight was there with them, then Zhang Yang could let him go ahead and tank the bosses as he handles the remaining monsters. At his current strength, he could actually handle 11 bosses at the same time, 'manipulating' them with Status Restriction skills, without much trouble, at that --- of course, the monsters had to be vulnerable to Status Restriction skills. Or else, the combined attack of all 11 Yellow-Gold bosses would wipe out anything and anyone in no time! As the system limited entry to only 5 players at a time, Endless Starlight would not be able to join them.

Even if Endless Starlight were to come here, Han Ying Xue could not possibly keep both their rapidly leaking HP bars up at the same time! So, if they were to bring Endless Starlight into Zhang Yang's

party, then they would have to swap out another DPS player for a second healer. After that, there would only be one DPS player left in the party. It would take forever to kill these elite monsters, with only one DPS player in the party! Furthermore, two healers would have not enough mana points to heal up two tankers over such a long period of time, even if they had three bars of mana with them!

"So, what do we do now?" the four ladies turned their sights over to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts, and said, "Witchy Snow, Little girl, and Daffodil Daydream, you guys, take a few steps back. I will stand right here. Ice Queen will go and lure the monsters! Now, the aggro of these monsters should be linked together. So, Ice Queen, when you go engage with the monsters, all the other monsters will come after you as well. But, these monsters will be coming at you in a predictable order. So, let's do it this way. Kite the monsters over to me, and ensure that only one of the monsters 'sees' me. Then, you can activate your {Vanish} to disengage yourself from the aggro of the monsters. That way, the monster would switch it's aggro onto me instead, and the remaining monsters will run back to their initial positions!"

This is the 'Aggro Swapping' tactic, very practical and effective against multiple underlings of bosses. It was a commonly seen tactic in the Realm of Chaos.

Sun Xin Yu would never react dramatically or use beautiful words, she merely nodded.

Zhang Yang then said, "If Ice Queen succeeds in separating one

monster from the rest, then you guys should just do your best! But, if there are too many monsters coming your way, along with the boss, then Ice Queen shall remain in her 'stealth' mode. I shall use my {Shadow of the Void} to stay out of harm's way. The three of you, stay as far away as possible for the moment. Just remember, don't engage with the boss and die for nothing!"

"Understood!" the three ladies started backing off.

"Time to move!" Zhang Yang nodded at Sun Xin Yu, then he whispered to her, "Be careful."

Sun Xin Yu's pretty face flashed a rare moment of joy. She turned around, displaying the graceful view of her back, as she charged to the direction of the boss.

"Protect the prince!"

The aggro range of these Royal Guards spread far and wide, even when Sun Xin Yu was still 20 meters, one of the Royal Guards had already detected her presence and had started roaring thunderously. The Royal Guard immediately raised a metallic boot and started charging towards Sun Xin Yu, his sword flying out of its scabbard.

Upon moving, the 10 remaining monsters, including the boss, started acting up, following the first monster closely.

"The dignity of the royal family must not be tarnished! All

intruders shall be eliminated! We shall have it no other way!" Rogalli let out a thunderous voice and raised up an aquamarine staff high into the air, "Warriors! Push forth and crush them!"

"Yes, your highness!"

Streams of dark lights shot out of the staff, and the 11 monsters were engulfed by the dark light. Then, they started bloating up exponentially!

[Crushing Vow]: Immune to all Status Restriction skills, increases damage by 50%, reduces 20% damage received, lasts for 10 minutes!

"What the f\*ck!" Zhang Yang could not help but curse out loud! Then he said, "Ice Queen! Don't lure two monsters at a time! These monsters are immune to all sorts of Status Restriction skills! I only have confidence in tanking two of them at most!"

An increment of 50% additional damage on a Yellow-Gold boss would make it as powerful as a Violet-Platinum boss of the same level! Zhang Yang's confidence in doing so showed his power, to be able to tank against two of these monsters at the same time! Zhang Yang had to be the only one in the entire China server who was capable of doing this!

"I'll try my best!" Sun Xin Yu shouted out in the party channel. Just as she got close to Zhang Yang, she activated her {Vanish} as instructed by Zhang Yang, and disappeared.



Groom! Groom! Groom! As the monsters trundled across the ground with their heavy feet, none of the 12 turned back! All of them charged at Zhang Yang as they roared!

What the hell!

Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Shadow of the Void} and fled the battle!

After the battle had ended, Rogalli immediately led his 11 underlings back to their initial positions and took their default stances again.

Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu then reappeared and regrouped with the three ladies. The skills - {Shadow of the Void} and {Vanish} have very long cool down period, so they could only wait for the skills to cool down before giving it another try.

Sun Xin Yu could not be faulted, as this was just the first try. Sun Xin Yu needed time to slowly get familiar with the aggro sensitivity of the monsters.

10 minutes later, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu went up for a second attempt, producing more promising results. 'Only' seven monsters continued to go after Sun Xin Yu, but it was still a failure.

20 minutes later, the two of them began their third attempt at luring the monsters. There was a slight improvement as well on

their third attempt! This time, only 3 monsters followed Sun Xin Yu!

Zhang Yang nodded and he could not help but feel impressed, she is really good! With just three attempts and she had already gotten the hang of it!

After half an hour, Sun Xin Yu went on for the fourth attempt. With her {Vanish} activated at the last moment, 11 monsters turned back and returned to their initial position, except for one. That one monster was roaring in rage, as it charged towards Zhang Yang.

It was a successful Aggro Swap!

Zhang Yang quickly flung the {Spear of Obliteration} straight at the monster and inflicted it with a damage value of '-4,928'.

"Rawgh!" the Royal Guard immediately let out a raging roar, and in a low, rumbling noise, it said, "Anyone who disrespects the Royal Family shall be eliminated!"

Zhang Yang raised up his shield to engage. Right after his {Block}, he conveniently activated his {Shield Bash} and smashed his shield right into the monster's face. 'Kuang'! The shield clashed against the metallic armor on the monster's head with a loud and clear bang. The impact of the strike concussed the monster, and forced the monster to take a few steps back.

"Huh? Why is this monster is so noob!" Wei Yan Er smirked, "So

noob, that it can't even withstand the strength of noob tank!"

An elite monster was just an elite grade monster after all. Although the attack of the monster was already as strong as the attack of a Yellow-Gold boss, the strength attribute of the monster would remain the same, not something to stand against Zhang Yang, who already has a set of powerful equipment on him.

The situation was like a 'naked' player holding a Violet-Platinum weapon in hand, trying to battle a player with a full set of powerful equipment, but with only a White-Wood weapon in hand. The attacks of both sides were almost of the same level, but the same balance was not present in terms of strength.

This elite monster that had super strong attack power, but nothing else much!

Although this Royal Guard had the {Crushing Vow} effect and was immune to all Status Restriction skills, the 'Supporting Attack' was not really a means of an assault. Under the precise control of Zhang Yang over his avatar in the game, this monster was bombarded to the point that its pattern of attack had changed drastically, unable to land a hit on Zhang Yang!

"Wow, noob tank! At least you're not making a fool of yourself there!" Wei Yan Er looked at Zhang Yang with admiration as she wielded her giant axe, slashing the monster until it lost its balance. The monster was in a really bad shape.

"Of course I must look good!" Zhang Yang laughed.

"You're so full of yourself!" the four ladies hooted at the same time.

At the earlier stages of the game, as the grade and level of equipment were not high enough, players could never have enough power to knock monsters back. It was not possible for a player to send a monster backward. Therefore, players began to fuse 'Supporting Attacks' as they picked and rolled, and with the increasing number of high-tier equipment that were appearing for players to grab allowed them to be more efficient. So, more and more players were getting into the norm of using 'Supporting Attacks' in battle against monsters and bosses!

Zhang Yang had been trying to introduce the ladies to the effectiveness and the convenience of using 'Supporting Attacks' in battle, and, he had managed to pique their interest in it. He wanted them to understand the 'mechanism' by themselves. All he needed to do was to supervise them from one side, and they would improve their skills and strength very rapidly!

About 3 minutes into the battle, the monster was slain, and it collapsed down to the ground right before the powerful attacks of the gang. More shockingly, this monster actually dropped a piece of Yellow-Gold equipment which got Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er really excited.

As the skill, {Vanish} had a 5-minute cooldown period, and the skill {Shadow of the Void} had a cool down period of 10 minutes long, the gang could only wait it out before they can strike again. However, the moment after the cool down period of Sun Xin Yu's

{Vanish} was over, Zhang Yang decided to take a risk. He sent Sun Xin Yu over directly to lure the monsters in an attempt to save some precious time.

"But, what if ---" Sun Xin Yu looked at him with a worried face.

"Well, at worst, I'll only die once!" Zhang Yang smiled, "But, I believe that you will not let that happen!"

Sun Xin Yu could not hide her embarrassment, her eyes were filled with hope, as she started blushing, while glaring at him, but with a sense of sweetness in it. As she continued blushing, she turned around and charged towards the monsters.

"This time, try to get two of them over!" Zhang Yang increased his demands.

Well if they lured two of the elite monsters over, by the time when they slay the two monsters, the cooldown period for Sun Xin Yu's {Vanish} would be over, and they would not be wasting any time at all!

Right then, Sun Xin Yu halted at the moment she was about to enter the aggro range of the monsters.

She was indeed worthy to be called a professional player. After she entered the range where she had lured the first monster, she took one step closer to the monsters before she activated her {Vanish} to disengage from battle. But this seemingly insignificant

‘one step’ actually brought in two Royal Guards to Zhang Yang. The two monsters charged at Zhang Yang in an intense manner.

It was another success!

Zhang Yang met the two approaching monsters without any sense of fear. With a vibrant swing of his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and the continuous bashing on the monsters’ faces with his [Titan Wall], Zhang Yang suppressed the two monsters with so much brute force to the point that the monsters could not even stand properly.

Wei Yan Er had also picked up some hints on how Zhang Yang did it, so she also went up to one of the monsters and started swinging her giant axe as hard as she could. With the oppressive hammerings of Wei Yan Er, the monsters were bombarded to the point that they were constantly being pushed back by the attack, unable to regain their balance. Remaining armor pieces and the pieces of shattered bones were falling off the monster, roaring in hopeless rage. The little girl laughed joyfully as they roared in her face.

However, Sun Xin Yu and Daffodil Daydream were using different approaches, rather than applying brute force on the monsters. So, they could not really do much in this battle. Daffodil Daydream could not help but to voice out, "Guildmaster, Warrior Class and Knight Class can suppress their opponents purely with Strength. They can even use such tactics to interrupt Magic Classes from chanting spells successfully as well! What can the other Classes do?"

Zhang Yang did not stop what he was doing as he continued to attack the monsters, "That's not entirely true. Warriors and Knights are indeed more powerful in terms of Strength. Thieves and Hunters are more inclined to the 'Agility' attribute, so they can unleash more potential as they gain more speed, for speed is their mantra. The higher agility points that they have, the faster they can attack, and the more damage they can do to their opponents. If your opponents are moving at the speed of light, then you will not be able to lock onto them. So when that happens, no matter how powerful your attacks are, you can't even touch them. Magic Classes have the advantage when it comes to Status Restriction skills, and their explosive power. They can actually end the battle, even before their opponents approach them!"

"Sigh. So Magic Classes are actually weak in the sense of toughness, what a loss!" Han Ying Xue let out a breath of sigh.

"Well, that's not entirely true either. Actually, Magic Classes need to put their focus on combining their skills during PK battles!" Zhang Yang tried to rack his brain to find a suitable explanation to back up what he just said, but because he had never actually studied about the specificity of the Magic Class, so he could only throw a vague explanation to the ladies, "You will find out soon enough, in the future!" The truth was, he could not think of any suitable examples, to begin with.

After slashing for awhile, the two monsters were taken down and the cool down period for Sun Xin Yu's {Vanish} was over. At the moment, Zhang Yang could also use his {Shadow of the Void} again. Sun Xin Yu was feeling much more confident with her aggro estimation already, so she had become more proficient at luring the monsters. That was why the next round of luring the monsters

was another success. Only two monsters were hooked over to Zhang Yang as well.

The same method was repeatedly and about half an hour later, all 11 elite monsters were cleared out. Only the boss was left alone in the middle of the area!

"Alright! Let's move!" Zhang Yang waved his [Sword of Purging Devourer].

"But, what if the boss resummon the 11 elite Royal Guards the moment we engage in battle with the boss?" Wei Yan Er blinked at the gang with her large eyes.

"You and your big mouth!" the four of them scolded the little girl in unison!

Wei Yan Er was shocked and she placed a hand over her heart, to show that she was really shocked.

Zhang Yang charged towards the boss with large steps, as he threw the {Spear of Obliteration} across the air, and onto the boss, triggering the boss battle.

"You imbecile, pests!" Rogalli humphed out loud and raised his staff at Zhang Yang, and he shouted, "I'm very tired, I need rest! Why are you disturbing my rest!"

Shoof!



A stream of dark light shot right out from the tip of the staff, and turned into a large skull all of a sudden. The skull opened up its jaws and flew towards Zhang Yang attempting to swallow him whole!

‘-17,094!’

"Haha! Then, let us put you to rest, for eternity! You can have as much rest as you want by then!" Zhang Yang swung his sword towards the boss. But, the magic robe that the boss had on was extremely tough! Zhang Yang's sword rang as if, it was striking something metallic! But fortunately, the damage values still appeared as Zhang Yang attacked the boss. The boss also felt the pain, and he shouted in rage as Zhang Yang 'poked' him again and again.

"You imbeciles! You piss me off!" Rogalli raised his staff right up into the air and fired another dark light from the tip of his staff that transformed into a large skull!

Sun Xin Yu and the others quickly surrounded the boss and began to launch their assaults on the boss savagely.

# Chapter 452: Death Water Elemental

---

After being ganged up by the party, Rogalli was even further enraged. As the second prince of the Imperial Heaven's Empire, Rogalli is usually the one bringing along his underlings, rounding up on the weak. How could he accept such treatment?

Shoof! Shoof! Shoof!

The boss repeatedly casted the large dark skulls after Zhang Yang, damaging Zhang Yang by about 17,000 damage with each hit. But, Zhang Yang had a total of 90,000 health points, without even being atop the [Mythical Turtle]. There was really nothing to worry about, at that moment!

Of course, a Violet-Platinum boss is not so simple. Rogalli had not yet revealed his true power!

"Spirits of the air, heed my summons, and gather to me!" Rogalli raised his staff up into the air and started chanting a spell in a loud voice. Instantly, 5 beams of iridescent light swam around, Rogalli like guards patrolling around him.

"Die!" Rogalli completed his chanting of the spell, and immediately aimed his staff at Zhang Yang. Instantly, the five beam of lights combined onto one and shot straight towards Zhang Yang!

‘Ding! Rogalli has unleashed {Elemental Disruptive Bomb}!’

Without any hesitation, Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Shield Wall}! The boss had been accumulating his power into this attack, of course it would be a hard hit!

‘-22,894!’

Boom! The combined beam of light struck Zhang Yang, and colorful sparks shot off Zhang Yang’s body! An extremely high damage value was still inflicted upon Zhang Yang, even after he activated his {Shield Wall}! The basic damage of this {Elemental Disruptive Bomb} reached up to a total of 125,000 points! If Zhang Yang had not activated his {Shield Wall} in time, he would have been taken out on the spot, an instant-kill!

"You're still alive? You are persistent!" Rogalli saw that his super attack had not taken out Zhang Yang, and he could not hide his astonishment, "You really do have some skills, to be able to come so far!"

Zhang Yang laughed in pride, and said, "Well, you haven't seen "anything" yet!"

The four ladies were disgusted by his words, and Wei Yan Er immediately said, "Yo, noob tank! This boss has lived for thousands of years! You trying to show it something that it hasn't seen yet is just stupid! Haha!"

Rogalli was enraged even further, so he let out a raging roar into the sky, "Element of earth, protect me!"

In just an instant, a beam of yellow light began to form and gather in front of the boss, swiftly forming into three shields. These three shields spun around the boss rapidly.

‘Ding! Rogalli has unleashed {Earth Shield}, the shields can absorb a total of 300,000 damage!’

"What the hell! That is some shield! It's even much more powerful than {Holy Shield}!" Han Ying Xue was really shocked.

Zhang Yang laughed and teased her, "Just wait, until you have about 150,000 magic damage, then your {Holy Shield} would be able to absorb the same amount of damage as this boss' shield! Be patient! Haha!"

"... 150,000 magic damage..." Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes!

Under the protection of the {Earth Shield}, all attacks launched at the boss only caused the word ‘Immune’ to pop up on the boss repeatedly. However, once the boss had been inflicted with 100,000 damage, one of the shields that were spinning around him will vanish. With the firepower that Zhang Yang and his party produces, they could get rid of one shield in about every 10 seconds! So, about 30 seconds later, the final shield that was spinning around Rogalli had vanished, and the boss started to lose his health points again.

"The power of the earth is way beyond your imagination!" Rogalli suddenly let out a roar and repeatedly knocking his staff onto the

ground, as violently as he could!

‘Ding! Rogalli has unleashed {Gravel Bullets}!’

Kroom! Kroom! Kroom!

The surface of the ground began to tremble, and instantly, patches of black whirlpools appeared, one after another, occupying the ground! Stone pikes shot out from the black whirlpools, swiftly retracting not soon after. Then, they repeated their actions again! The speed of the process was extremely swift!

The five of them had been through more battles than they could remember. Nobody needed any reminding to scramble to safety.

About half a minute later, these black whirlpools started to disappear, one after another. But, it did not mean that Zhang Yang and the ladies could let their guards down. The black whirlpools reappeared on the surface of the ground at different positions, causing Zhang Yang and the ladies to panic, and start running for more safe spots again!

"Hahaha!" Seeing that everyone was panicking, Rogalli could not help but to laugh out loud. He was a Magic Class boss, so he did not have to run around to attack Zhang Yang. With just a raise of his staff, he could fire dark skulls that chomped at Zhang Yang's health bar mercilessly.

Everyone was suffering to the point that they were crying out

loud! They had to make sure they dodged the stone pikes while also making sure that their DPS is maintained so that they could reduce the health bar of the boss down consistently. They were so busy that the party chat was completely motionless!

After a brief while, the boss activated his {Earth Shield} once again, shielding himself up once again, slowing down their pace even further! Fortunately for them, this boss did not have any skills that could recover his health bar. If he started reversing the damage they were dealing on him, it would become impossible to defeat the boss!

95%, 90%, 85%... the health bar of Rogalli was reducing at a snail's pace.

Finally, two minutes later, the health bar of the boss had been reduced down to 80%!

"Spirits that wander in the air, heed my summons, and gather to me!" Rogalli raised his staff into the air and began to chant the {Elemental Disruptive Bomb}. Once again, 5 light beams of iridescent brightness swam around Rogalli.

"It's the {Elemental Disruptive Bomb} again!" After the spell for the {Elemental Disruptive Bomb} was complete, the boss directed the light beam straight towards Zhang Yang, with his staff pointed at Zhang Yang! This skill is extremely deadly!

It's now or never, swim or sink! Activating {Last Vigor}!

Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall} was still on cooldown period, so he had no choice left, but to activate his second life-saving skill - {Last Vigor}!

Zoom! His maximum health points immediately soared up to 118,100 points in an instant!

‘-97,894!’

The {Elemental Disruptive Bomb} exploded right on Zhang Yang, inflicting him with a damage value that was enough to instantly kill 99% of tankers in the entire game, at the current stage of the game! Whether it be the defense or the damage absorption, it means nothing when put before this absolutely high damage value! Instead, the passive skill of the tanker, which reduced 20% of the damage received could actually offer an unexpectedly great effect!

After the attack, Zhang Yang was left with only about 20,000 health points!

Han Ying Xue quickly placed a {Holy Shield} onto Zhang Yang, and focused on healing him up as quickly as possible.

"Elemental of Water, wandering in the air, please accept my greetings, and battle for me!" Rogalli raised up his staff once again, but this time, puddles of water emerged on the surface of the ground, one after another, forming something humanoid. The crystal clear water still flowed smoothly around in the human form, which made them rather bizarre.

After these humanoid creatures were completely formed, the remaining puddles on the ground were absorbed by the humanoid water creatures, vanishing. They started to walk towards Zhang Yang and the ladies in a random formation. They weren't even fast.

[Death Water Elemental] (Normal, Summon)

Level: 1

HP: 50

Defense: 0

Note: If you are wise, you will not attack these dangerous creatures, and you will definitely not want them to touch you!

In {{God's Miracle}}, things that seem harmless are usually the most dangerous things in the game! Even if there wasn't such an indirect warning in the note attached, Zhang Yang and the ladies would not even try to attack, or touch these weird creatures. They had experienced this many times already with similar monsters, this had to be a trap!

"Will we die instantly if we touched these things?" Wei Yan Er asked.

"I'm 80% sure that we will die if we do touch them! Do you still remember what happened on the Island of the Sacred One? Fatty



Han really got us into trouble, there!" Daffodil Daydream nodded.

However, this time, the black whirlpools did not vanish from the ground, they were still on the ground, jabbing out more the stone pikes, leaving players with lesser places to stand in the entire area.

"Die! Just die!" Rogalli laughed madly as he fired more black skulls at Zhang Yang, one after another. That had been the most regular and frequent attack that the boss have been using throughout the entire battle. It was like the automatic attack of a physical type boss.

"The boss should enter a new Phase when he loses another 20% of his health bar!" Zhang Yang went around a pillar to get out of the boss' sight, forcing the boss to move around to get a better aim. He went around the pillars for a few times, waiting for those Death Water Elemental to approach. When these summoned monsters circled around the pillar, he ran to another pillar, not far from the previous one, sending the monsters on a wild goose chase.

"Holy sh\*t, this is just Phase 2, and we already have to evade stone pikes and water elementals! What kind of nonsense do we have to deal with, in Phase 3, Phase 4, and Phase 5!" Han Ying Xue was already crying in misery.

"Guildmaster, your quest is definitely not an S-rank quest! It must be at least an SSSSS-rank, it's crazy!" Daffodil Daydream was also making complaints.

Zhang Yang had already kited the boss far away from the location

of the boss. The four ladies followed closely from behind. However, [Mythical Turtle] had short flaps! It was going nowhere! But Turtle was extremely lucky. Although it was slowly walking towards the boss, it miraculously did not step onto any of the black whirlpools that appeared across the ground!

However, one of the Death Water Elementals had caught up with Turtle, and reached out towards Turtle with a watery arm! With a gentle touch, the Death Water Elemental suddenly turned into a stream of clear water, and flowed into the body of Turtle!

Boom!

In less than 1 second, the [Mythical Turtle] was turned into a landmine explosion! The pieces of Turtle were splattered across a circular area, with a radius of 30 meters!

"Oh my god, this is terrifying!" Wei Yan Er patted her heart in alarm.

"I'd rather get skewered by the stone pikes anytime soon!" everyone was nodding to agree on that point.

Previously, the gang had needed to dodge the stone pike attacks from the ground. It had already got in the way of their movements so extensively that they could hardly dish out any damage! Now they had to evade a bunch of Death Water Elementals as well! It was getting even more out of hand! The gang had only managed to reduce the health bar of the boss down to 60%, after 4 minutes of hellish nightmare. The boss was now entering Phase 3!

The moment the boss entered Phase 3, Rogalli launched another {Elemental Disruptive Bomb} at Zhang Yang!

But this time, the cool down period of Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall} had already ended. So, Zhang Yang handled the attack with ease.

It seems that the boss would only launch his {Elemental Disruptive Bomb} whenever he enters a new Phase. Having gotten familiar with the sequences of the boss, things have gotten much smoother. The cool down period of Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall} was only 3 minutes long. So, whenever they have taken out 19% of the boss's health bar, all Zhang Yang had to do was to look at the remaining cool down period of his {Shield Wall}. If it was ready, then Zhang Yang and the gang could simply continue inflicting damage onto the boss. But if the cool down period was not over yet, all they needed to do was to halt their attacks, until Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall} was ready once again, before they resumed their assaults.

"Elementals of Fire, please listen to my proposal, and eliminate all of my enemies!" Rogalli began to use a new skill, in his new Phase.

Boom!

A wave of flame exploded right out from the body of the boss, causing a ring of fire to spread into the surroundings!

As the wave of flame rolled across the ground, Zhang Yang and

the ladies were all inflicted with a basic damage of about 25,000 points, each!

"What the hell! Ice and fire dual damage!" Zhang Yang roared frantically while stealing a glance at Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. He could not help but think that these two ladies were also like ice and fire! So, that meant that he had always been 'sandwiched' in between ice and fire, ever since he knew them!

# Chapter 453: Ring of Blazing Flame

---

Rogalli shook his body, turning into a 'Rocket man' launching a spray fireworks into the surroundings! He would send out a wave of flames across the area from time to time, giving Han Ying Xue a hard time!

Fortunately, Daffodil Daydream had already leveled her {Recovery Aura} up to Level 3, so everyone could heal 500 health points and 230 mana points every 3 seconds, lightening some of Han Ying Xue's workload. The recovery of 230 mana points every 3 seconds would also be turned into an abundance of hitpoints, thanks to the efficient catalytic converter that was Han Ying Xue.

Everyone in the party was beginning to get the flow of this super difficult battle. They were getting better and better in evading the hits, slowly bringing up their DPS!

Especially Wei Yan Er. Because of limited rage points, the rate of her using her rage points was not high at all during boss battles, so she couldn't unleash her full potential. But whenever she is engaged in battles with these kinds of AoE-happy bosses, she need not worry about running out of rage points! She only needed to wait until her skills were cooled down before she spams her skills again. There was nothing to worry about, she only had to throw every single skill onto the boss, and everything would be fine!

As a result, they actually managed to bring down the health bar of the boss down to only 41% within 3 minutes. Zhang Yang quickly told everyone to stop attacking, as the cool down period of his {Shield Wall} still needed ten seconds. If they pushed the boss

into his Phase 4 at that moment, one {Elemental Disruptive Bomb} would be enough to force Zhang Yang to activate his {Last Vigor} to stay alive.

But {Last Vigor} would not reduce the amount of damage received. If the boss had any new super skills that can hit really hard in Phase 4, then Zhang Yang would be doomed! Well, one must be cautious when crossing a road, no matter if the traffic is busy or not. It would be best to stop and look at both directions of the road before crossing. As a wiseman once said, 'Better late than dead'. So, it was unwise to put himself into a dangerous situation just to save 10 seconds!

40%!

"Spirits of the air, heed my summons and gather to me!" the moment Rogalli entered his 4th Phase, he immediately began chanting the {Elemental Disruptive Bomb}. This skill was meant to take out the tanker and throw the party into disarray. If this skill could be activated without incantation, no party would stand a chance!

During Phase 4, the boss had another AOE skill - {Shadow Bomb}. But, this skill shared a common cool down period with {Tidal Flame}, and the damage of this skill is slightly higher than {Tidal Flame}. Therefore, although the difficulty of this battle was increased, it did not put too much pressure on Han Ying Xue. She still healed them all up fine.

The five of them were getting more familiar with the pattern of the battle. After another 3 minutes, and they had reduced the

health bar of the boss down to 21%.

Zhang Yang tried to 'suppress' the fire power of the entire party for awhile, until the cool down period of his {Shield Wall} was over. Then only, did they push the boss into his Phase 5, which was also the 'Slaughter Stage' of a boss fight!

"Argh ---" Rogalli suddenly became enraged to the point that he had cracked his voice. After nuking Zhang Yang with an {Elemental Disruptive Bomb}, Rogalli activated another new Super Skill for his Phase 5. A green shroud began to emerge from his body and spread across the area, clouding up the entire area. Zhang Yang and the ladies were afflicted with an additional negative effect.

[Paralytic Poison Shroud]: Inflicts 1,000 Nature Damage to all enemies every 3 seconds. There was a 10% rate of paralyzing the enemy, lasts for 10 seconds. The effect of paralysis can be lifted.

After reading the description of the {Paralytic Poison Shroud}, Han Ying Xue immediately let out a miserable scream. Her 'workload' was about to get real heavy!

The damage of the {Paralytic Poison Shroud} is not that high itself. The {Recovery Aura} could already negate half of that damage. However, when the paralysis effect of the {Paralytic Poison Shroud} strikes the players, things would be much harder for the players as the movement of the players will be restricted. Players would not die if they are touched by the black whirlpools, but they would be torn to pieces if they ever get touched by any of the Death Water Elementals!

The final stages of a battle would be the time to see the full prowess of a healer. All Han Ying Xue needed to do was to make sure that her healing skills are activated accordingly, at the correct timing. She needed to make sure that the health bar(s) of the tanker(s) in her party do(es) not go below the danger point, and she also needed to make sure that other party members do not die. Although all of them had their own skills, capable of countering the Status Restriction skill, the cool down period for the skills were just too long. They should only activate their skills as a last resort!

After the health bar of the boss had been reduced below 20%, the damage output of the party was increased by a little, and they were using every single skills that can 'Slaughter'. In just a brief while, under the bombardment of their fire power, the health bar of the boss was already reduced down to only 10%!

Rogalli finally felt a sense of fear. He began to increase his speed in activating his skills! Other than that, the movement speed of the Death Water Elementals had also increased by a notch, making the battle even harder than before!

"We can do this! We're strong!" The party members started encouraging each other.

8%, 6%, 4%... the health bar of the boss was getting shorter by the second! And now, there were only a few 'drops' of health points left!

"F\*ck him up! Humph! Use your everything on him!" Han Ying



Xue was shouting and 'humming' in frustration!

Zhang Yang heard the way she shouted and had to crack a smile. Then he sent a private message to Han Ying Xue, "You were also 'humming' me like this when we were in my room."

"You 'bust-tart'!" Han Ying Xue instantly blushed.

3%! 2%! 1%!

"No ---" Rogalli roared in a thunderous but terrified voice, before he collapsed onto the ground, dead.

The moment Rogalli was killed, all of the black whirlpools and the Death Water Elementals in the surrounding vanished without a trace. Everything went so quiet, as if no battle had even occurred in the area before! But, the three equipment that Rogalli dropped on the ground radiated with mesmerizing lights. One of them was a Leather Armor that glittered gold, another was a dark green helmet, and last but not least, was a ring surrounded by a lightly flame.

Wei Yan Er went up to pick up the coins while Zhang Yang went on to pick up the equipment, one after another. The first equipment they looked at was the Leather Armor.

[Scaly Breast Plate] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +302

Strength: +121

Agility: +274

Equip: Increases your damage and healing effect by 2%.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

Zhang Yang looked at Sun Xin Yu, but Sun Xin Yu shook her head and pointed at her chest, implying that she already had a better set of armor equipped. Somehow Zhang Yang's lingered on her magnificent mounds instead.

If it was another beautiful lady, he could easily tear his eyes away. But, the situation was much more different when it came to Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. These two beautiful ladies were his 'crushes'! There was nothing shameful in men admiring their crushes!

Sun Xin Yu blushed as she noticed Zhang Yang 'drooling' at her through his eyes. Han Ying Xue was not too happy about it, so she cut in by coughing pointedly, a few times. The jealousy towards each other began to surge in the shadow.

Since the Leather Armor was not desired by anyone, Zhang Yang could only slide it into his inventory and continued to look at the two pieces of equipment that were still lying on the ground. So, he started by looking at the dark green helmet.

[Deadly Fate Helmet] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +712

Strength: +471

Agility: +191

Equip: Increases your damage and healing effect by 4%.

Equip: Increases your Maximum Health Points by 1,000 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

Wei Yan Er did not wait for Zhang Yang to open up his mouth, she was already repeatedly bobbing her head up and down, "I want it! I want it!"

"Little girl, this is actually an awesome helmet, man! Just look at the additional Strength! This power, this agility! And it also increases your Maximum Health Point by 1,000 points! Wow! This is really the best of the best! So how can you just take it like that! You must offer something in return, man!" Zhang Yang tried to trick the gullible brat!

"You're really bad! If you try to bully me again, I shall tell everyone about what you and cousin-sister did after dinner!" Wei Yan Er whispered into Zhang Yang's ear and threatened Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang was really shocked, but after giving it some thought, how would the little brat even know what happened behind his closed door? She had to be bluffing! But his initial intention was to tease the little girl just a little. If he unintentionally provoked her, and she goes on telling nonsense to everyone, then he shall be exposed to a risk where Sun Xin Yu might get very angry, at his peril!

Zhang Yang just laughed and passed the [Deadly Fate Helmet] over to Wei Yan Er.

Meanwhile, the little girl was smiling and wrapped her arms round Zhang Yang's shoulder, forcing him to stoop down. While acting all brotherly with Zhang Yang, she said, "Noob tank, you can just put away all your worries. I will keep you and sister Snow's secret nicely. As long as you make more of my favorite dishes, and buy me more gifts in the future."

Zhang Yang could only shake his head helplessly. Then, he picked the ring up from the ground.

[Ring of Blazing Flame] (Violet-Platinum, Ring)

Vitality: +176

Intelligence: +116

Spirit: +116

Equip: Increases your fire magic damage, maximum of 150 damage points.

Equip: Increases Maximum Mana Points by 500 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

"Wow, this boss is really generous! He actually dropped another piece of fine equipment for us!" Han Ying Xue spoke with an exaggerated face. Then, she took the ring over and examined it, "It's really beautiful!"

This ring was indeed a fine craft!

Although the basic attributes of the ring could only be considered as middle-tiered, but the two additional effects were really awesome! One increased additional damage, while the other one added Maximum Mana Points, which could lead to an increase of the damage output, or increases the endurance of one's capability. If there was one thing lacking on the ring, it did not add health points, and that was a small matter!

"Sister Daffodil, congratulations on acquiring a fine ring!" Wei Yan Er snatched the ring from him and tossed it at Daffodil Daydream, beaming a wide grin, "On behalf of noob tank, I hereby present this gift to you! So, pretty face, you are mine now!"

"You little girl!" Daffodil Daydream was more of a shy person, so she stamped the ground in embarrassment, blushing.

After picking up 3 pieces of equipment, Zhang Yang kicked the dead body of the boss aside and he discovered another item, a Skill Book, with a crimson red hardcover!

[Skill Book: Fatal Strike Aura]

Use: Teaches you the skill {Fatal Strike Aura}.

Required Profession: None

Required Level: 90

Among the five of them, only Sun Xin Yu had not acquired any

Aura Skills. So, this Aura Skill Book would naturally be hers. Only one player could activate one Aura Skill at a time, and everyone in the same party could enjoy the effect of the Aura Skill as well. There was no point fighting over it at all.

Sun Xin Yu learned the skill {Fatal Strike Aura} and posted the description of the skill onto the party channel for everyone to see.

[Fatal Strike Aura] (Level 1): Adds 1% critical rate of all party members that are within the effective range of the aura effect. Range of effective area: 30-meter radius circular area having the user as the center point. The effect will last until the user is dead or when the effect vanishes automatically. You can only activate one Aura Skill at the same time.

An increment of 1% critical rate for one player was not really much, but when everyone on the party is boosted with a 1% increase in their critical rate, then the situation would be very different. Furthermore, this was just a Level 1 Aura Effect. Until the Aura Skill is leveled up to 10, there should be at least an increment of 10% critical rate by then!

Other than that, Rogalli had also dropped a piece of [Middle-tier Aura Stone]. The stone was taken by Daffodil Daydream, which was later used to level up her {Recovery Aura} up to Level 4. Now, her Aura Skill could restore 800 health points and 300 mana points every 3 seconds. It had become even more practical than before!

## Chapter 454: 'Civil War' in the Imperial Sky

---

After picking up the loots, the dead body of the Rogalli vanished without a trace. The five of them went back to the place where they had first encountered the boss, and made their way down the the fourth floor of Treasure Cove.

"Little Yang! Let me tell you a great piece of news!" right after Zhang Yang and the ladies stepped foot into the passage, Zhang Yang received a voice message from Fatty Han.

"What is it?" Zhang Yang was not really interested to find out, as he knew Fatty Han a little too well to know that most of his 'great' news were either baseless rumors, or idle gossip. His news was of no help.

Fatty Han laughed and tried to build up his story dramatically, but he had always been a 'big mouthed' person! So, he let the words slipped out of his mouth after a brief while, "One Sword Stroke and Liu Wei have turned on each other!"

"Hmm!" Zhang Yang widened his eyes. That really caught his interest! So he quickly pressed, "How did you know about this?"

"My god! Someone exposed this 'scandal' at the forum, and that someone is one of the high-tiered members of Imperial Sky!"

Was it because One Sword Stroke no longer had any value to Liu Wei, and now Liu Wei was trying to end their 'honeymoon'? Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and then he asked, "How did



they end up turning against each other in the first place?"

"Hehe! I heard that it's because of one woman!"

"What?"

"According to the rumors flying around in the forum, One Sword Stroke had laid his hands on Liu Wei's girlfriend! In the end, they were caught red-handed by Liu Wei, in bed! The two of them actually got into a fistfight, right in her face! Hehe! That's really messed up man! Haha! This Liu Wei tried to 'steal' Imperial Sky over for himself, but ended up getting his girlfriend stolen by One Sword Stroke! Ironical, poetic justice!" Fatty Han burst out laughing.

Zhang Yang was shocked. Were they talking about a girlfriend? So is it possible that they were talking about Luo Xin Yan? He quickly asked Fatty Han, "Do you know the name of his girlfriend?"

"Her name is erm... Luo something... Xin something... You see... I can't really remember, you know how my brain works."

"Luo Xin Yan?"

"Right! That's right! Her name is Luo Xin Yan! Wait, how do you know?" Fatty Han asked as he was very curious, but immediately came up with an assumption and said, "So, you already saw that post earlier on! Gah, why did you try to make me happy? You should have told me from the start!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I haven't seen the post yet, but I do know that this Liu Wei does have a girlfriend. Carry on! Tell me more!"

Fatty Han also 'knew' that Zhang Yang had his reasons for hating Liu Wei. After all, Zhang Yang was almost played out by Liu Wei, barely making it to the Soaring Sword Competition in Shang Hai! So, Fatty Han would not be surprised if Zhang Yang had been keeping an eye on Liu Wei.

Then he continued, "But! Liu Wei is also not simple in other regards. After he left Imperial Sky, he took a large number of players along with him and formed his own guild. I think the name of his guild is 'The Myth'. Hate to admit it, but it sounds awesome!"

The Myth?

Zhang Yang felt a terrifying chill down his spine. In this life, although Liu Wei had been progressing very differently in 'God's Miracle' under Zhang Yang's influence, but in some aspects, they were uncannily similar! The guild that Liu Wei had founded in his previous life was also called 'The Myth'!

"Oh, I see. So, how about One Sword Stroke? Did he say anything at all?"

"Of course he's mad! He began a quarrel with that son of the beach Liu Wei!" Fatty Han laughed. Be it Liu Wei or One Sword Stroke, Fatty Han had always hated these two guys. So now that

these two were quarreling with each other like a cat and a dog, of course he would be satisfied watching the ‘drama’ progress, "Now that the two guilds are hurling insults at each in the forums, some ‘bored’ people have joined in and have added some ‘seasoning’ to the fight, making situation even ‘better’! Haha! Now, the forum is chaotic, thanks to them!"

Zhang Yang was at a loss on whether to cry or to laugh. His initial intention was to send Luo Xin Yan to Liu Wei, hoping to plant an eye and an ear next to Liu Wei, so that he would truly be able to keep an eye and ear on Liu Wei’s every single move! With that, he could at least prevent that son of the beach from planning in the dark! But now that things had escalated to a whole new level, his move of sending the girl to Liu Wei had led to the ‘dissolution’ of the gay partnership between Liu Wei and One Sword Stroke!

But now, One Sword Stroke should be the one Liu Wei hates the most! No men could ever endure the sensation of being cuckolded! Liu Wei, likely to harbor a grudge for a long time, would surely think of a way of ‘handling’ One Sword Stroke’. So he shouldn’t be planning any evil schemes on Zhang Yang for at least a brief period of time.

In other perspectives, Zhang Yang and One Sword Stroke did not really hate each other as much. Imperial Sky and Lone Desert Smoke had been rivals since the earlier stages of the game. Competition between guilds was inevitable. No one would like to play second fiddle. If Zhang Yang was in the other man’s position, he would have also done anything to crush his rivals, making his Lone Desert Smoke, the best guild in the entire China server!

The survival of the fittest applied to all online games. The strong would step over the weak. This phenomenon was very common in all online games!

But, who would have thought the almighty number one tanker in the entire China server had once fallen into a love trap with Luo Xin Yan, in his previous life! Although Zhang Yang had been rivals One Sword Stroke for so long, Liu Wei had been the perpetrator of most of it. He actually had deep respect for One Sword Stroke's capabilities! But, to think that One Sword Stroke would actually steal other people's 'wife', that was really something that Zhang Yang could not understand!

Zhang Yang shook his head and decided to put his thoughts on the matter aside. His main focus at the moment was to clear the entire Treasure Cove!

After walking down a few flights of stairs, Zhang Yang and the ladies arrived at the fourth floor of the Treasure Cove.

"Rawh ---" The moment they walked out of the stairwell, a large white skeletal tiger lunged out from a dark corner by the stairs and bit Wei Yan Er. 'Crack!' The skeletal tiger left four teeth marks on the armor of the little girl!

'-14,216!'

Wei Yan Er was inflicted with a high damage value in an instant! She had almost immediately lost 25% of her health bar!

## [Starving White Skeletal Tiger] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 95

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 2,000

Note: Pet of the First Prince, Jesse Rogue. After a long period of time, this creature has turned into a Spectre. But they have never forgotten their natural instinct, that is to feed!

The surroundings were too dark. Only after the little girl was attacked did Zhang Yang realize that they were being ambushed! He then quickly 'Displayed' the special visual effect of his Titan Set Armor, radiating in a mesmerizing holy light, that made him look like a god that had descended down from the heavens. His holy light then shone 2 to 3 meters out, illuminating everything around the area.

Zhang Yang let out a thunderous roar and activated {Provoke} on the White Skeletal Tiger. The White Skeletal Tiger immediately charged towards him right after that. With his sword raised, Zhang Yang inflicted the White Skeletal Tiger with a damage of about 4,000 points, and instantly hooked the aggro of the monster over to him.

His basic damage ranged from 4,168 to 4,568, but the {Strength Aura} of Wei Yan Er was already at Level 4 right now, along with

the title of 'Divine Radiance of the Warriors,' which allowed him to deal an additional 10% damage to all demons and spectre type monsters. With all the buffs on him, his normal attacks ranged from 4,568 to 5,025 points!

The White Skeletal Tiger was afraid of pain, so it immediately let out an intimidating roar of a tiger. With its mouth opened wide, the monster revealed four long and sharp fangs, and it leaped towards Zhang Yang.

"You stinky tiger! How dare you put holes in my armor! I'm not through with you!" Wei Yan Er was raging with fury as she screamed at the tiger.

"The tiger had only bitten you once, why are you so mad about it?"

"... Wu wu wu... this stinky tiger did some damage to my armor and the durability of my armor has dropped by 1%!" Wei Yan Er revealed a miserable and bitter expression on her face as she violently hacked the White Skeletal Tiger up.

When the durability of an equipment drops, players would have to spend coins to repair it. That was the main reason why the little girl was so mad about it! Asking her to spend coins or money was like asking a tiger to lose its teeth!

The White Skeletal Tiger was quickly hammered into a pulp under the combined attacks of the party! The skeletal body of the tiger shattered into pieces across the ground, and dropped a

Yellow-Gold shield!

[Tiger-Tooth Thorny Shield] (Yellow-Gold, Shield)

Defense: +1,008

Vitality: +504

Equip: Absorbs 344 damage.

Equip: Reflects 100 physical damage when engaged with melee attacks.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

"Wahaha! This is a fitting compensation for biting me so hard!" Wei Yan Er smiled while she took the shield and placed it into her inventory.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "One Yellow-Gold shield could at least earn us 40,000 to 50,000 gold coins you know. How much gold coins would it take for you to repair that 1% damage of your armor?"

"... although it doesn't require that much gold coins to repair my

armor, I was emotionally affected, I scared sh\*tless, mind you! So the remaining balance shall be the compensation for my emotional trauma!" Wei Yan Er tried to justify her words.

The party continued to move forward. The design of the fourth floor was a little different from the third floor. The walls in the surroundings did not have lit-up torches on them, not even one. There were no pillars that looked like fluorescent light tubes to support the ceiling of the floor as well. Every corner of the floor was just dark. Only god knew what kinds of monsters lurked in the darkness.

Fortunately, the special effect of Zhang Yang's Titan Set Armor was a great deal of help. Although it illuminated the surroundings by about 2 to 3 meters, at least they won't be completely blind. Whenever a monster lunged out from the darkness, the party could react in time.

"Wooh!" Another roar of a wolf was heard, followed by the appearance of a large, white skeletal wolf. This time, the monster had pounced at Han Ying Xue! While it was still flying through the air, it opened its foul mouth and was ready to bite Han Ying Xue off! The foul smell from the mouth spread across the air and threw everyone off!

Zhang Yang was prepared for the moment. He would not let the monster get what it wanted. He lifted a leg up and sent it flying into the buttocks of the white skeletal wolf, knocking it off its flight pattern!

"Wow! That was very cool!" Wei Yan Er's eyes glittered as she



praised Zhang Yang. Such was a perfect example of a perfect 'Supporting Attack'. It could actually dissolve a monster's attack without the need of activating any skill!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Little girl, you should train on this as well!" With a quick flick of his hand, he launched a {Spear of Obliteration} at the wolf.

"Rawgh---" the lunge attack of the white skeletal wolf was interrupted mid-air, then it got struck by Zhang Yang straight away even before it could regain its stance. The monster let out a raging roar and began to lunge at Zhang Yang. The large body was like a dark cloud, hovering over Zhang Yang as it lunged towards him.

However, such elite monsters only had longer health bars and higher attack power compared to other regular monsters. Against the insanely equipped party of Zhang Yang, they were swiftly reduced to dust.

Unfortunately, this monster did not drop anything. Naturally, the little girl sulked.

The party went on forth, having no knowledge of how many more monsters lurked in the dark corners of the floor. Monsters lunged at them from time to time, sometimes it was a tiger, sometimes a leopard, and sometimes a wolf, or even a lion! These monsters would lunge at them, and Zhang Yang would just use his 'Supporting Attack' to counter them. As the 'Supporting Attack' was really effective and successful against the monsters, the ladies clearly saw its use, and were greatly motivated to start practicing

them!

After spending about seven to eight hours, the party had finally reached the end of the floor, and Zhang Yang had also earned tons of experience points, which was sufficient for them to hit Level 98! He was about to reach Level 100 real soon!

"Silly Yu, you're about to reach Level 100!" Looking at the flashy stream of golden light streaming through Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue asked, "So, the first to get into the Chaos Realm will get a definitive advantage in the game right?"

Zhang Yang nodded as he added the 5 free attribute points that he had just earned from leveling up, channeling them to his Vitality. But the truth was that, at the current stage of the game, with their immense Violet-Platinum equipment, such basal attribute points hardly made any difference! For example, when a player reaches Level 100, they would only have 500 free attribute points. One piece of Violet-Platinum helmet could already add 1000+ vitality attribute points. So, when players reach the standards of Mythical, Ethereal or greater tier already, then the free attribute points would barely make any difference.

Then Zhang Yang went on to say, "The first thing that we should focus on after getting into the Chaos Realm is to secure one Territory. Then, it will become much more convenient for our guild members to step into the Chaos Realm. And of course, more income!"

The four ladies agreed with what he said, and they nodded in unison. A Territory is like a money printing machine! They have

already experienced the benefits of it.

The party pushed forward for some distance before they saw a large humanoid skeleton glowing luminously in the dark! This skeleton was about 10 meter tall! Every single one of the bones looked like fluorescent tubes. It was such a strange, spooky sight!

[The First Prince, Jesse Rogue] (Violet-Platinum, Spectre)

Level: 100

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 2,900

"Haha! Another Violet-Platinum boss! So, after we have slain him, we should get enough gold coins to last us for at least a year or two!" Zhang Yang laughed.

"Guildmaster, are you really that short on money?" Daffodil Daydream was asking him, out of her own curiosity.

"Oh, when I'm living with so many '[Ah Jiaos](#)' in a plush apartment? I do need money, as much as possible!" Zhang Yang teased.

"You bastard (Bastard)!"

"Hoodlum!"

The ladies scolded Zhang Yang playfully, except for Wei Yan Er, as she could not understand what they were talking about, so she said, "I'm your sister-in-law, so I'm eligible to stay here for free, and eat here for free!"

Zhang Yang waved his sword and his shield, "Alright, let's move!"

As he charged towards that skeletal boss, he threw a {Spear of Obliteration} over and inflicted 4,867 damage on the boss.

"Who dares interrupt me while I'm deep in thought?" The boss roared in a thunderous voice as he began to walk towards Zhang Yang. As the boss had a luminous body, it made him a walking, visible lamp post of a target. It was a lighthouse, directing all blind ships to itself!

Crack!

The boss suddenly tore off one of its ribs and used it as a makeshift dagger! The tip of the 'dagger' shot towards Zhang Yang!

{Block}!

'-5894!'

‘-10000!’

‘-10000!’

‘-10000!’

‘-10000!’

Although Zhang Yang had raised up his shield to block against the attack of the boss, the rib bone blew up, and tiny pieces of the shattered bones shot out into the surroundings, inflicting everyone with damage of 10,000 on each of them! It was an AOE attack!

"I hate humans! They are just a bunch of hypocritical, filthy animals! No... they do not even deserve to be called animals either! They only deserve painful deaths!" Jesse Rogue let out a raging roar before he went on to ‘pluck’ another one of his rib bones off. Once again, he made to stab Zhang Yang!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Every single time when the boss stabbed Zhang Yang with his ‘rib bone dagger’, the ‘rib bone dagger’ would explode, 40 meters across the surroundings, and inflict damage to all targets within the effective range of the explosion. It wouldn’t hurt to mention that it hurt like hell too!

Fortunately, Han Ying Xue is a Priest, her speciality happened to be AoE healing, she could heal the entire party members at the

same time. With the additional support from the {Recovery Aura} of Daffodil Daydream, which had already been leveled up to Level 4, everyone in the party could recover 800 health points every 3 seconds! Although that amount of healing was not really that high, it came at such a rapid rate that the healing efficiency could not be underestimated!

The battle had already hit its peak point, not long after Zhang Yang and the ladies had engaged the boss. Han Ying Xue had already been put to work at full capacity. There was no slacking for this lazy woman!

1. Ah Jiao - means a mistress or a young wife (as in second/third wife).

# Chapter 455: Demon Blade of Death

---

Crack! Crack! Crack! Soon, all 12 ribs were all torn apart from its ribs, and it stood before them, a ribless spine.

Wei Yan Er laughed at the boss and said, "Stinky boss, let's see what else you can do now!"

Jesse Rogue let out a roar, and its entire body quivered for a very brief moment. 12 bones emerged right from his spine, forming a new set of rib cage! The boss had returned back to its initial form, which meant that the boss could tear off his rib bones one by one and attack them with that terrifying AOE attack again!

Wei Yan Er's jaw fell slack for one moment, and then she pointed at the boss furiously and said, "You stinky boss! You cheated!"

Crack! Jesse Rogue tore out another rib bone, held it firmly in his hand, and stabbed at Zhang Yang. As the rib bone blew up, everyone was inflicted with massive damage values.

"I have never seen a boss that loves torturing himself so much!" Han Ying Xue said.

"He's hurting himself, and we are the collaterals! Better not provoke a hard forced 'kid'!" Zhang Yang laughed.

Fortunately for them, Jesse Rogue had no other skills, other than these explosive ribs. But, this one attack was already powerful

enough to give Zhang Yang and the ladies a boatload of problems! Not only did it force Han Ying Xue to heal everyone frantically, even Zhang Yang was forced to activate his {Vanguard's Aggression} and {Sacrifice} on the ladies who were low on health, or could not be healed in time by Han Ying Xue. The party was already barely hanging on, if the boss added any new tricks, it would be over!

This boss was neither hard nor easy!

It was easy because Zhang Yang and the ladies did not have to pick and roll, or apply any tactical formations. On the other hand, the rib bone attacks left them no room for any evasive measures! Everyone could only stand still and endure the damage! Furthermore, the attack of the boss was extremely painful and consistent! One small mistake could cause the entire party to be wiped out as well!

It had been completely turned into a battle of pure firepower! So, Zhang Yang and the ladies could only hold on and do their best on the boss.

90%, 80%, 70%... the health bar of Jesse Rogue decreased rapidly, as rapidly as Han Ying Xue's. Without the [Level 4 Mana Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] that recovered 7,500 mana points in one go, and the Level 4 {Recovery Aura} of Daffodil Daycream, Han Ying Xue would have already fallen back, and the entire party would have been wiped out!

"Quickly! We must go faster!" Han Ying Xue cried out.



Her vulgar panting was like the mating calls of a wildcat. Fortunately for Zhang Yang, he had already ‘released’ once before he logged into the game, or else he might have lost it and shouted out into the sky like a ‘colorful wolf’!

There was nothing special about this battle at all. It was just simple but rough. There were no tactics or whatsoever, to begin with! All they could do was to focus on channeling their firepower at the boss until the battle ends! However, the tension of the battle was extremely high for Zhang Yang and the ladies. No one would want to be wiped out, while at the brink of slaying the boss! So none of them wanted to make any mistakes and get wiped out, only to repeat the entire battle again! That would be infuriating beyond words!

None of them held back on consuming their potions. All of them were gulping their [Level 4 Healing Potions (Grade 10 Transmutation)] like mad as they were battling the boss. The moment their cool down periods for Potion usage were over, they would quickly consume another [Level 4 Healing Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)]. There was no time at all to hesitate, in order to survive the boss battle! Their health had never been full since the battle began, not even with all the crazy buffs and healing!

60%, 50%, 40% ... the health bar of the boss was getting lesser and lesser by the seconds!

There were no other words to describe this battle, other than continuous slashing and continuous healing!

30%, 20%!

Here came the 'Slaughtering Stage' of the boss battle, and the damage output of the entire party was increased by a notch, which increased their speed in bringing down the health bar of the boss at a whole new level of efficiency!

10%! 6%! 1%!

Finally, Jesse Rogue let out a miserable scream, and his glowing skeletal body went dim, and then he collapsed onto the ground heavily. The boss dropped 3 pieces of equipment after he died. One of it was a pair of snowy white gloves, while the other was a darker red long knife with an ancient sense of style on it, and last but not least, a golden crown.

The five of them let out a breath of relief as they finally completed a restless battle! They finally made it through!

As usual, Wei Yan Er went up to pick up the coins and the equipment dropped by the boss, with a joyful smile on her face. The little girl picked up the gloves first, and then she posted the attributes of the equipment on the party channel.

[Silver Silk Gloves] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +168

Intelligence: +151

Spirit: +67

Equip: Increases 2% damage and healing effect.

Equip: Increases Maximum Mana Points by 500 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

"So, from Level 100 onwards, the attributes of the equipment are much more incredible, I'm assuming!" Han Ying Xue stepped forth and took the snowy white pair of gloves. She put them on and looked at her left and right hands, saying, "The basic attributes didn't change much, but the additional special effects really do have some kick in it! These gloves are almost as good as a Level 90 Violet-Platinum equipment!"

"Well, the normal monsters in the Chaos Realm are very strong to begin with. So if the developer did not power up the standards of the equipment, then most of the players will get blockaded at the Chaos Realm! The one factor that supports a game are the players, so it's actually wise for the game developers to be considerate for their players." Zhang Yang surmised, as he slid the gloves into his inventory.

Although this pair of gloves was almost as good as a Level 90 Violet-Platinum equipment, but there is still a difference between the two tiers. Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream already had Violet-Platinum tiered gloves, so of course they would have no interest in it. Zhang Yang could only see it in the form of coins in his Little Merchandise Shop.

Wei Yan Er went to pick the dark red long ancient looking knife. The handle of the knife was molted with stains, and they looked like bloodstains! In 'God's Miracle', there were no differences between a knife and a sword. They were all considered as Swords. Sometimes players could simply wonder, which designer in the game company came up with such a half-assed classification.

[Demon Blade of Death] (Violet-Platinum, Two-Handed Sword)

Attack: 3,020 - 3,620

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 873

Equip: Increases attack by 10%.

Equip: Increases Critical Rate by 3%.

Equip: After hitting your target, there is 1% to trigger the activation of {Death Rush}, inflicting all enemies within the range of 3X3 meter square with the effect of {The Pain of Death}, causing

1,000 Shadow Damage to the targets in every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds. The effects of {The Pain of Death} cannot be stack.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

After viewing the special effects of the weapon, Zhang Yang and the ladies were looking at each other, all of them were shocked!

10% increment of attack! 3% increment of Critical Rate! These two special effects already made the weapon ridiculously powerful! It also had an AoE special effect that dealt damage by a DoT basis! Against a large number of monsters, this weapon would be insane!

In other words, this was the two-handed version of [Dark Enigmatic Sword], and the attack of this weapon was so much higher than the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] itself! After all, the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] sort of 'stole' the AoE attack over as it's special effect. But this [Demon Blade of Death] was born with such a ridiculous special effect on its own!

Wei Yan Er was already staring at the weapon with her large glittering eyes, and she quickly said, "I hereby claim this weapon as mine! Haha!"

Zhang Yang laughed at her and said, "Tsk! Do you know how much money people are willing to pay for this weapon if we are selling it out? Look at the attributes, the additional damage that it

offers, and the additional Critical Rate that it offers! Look at it's overpowered, oppressive special effect! People would be willing to spend millions of dollars to buy it! You sure you don't want that money?"

"You're so miserly, noob tank! It's just a few million!" Wei Yan Er hugged the [Demon Blade of Death] as tightly as she could, as if she was worrying that Zhang Yang would jump over and snatch the weapon away from her.

The four of them started laughing at the little girl, as it was really rare for her to actually think of other people being stingy! It was such a rare scene!

Other than the little girl, none of them could wield a two-handed weapon, so the [Demon Blade of Death] was Wei Yan Er's to take.

Lastly, it was time to review the golden crown.

[Brilliant Crown] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +704

Strength: +202

Agility: +463

Equip: Increases 5% damage and healing effect.

Equip: Increases Maximum Health Point by 1,000 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

"Ice Queen, looks like you've struck the jackpot. This is one fine piece of Leather Armor!" Zhang Yang passed the [Brilliant Crown] over the Sun Xin Yu.

"So true! Congratulation, Sin Yu!" Daffodil Daydream praised and congratulated her.

Sun Xin Yu was satisfied with her new crown. So, she kept it in her inventory for the moment, as she still needed to grind her level up by 5 levels before she was eligible to equip it.

Other than the 3 fine pieces of equipment, Jesse Rogue also 'gifted' them with a [Middle-tier Aura Stone]. This dungeon seemed to really hand out [Middle-tier Aura Stones]. As they had acquired one [Middle-tier Aura Stone] from each of the boss, the total tally had already reached 3 [Middle-tier Aura Stones]. This time, the stone was given to Han Ying Xue, increasing the survivability of the party even further.

However, time was already up right before they were about to open up the entrance to the fifth floor of Treasure Cove. Before they could actually open up the entrance, they were already teleported out from the realm.

Zhang Yang was not in a hurry to enter the fifth floor, because all of their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, and some Super Skills were still on cool down period. So, it would be wiser for them to wait it out before going back to the fifth floor of the Treasure Cove. After all, they were about to engage with the Final boss of the Treasure Cove, it would really be disadvantageous to go in without their Super Skills ready.

While preparing for the final battle in the Treasure Cove, Zhang Yang gave a call to Luo Xin Yan in an attempt to pry about the details concerning Liu Wei and One Sword Stroke. After talking for awhile, Zhang Yang only found out that Luo Xin Yan had only expanded her appetite. She no longer had the intentions of being an underground lover of Liu Wei. She was aiming to become a rich and aboveboard wife now! It was so much better than being an underground mistress!

Liu Wei was clearly never going to marry her on paper. One Sword Stroke was different. Although he was also a spoiled rich kid in a powerful family, he was not as lowly as Liu Wei! Luo Xin Yan managed to seize this opportunity. She would often reveal some classified business information that she got from Liu Wei, straight to One Sword Stroke. That was how the family business of One Sword Stroke, the Sky and Ocean Electronics was able to earn so much money!



Furthermore, Luo Xin Yan was really good in bed. With her skills, she could definitely ‘enrapture’ him, until he lost sight of everything! That was most probably how she made him her little b\*tch, fulfilling all her needs and wants.

So apparently, Luo Xin Yan was willing to accept the call, only because she wanted revenge. Previously, Zhang Yang had humiliated her so much during the interview. So, she called back and said, "Zhang Yang, do you still remember when I took off everything and stood naked in front of you? You actually didn't want my body, even after I had shoved my pussy straight up at you. Now that I'm about to become a wife to the boss of a very prominent company, do you regret not f\*cking me up when you had the chance?"

"But there's nothing left to say, even if you regret it now! Don't ever call me, or I'll call the police!"

Pak! She hung up right after she finished her words.

Zhang Yang could only shake his head again and again without saying a word. Still, he had to give it to her. She had played her cards well. She definitely had sharp and unique eyes, to actually mark One Sword Stroke as her ‘target’ in the first place. Indeed, One Sword Stroke was the best of the best in {{God's Miracle}}. He was earning about 400 million to 500 million a year, inclusive of all sponsorship fees and endorsement fees throughout the year. He was also the spokesman for his own company, even before his company was successful. So he was considered as one of the ‘real deal’ in the business industries!

Unfortunate for him, One Sword Stroke had always been oppressed by Zhang Yang in this life. Well, he had constantly been the ‘permanent runner-up,’ for more than half a year already, because of Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang logged into the game again and went straight to the Auction House to purchase a large number of [Herbs], restocking the [Potions] for the upcoming battles. This time, Zhang Yang got lucky! Finally, he has found the recipe for the [Zombie Potion]! So he successfully secured the recipe with 30,000 gold coins in the Auction house.

[Zombie Potion] (Consumable)

Use: If you die when the [Zombie Potion] is still effective, you will be turned into a zombie temporarily to continue the battle. Zombie effect lasts for 30 seconds. After you are turned into a Zombie, you will ignore all attacks, but you can be controlled with Status Restriction Skill. The effects of [Zombie Potion] will last for 1 hour.

# Chapter 456: Queen Madisha

---

Zhang Yang went straight to the warehouse of his guild, and took out all of the [Zombie Moss], and turned them into tons of [Zombie Potion]. Thanks to his {Alchemist's Intuition}, he had also made some transmuted [Zombie Potions]

The transmuted [Zombie Potions] did not only increase the duration of users being transformed into zombies, they also increased the attack of the users after they are being zombified. So, a [Zombie Potion] with Grade 1 Transmutation only gave an additional 5% attack to a player, when the player is zombified. For every increasing level of transmutation, the damage of the zombified players would increase by 5%. So, the highest amount of attack value a zombified player could get would be a total of 50%. This meant that when a player is using a [Zombie Potion] with the highest grade of transmutation, an additional 50% attack would be added on top of the basic attack of the player. That was the limit to it since the highest transmutation grade was only Level 10.

Unfortunately, the [Zombie Potions] that Zhang Yang had made were all Grade 1 and Grade 2 Transmutation only, which could only provide players an additional of 5%, 10% attack. The best he had at the moment were Grade 4s, and he only had managed to make 2 of them.

But it would still be a gain no matter what. It doesn't matter who dies in a battle, as long as they had consumed a [Zombie Potion] before they die, they could all continue to attack, or heal for the next 30 seconds! Zhang Yang and his party were about to engage in battle with the final boss! Now that they have these [Zombie Potions], it would surely be much easier for them to clear out the

final floor and slay the boss!

After the cool down periods of their respective {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} were all over, Zhang Yang recruited the ladies back to the party and activated the last entry chance of the [Dimensional Key].

Pak!

Soon after Zhang Yang and the ladies entered the portal before them, the [Dimensional Key] began to crack a little, and the key began to disperse into dust and flew across the air.

If they are unable to slay the boss within the remaining 12 hours in the realm, Zhang Yang would never have to chance to come back to this realm, ever again! And since that this quest was a one-time quest, this quest, which could possibly grant him the [Ancient Godly Weapon, Meteor Sword], shall forever remain forever incomplete, and no one else would ever get the chance to complete it as well!

Rushing through the corridors of the palace and entering the Treasure Cove chamber, the timer started counting down from 12 hours.

Going through the fourth floor until the end, Zhang Yang and the ladies had came well-prepared this time. They had purchased [Torches] this time. The entire floor was really dark and they had zero visibility. It would be wiser to use the [Torches] and grant them limited vision. Each of them held a [Torch] in their hands,

and they split up to search for the entrance to the fifth floor. As they had already cleared the entire floor, they did not have to worry about monsters ambushing anymore. In just a brief moment, they had found their way to the fifth floor.

As they walked down the staircases before them that led them deeper down to the Treasure Cove, they saw the entrance to the fifth floor, and they were eager to see what lay beyond that. Everyone was struck with awe, and their breaths were taken away for a second at what lay before their eyes! Yes, this is what a real Treasure Chamber is supposed to look like! Every corner of the floor was filled with mountains of a cryptocrystalline variety of silicas, diamonds the size of fists, chests filled with jewelry and accessories! If this was the reality, even the richest folks of the world would feel shameful!

On top of that, there was a long rack of weapons along one of the walls of the chamber, and a variety of weapons, with weird looking designs. Every single one of the weapons radiated holy auras that were awe-inspiring! Just from the looks of it, these weapons seemed to at least be of legendary grades!

Right beside the long weapon rack, there was another equipment rack. It was stacked with heavy armors, leather armors, cloth armors, all types of armors and equipment! It was a marvelous scene to look at!

Zhang Yang tried to pick up one weapon from the weapon rack, and he had the shock of his life! The weapon could be equipped!

[Dragon Slayer] (Mythical, One-Handed Axe)

Attack: 4,135 - 4,735

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 1,584

Equip: Increases 20% damage dealt.

Equip: After striking your target, there is a 10% rate of increasing your strength by 1,000 points, lasts for 10 seconds.

Required Level: 110

Special addition: Reduces Required Level by 20 Levels.

Special restriction: Can only be used in the Treasure Cove, it will disappear once taken outside.

A Mythical tier weapon! Zhang Yang lost his breath for a moment there. All of the equipment and weapons could be equipped! Although they could not be taken out from Treasure Cove, but at the least, Zhang Yang and the ladies can take advantage of these equipment and weapons when battling the final boss!

The four ladies had also discovered that they could use the equipment. They were equally stunned.

Wei Yan Er simply grabbed hold of some leather armor pieces and heavy armors pieces, and then she equipped them up to check them out, "Wow! These are really some fine and powerful equipment! Let's stay here, and never leave this Treasure Cove, forever!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "It won't matter whether if they are White-Wood or Celestial tier equipment, if we can't get them out from Treasure Cove! So stop dreaming, and pick the best combinations possible, and get going. We have a boss to slay!"

The five of them went up and picked the equipment and weapons according to their Classes.

Of course, Zhang Yang would naturally pick the [Dragon Slayer] as his main weapon, while he also picked another Mythical tier shield as his secondary equipment.

[Shield of the Faceless Corrupter] (Mythical, Shield)

Defense: +3,960

Vitality: +3,880

Equip: Absorbs 1,428 damage when hit.

Equip: While being struck, there is a 10% rate of removing 100

defense points from the target.

Equip: Increases Maximum Health Points by 10,000.

Required Level: 110

Special addition: Reduces Required Level by 20 Levels.

Special restriction: Can only be used in the Treasure Cove, it will disappear after leaving the Treasure Cove.

After switching to the newly acquired Mythical Tier equipment and weapon, the total health points of Zhang Yang had reached a total of 219,820 points! His attack had reached 9,412 - 10,012!

Similarly, Han Ying Xue and the ladies had also experienced large improvements on their stats! Although they could not equip shields, and their health points, could not be compared to the health points of a tanker, but their health points had exceeded 150,000 points, with support from the {Vitality Aura}!

Now, the attack power, the survival capabilities and the healing capabilities of the party had sky-rocketed! Instead of feeling joyful, Zhang Yang was worried, "This is just too convenient to be true, the system would never give us so much help out of the blue. I'm going to assume that the final boss is incredibly powerful and difficult to deal with!"

"Well, that's true! The system suddenly giving each of us a



Mythical Tier weapon for free is already suspicious enough! The final boss must be at least a Mythical Tier boss!" Daffodil Daydream nodded and said.

The five of them recalled the final battle on the Island of the Sacred One. The appearance of a Level 110 Mythical Servant boss had really given them a hell of a time. Although the boss was only left with about 1,000,000 health points, they already had an extremely difficult time dealing with it with the boss. Of Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue hadn't used their paired skills {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}, they might have even failed their quest then.

The fear still lingered!

"We have no choice now. Even if there's a sea of fire and blades, we can only endure the pain, and charge through them!" Zhang Yang waved his battle axe and said, "Let's go and have a look at our final boss, see what kind of monster is it this time. Maybe it has 3 heads and 6 arms! Haha!"

"Even if it has 6 heads and 12 arms, I still have the confidence of chopping its heads off, period!" Wei Yan Er was filled with pride and confidence, as she thumped on her flat chest and said.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh at her, "Little girl, I think we have warned you many times already... if you really want them to 'bloom' nicely, stop hammering down your chest already! They're going to be concaved in at this rate!"

"You stinky noob tank!" Wei Yan Er stuck her tongue out at Zhang Yang, and turned her head away from Zhang Yang furiously, with a humph.

The five of them proceeded forward. There were no monsters at all on the fifth floor. It was strangely quiet and they could only hear their own footsteps. They could not help but to feel a chill down their spines! The four ladies started edging closer to Zhang Yang, making Zhang Yang look like a mother hen 'babysitting' four little chicks!

As they did not have to battle any monsters at all, the five of them arrived at the bottom of the Treasure Cove in about ten minutes. There, they finally encountered the final boss of the dungeon.

[Queen Madisha] (Mythical, Spectre)

Level: 110

HP: 33,000,000

Defense: 4,900

Note: The founder of Imperial Heaven Empire, the great Queen Madisha. She's well known to be full of conspiracies while being a total femme fatale. She can conquer any man with a charming blink. She is the one and only individual to have actually built an empire that united the world!

Madisha was clad in a magnificently glorious, royal robe. She had a crown on her head, and her body was truly hot and curvy. Her waist was so slender that people might be worried of strong winds actually blowing her torso off, snapping her by the waist! Her boobies were truly 'glorious'. Her hips and \*ss were finely shaped as well. Although she has already been transformed into a Spectre, but her appearance had not turned skeletal. She still remained as a beautiful and sexy female human, with a face that lived up to her description, there was an unexplained sense of seduction that mesmerized people, especially men, the moment they laid eyes on her!

She sat on a chair in front of a dressing table, with her back facing Zhang Yang and the ladies, as she combed her long straight hair in black with a very well refined comb. Everyone could see her pretty and mesmerizing face in the mirror.

Well, beauty is also a deadly weapon, and seduction is an even better poison. If Zhang Yang had not been staying with beauties like Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu, he might have fallen under the 'spell' of this seductive queen, falling to his knees to submit himself to her!

Han Ying Xue felt a sting in her ego, "Her ass is too huge! And her thighs are really thick! Her boobs must be fake!"

The other three ladies nodded to express their agreements as well! Because as pretty women themselves, it was just affronted to them!

"Silly Yu, go now! Burst the fake boobs of that thousand-year-old b\*tch!" Han Ying Xue shoved Zhang Yang's back.

"What the hell! You're such a hoodlum, a female hoodlum!" Zhang Yang took up his axe and charged at the boss.

The aggro range of Madisha was really vast. When Zhang Yang was about 30 meters from where she stood, she had already detected Zhang Yang and stood up from her chair. As she turned around, a lock of black hair shot out at the direction of Zhang Yang like a spear!

Zhang Yang quickly raised up his shield and 'Chiang'! The long hair clashed into the shield and let out a loud and sharp sound!

"What a handsome and strong man!" Madisha charged towards Zhang Yang and as she grabbed hold onto another lock of hair in her hand, she gave a small flick and the lock of hair became as hard as a spear made of something metallic! She shot the 'hair spear' straight at Zhang Yang's eye!

Zhang Yang was only able to prevent the spear from striking that vital part. The 'hair spear' still nicked his face, and blood started flowing.

Sun Xin Yu and the ladies surrounded the boss and began to launch their assault on Madisha. However, although they had already switched their equipment to Mythical Tier and gained a tremendous amount of strength, the damage that the boss received was still substantially reduced, as the level of the boss was at least

tens of times higher than their levels!

"I'm so lonely! You look strong, come, ravage me!" Madisha stuck out her moist, pink tongue as she gazed at Zhang Yang with glistening eyes, trying to tease Zhang Yang. Her attacks were totally contradicting her words, as she lashed out at him at full force! She coiled and lashed her hair spear at Zhang Yang, and every stab was not far from Zhang Yang's throat, ears, nose, and other vital parts!

"What the f\*ck! What a sick woman!" Zhang Yang tried his best to continue evading the blows. Although players would not die immediately even if they were struck in their vital spots, however, if their throats are pierced, players would not be able to drink [Potions]. If the eyes of the players are stabbed, then they would not be able to see. There will be about 10 seconds of 'recovery period'!

These new effects were supposed to be gradually made available for the players to experience, but who knew that they would already have a taste of it in the Treasure Cove!

"Little man, are you worried that your stick is not large enough to satisfy me?" Madisha teased Zhang Yang with a ridiculously lustful tone, as she gazed at him hungrily with glazed eyes and a tongue that lolled over her lower lip.

# Chapter 457: Bloody-Shadow Strike

---

"... What kind of queen is this! What a shameless b\*tch!" Daffodil Daydream had finally lost it.

Han Ying Xue sent a private message over to Zhang Yang saying, "Silly Yu, the boss is questioning your capability!"

Zhang Yang laughed, and replied, "Should I be offended? Well, you've seen how capable I am!"

"You hoodlum!" Han Ying Xue blushed, with a slight frown on her face as she rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang.

Madisha sniffed the air a little and revealed a shocked face, and suddenly laughed knowingly, "Huh? These 4 girls are still virgins? Little man, seriously?"

"Cough!" Zhang Yang almost choked in his own saliva, and he could not help but sigh, "This boss could actually sniff out your virginities! This game is that intrusive huh? Awesome! Though, who knows if it's real or not!" He turned his head to look at Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream.

"You hoodlum! What are you looking at!" Han Ying Xue snapped at him.

"What a shameless boss!" Daffodil Daydream was also blushing.

Sun Xin Yu did not even say a word, but she began to lunge out rapidly, with the two daggers in her hands, like a ferocious t-rex. Obviously, she wasn't calm at the moment!

"Haha! Very good! The blood of the virgins can be used for my facial care, and little man can stay to rid me of my loneliness!" Madisha wetted her glistening crimson lips with her tongue, making them look even more 'sexy'.

"No wonder Imperial Heaven's Empire perished in the past. With a whore of a queen like this, all the people of that empire were like grass by the roadside!" Zhang Yang was shouting in rage.

"No wonder the 4 princes looked totally different! I wonder, how many 'dads' were involved in 'producing' them!"

"Well, the number of 'dad' involved is still a small issue. Judging from their weird-\*ss looks, I'm afraid that their 'dads' might not even be human! This boss has really 'heavy' tastes! Haha!"

"You bastards!" Madisha suddenly let out a cry of rage as the words from Zhang Yang and the ladies provoked her. As she threw out her hair spear at Zhang Yang, a powerful impact instantly blew Zhang Yang off his feet. Giving no opportunity for Zhang Yang to regain his strength and get back on his feet, the boss immediately lashed out again, and impaled him to the ground!

"Zhang Yang ---" the four ladies were screaming his name at the same time, "Are you alright?"

"If you got stabbed in the middle of your chest, would you still be alright? There's a freaking hole in my chest! Argh!" Although Zhang Yang had already set the pain-receptor function to the lowest, he was still struck by an excruciating pain, and he had to grit his teeth to prevent himself from shouting out anymore. Without hesitation, he swung his axe at the hair spear that had just pierced his chest!

Although the hair spear of the boss was really sharp, it was still made of hair after all. How could mere hair be compared to a Mythical tier weapon! The axe sliced cleanly through the hair!

Zhang Yang leaped to his feet immediately after that, but his chest still had a huge hole in it, and fresh blood was oozing out right of the chest wound! He realized that he now had an additional negative effect!

[Bleed]: Loses 5,000 health points in every 3 seconds. This effect cannot be canceled by any defense skills or damage reduction skills. Lasts for 15 seconds.

"Blood, fresh blood, look at that, just spectacularly beautiful!" Madisha was drunk in ecstasy as she sang those words. She raised her right hand up, and her hair started to form together again, and it eventually formed into another hair spear! She sent it towards Zhang Yang again!

Zhang Yang raised up his axe, and slashed at the hair, "You ugly old b\*tch! I'm going to slice your hair clean off your head for what you did to me!"



"Would she actually get bald from that? Hahaha!" Wei Yan Er burst into laughter.

Madisha had always highly regarded her own beauty. Now that she had been called 'ugly old b\*tch' by Zhang Yang and 'bald' by Wei Yan Er, of course she would be enraged until she screamed and cried.

"Demonic Hair Barrage"!

As the boss let out tears of rage, she also cried out a skill name. Madisha's black hair began to curl around, like snakes intertwining around together, forming black arrows made of hair, all around her head, before all of them were shot out into the surroundings, in all possible directions!

These hair arrows were unavoidable. Zhang Yang and the ladies were caught in the attack. They were skewered by the arrows as they desperately tried to evade. This was how oppressive a Mythical boss could be!

Everyone was inflicted with a damage of about 40,000 points and they were also inflicted with {Bleed} effects. Zhang Yang's first {Bleed} effect was still kicking and ticking, so he was inflicted with a second layer of {Bleed}, and the negative effects started stacking up. Now, Zhang Yang was losing a total of 10,000 health points by every passing second!

"Mythical bosses are no laughing matter! This is one heck of a

strong and powerful boss!" Everyone was shaken up. Each of them had to activate their skills to slow down the effect of {Bleed} as they needed to reduce the stress that Han Ying Xue was experiencing right now.

But that was the first 'dish' of the boss battle! Just a brief moment after she activated her {Demonic Hair Barrage}, she slammed her palm against the ground, which was made of green jade. As she twisted her hand, it broke through the jade and sunk into the ground. With a powerful grip, the ground trembled a little and she actually pulled up a large part of the ground, like lifting up a blanket from a bed, without removing it completely!

Madisha let out a deafening scream as she began to shake the ground with her left hand that currently buried beneath the surface of the ground. The entire ground shook, sending waves of the shattered rocks that shot up into the sky. The scene was extremely magnificent!

It was like a 7.0 magnitude earthquake! Zhang Yang and the ladies were shaken up to the point that they could not remain standing. At the same time, the shattered rocks from the ground were launched at them, and each small pebble of these shattered rocks inflicted a damage of about 10,000 or 20,000 points!

The apocalyptic scene lasted for about 10 seconds before Madisha retracted her left hand. Then, she went back to using her right hand, forming up more hair spears which she directed at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang was so terrified that he quickly activated his {Shield

Wall}! Although he had removed his Titan Set Armor to wear some Mythical tiered equipment, he had still kept his [Titan Chest Plate] equipped. This particular piece of equipment was really awesome in it's own way! With the two special effects, this piece of equipment was almost as good as a Mythical Tier equipment!

With his {Shield Wall} activated, Zhang Yang's health bar was regenerating by 10% for every second that passed. Currently, he had about 220,000 Maximum Health Points, that meant he would heal about 22,000 health points per second! This amount of healing was already higher than the healing capabilities of Han Ying Xue!

Although the attack of the boss was really powerful in a sense, once Zhang Yang activates his {Shield Wall}, every single attack from the boss becomes a gentle touch. As the boss delivered what that was possibly her most fearsome combo yet, Zhang Yang's HP was actually increasing, instead of decreasing.

"Little man, you're really tenacious! You're 'lasting' longer than I expected! I like it!" Madisha was grinning coldly as she sent more of her hair spears at Zhang Yang, one after another. Her attacks were really fast and deadly!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "I'm not a 'quick' gunner, lasting for 30 minutes is a piece of cake for me!"

Han Ying Xue heard him, and she immediately blushed, because she had experienced it firsthand herself, witnessing his immense stamina! She was embarrassed, yet joyful at the same time, a sense of pride filling her heart. But, she did not dare let down her guard

even for a second in healing up the party. Other than Zhang Yang who had his {Shield Wall}, which kept him practically immune from all attacks at the moment, the other party members were losing their health, like crazy! They were not far from death! If the boss were to activate another wave of {Demonic Hair Barrage}, they would definitely be instantly-killed!

The battle continued on for a brief moment before Madisha let out another deafening cry. She activated her {Demonic Hair Barrage}, and shot her hair arrows into the surroundings. Her hair literally filed up every corner of the area!

As the hair sliced through everyone, the five of them really hit by 'jackpots'! The air was red with the mist of blood, and every one of them simply looked gory! Daffodil Daydream was worst off. One of her eyes was skewered by one of the hair arrows! She did not just lose a lot of blood, but she was half blind! She could not even aim at the boss properly, and her attacks were missing!

Next up was Wei Yan Er. A hair arrow had went straight through her chest! Fortunately for her, although the wound looked really nasty, it did not affect the attack power of the player. Everything was just a visual effect.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "This boss is really nasty! The little girl is already having trouble developing. Yet, the boss still wants to damage that area! Sigh, this is so inhumane!"

Wei Yan Er immediately screamed and whined!

Madisha became more ferocious by the passing seconds. She began to act even more vigorously upon Zhang Yang! As she continuously struck Zhang Yang's armor, the sound of her hair spear clashing on his armor could almost make a drum kit!

Suddenly, the boss sent her hair spear right through Zhang Yang's chest. Although Zhang Yang was inflicted with damage, the part of the royal robe that covered her butt suddenly got corroded! A large hole quickly expanded, and part of her fair \*ss was revealed through that hole!

Zhang Yang was shocked when he saw what happened! "Huh?" Then, he realized that the boss had been afflicted with a new negative effect: Defense Decay (1 Layer), reduces 100 points of defense.

This was actually the special effect of the [Shield of the Faceless Corrupter], having a 10% rate to trigger a reduction of 100 defense points. But, no one would have thought the visual effects of this debuff would look like this! The developer of the game had to gall to actually 'expose' the boss so blatantly!

Zhang Yang was pleased to see that, so he laughed and said, "Well, this is the real deal when it comes to 'Cripple Defense'! If the {Cripple Defense} of the warriors did this, then, when people use 5 layers of {Cripple Defense}, tsk tsk tsk! It would surely be interesting to have that! Hahaha!"

"Shameless!"

"Pervert!"

The ladies scolded him.

Madisha was not bothered at all, having her butt exposed like that. She continued to wield her hair spear like an experienced general in a battle field. Every single blow from her spear was striking not far from Zhang Yang's vital points.

But, the special effect of {Defense Decay} was triggered repeatedly! Zhang Yang must be extremely lucky, today! The magnificent looking, royal robe of Madisha began to be filled with more holes. After just a brief moment, the royal robe had become a fish net, instead of a royal robe! Holes littered all over the entire robe!

Madisha let out a soft roar, and then she moved her left hand, and grabbed hold a fistful of fabric. With a strong tug, she tore off the entire royal robe! It was already ruined, completely, and it infuriated her so. By taking the robe away, the boss exposed her fair, naked body! The heavenly, blessed body of the boss was definitely a marvelous creation that exceeded nature. The parts that were supposed to be big could not be grasped entirely in one palm, while the parts that were supposed to be small could comfortably fit in a hand!

Annoyingly, mosaic boxes covered up the upper part and the lower part of the boss' 'very important' parts!

"Mosaic-boxed movies and games are the reason why the human

race is still underdeveloped!" Zhang Yang let out a miserable cry into the sky!

Although Madisha was battling the five of them with her naked body exposed, there was no sense of shame on her face at all. Instead, she was gazing at Zhang Yang sleazily. She would even slap her own curvy ass, winking at Zhang Yang while saying, "Young man, don't you want to release it in me? Once, maybe?"

Although this is a virtual game, the players were well immersed into the game, thanks to the current wonder of Virtual Reality. These overly realistic effects of the game might just make people forget, that this is just game sometimes! Instead, it would fool people into thinking that it was the second reality!

Zhang Yang felt a rush, and his heart rate shot up. Fortunately, he had more control over his brains, than his 'gun'. If he really was a man with an insatiable lust, then he would already have slept with all his sexy secretaries, and his beautiful models over and over again! As for Zhang Yang, he was happy to let his eyes roam more than his 'gun'. He would only sleep with the women he liked, like Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu.

"Hahaha! My will is strong! Are you trying to seduce me? You're way out of your league!" Zhang Yang laughed, as he continued to swing his axe at the boss!

"You must be an 'incompetent' man! No real men in the world can possibly resist my charm! And there never will be!" Madisha let out an angry roar as her eyes began to glow red. Likewise, the hair spear in her hands instantly turned bloody red! "{Bloody-

Shadow Strike}!"

The spear struck!

Zhang Yang raised his shield high up as his instincts kicked in. He activated his {Block} reflexively. But, the spear of the boss was unstoppable! It actually went straight through the Mythical Tier shield and right into Zhang Yang's chest, and once again, nailing Zhang Yang to the ground!

‘-235,160!’

‘Ding! You died!’

‘Ding! You are resurrected because of {Rise Anew}!’

In just an instant, Zhang Yang experienced the sensation of being alive, to being dead, then from being dead, to being alive again! Holy sheet! Even with his {Block} activated, he could not block against the {Bloody-Shadow Strike} from the boss. If it weren't for Han Ying Xue's {Rise Anew}, Zhang Yang would have been dead, and the rest of the party members would have followed him to the graveyard!

That must be the ultimate skill of the boss! That was why the skill {Block}, which can be used every 6 seconds, could not block against this attack!

"Silly Yu, you still had about 160,000 health points before the



boss struck you with her ultimate skill right? So, what really happened? How did you die right after one hit?" when facing an insta-kill, it did not matter how capable a healer is, there would be no room to even start healing in the first place! Han Ying Xue could only stare in shock at Zhang Yang when he was being instant-killed, she hated this kind of situation the most as she could not do anything.

"The basic attack of that ultimate attack was about 300,000 points. That attack still struck me with about 240,000 damage, even with my defense!" Zhang Yang grit his teeth, thinking about it. His current Maximum Health Point was about 220,000 points, he would not survive the attack of the boss, even if he had full health!

It seems that the hardest challenge of this boss battle was finding a way to survive the {Bloody-Shadow Strike}.

Up till now, Zhang Yang and his party had taken out a total of 5,000,000 health points of the boss. It did seem to be a lot, by the looks of it, but Madisha was a Mythical boss with a Maximum Health of 30,000,000 points! So 5,000,000 is just one portion out of six, which was actually lesser than 20%!

Two minutes later, Madisha's eyes started glowing red again, it was time for the boss to lash out with her second {Bloody-Shadow Strike}!

Zhang Yang took a look at his own health bar, and he saw that he still had about 180,000 health points left. After making a calculated decision, he activated his {Last Vigor}, boosting his health points

up to 243,314/ 286,120!

‘-238,342!’

The spear of Madisha once again went right through Zhang Yang’s shield and stabbed straight into Zhang Yang’s chest! The strike was so mighty, that no words could describe it’s power!

{Berserker’s Heal}!

‘+286,120!’

Zhang Yang healed himself back to his full health state in just an instant, and he started retaliating with ferocity!

"This was the reason why the system gave us so many Mythical equipment before the boss battle! Without these Mythical equipment to support and boost our health bars, even though guildmaster’s equipment was on par, it would still have not been enough to go up against a Mythical boss!" Daffodil Daydream let out a sigh.

The Maximum Health of Zhang Yang, before he switched his equipment with the Mythical Tier equipment was about 90,000 points. Even if he activated his {Last Vigor}, he would still be instantly-killed by the boss’ {Bloody-Shadow Strike}. Furthermore, a mere 90,000 health points could only last against 3 hits of the boss, as each of the boss’s attack inflicted about 40,000 damage! If Han Ying Xue healed him just a little slower during the battle,

Zhang Yang would have died as well! So, be it the ultimate skill of the boss, or the regular attacks of the boss, Zhang Yang would hardly survive, with 90,000 health points only!

Zhang Yang had already activated his {Shield Wall} and {Last Vigor}, he had activated the special effect of his equipment [Heart of the Death Knight], in order to stay alive against the assaults of the boss! Fortunately for him, Zhang Yang had a long HP bar and rage point bar. His {Shield Wall} cooled down in 3 minutes, which allowed him to repeatedly use it in relatively short bursts. Therefore, he could spam his {Shield Wall} twice within one cycle, before he repeats the entire process again!

Normally, the tanker would put their Skill Points into their {Block}, because of the skill {Block} was the most practical skill that a tanker could wish for! This dungeon had a restriction whereby only players below Level 100 were eligible to enter. So, regular players would only have 9 Skill Points in hand, which allowed players to elevate one of the skills to the max level. After adding all their Skill Points onto their {Block}, naturally they would not be able to add one single Skill Point on their {Shield Wall}. So, if players ever step foot into this dungeon without increasing the level of their {Shield Wall}, they would cry miserably when they find out about this.

However, Zhang Yang had earned at least 26 Skill Points throughout the game up till now. Not only could he upgrade his {Block} and {Warrior's Will} to their max level, he could also upgrade his {Shield Wall} to Level 9, which was only one level short of full mastery!

Therefore, only the best among the best party, in all eight servers would be able to clear this special dungeon!

# Chapter 458: Five Floors, All Clear!

---

Although Madisha was very aggressive, Sun Xin Yu and the other three ladies were not made of mushy papers! Even though their levels were tens of levels lower than the boss, and their attacks had been weakened due to the level gap penalty, they managed to perform outstandingly with the Mythical equipment, and were dishing out a decent amount of firepower! The health bar of the boss plummeted rapidly by every passing second!

This was indeed an extremely difficult battle for all of them. The health bar of the boss was just too long, and everyone in the party felt the massive stress knowing that none of them could afford a tiny mistake. The tanker could not fall, the healer could not fail, and the DPS players were a must in order to bring down the boss, and claim victory over this boss battle! One DPS player short would delay the battle by about 4 to 5 minutes, which would be sufficient for the boss to 'have fun' and wipe them all out!

The battle progressed for an agonizing 13 minutes. The health bar of the boss had finally been reduced down to 20%! It was finally entering the 'Slaughtering State'!

Without the need for Zhang Yang to say so, Sun Xin Yu and the other two DPS role ladies took out their [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)], and gulped them down without any delay! Followed by the activation of their most painful and powerful skills, they began to launch their assaults onto the boss!

"{Demonic Hair Barrage}"!

Madisha screamed in rage, and her hair formed into arrows, which scattered all over the place, like bullets!

The party suffered serious injuries, as they were all inflicted with damage points of about 40,000 each. They were afflicted with {Bleed}, which carried a DoT effect.

"Hahaha! Just die! There's no need to struggle any further!" Madisha let out a manic cry, as she dug her hand into the ground once more, like she did before, shaking the earth as if she was shaking her own blanket in her own bed, causing countless of shattered rocks to shoot up from the ground, giving the five of them some very hard hits!

"Gather to me now, everyone!" Zhang Yang quickly let out a shout, as he had been waiting to activate his {Vanguard's Aggression}. As everyone reached his side, he activated his {Vanguard's Aggression} and reduced the 90% damage that they were bound to receive in the following attack.

However, the {Vanguard's Aggression} would only last for 10 seconds. The moment the effect of this skill was over, the boss swung her head around and arrows made of her hair flew off her head once more, piercing everyone around her until they looked like running, bipedal hedgehogs!

Under the pressure of the boss's assaults, Han Ying Xue had pushed herself beyond her capabilities as she could no longer maintain the high pace of healing and maintaining the health bars of the entire party. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had also used {Rearm} to refresh his skill for immediate use again, so he no

longer could activate another {Vanguard's Aggression} right after that. "Argh ---" Daffodil Daydream was the first to let out a miserable cry as her health bar was emptied out by the DOT effect of {Bleed}! Then, she collapsed and crumpled to the ground!

However, everyone had already taken a [Zombie Potion]! Daffodil Daydream immediately transformed into a zombie, and crawled right back on her feet! Then, she continued to attack the boss!

Although the [Zombie Potions] that they took were only 'Grade 2 Transmuted', as the effect of the [Zombie Potion] kicked in, the players that are transformed into zombies would be given an additional 10% attack! So the attack power of Daffodil Daydream became much more powerful than her attack power compared to when she was still 'alive'! She used her fireball attacks to bombard the boss as hard as she could!

Just a few seconds later, Wei Yan Er had also joined in the 'zombie party'. As she let out a miserable scream, she collapsed onto the ground and then scrambled right back up to her feet. Then, she took up her giant axe, and began to slash at the boss, as hard as she could!

Sun Xin Yu wasn't able to hold on for much longer either, and in just a brief moment, she collapsed in her own pool of blood and died. As the effect of the [Zombie Potion] kicked in, she also started to crawl back up on her feet like how Daffodil Daydream and Wei Yan Er did. They could still channel their damage output onto the boss for another 30 seconds after their 'deaths'!

10%!

The boss was left with the remaining 3,000,000 health points!

"Use your {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}! Just use them!" Zhang Yang screamed. Because players would only turn into zombies for 30 seconds before they literally 'die'. If they did not use their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} during this period of time when their attack power was boosted by an additional 10%, it would be a total waste!

Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream nodded, and they activated their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} as they were still zombies!

Shoof! Shoof! Shoof!

Three virtual shadows emerged from each of their bodies, and turned into human silhouettes which held heavy swords in their hands, before charging at the boss swiftly. Instantly, shadows of swords flashed across the body of the boss as the health bar of the boss plummeted rapidly!

Although the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} could not gain any additional enhancements in terms of the basic attack power of the skill itself, or the adding of any values to the player's physical or magical attack, the skill would still get boosted by beneficial effects or potions, based on percentage-figured rates. offered by beneficial effects or potions! Just like the usage of [Power Potion], transmuted [Zombie Potion] and other equipment that provided additional attack in term of percentages, would modify the final



attack of the skill.

Mythical equipment could increase damage or healing effects by 70%, and with the additional 10% increase on attack power, provided by the [Zombie Potion (Grade 2 Transmutation)], each basic attack of the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} was increased by up to 18,000 damage! Furthermore, the Chaos Damage attribute was not restricted or weakened by the ‘Level Gap Suppression’ of the game. So this 18,000 damage would fully strike the boss, and the combo effect of this skill would continue until the skill ends!

The three {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} inflicted a total damage of 540,000 points to the boss! There were also other attacks in the meantime! The health bar of the boss was rapidly reduced down to 2,000,000 points!

"We should be able to do this! Let's pick up the pace and do it even better!"

Because the players are invulnerable when they are in ‘Zombie Mode’, they needed no healing at all! So Han Ying Xue only had to make sure Zhang Yang and herself do not die before the boss does. This was the ideal moment in time for Han Ying Xue to showcase her power! Activating {Healing Bond}! This skill healed both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue herself at the same time!

1,800,000! 1,500,000! 1,100,000!

The boss was already left with less than 4% of health at the moment, but the effect of [Zombie Potion] on Sun Xin Yu and the

other two ladies had ended! Each of them collapsed to the ground, for good this time! They would stay dead until they resurrect themselves later.

The assaults of the boss were becoming more aggressive than before! It seemed that her {Bloody-Shadow Strike} no longer had a cool down period, all of a sudden! Right after the boss struck out with her {Bloody-Shadow Strike}, she already activated another {Bloody-Shadow Strike}, a few seconds later!

{Titan's Shield}!

Zhang Yang was forced to activate his final life-saving ultimate skill! He shielded himself with a shield effect that could absorb a total of 300,000 damage, and survived the boss' {Bloody-Shadow Strike}.

"Witch Snow, quickly! Time to use our paired skill! I don't think we can hold on for much longer!" Zhang Yang quickly reached his out for Han Ying Xue's hand.

They grabbed hold of each other. Then, they activated their paired skills - {Blizzard's Sky} and {Luna's Dew}!

At the same instant, the hair spears in Madisha's hand began to turn bloody red again. It was obvious, that she was preparing to launch another {Bloody-Shadow Strike}!

The sky was filled with the beam of the moonlight, and the

ground was filled with frost and snow! Snowflakes were drifting slowly down, from the heavens!

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

...

The health bar of the boss began to reduce by 5,000 points in each second!

Truth to be told, this set of paired skills wasn't that powerful. The damage per second was only 5,000 points! But the advantage of using the paired skills, was that the users would become invincible throughout the activation of the skills! Not even a boss could interrupt them. It was like giving out a total of 150,000 damage for free! Furthermore, the users of paired skills could also take advantage of the 30 seconds of invincibility to wait out for their skills' cool down periods!

30 seconds later, Madisha was still left with a total of 950,000 health points!

"Die! All of you! Just die!" As her life was about to end soon, Madisha lost her interest in teasing and seducing Zhang Yang, instead, she looked like a mad lady, fighting for her life! She kept on spamming her {Demonic Hair Barrage}! The {Bleed} effect on Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had already been eliminated when

they went into their invincible forms. But under the crazy bombardment of {Demonic Hair Barrage} from the boss, they were once again inflicted with the [Bleed] effect, and within a brief period of 10 seconds, the [Bleed] effect on them were already stacked up by 4 layers!

Now that Han Ying Xue could no longer keep up in maintaining the health bars of Zhang Yang and herself, she focused on healing Zhang Yang until the last possible second, before she let out a miserable scream and collapsed onto the ground. After that, she was turned into a zombie. She crawled back onto her feet.

"You can stop healing me already and use your {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} now, because I can also become a zombie myself. Try to reduce the health points of the boss by as much as possible!"

"Alright!"

Han Ying Xue activated her {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, and began to cast the spell for her {Punishment Ray}. Although the magical damage of the {Punishment Ray} wasn't really that high, with all the Mythical Tier equipment supporting Han Ying Xue, the basic damage of the skill was boosted up to 20,000 points!

900,000! 800,000!

"Argh!" without Han Ying Xue healing him up, Zhang Yang could only hold on for another 4 to 5 seconds before he met his 'doom'! But right after collapsing onto the ground, Zhang Yang turned into

a zombie and crawled back right up to his feet, and once again engaged in battle with the boss.

"Guildmaster! You can do this!"

"Noob tank! Don't let me down! Or I'll forever look down on you!"

"Do your best."

Sun Xin Yu and the two ladies lay dead on the ground, while they tried to cheer for Zhang Yang through the party channel.

Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes and said, "Why aren't you guys cheering for me?"

"... cousin sis, are you a DPSer in the first place?"

Han Ying Xue kept silent.

It was Zhang Yang's turn to activate his {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}! At the same time, he also activated his {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}. The scene was so much merrier when two skills were activated at the same time, on the boss!

700,000! 500,000! 300,000! 100,000!

On the crucial moment, the effect of [Zombie Potion] on Han Ying Xue ended! She collapsed to the ground and died! At this crucial moment, Zhang Yang was all alone on the battlefield!

{Killing Cleave}!

‘-59,821!’

Zhang Yang began to feel anxious, as he knew that the effect of the [Zombie Potion] on him would only last for another 5 seconds! If he lost this battle now, even though they still had about 11 hours left, all of their super skills that had long cool down periods, had already been used up! Without the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} and paired skills {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna’s Dew}, it would be impossible for them to slay the boss!

So Zhang Yang had to do it, this time!

However, there was a side effect to being ‘Invincible’ as well! Zhang Yang could no longer acquire Rage Points from receiving damage!

{Block}!

‘-5,930!’ Damage reflected!

+30 Rage Points.

‘-11,860!’ {Shield Bash}!

The boss still had about 24,000 health points, and the effective time of the [Zombie Potion] was only 2 seconds away from expiring!

At that moment, Han Ying Xue and the ladies had almost forgotten to breathe as they were so anxious to see Zhang Yang making it through. They held their breaths, hoping that Zhang Yang would not fail at the very last moment!

"Noob tank! If you dare to let the boss live this time, I'm going to feed you rat poison!" The encouragement from Wei Yan Er was always so special and 'heartwarming'.

What the hell! This little girl!

Zhang Yang wielded his axe even harder, swiping its edge across the vital spots of the boss and inflicting a damage of more than 15,000 points, boosting Zhang Yang's Rage Bar up to 50 points!

{Destructive Smash}!

‘-30,212!’

Right after the strike, the effect of the [Zombie Potion] was over! Zhang Yang collapsed onto the ground on his face, and he just stayed quietly on the ground, dead.

"Argh ---" Madisha had also let out a miserable scream, as she fell to her knees, slumping over. The surroundings were peaceful once again.

‘Ding! Congratulations for being the First Party in the server to slay a Mythical Tier Boss, your glorious deeds shall be remembered forever in the Historical List of the world. As the leader of the party, please key in the name of your party. Your party name will be published on the Historical List, allowing the world to praise you!

A request to key in the party name popped up in front of Zhang Yang’s screen!

"Did we clear it?"

The four ladies were not sure about it. After all, they had not received any system notification like Zhang Yang did.

"Yes! We have cleared it!" Zhang Yang announced it in the party channel, "And, we have gotten another First Clear for an Open World Boss!"

"Oh yeah!" Other than Sun Xin, the ladies cheered in joy.

"So, release your souls and get back to your dead bodies, and start picking them up! This is a real Mythical Tier boss! We’re rich!"



The five of them quickly released their souls and began to run all the way back to their dead bodies. But, the graveyard was located in a garden within the city. It took them roughly 20 minutes to get all the way back to the fifth floor of the Treasure Cove!

The moment they were resurrected, there was no time for them to recover back their statuses. All of them were busy picking up all of the items and equipment on the ground as quickly as possible. There is a time limit for the corpse of the boss to remain, before it disappears! If the loot disappears from the ground, then they would all be in 'ruins'! All of their efforts throughout the 5 floors would mean nothing!

## Chapter 459: Reward? Rewardsss

---

Zhang Yang stepped up and inserted the now-customary promotional phase into the input box. "Silky Soft Bras! Providing you the best protection for your assets! Lone Desert Smoke."

As such, the server proceeded to announce the victory notification throughout China.

As the rewards, all of them obtained 10 gold coins and 500 Union Reputation points. However, there was no SP rewards but a Luck Attribute point. There was also a Level 4 Gemstone reward which were given, based on the players' main attributes. Naturally, Zhang Yang obtained a Vitality Gemstone.

It did not take long for players throughout China to start an uproar. Under any condition, it would be extremely tough for one to search for a Violet-Platinum boss. And yet, Lone Desert Smoke had managed to take down a Mythical tier boss, with just a party of five! None of that made any sense! Of course, none of them knew about the chamber that was filled with Mythical tiered equipment. They basically had a trial run of Mythical Equipment against a Mythical-tiered boss.

Greensleeves Prince, Sky Shaman, Snow Seeker, and other guild masters who were on friendly terms with Zhang Yang sent their congratulations. One Sword Stroke also sent a rather polite private message. Zhang Yang had a feeling, that perhaps One Sword Stroke wanted to make amends with Zhang Yang.

After replying to a bunch of messages, Zhang Yang set the conversations aside and placed his attention on the boss loot. Even though the party was equipped with full sets of Mythical tiered equipment, they were only available for use within this Treasure Cove. As much as they could dream, the system would never allow them to exit the premises with the equipment.

As the final boss of this place, Queen Madisha naturally provided luxurious drops. There were four radiant pieces of equipment on the floor. Three of them were a ring, and a necklace, and a magic staff. The remaining drops were random books scattered all over the floor.

As per usual, Wei Yan Er looted the drops, while Zhang Yang was in charge of distributing them. However, if he waits for Wei Yan Er to run back here, the loot might disappear anytime soon. Zhang Yang then proceeded to pick up a blue colored, frosty ring.

[Frost Vengeance Ring] (Mythical, Ring)

Vitality: +407

Strength: +194

Dexterity: +194

Equip Effect: Increases 1,200 Maximum HP.

Equip Effect: Increases attack and healing effect by 5%

Equip Effect: Increases 50% Ice Elemental attack of your weapon.

<Unidentified>

Level: 110

Special Effect: Level Requirement lowered by 20 Level.

Everyone arrived soon after, and their eyes popped out when they saw the properties of the ring. It was a Mythical tier ring! Even though they were wearing similarly tiered equipment on their bodies at the moment, they were all 'Cinderella's Glass Shoes'. Upon leaving, the equipment would vanish into thin air. The ring, however, was the real deal. They could be worn, traded, sold and most importantly, brought out of this place!

Han Ying Xue frowned, perturbed by a dissonance in the attributes of the equipment. "Dummy? This ring is clearly meant for physical classes. If so, why does one of the equip effect adds 50% Ice attack? Those are what Cryomancers look out for, don't they?"

The other girls cocked their heads, expecting an explanation from Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed at their reactions and explained, "Don't forget, that the moment a single player reaches Level 100, the system would commence with the Inheritance Patch!" Zhang Yang

wagged his finger at them. "Warriors, Knights, and even Thieves would be eligible for an Inheritance called the Frost Blade Fighter. The Inheritance would layer all their regular attacks with the Ice element. Hence, this ring is made specifically for them!"

Everyone nodded their heads. Daffodil Daydream interjected. "I'd say, this ring is already extremely powerful, despite not having the Ice effect boost!"

Zhang Yang smiled. "True that. But the real source of this ring's power is the lowered level requirement! Think about it, players around would only be wearing Level 90 Violet-Platinum equipment at most. But, by having this Level 110 Mythical equipment on, you would stand heads and shoulders above them all!"

"Nyeh! The boss had only dropped four pieces of equipment." Wei Yan Er pouted her lips discontentedly.

"Hmph. Icy, Little Brat. I want both of you to discuss on who should be getting this ring. Even though the Ice elemental boost is of no help for now, the stats of the ring would already be a major upgrade for the both of you. Next time, when you obtain better equipment, you can take this ring and sell it off. I reckon that players would love these sorts of equipment, with lowered level requirements. Especially, when they are rings or accessories. Perhaps, this ring could even be sold for 10,000,000 gold coins!" said Zhang Yang, with a straight face.

Wei Yan Er shook her head immediately. "No, no. I don't feel like it!" In truth, she wanted the ring, but it also felt like she was carrying 10 million dollars of cash in hand. The fear of being stared

at, or perhaps the pestering had made her reject the ring.

As for Sun Xin Yu, she had always been pampering the little brat. Without hesitation, she gave the ring to Wei Yan Er. The little brat was so happy that she started calling her - "elder sister" hugging her so sincerely, that Han Ying Xue was soon filled with envy and jealousy. She had even fish hooked the little brat by the mouth and had dragged her away from Sun Xin Yu.

Zhang Yang laughed for a little while, and picked up a second ring. This ring looked and felt extremely solid in his hand. It had a yellowish hue around the ring which reminded him of mother nature itself, and various runic inscriptions that were not unlike those on the One Ring.

[Great Earth Ring] (Mythical, Ring)

Vitality: +432

Strength: +83

Dexterity: +83

Equip Effect: Absorbs 167 damage when attacked.

Equip Effect: Increases 1,500 Maximum HP.

Equip Effect: Increases 2% Critical Strike rate.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 110

Special Effect: Level Requirement lowered by 20 Level.

"Hoh! A powerful tank ring!" cried the little brat overdramatically. "Noobie tank! It's your treat tomorrow!"

"Yeah! That's right. Since your main story quest is about to reach the end, you must treat us with a fabulous dinner when you do!" said Han Ying Xue, joining the fray.

Zhang Yang crossed his arms and smiled. He was happy, but he pretended to be angry. "Treat? The last time I remember, you guys were too lazy to go out! I even made reservations for the last dinner. What happened? You guys just bailed on me!"

Zhang Yang took the ring and kept it in his inventory. Right now, the stats prior to Identification were already good. He would be even happier, after Identifying the ring. With that thought in mind, Zhang Yang snickered happily and quietly to himself.

Before Zhang Yang could pick up the next equipment, Han Ying Xue barged in and demanded to be given a go at picking the equipment. She snatched a long necklace on the floor and examined it. The necklace had a long, black chain, and an amulet with a deep black-green jade affixed in the center. It gave out a

soothing aura.

[Heart of Jade] (Mythical, Necklace)

Vitality: +400

Intelligence: +202

Spirit: +202

Equip Effect: Increase 600 Maximum MP.

Equip Effect: Increase healing rate by 10%

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 110

Special Effect: Level Requirement lowered by 20 Level.

Without a doubt, this necklace should go to Han Ying Xue. However, instead of keeping it in her inventory, she tossed the necklace to Zhang Yang and said, "Help me Identify this."

Zhang Yang frowned deeply, as Wei Yan Er snickered evilly by his side. She also took the [Frost Vengeance Ring] and passed it to Zhang Yang, asking him to Identify the ring as well. Neither of



them had the slightest sense of embarrassment.

The last piece of equipment was a Magic Staff. At first glance, everyone would be impressed at the structure and build of it. The staff was purely made out of a crystal-like material. It gave out a bright, and soft, green-emerald radiance.

[Epicormic Branch of the Tree of Life] (Mythical, Magic Staff)

Magic Attack: 4,024 – 4,624

Equip Effect: Increases Magic damage and Healing rate by 14%

Equip Effect: 1% chance to heal yourself during every attack on a target. Healing rate is equal to the damage you have dealt.

Use: Summons the Life Tree to protect you. Grants Invulnerability for 1 second.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 110

Special Effect: Level Requirement lowered by 20 Levels.

Note: This powerful magic staff contains the essence of the Life Tree. It contains a portion of the power from the Tree of Life!

Everyone gasped in awe as they read the equipment description. The effects were too outrageous. Han Ying Xue took the Magic Staff into her hands and asked, "Say, if we take this staff, and sell it, how much do you think that it would be worth?"

Zhang Yang scratched his chin. "Hard to say... Even if no one fights for it, it could be sold for 5,000,000 in the Little Merchandise Shop. But if we placed it in the Auction House, it could go as high as 10 million, or even 20 million! This Magic Staff has 4,000 Magic attack, and that is before Identification. After Identification, I'm sure that the Magic attack would be around 6,000! You could strip all your equipment down and equip only this staff, and you'd still have a stronger attack than a full Level 90 Violet-Platinum equipment player. Think about what I just said, one staff alone is worth an entire set of Violet-Platinum equipment. I think, 20 million would be worth it," Zhang Yang stated.

Han Ying Xue was not interested in the magical attack, although it could help increase her healing rate. More importantly, she already had the mana regenerative staff in her hand. Hence, she pushed the staff at Daffodil Daydream. The poor girl was flabbergasted and could not respond, having heard its true value from Zhang Yang. "I'm..erhm.. this...It's too much! Please sell it! I...I can't use this!"

Zhang Yang laughed at her cute, little girl-like reaction. "All the more reason to use it, Daffy! If you use this staff, you'll be the strongest attacker in my party! Altogether, wouldn't it be for the better, if anyone in our team gets an upgrade? The stronger we are, the better bosses we could kill! So what about 20 million? It's

nothing. That being said, when you reach Level 120 or Level 130, you can still sell it off!"

"B-But! Its value would not be the same!" Daffodil Daydream was on the verge of tears.

"Aiyaya! Sister Daffy. Why are you nit-picking at the details? I'd say, might as well give up resisting his wishes. It's too late for you to escape his grasp. All that belongs to him, belongs to you! All that is you, belongs to him! Nyahahaha!" Wei Yan Er chuckled evilly.

Daffodil Daydream lowered her head and nodded quietly. She was hiding her vermilion-colored cheeks, that spoke of immeasurable shame. Perhaps, she agreed on the part "Everything that is her, belongs to Zhang Yang."

Luckily, Han Ying Xue did not notice her blush, as she was too busy flipping over the skill books. Zhang Yang, on the other hand, had walked over to Queen Madisha's dressing table and found a long bladed sword lying down at the lower left of the table. The blade of the sword was dark, with living, silvery lines, swirling around. There was a green little dragon that swam along the surface of the blade as well. It was moving and weaving up and down the length of the blade!

‘Ding! You have obtained: Meteor Sword!’

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Search the Meteor Sword! Please return to White Jade Castle and present the sword to Princess Serena, in exchange for a luxurious reward!’

Zhang Yang let out a long, tiring sigh. It had not been easy to complete the entire quest. Zhang Yang took the sword and kept it in his inventory. He then walked down towards Han Ying Xue, who was busy examining the books. They were all Recipe scrolls for different professions. None of them were skill books, unfortunately. Everyone was disappointed, as they wanted a Pair Skill!

Still, Queen Madisha was kind enough to drop a piece of Middle-Tier Aura Stone. Sun Xin Yu took it and upgraded her {Fatal Strike Aura} to Level 4, which granted an additional 4% increase in Critical rate. There was one more item. A chest that left them staring, dumbfounded.

[Mystery Treasure Chest]: You have found a chest that was hidden away secretly by Queen Madisha. Your instincts tell you that this chest is extremely important. However, no matter what you tried, it was impossible to open the chest via the regular method. Perhaps, you should inquire Princess Serena about the chest.

Player Ownership: Zhan Yu

Item Bound on Acquire.

## Chapter 460: Server Update

---

Once everything was accounted for, Zhang Yang traveled to Thunderstorm Castle and then to White Jade Castle. There, he used the [Party Summon Order] and "pulled" everyone back, as per Han Ying Xue's insistent instructions. After everyone gathered together, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er dragged Zhang Yang along, making sure that he did not run away when it came to Identifying the Mythical equipment for them.

Although he did not want to, he did not have much of a choice to begin with. He took out all the Mythical equipment and gave them to the Identifier.

The older gentleman was taking his time, reading a piece of newspaper. When he saw Zhang Yang coming into his store, the man placed down his reading glasses and spoke to Zhang Yang in a rather annoyed tone. "Young man. There's no need to rush. A gentleman must always be conscious of his posture."

The man walked lazily towards the table and picked up the [Frost Vengeance Ring] to examine it. He then picked up a piece of magnifying glass. The man gasped with a loud snort and placed the ring closer to the magnifying glass. He discarded his reading glasses and looked at the ring again, only to be shocked by it. "W-What is this? Such a masterpiece! Only a master craftsman could have made this marvelous piece. My god. Young man, you have no idea how fortunate you are, to have stumbled upon this ring!"

"Nuff said. Get to revealing the Ring's properties," said Wei Yan Er as she had been tapping her fingers on the wooden table since

the beginning. "How much is it?"

Although Zhang Yang had not noticed it, the little brat had a rather refreshing, innocent appearance, that was able to entice a "dangerous" part of society, a certain group of people who had preferences for flat and short females. Her high-pitched voice was able to attract many male eyes, and many had even sent private messages, trying to court the young lady. All of them were of course blacklisted by the little brat, almost immediately.

The old Identifier examined the ring and after 3 to 4 minutes later, the old man looked up at Zhang Yang with a satisfied look. "2,000 gold coins."

"You, bloody, stinky, greedy old man! How dare you charge us 2,000 gold coins for 4 equipment! Might as well put a gun at my face and demand for my entire life savings then!" cried the little brat.

"One! One for 2,000 gold coins!" The old man was not startled by her outrage. Instead, he put on a stoic face and emphasized the fees. Behind the counter, his legs have given up, and were trembling like crazy!

Zhang Yang placed the outer side of his hand on the little brat's head and ground his knuckles, hard.

"Get it done." Zhang Yang told the old man. Zhang Yang was not surprised at the Identifying fees. He had visited this place often. In fact, 2,000 gold coins for Identifying was after a 50% discount, for

having the title, "Hero of White Jade Castle". If someone else were to have their equipment Identified, it would cost 4,000 gold coins.

"2,000 gold coins just for Identifying? What the hell is that equipment?" A passing male elven Spellcaster walked by and observed the equipment that were being Identified. Although he could pick it up, it could be taken out of the premises. Zhang Yang immediately noticed that the man had a faint smile on his face. It was the same kind of smile any cunning, conniving fox would carry. "Hm. Bro, this magic staff. Sell it to me."

Zhang Yang had no intention of selling it off then since Daffodil Daydream was supposed to use it. Zhang Yang looked straight at the player and took notice of his name and profile information.

"Royal Highness of Thunder, Level 87, Male Elf, Pyromancer, The Myth".

When Zhang Yang saw the guild "The Myth", a surge of anger rose up his heart. Still, for a mere magic staff, it was not worth the trouble of taking down the entire guild. Instead, Zhang Yang nonchalantly pushed him aside. "Sorry bro, we're using it."

Even though he was rejected, Royal Highness of Thunder did not leave the premises. He stood by and continued to observe the equipment being handled by the Identifier.

Ka ching! Ka ching!

After paying 6,000 gold coins, the properties of the two rings and the necklace were revealed. Zhang Yang swapped his old ring for the Great Earth Ring and raised his HP to 96,980. His HP was just an inch more to reaching 100,000!

As for the last item on the menu, the old man took his time to analyze the magic staff. Zhang Yang had seen this many times before since he was the only guy bringing ridiculous weapons to his shop. What the old man would do would be to pick up the magnifying glass, express a shocked and surprise face, rub his eyes, and shout out the price. This would often happen when an extremely rare item is presented to him. However, this time, the old man took even longer to examine the item before announcing the price.

"Looks like the staff won't be just 2,000 gold coins..." Zhang Yang sighed heavily.

"What?! That's absurd!" cried Daffodil Daydream. The other ladies of the team were not interested since the staff would end up in Daffodil Daydream's hands. She felt a little guilty since Zhang Yang would be paying the fees.

"T-This is...an ancient miracle. An ancient power! A blessing from the past!" cried the old man.

"This is new," said Zhang Yang to himself.

"Say...We have given you the opportunity of a lifetime to witness and hold an ancient artifact in your hands. Perhaps you could give



us a little service by lightening the fees?" said Wei Yan Er.

"10,000 gold coins." The old man expression reverted back to his stoic composure faster than Fatty Han could look at a nip slip. "I expect full payment. Not even a copper coin less."

Zhang Yang sighed and paid the man 10,000 gold coins.

"WTF?!" cried Royal Highness of Thunder. He had never heard of such a high fee when it came to Identifying a single equipment. Even his own Yellow-Gold equipment had cost him a few hundred gold. What could the equipment prowess be, if the price for Identifying it was so high!?

After receiving the sack of gold coins, the old man picked up the magic staff and tweaked it here and there, before handing it back to Zhang Yang. A bright glow shot up to the sky when the staff left the old man's hand, and into Zhang Yang's.

[Epicormic Branch of the Tree of Life] (Mythical, Magic Staff)

Magic Attack: 5,778 – 6,478

Equip Effect: Increases Magic damage and Healing rate by 20%.

Equip Effect: 2% chance to heal yourself on every attack on a target. Healing rate is equal to the damage you had dealt.

Use: Summons the Life Tree to protect you. Grants Invulnerability for 2 seconds.

<Level 4 Socket 1>

<Level 4 Socket 2>

Level Requirement: 110

Special Effect: Level Requirement lowered by 20 Levels.

Note: This powerful magic staff contains the essence of the Life Tree. It has a portion of the power of the Tree of Life!

"Oh dang! The Magic Attack is so high! It's so much stronger than my current attack power!"

On the far side of the shop, Royal Highness of Thunder gritted his teeth. A glint of jealousy and envy was prominent in his eyes.

Zhang Yang peeked around and noticed how much of the player around were reacting the same way as Royal Highness of Thunder.

Zhang Yang then tapped Daffodil Daydream's shoulder and whispered into her face. Wracked with paranoia, he had put his face extremely close to her. "Daffy. I want you to keep your guard up. I don't want any of the guys to be approaching you."

Even before Zhang Yang had spoke, Daffodil Daydream was already blushing like a cherry tomato. A puff of steam shot out of her head when Zhang Yang spoke like that to her.

"I..I...I...I...I D-Don't worry...I...I...I won't fall for anyone else...!"

Wei Yan Er laughed maniacally and rolled on the floor. "Sister Daffy. What noob tank was saying, he wants you to be careful of other people who might literally jump on you! They are aiming for your staff, not you!"

Zhang Yang nodded and turned his gaze to Daffodil Daydream to wait for a reply. However, Daffodil Daydream had a totally alarmed, eyes widened, cherry tomato red face. She was so embarrassed of her own reaction and had immediately disappeared by using a [Teleportation Scroll].

"That's a cute reaction," said Wei Yan Er.

"Oy dummy...What's with you? Why do all girls flock to you? Did angels get together and made a dream come true? Did they sprinkle moon dust in your hair of gold, and star-light in your eyes of blue? Haha! Is that why all the girls in town follow you all around?" Han Ying Xue grumbled.

Zhang Yang frowned. "Did you just quote the song lyrics of "Close to You" by The Carpenters?"

"Haha! So you do know your oldies! Just so you know, girls love it

when a guy listens to old songs! Looks like the Daffy girl would never be able to escape your evil grasp." Han Ying Xue teased him.

On the sidelines, Sun Xin Yu made it a point to fidget with her daggers, and glared at Zhang Yang with murderous eyes.

Zhang Yang sighed. He was tired of dealing with the two women. After exiting the shop, Zhang Yang head straight to the Royal Castle and when he approached the gate, he reported his name to the guard and was led to the Royal Chamber of Star and Luna, where Princess Serena was. It was easy to enter the Royal Castle now, compared to previous attempts. Perhaps it was because he had already completed the quest.

As he entered the chamber, Zhang Yang saw Princess Serena slouching on her throne in a completely un-princess-like manner. There was a frown on her face, and she was sulking as if she had been waiting for quite some time for Zhang Yang to arrive.

Zhang Yang quickly approached her, and kneeled down, 10 meters away from the throne. He saluted the princess and greeted her. "Princess Serena. It is I, Zhan Yu."

"Zhan Yu! You have returned!" Princess Serena got to her feet immediately and walked closer to Zhang Yang. "Have you found the Meteor Sword?"

"Your Highness. You'll be glad to know that I had found it." Zhang Yang took out the sword from his inventory and presented it to her, holding it up high above his head, and kneeling down at

the same time.

Princess Serena bent down and took the sword out of Zhang Yang's hands.

"This, this 'is' the Meteor Sword!" She exclaimed. Princess Serena returned to her throne but remained standing. Instead, she stood facing Zhang Yang and held the blade up with both hands, the flat of the blade placed against her forehead. The magical swirling green dragon that was "living" in the blade of the sword shrieked and flew out of the sword. It then magically expanded, and turned into huge dragon measuring close to a hundred meters wide! The dragon flew around, finally coming to a rest behind Princess Serena. The dragon roared magnificently. Its roar echoed throughout the palace, and even spread across the entire city! All the citizens knelt before the castle, expressing not fear, but admiration, for the magical beast.

The dragon was not in physical form. It was ethereal and was phasing through the walls and pillars of the chamber.

"All hail Princess Serena! Long Live Princess Serena!" All the guards in the palace and chamber shouted out their salutations for their beloved Princess Serena.

"Rawgh!" the dragon roared and dispersed into millions of green particples. It then swirled around the chamber space, and before rushing towards Princess Serena. A bright light shone out, and the entire castle was illuminated with a warm light. The clouds in the sky were pushed away, revealing the giant ball of fire in the sky, to introduce a new light upon the castle.

Shring!

A golden light radiated from Princess Serena's character. Zhang Yang knew the light. It was all too similar when a player leveled up. Back then, Princess Serena was 20 Levels higher than Zhang Yang and thus, he had never been able to see her profile. This time, he knew that the princess had gained not one, not two, but 30 consecutive Levels, for the light had burst out for a total of 30 times. Although Zhang Yang could not remember her Level, he clearly remembered her being a Holy tier boss. After the radiance stopped, Zhang Yang checked her status, and was stunned at the word - "Ascended".

[Serena, Princess of White Jade Kingdom] (Ascended, Humanoid)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Defense: ???

Note: True wielder of the Meteor Sword! Her power rivals the Gods. None shall be on equal to her.

Such a dominating presence! Zhang Yang was extremely envious of Serena, especially at how she could gain 30 Levels, just by holding the sword against her forehead. Perhaps, he should have done it himself earlier!

"I thank you, Warrior Zhan Yu! You, truly are my one and only warrior!" After gaining the status of Ascended, Princess Serena's armor morphed into something, even more, grander than before. The smile on her face when she was with Zhang Yang had never been more radiant. "I could never have achieved this without you, Zhan Yu. If you had not brought me the sword, my father, the King would have married me off to Amula of the Black Dragon City. Hmph. I understand the logic of my father wanting to protect the citizens of this kingdom. But, that does not mean that he could just marry me off to any perverted scoundrel!"

Zhang Yang could feel the anger in her words, even though she was merely frowning in frustration. Back then, when she was merely wielding the Sword of Life and Death, she could massacre all the players and make rivers flow with blood. But, now that she held the Meteor Sword...only God knows of what she would be capable of.

‘Ding! Your Relationship with Princess Serena has increased!’

Oh! Come on! Relationship? Zhang Yang wanted something more materialistic, for once! Zhang Yang maintained a stoic facial expression and said, "It is an honor to serve the Princes, I ask for nothing but your good graces, my Princess."

Princess Serena nodded her head happily. "With this sword, We can unite all the Kingdoms in this Union to form an Empire! You, Zhan Yu, Our warrior, you are by greatest benefactor!"

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Search of the Meteor Sword. Obtained 20,000,000 Experience Points!’

‘Ding! You have obtained a reward: Level +3, SP +2, Luck +3!’

Shring! Shring! Shring!

Zhang Yang’s character glowed in a brilliant golden light, three times, and rose from Level 98 to Level 101!

‘Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu has become the first player to achieve Level 100! Obtained reward: SP +1, Luck +3!’

‘Server Announcement: The first Level 100 player has emerged. Chaos Realm will be available for entry after the server patch. Inheritance Patch will be implemented. Please refer to the official website for more information about the Inheritance Patch!’

‘Server Announcement: Server Update and Service Patch will commence in 30 minutes. Please log out to prevent any item loss. Please refer to the official website for more information about the patch content. Please make necessary preparations before the patch!’

Zhang Yang was thrown away. He had just received 4 SP in one go! Zhang Yang was happy, although only for a millisecond before frustration kicked in. The main story quest - "Search of the Meteor Sword" had only rewarded him with a Level +3, SP +2 and Luck +3. Though it may seem a lot for anyone else, Zhang Yang felt that all



the effort that he put out for the past few months was a complete waste!

"Oh!"

Just then, Zhang Yang remembered something important. Zhang Yang immediately took out the mysterious box that he had found from Queen Madisha and handed it to Princess Serena. "My Princess, I have found a box but I am unable to open it. I hope that Princess Serena could assist me in opening this mysterious box."

Somehow, he knew that the real reward lay within that box.

Princess Serena smiled warmly and knelt down to his level. "Zhan Yu, you have shed much blood for me. If there is anything that We can do for you, We will do everything in Our power to help you out."

To hear such words coming from a Princess' mouth was everything that Zhang Yang could hope for.

Princess Serena took the box and examined it. She then places the box on the floor and pointed the sword at the box. With a quick hum, the box opened ever so easily, when Zhang Yang and everyone else could not.

With an eager heart, Zhang Yang peeked into the box...Only to see...

An egg!?

What's this? A herbal egg? Would it grant Zhang Yang unbelievable powers after he boiled it?

Zhang Yang was on the verge of crying. When all hope had been poured into the box, all it could do was to give him an egg. An egg, that looked like a regular chicken egg!

[Mysterious Egg]

Description: Who knows what will hatch from this egg? Perhaps, you should wait and see...

Incubation time: 71 Hours, 59 minutes, 59 seconds.

Bound.

An egg. Zhang Yang had suffered for so long, only to be rewarded with an egg.

No matter, Zhang Yang had one last hope remaining. This egg had to be a Mythical Beast's egg! That was the lie Zhang Yang told himself, although he knew that it would be 1 in a million chance for it to be a real Mythical Beast's egg. Still, there was still hope. No one knew what it was, or what would hatch out of it!

After leaving the Royal Castle, Zhang Yang immediately logged

out of the game since there were only a few minutes left before the server update started. By that time, it was already way past midnight. Zhang Yang stripped down to his boxer and found that he stunk. His shirt felt like a crumpled, dried up biscuit. It must be from the excessive dried sweat, thanks to such a stressful quest. Zhang Yang sighed heavily, and made his way to the bathroom for a shower and went to bed soon after.

It took him a whole night to regain back his vitality, and he had even overslept for an hour past 8am. Zhang Yang did not skip his routine workout, even though he had woken up slightly later. However, unlike his old house which was already destroyed. Zhang Yang's new housing estate required him to drive for quite a distance to buy regular fried dough and soy milk. The housing estate which he lived in now did not have roadside stalls nearby since it was an upscale, uptown kind of area. If he wanted to get some light snacks and cheap food, he would have to drive. That's one of the tradeoffs he would have to bear.

Zhang Yang bought breakfast for five and by the time he made it back home, the four ladies had just woken up from their beauty sleep. Everyone got up, got dressed, put on their thick layers of makeup and ate breakfast. Sun Xin Yu had gone off for work, while Zhang Yang had taken the job as Wei Yan Er's private driver to her school.

Wei Yan Er was already 18 years old. She had already finished her high school. The purpose of Zhang Yang sending Wei Yan Er to school on that day was to fill in a form about her future job prospects.

In truth, it had been terribly difficult for Wei Yan Er to graduate from high school, due to her frequent lapse in concentration, her lack of academic intelligence, and her poor memory. Still, she was not bothered by it. Her future path had already been decided. For her, taking on high school was nothing but a ritual, a ceremony that she had to go through to be ‘normal’.

...

The developers had announced the server patch out of the blue and had even made the server patching duration to as long as three days. Hence, with nothing to do at home. Zhang Yang had invited Fatty Han to come over at night and have a little fun. They then moved on to a hotel and had a grand dinner to celebrate Wei Yan Er’s official graduation from high school. Naturally, the bill had to be settled by none other than Zhang Yang.

# Chapter 461: Battle Companion

---

Fatty Han had even brought along his girlfriend, Xiao Wei. The girl was extremely sweet and polite. Nothing like what Fatty Han had described. If Fatty Han had never mentioned about her being as ruthless as a hungry lion with him, Zhang Yang would have never imagined it.

The night continued on, and everyone was enjoying the dinner and conversation. However, when someone mentioned the name Liu Wei and One Sword Stroke, everyone's mood turned foul. As the saying went, nations that crumble from foreign attacks will rebuild, and come back stronger than ever. But what of an attack that comes from the inside? Even though Imperial Sky could never reach the strength level of Lone Desert Smoke, the guild was still one of the strongest guilds in China's region. Despite so, the guild had crumbled down due to internal strife, because of a single woman. Everyone understood the damage, but Zhang Yang and Fatty Han had a deeper insight of it.

The conversation returned to its liveliness in a matter of glasses. Among the company, only Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were the only men on the table while the rest were troublesome women. These ladies simply loved messing with them. Later through the night, all 5 women had managed to force Zhang Yang and Fatty Han to shotgun one large carton-load of beer down their stomachs. Eventually, both of them had to run back and forth to the washroom to unload everything they had drank down. The scene was exceptionally funny to them since they had never seen Zhang Yang being much of a clown.

After that merry little dinner with the ladies, everyone drove

themselves back home. Zhang Yang, on the other hand, was too intoxicated to drive and had to depend on Han Ying Xue to take the wheel. After returning home, Zhang Yang did nothing else, but collapsed on the couch and slept. The next thing he knew, it was already morning. The moment when he opened his eyes, he was assaulted with a wracking of a headache. The light from the sun did nothing to ease his pain. Zhang Yang drank more water than he had ever drank before, and felt that it tasted much better than before. He took a good cold bath, and went to bed to sleep a little while more.

After waking up for the second time, he felt a little better and proceed to greet the ladies of the house. He even played and teased Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu, and felt a little better after.

Before the server came back online, there was absolutely nothing for Zhang Yang to do at home. He then went to visit the office of Silky Soft Holdings and reviewed a few things in his office. There, he checked read up on the server patch notes.

The joint venture between Silky Soft Holdings and Crimson Cosmetic Holdings was a success. They had even managed to launch their first joint product in the market. Both sides were working hard to further improve the joint venture of the two mega companies. Hence, the staff of Silky Soft Holdings were working at their best performance as if they had unlimited vigor. While that was happening, the secretaries in Zhang Yang's office had inherited the burning vigor as well. Since summer in China was extremely hot and steamy, the secretaries had followed the trend and wore the most exposing outfits that they could find. Before this, they would have to bend down a little to expose their deep cleavages to Zhang Yang. Now, their clothing had such low

cutting, that their badahonkadongs were at the brink of spilling out! Just walking alone would send tremors down their watermelons. That, and the ultra-short pencil skirts that couldn't resist springing up the curvature of women's buttocks, thanks to the elastic tension, exposing the thongs that they wore beneath. Even though Zhang Yang was still in the office, he felt like he was sitting at the beach, enjoying a refreshing scene of bikini babes by the sea side! A true experience of summer happiness!

What more could he ask for?

Back at his house, there were the two Missus Universe freeloading, in his office, there was a group of hungry hyenas, just waiting for Zhang Yang to jump on them! What more could a man wish for?

Feeling blessed, Zhang Yang opened his personal computer and visited the 'God's Miracle' official website. After scrolling down for a bit, Zhang Yang checked out server patch notes and read.

1. Please make adequate preparation for the release of the Chaos Realm. Monsters in the Chaos Realms are extremely strong. Players are recommended to equip a full set of Level 90 Gray-Silver tier, to enjoy the content of the Chaos Realm.

2. Monsters description will be more details. However, be advised that the level gap between the players and the monsters will affect the amount of information being displayed.

3. Official release of Flying Mounts. Players can now use the

[Sealing Lease] to capture Flying Mounts in the Chaos Realm. The method of capturing Flying Mounts is similar to capturing regular Mounts. The number of regular mounts had been increased in pre-Chaos Realm regions. Players can now enjoy capturing all their favorite mounts before proceeding to the Chaos Realm.

4. Official release of the Inheritance Class. Players of any class will have the opportunity to obtain an Inheritance title. Be advised, all players are only limited to only ONE Inheritance title, and cannot forfeit the title upon receiving. Please review the Inheritance before accepting the quest.

5. Official launching of War of Kingdoms. All players from all 8 major Regions can now access the Chaos Realm and engage in a Kingdom war with other major cities (Kingdom). Any death of the Kingdom's King/Ruler will result in a "Rebuilding" phase for 15 days, of the defeated Kingdom. All players from the fore mentioned kingdom will face a penalty. Attack Power reduced by 50%, Maximum HP reduced by 50%. All other players from other Kingdoms will gained a boost of Honor Points by killing players who are currently penalized.

6. Level Suppression system has been lengthened from 10 Levels to 30 Levels. In conjunction with this change, players who kill monsters above their Level Gap will gain an Excessive Level Bonus Experience Points.

After scrolling through the content page, Zhang Yang read it and realize that the changes mentioned in this content patch were rather similar to that of his previous lifetime.



After getting used to playing the game for almost every other day, the sudden unavailability of the game had made Zhang Yang uncomfortable. Sitting down was rather uncomfortable for Zhang Yang, since he had been lying down to play the game. The worst fact was that the game required 3 days to patch!

On the next day, Zhang Yang had received a short text message from his pretty teacher, Yu Li which only contained three short words. "Wanna do it?"

Within nothing to do at home anyway, Zhang Yang drove to her house and picked Yu Li up from her new house. The both of them "did it" in a hotel room, all afternoon and evening. The second day was spent in the hotel room with Yu Li.

Later on the third day, the server for 'God's Miracle' was launched again, rather late in the evening.

After waiting for 3 days long, players had experienced the torturous emptiness in their hearts. During the relaunch, an abnormal number of players had expressed their happiness at finally returning "home". While some were happy, almost half of them were extremely pissed off at the draggy patching duration.

When Zhang Yang logged into the game, the first thing he did was to review the Mysterious Egg that he had obtained from the Mysterious Box.

[Mysterious Egg]

Description: The Incubation is completed. Please sacrifice your blood to the egg to form a binding contract with the mysterious lifeform.

Bound.

Huh. Nothing complicated. All Zhang Yang had to do was to drip some of his blood onto the egg. Zhang Yang then proceeded to slice his fingertip and let his blood drip onto the surface of the eggshell.

Tick...Tick...Tick...

The eggshell was like a super-absorbent sponge that had absorbed the blood without a trace. The egg only vibrated slightly and stopped the next second.

Huh. Zhang Yang guessed that it would require much more than a few drops of blood to "revive" coax the being inside the shell.

This time, Zhang Yang placed his palm on the blade and jerked it hard, to cause a deeper cut. After pouring the blood in his palm on the egg, the same thing occurred again but a progress bar appeared. It showed "1%..."

Zhang Yang frowned. He had just given the egg a handful of blood, and yet, the entire progress was only 1%?! Luckily, this was just a game. If he had to "donate" so much blood to reach 100%, he would have died for 10 times before it could happen.

Zhang Yang immediately called for Han Ying Xue over to heal him. When Han Ying Xue arrived, she had not come alone. In fact, the entire party was present to see what sort of situation required Zhang Yang to slid his own wrist. Once Han Ying Xue was prepared, Zhang Yang grit his teeth and proceeded to slice off his entire hand. Like an open hydrant, his severed stump poured out blood at such an astonishing rate that was draining his HP as well. As previously mentioned, the miraculously "thirsty object" had absorbed all the blood! There was not a single drop of blood that was wasted!

In reality, if one were to slice off one's hand, they would either faint from the shock and die later from excessive blood loss. Since they were in the game, all Zhang Yang had to suffer from was his drastic HP loss. Han Ying Xue immediately cast {Regeneration} and various other healing spells to match the rate of Zhang Yang's HP loss.

"Nyehahaha! I was right to call you noobie tank! Look at your HP! It's going down like a ruptured dam! Haha! Noob! Noob!"

"Oh lord, forming a contract would take so much blood! This egg must be something great!" said Daffodil Daydream. Almost everyone knew that he had obtained the egg from completing a Main Story Quest. Hence, the crowd that was circling Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue. The entire process took much longer than expected. Zhang Yang had lost track of time since he had been pouring blood onto the egg. He did note that Han Ying Xue had to stop healing twice because she had actually drained her entire MP gauge - twice.

After 90% of Han Ying Xue's MP gauge was drained for the third time, the egg had finally responded. The egg stopped absorbing the blood, and a small blood pool started forming the side.

Crack...

"Woah! It's hatching!" cried Wei Yan Er as she jumped to her feet. Everyone got closer, while Zhang Yang was forced to squat down to let everyone peek the egg.

Crack...

"Come on! Whatever you are! Break the eggshell and come out!"

More and more cracks started to form on the surface of the egg. A bright white light seeped out from the tiny cracks of the egg.

"OMG! IT'S COMING OUT! IT'S COMING! COMING!" cried the little brat, as she grabbed the Herb Foraging Familiar's neck even tighter! The poor little beast was suffering, and was about to faint! The little brat was so bored when Zhang Yang was pouring his blood onto the egg, and had forced Zhang Yang to summon out the familiar for her. She only wanted a dose of its cuteness!

"I wonder what it could be!"

"A dragon! It has to be a dragon! When Zhang Yang gave the sword to the princess, a dragon appeared! This egg must be the dragon's offspring!"

"Don't be silly. Do you think that dragons lay eggs?"

"Erhm...yeah. What else could lay an egg?"

"Your mom."

"F\*ck off."

Crack...Crack...

As everyone was having fun guessing around, more cracks formed, and finally, a piece of the shell was kicked out.

An extremely tiny spear that had broken the shell. The spear retracted back into the egg and started slashing about, collapsing the entire egg shell from within, revealing a tiny, thumb-sized humanoid girl that carried a spear and a shield on her back.

The little thumb-sized girl had long black hair. Even though she was so small, she had a magnificent body. If she was enlarged to normal size, she would have the most busty pair of breasts and a curvy butt that could rival even Sun Xin Yu! Her facial expression was so cute, which only emphasized her perfect complexion. Her face was so perfect as if someone had carved her out from a piece of jade.

[Felice] (Humanoid)

Level: 0

HP: 50

Defense: 0

Melee Attack: 3 – 5 (Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds)

Vitality: 1

Strength: 1

Dexterity: 1

Spirit: 1

Skill: NIL

Special: [Seal 1] [Seal 2] [Seal 3] [Seal 4]

Note: Zhan Yu’s Battle Companion

Everyone gasped in awe when such a little cute Barbie doll suddenly appeared in front of them. While the ladies were squealing, Hundred Shots asked, "Zhang Yang, what is a Battle

Companion."

"I have no idea!" Zhang Yang too was surprised, himself. He had never heard of the term "Battle Companion," even in his previous life!

Felice was small, but despite her tiny size, she was deceptively agile. When Wei Yan Er wanted to grab her. She jumped away as quick as lightning and landed on Zhang Yang's shoulder. Felice expressed her anger by slashing her spear around frantically.

"What a jump!"

That jump from the ground up to Zhang Yang's shoulder was no easy feat. It may be easy for a cricket to do so. But for a humanoid being like Felice to do so would be the same as Zhang Yang leaping up to a 10-storey building!

Zhang Yang turned his head, and looked at the thumb-size Felice, as she looked at him as well. There was a glint in her eyes that expressed a sense of longingness. It felt like he was looking into a mirror, with the same look in his eyes when he had just lost both of his parents. The same pain when he was just a young boy.

Unconsciously, Zhang Yang reached out with his index finger to her.

Towards Zhang Yang, Felice was not afraid, nor expressed any hostile reactions towards him compared to the others. Instead, she

reciprocated his actions by reaching out with her own hand to grab Zhang Yang's finger.

At that moment, when the two beings touched, Zhang Yang felt a sudden rush from his spine and up to his head. Something had changed in him, but he did not know what.

‘Server Announcement: Official release of Battle Companion! All players can now form a contract with an NPC to form a Battle Companion. Please refer to the official site for more information for Battle Companion!’

‘Server Announcement: Official release of Battle Companion patch will commence in 1 minute. Please make adequate preparation. The server will resume function after 5 minutes!’

‘Server Announcement:59 seconds till server update...’

‘Server Announcement:58 seconds till server update...’



# Chapter 462: Entering the Chaos Realms

---

"NOOOOOOOOOOOO!"

A simultaneous roar from all players in the entire world could be heard. Just as they had taken 3 f\*cking days to introduce a simple Inheritance patch, they would need to endure another server shut down now, just to patch some Battle Companion crap?! What the hell!?

No matter how much the players complained, there was no stopping from what that was to come. The patch would still commence. Players from all over the world lost connection to the game in less than a minute. But, luckily, the patch was only 5 minutes. The server came back online slightly earlier. Some of the players that were not as active like Zhang Yang had not realized that and logged in after the server was patched the second time. With such a little time, Zhang Yang and his gang took the chance to review the Battle Companion 'crap' from the official site.

Just when the system had finished announcing the patch, the official website had published the relevant information on Battle Companion. To think that they had taken no time at all to prepare for all the documents, prior to releasing such spontaneous patches.

Zhang Yang read the content released on the official website.

Battle Companions were like Hunter's pet. They can be summoned out, and removed from the battlefield. However, the major difference between a pet and a Battle Companion was that a

Battle Companion had their own judgments and "sentience". They could make their own decisions and could execute complicated actions, based on general instructions. As long they laid down the command, they would complete it as to how the situation dictated. A Battle Companion could disobey a player if the request is unreasonable, or suspicious. It meant that they could break the contract at any time they want, and had the same power authority as a player. To put it in simple terms, a Battle Companion was more like a mercenary than an underling.

Like Hunter's pet, Battle Companions could gain levels as the players killed monsters. There was one factor that made a Battle Companion much stronger than a pet. Battle Companions could equip weapons and armor which would give them the opportunity to grow much stronger than a pet could.

Players could only form a contract with one Battle Companion at a time. To swap a new Battle Companion, the player must first break the contract with the original Battle Companion. Battle Companion was easy to obtain. As long as a being has a mind of its own, be it a friendly target, or a hostile target, players could even sign a contract with a dragon if they had the capabilities of convincing them to form a contract. When a Battle Companion died in a field, whether or not by the hands of a player or a monster, it would lose a level.

Zhang Yang had mixed feelings in his heart. He had relied on his past "history" to carve himself a bright "future" in this timeline. However, most of the actions he had taken had been according to the previous timeline. However, this time, he had taken a new turn which had triggered something that was never released in the previous life! Zhang Yang could not help but wondered if his

actions would lead to something even bigger. However, now that he has come to this, there was no way left, but forwards!

Zhang Yang relogged into the game and found a new Battle Companion window which displayed the information of the little girl. By just a simple thought in his mind, Zhang Yang had summoned Felice out into the world. Unlike summoning a pet or mount, a Battle Companion would not require any channeling or casting delay. Summoning a Battle Companion was an instantaneous action.

When Felice was summoned out, she jumped out from Zhang Yang's palm, lightly stabbing Zhang Yang's shoulders to stick her landing better. With a proud expression, Felice stood tall, puffing out her chest with pride.

Zhang Yang laughed at her comical attempt to guard him and said, "You precious little thing. Do you understand what I am saying?"

Felice nodded her head but when she opened her mouth, nothing but "ah ah eh eh" came out. Perhaps she was a mute, or perhaps she was made that way, due to her low level. Maybe when she gains a few level, she would gain the ability to talk to Zhang Yang.

While Zhang Yang was enjoying his time with Felice, Han Ying Xue and the rest of the troublesome ladies had joined his side and wanted to play with Felice. Unfortunately, due to Han Ying Xue's and Wei Yan Er's rough treatment, Felice was angry and had repeatedly tried to stab them with her toothpick-size spear. Since her level was too low, her attacks had not made any damage. Not

even a single damage. Poor little "Thumbelina" was so frustrated, that she had morphed herself into a beam of light, and had returned back to Zhang Yang's inventory.

Furious and disgruntled, Han Ying Xue pestered Zhang Yang to summon her out again. However, Zhang Yang had gained a liking for the little critter, and decided to take her side, and refused to summon Felice out just so that they could play with her. Furthermore, as the official site had mentioned, a Battle Companion could terminate the contract with the player anytime they wanted to. If Zhang Yang ever angered or annoyed Felice to an extent, she might just kick his butt and leave Zhang Yang.

Right then, Zhang Yang did not even have a hint of Felice's ability. To think that the trigger point to initiate the Battle Companion system would require the clearance of the quest "Search of Meteor Sword", Zhang Yang felt that Felice was something extremely special and unique since he had obtained her from the Queen of the Imperial Heaven's Empire after all. It would not make sense if Felice did not have any special abilities.

Zhang Yang removed himself from the crowd and teleported to the Thunderstorm Castle. There, he summoned the bear and rode all the way to the Ten Barren Seas. Right then, when the Chaos Realm was opened to the world, Zhang Yang had the greatest advantage, that was, his Level. The second highest level player in the game was only Level 96. Do not judge the difference of four Levels from 96 to 100, so the amount of time that the second player would need to grind to reach Level 100, would reach one months' time! During that one month, Zhang Yang could have already roamed around the entire Chaos Realm!

The first item on his to-do-list was to capture a Flying Mount. Not only could a Flying Mount grant a player a wider, clear view of the landscape from above, the speed of which it could travel would be three times faster than regular mounts. While a level 90 map was already a headache for Zhang Yang, not having a Flying Mount in the Chaos Realm would make him suffer, from all the time wasted solely on riding his regular mount.

After Zhang Yang arrived at the Ten Barren Seas, Zhang Yang swapped the bear for the Mythical Turtle and spent close to 5 hours traveling on waters to reach the island at the center of the sea. Located at the very center of the island was the portal that led to the Chaos Realm. Even though the portal had long existed even before the system had made the announcement, no player could go through it!

On the island where the portal was located, there were no beasts and no monsters roaming around. Zhang Yang arrived on the island and swapped back to his bear to reach the center of the island without much delay. When Zhang Yang arrived in the center of the island, he was greeted by a black colored portal, with dark matter swirling in a circle, like a two-dimensional black hole.

Zhang Yang had used this portal once, back in his previous life. When he used it that time, Chaos Realm had already been explored by pioneer players. Zhang Yang only needed to link his [Teleportation Scroll] to the territory there, and had not needed to use the portal again the second time. Travelling to the Chaos Realm would not require of him to travel to the island again, It felt like a strong déjà vu when he approached the portal for the first time, a second time. Zhang Yang drew a deep breath and jumped into the whirlpool of darkness.

Whmmmmmm... Thud.

It all happened in an instant. First, a sensation of being sucked into oblivion, second, a sudden surge of speed, and finally, third, a bright light flashed in his eyes, and he appeared on the other side. In the Chaos Realm, every player would arrive at a football field-sized gigantic altar. Behind Zhang Yang was the same portal where he had just walked through, and in front of him were the plains of Chaos Realm.

‘Ding! You have entered the Chaos Realm!’

Zhang Yang walked a little further and reached the end of the gigantic altar. Arranged in an orderly manner, there were eight portals which led to eight other different types of Ten Barren Seas, which belonged to eight different regions. The current map which Zhang Yang was currently in was named Tibanya Wasteland. Monsters in this map ranged from Level 100 to Level 130, which was quite a huge jump.

Even though Zhang Yang had recalled the location of the territory in this map, it was a matter of one year ago. When he opened the world map, it was completely dark, since he had not yet explored any of it. Hence, it took him quite some time, but Zhang Yang managed to locate the exact position of the territory that he had decided to conquer.

He was about to get into an extremely heated conflict. First, he would have to get himself a Flying Mount to save him a great deal

of time to travel across the Chaos Realm, Next, he would want to conquer a territory to save him more time to travel back and forth between the portals. Lastly, by the time he has achieved two of them, Zhang Yang could start the quest to obtain the God of War Inheritance. That was enough of a workload for anyone else but Zhang Yang wanted more. In one month's time, he wanted to conquer not just one, but two territories!

To conquer a territory would be a war between players. However, since Zhang Yang was the only one qualified to enter the Chaos Realm, that would mean that all territory in the realm were his to conquer, provided that no one could surpass Level 100 within the stipulated duration.

Zhang Yang had decided, that after conquering the territory in the Tibanya Wasteland, he would enter the Grandu Ice Ridge, and take the territory there for himself! One of the reasons for him to do so was because the Teleportation Point in the Grandu Ice Ridge led to the Japan-Korea region's Ten Barren Seas.

When those bastards enter the Chaos Realm, they would cry in dismay, knowing that the only place where they could link their [Teleportation Scroll] had been taken away! Each time they wanted to travel to the Chaos Realm, they could only teleport to the Ten Barren Seas and travel 5 hours to the island, and use the portal! You have to obtain the [Territory Conquest Order] to conquer an already-occupied territory. Furthermore, defending was way easier than attacking. Lone Desert Smoke was China's strongest guild. Additionally, territorial attacks were only limited between guilds. There was nothing for Zhang Yang to be afraid of, in a 1v1 fight!

Zhang Yang could only look forward to witnessing the expression and dismay when they realize that they had lost their convenience of traveling!

After setting his direction straight, Zhang Yang rode the bear and headed towards the first destination. After the altar, the area was nothing but a wasteland, as the name implied. It was littered with dying flora, while various cacti thrived. After just a few steps out, Zhang Yang could hear a low growl. Out of the brown, withering bushes, a leopard jumped out and sank its fangs deep in the white bear's thigh.

[Ravaging Leopard] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 104

HP: 16,160

Defense: 100

Melee Attack: 4,702 – 5,502

Skills:

[Claw Attack]: Tears down the defense of the target. Deals a total of 5,000 physical attack in 15 seconds.

The bear growled in pain and retaliated immediately by



slamming its paws into the leopard. Even though the monsters in the Chaos Realm was strong, the white bear was still a Yellow-Gold tier pet mount. With such a large difference in power and tier, the paw attack had sent leopard flying off its feet. The white bear had already received an attack by the leopard before it was sent flying. There was a visible bleeding wound on the bear's thigh, but in the mounting status, all damage will be dealt on the shared HP bar. The attack was a DoT skill from the Claw Attack. However, instead of suffering any loss in HP, Zhang Yang superior damage absorption passives had completely nullified all the potential damage!

Zhang Yang snickered. With a quick thought, Zhang Yang summoned Felice out. Battle Companions are similar to that of a regular pet, they both required hands-on-the-field experience points to level up.

With the Sword of Purging Devourer dancing in the air, the Raging Leopard fell in its own pool of blood. It had dropped a piece of [Leopard's Tail], and a rabbit's foot that was yet to be digested.

[Lucky Rabbit's Foot] (ETC)

Description: A limb that once belonged to a lucky bunny. Now, it belongs to you!

Zhang Yang frowned. How could a lucky bunny be eaten by a leopard and still not get digested...

The monster had given them a luxurious amount of experience

points. Although the total experience points were divided across Zhang Yang, the bear and even Felice, the 5,000 experience points that were given to her, was enough to raise her level to Level 5.

There was a sudden growth in height and size as she gained levels. At level 5, she was already half a foot tall!

Zhang Yang continued on and killed more monsters that pounced at him. There were leopards, lions, boar or only normal tiered enemies. Still, their attack powers rivaled that of elite tiers! That large amount of experience points had sent Little Felice's Level up high!

Level 10? Level 20? Level 30!

When the little girl reached Level 30, Felice had grown from the size of Thumbelina to a normal teenager! She wore a silvery white battle gown. Although the appearance of it looked like it was made of silver, it was neither steel nor silver, for the quality of her armor was much sturdier than that of common armor!

"Big Brother!" Felice cried out the most earnest, and cute voice to Zhang Yang.

# Chapter 463: Felice, Too Cute, Too Powerful

---

Zhang Yang jumped when he heard Felice finally uttering her first word. He would have never expected "[Big Brother](#)" to be her first word!

On cloud nine, Zhang Yang smiled happily and said, "Felice, do you know who you are?"

Felice was surprised at the sudden question and went quiet, as she dwelled in her sea of thoughts. After a slight wincing, Felice shook her head and replied, "I think I do, but whenever I try to remember it, I would have a headache!"

Zhang Yang walked closer to her and patted her head gently. She was at his shoulder height, and it was easy for Zhang Yang to rub the top of her head.

"There's no need to hurt yourself thinking about it. You'll have my word that I will protect you!"

"Yes, big brother!" Felice nodded her head enthusiastically.

Zhang Yang opened Felice's profile window and analyzed her properties.

[Felice] (Humanoid)

Level: 30

HP: 43,530

Defense: 1,960

Melee Attack: 5,888 – 6,488 (Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds)

Skills:

[Blazing Dragon's Spear]: Deals 100% physical attack, imbued with Fire elemental damage. Requires: Melee Weapon. Cooldown: 1 seconds. Cost: 50 Power.

[Dragon Barrage]: Deals 150% physical attack on a target. 10% chance to stun the target. Effective against boss monsters with lower stun rates. Requires: Melee Weapon. Cooldown: 1 minute. Cost: 50 Power.

[Dragonhawk Transformation]: Morphs into a Dragonhawk. Possesses a series of skills that are not available in human form. Unable to use skills of her human form while in Dragonhawk form.

Special: {Seal 1} {Seal 2} {Seal 3} {Seal 4}

Note: Zhan Yu's Battle Companion

Zhang Yang was greatly blown away when he saw Felice's long HP, thick Defense, and her absurd attack power. She was only Level 30 and yet, she already had 40,000 HP! Han Ying Xue herself had only close to 50,000 HP despite being higher than Level 90, and that was already under the effects of Zhang Yang's Vitality Aura buff. Felice currently possesses much more HP than what Zhang Yang had at her level! And she was far from her full potential!

As for her attacking power, even though {Blazing Dragon's Spear} was not too impressive since it would merely be an extra attack above the regular attack. However, the skill was inherently strong, since it had Fire elemental damage, which could ignore Physical Defense. {Dragon's Spear Barrage} was strong. It had a fixed chance to stun, and could even be used on a boss!

Lastly, transformation?

Zhang Yang asked curiously. "Felice, you can transform?"

"Yes, big brother!" With a quick concentration, Felice glowed brightly and morphed into a beautiful Dragonhawk. She grew a long tail and a pair of beautiful wings that had an eight-meter-wide wingspan. From the size of a regular human, she had morphed into a 5-meter long flying majestic beast. Her feathers were gleaming with various vibrant colors.

[Felice] (Dragonhawk)

Level: 30

HP: 32,950

Defense: 880

Magic Attack: 3,192 – 3,792

Skills:

[Pulverizing Flame]: Breathes fires from above, deals 3,000 Fire damage every second to an area, 10x10 meters wide. Lasts for 10 seconds. Requires channeling. Cooldown: 30 seconds. Cost: 100 Focus.

[Fire Missile]: Fire a Fire Missile at a target. Deals 200% Magic, Fire elemental damage. Casting time: 2 seconds. Cost: 20 Focus.

Additional Effect: Can Fly.

Hmph. Strong.

Right then, Felice was already really strong. Something about the four seals on her properties had to mean something. Unsealing them would probably unseal even more power. Right then, Zhang Yang had come to an understanding, that perhaps the main story quest reward was indeed worth it, after all!

Sadly, even though Felice's Dragonhawk mode was strong, she

could not carry Zhang Yang, even though she could fly. At most, she could lift Zhang Yang via her claws for a short distance, before having to put Zhang Yang down.

Zhang Yang proceeded to kill his way deeper into the new world. As he arrived at his intended destination, Felice had reached Level 64 and had gained a massive boost to all of her stats.

The destination where Zhang Yang had arrived at was a small town. Right then, Zhang Yang was standing on top of a large hill facing directly towards the town. From the top of the hill, Zhang Yang could clearly see the overall landscape of the entire town. The town was occupied by humans. Their buildings and structures were mostly westernized, with a large empty plaza in the center of the town. The stereotypical giant clock was situated at the entrance instead.

Zhang Yang was sure that this town was the first territory that China players had first conquered in his previous life. Even though there were better territories in later maps, this map was important, since it determined the ease of teleportation between the outside world and the Chaos Realm.

This little town was the first station that any player would come through from China region, and also the only obstacle that any player that wanted to invade China's region. They could either fight their way through, sneak through, or better, fly above the town if they had Flying Mounts.

However so, if any Tom Dick or Harry could get their hands on a Flying Mount, and fly over territories, this little town would not

have such significant value in the first place.

This town would play an important role in the defense of China's region territory. If someone from other regions had taken over this place, they would have gained unrestricted access to China's Chaos Realm portal, and would be able to march in to take over any China's territory at will.

Zhang Yang had the highest bit of determination to conquer this territory, however, there was one major problem. He did not know how to obtain the town's [Territory Command Order]! Might as well take a stroll around town before jumping to any random conclusions.

There were many tall cliffs after the hill. The land was extremely hard to venture if one were to travel on foot. Unless he had a Flying Mount now, Zhang Yang would have to walk down the hill from the south and travel around the entire mountainous region, only to circle back again to reach the town.

Very soon, after descending the hill, Zhang Yang arrived at a small graveyard. This place had already become a playground for the Spectres. There were many rotting corpses walking around the place that made eerie, skin-crawl inducing shrieks.

[Wandering Skeletal Soldier] (Normal, Specter)

Level: 105



HP: 16,200

Defense: 100

Ranged Attack: 4,808 – 5,408

Melee Attack: 3,128 – 3,728

Skills:

[Armor Break]: Deals 150 Ranged attack to a target, and reduces 50% of the target's defense value. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Note: Fallen soldier of the war that had taken place 7 years ago. Countless brave warriors had sacrificed their lives to protect the land from invading demons

"Hold! Don't go any further!"

Just as Zhang Yang was about to enter the battlefield, and an older gentleman walked towards him. The man had a walking staff, and had trouble walking towards Zhang Yang.

[Grave Keeper Douglas] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 1

Note: Not combatant NPC.

Zhang Yang turned to the old man and said, "Do not worry for me, old man. I am very strong. The monsters here can't touch me!"

When Zhang Yang stopped his tracks, Felice flew down from the sky and reverted to her human form to stand beside him.

"What I'm worried of, isn't you, son." Said Douglas nonchalantly, which made Zhang Yang slightly ticked off. "I don't want 'you' to harm 'them'!"

Zhang Yang raised an eyebrow. "What are you talking about? Have you gone senile? Aren't they Spectres?" said Zhang Yang.

"You are right. They 'are' Spectres. Listen to me dear boy. Many years ago, there was a war that befell this land. These Spectres that roamed around here were the human heroes who had sacrificed themselves to fight and preserve peace for the town of Morning." Douglas explained the situation, while walking around the graveyard, dusting off the dried leaves on one of the tombstones.

Zhang Yang had a sudden thought. The name of the town, Morning, was the name of the territory that he wanted to conquer. Since he had no clue on how to obtain the town's [Territory Command Order], it was best to follow the quest here rather than just roam around aimlessly without a clear lead.

Zhang Yang stopped to think for quite some time before saying,

"I cannot allow these Spectres here to roam around freely. What if someone were to get hurt or killed by them? Heroes or not, they are now Spectres. If someone were to be gravely injured, who is to be held responsible?" said Zhang Yang.

Douglas cringed. "They are brave warriors! They fought in the war and died! If someone were to approach them, the dead warrior would attack out of their unrelenting fighting spirits. Perhaps, there is a way to save them. Only with the Calming Ethereal Holy Water, these Spectres would rest in peace."

Zhang Yang interjected immediately and said, "Old man, where can I find this holy water? As an adventurer, I pledged my sword to fight for peace! Please allow me to search this holy water to bring peace to these fallen heroes."

"If you are as strong as you said, you can make your way to the Poison Blood Valley. In the deepest part of the Valley, there is a small spring. That spring contains the Calming Ethereal Holy Water." The old man shook his head in disappointment before walking away. "I must say, you are not the first warrior to venture to the Poison Blood Valley. There were many warriors like you, who claimed to be strong, but never returned. I am certain that you would be the last to go, and I hope that you would be the first to make it back alive." The old man had not sincerity in his words.

‘Ding! Douglas had a quest for you: Calming Ethereal Holy Water. Will you accept it?’

Accept.

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Empty Flask!’

[Calming Ethereal Holy Water] (Difficulty Level: B)

Quest Description: Head to the depths of the Poison Blood Valley and returned the water from the spring. Be advised, the Poison Blood Valley is a place of great danger. Be alert at all times. Bring a comrade if necessary. Poison Blood Valley is located in the West.

Progress: Calming Ethereal Holy Water 0/1

Zhang Yang smiled and nodded politely before leaving. "Felice, let's go."

"Yes, big brother," said Felice obediently, like a little sister. She morphed into the Dragonhawk form without Zhang Yang asking. Zhang Yang stared at the mythical beast, hoping that he too, would quickly stumble upon a Flying Mount as soon as possible. Unlike regular pet mounts, a Flying Mount was extremely rare, and would take a lot of luck to stumble upon.

Zhang Yang, Felice, and the white bear slaughtered random beasts along the way and quickly arrived the Poison Blood Valley. The valley got its name from a long flowing river that flowed down the center of the valley. Instead of normal blue waters, the river had greenish, thick, lumpy liquid that flows from the edge of the valley. From afar, Zhang Yang could already smell the putrid smell of the water. On both sides of the river were stone paths that were dyed in deep red colors. Zhang Yang did not know if the pathway

was dyed with blood or if it was just a natural occurrence. There were herbs growing along the crimson pathway.

Just then Zhang Yang realized that, he had not yet released the Herb Foraging Familiar! Zhang Yang quickly summoned out the familiar, paid the 1,000 gold coins fee and allowed the familiar to roam. Right when the familiar appeared at his feet, it quickly flew behind Zhang Yang and circled around carefully. The little critter stared at Felice with hostility and decided to flap its tiny little wings and disappear into the nearby forest. Perhaps, the little critter was already annoyed at Wei Yan Er's random "assaults" and was preparing to escape when it was summoned out.

Thump...Thump...Thump...

There were loud, heavy footsteps echoing through the land. Before Zhang Yang could do anything else, a large, 10 meters tall giant walked pass Zhang Yang not far from where he stood. The orc wore nothing but a crude loincloth and a long spikey club that rested on his left shoulder. His right arm was dragging the carcass of a dead leopard that had been flattened to the point where its limbs were not in their regular positions.

[Savage Man-Eating Orc] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 110

HP: 1,100,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 9,194 – 9,994

Skills:

[Head Bash]: Forcefully bashes the target's head, dealing 150% melee damage and stunning the target for 2 seconds.

Note: One faction of the gigantic orc race. Prefers to behave savagely. Loves human meat.

"Big brother! This giant orc eats human!" cried Felice angrily. She wielded her spear in her hand and made to run towards the orc.

Zhang Yang immediately held his hand out to stop the little girl. "Felice, listen to me. Don't rush into things. He's too strong for you now. Allow me to take this."

At the current stage of the game, the system had already tweaked the Level Suppression Gap to 30 Levels, Felice had only needed to gain 10 levels more to be able to deal unsuppressed damage. By then, she would be a strong attacker in her own right?! Until then, she would have to listen to Zhang Yang and watch from the sidelines. If she dies, she would lose one level, which would put a strain on Zhang Yang. Even though pets and Battle Companions required less experience points compared to players, it would still take ages to level them up!

Zhang Yang hopped onto the bear, and charged towards the giant orc.

"Ohhoo...food. Food coming. Me kill."

The giant orc released the carcass his hand, and he grabbed the club from his shoulders. The orc wielded the spiked club with both of his gigantic hands, and slammed it down at Zhang Yang with the force of a thousand men!

WHAM!

Unfortunately, Zhang Yang was already using the skill - {Wild Charge} and could not move away in the midst of a skill animation. However, Zhang Yang was already prepared for an attack. He held his shield up high, and activated {Block} at the last minute.

‘-730!’ {Block} reflect damage.

The white bear threw its massive body with the power {Wild Charge}, and swiped its massive claw at the orc’s foot.

‘-4,412!’

‘-4,291!’

As expected from the Yellow-Gold battle mount, its attack was as strong as Zhang Yang. It was a pity that the bear was only Level 98.

If Zhang Yang could grind a little more to push it to the threshold of Level 100, the bear attack power would have been a lot higher.

It could not be helped. Zhang Yang had gained so many bonus level rewards from events and quests, causing him to reach higher levels much faster than this battle mount. Bonus levels are rewards granted to the player. As a battle mount would only gain experience points from hands-on battles, the bear would be unable to gain any experience points, despite the system granting the owner bonus levels.

Felice did not just sit quietly. After seeing her "big brother" attacked by the giant orc bully, she jumped into the battle, and morphed into the Dragonhawk, and attacked from afar. From mid-air, she spewed out Fire Missiles, and bombarded the orc with damage values surpassing 6,000!

Zhang Yang was stunned. He had wanted to call out for Felice to withdraw, but when he saw the damage that she had dealt to the orc, despite still having the suppressed damage via the level gap, he gave up on the idea and continued to attack the orc. Her attack power was already beyond the Level 98 bear. If she were to gain more levels and participate in battle with Zhang Yang, she would be the main attacker! By then, Sun Xin Yu and the other super-powered attackers in Zhang Yang's team would not be able to exceed the damage that Felice could deal!

Even though the orc had a little over 1 million HP, Zhang Yang had the bear and Felice, and was able to defeat the boss without a hitch.



Just as Zhang Yang was about to deliver the last killing blow, the orc growled loudly and his spiked club started glowing red. Zhang Yang could not react in time to dodge the slam.

"Club feels good! I smash!"

Wham!

‘-7,336!’

Zhang Yang could not counter the attack since {Block} was still in a cooldown state. Blood started to flow down and submerged Zhang Yang's helm. The orc's {Head Bash} was strong enough to even stun Zhang Yang for 2 seconds.

"Big Brother!" Felice cried out in rage. She flew down from the sky and returned to her human form. With a powerful kick on the ground, Felice launched herself at the orc and cast {Dragon's Spear Barrage}.

‘-7,867!’

Felice was fortunate to have proc'd a stun effect on the orc!

Big Brother: If you watch Japanese anime, you would know how a person feels when a little girl calls the main character Onii-chan. That sort of feeling was what Zhang Yang felt, Onii-chan...Onii-chan...lol.

# Chapter 464: Cleansing the Spectres

---

"Nicely done!" Zhang Yang cried out. He had the [Heart of the Death Knight] equipped, and would only experience half of the intended stun duration. However, since his character level was already 20 Levels beyond the item level, the equipment's effect would be reduced. Thus, Zhang Yang had experienced 1.2 seconds of the 2 seconds stun.

After a slugfest, Zhang Yang defeated the giant orc and obtained a few pieces of [Inscribed Cloth] and a few silver coins.

When Zhang Yang looted the item, he found the [Inscribed Cloth] odd, considering the fact that the orc only had a short loincloth on. After he finished up with his business there, Zhang Yang called out to Felice. "Let's go!"

"Mm." Felice answered obediently.

Zhang Yang appreciated her words. If only Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue would obey Zhang Yang so obediently, then he could ask them to warm his bed for him. That, or he could just ask them to be nice to each other. He would rather have that, than the constant cold war between the two of them.

Zhang Yang went on and found an old gigantic house that was built from stacking gigantic flat boulders like Legos. The house was so huge that it could be a hall, rather than a house.

Creek...

Before Zhang Yang could go closer to the house, a female orc opened the door and walked out of the stone house. This female orc was much larger in size and height compared to the previous orc that Zhang Yang had just killed. Unlike the male orc, she wore a super-sized bra that held her overly large wrecking-ball sized breast. If she were to have a bra size, it would be beyond human measurements. Perhaps, Silky Soft Holdings could specially manufacture a bra with a ZZ cup size... Or perhaps...not... They would be bankrupt if they were to cater for beasts.

Zhang Yang was not even trying to hide. The female orc turned around and quickly noticed Zhang Yang presence. She growled with a thunderous roar and charged at Zhang Yang. Her roar was so deafening that it hurt Zhang Yang's ear. When she got closer to Zhang Yang, she cracked a sinister smile and cried, "Fresh meat! Human meat! Best meat! I kill! Eat fresh!"

Zhang Yang charged forward with the bear. With agile maneuvers, Zhang Yang bent over and lay down on the bear's back to evade one of the incoming punches, and sliced at the female orc's thigh. It was not that Zhang Yang wanted to attack her legs, the monster was just too huge, and Zhang Yang had no means of jumping any higher than her thighs.

"Hah!" Felice grunted as she changed into a Dragonhawk and fired Fire Missiles to the orc. In just a short minute, Zhang Yang and Felice had killed the Man-Eating Female Orc. Even though he had lost over 70,000 HP, he could recover all his HP loss with a simple activation of {Berserker's Heal}. Compared to anyone else, the monster's basic attack of 9,600 could have killed anyone easily without them having a chance to attack. A normal party would

have to bring in at least 5 members before they could even consider attacking the monster.

Zhang Yang moved forward and found many more stone houses like the previous one. Usually, there was only one orc inside. Other times, there were two and, more rarely, three at a time. If Zhang Yang had to fight two orcs at the same time, he would need to use either {Shield Wall}, or {Berserker's Heal}. If he had to fight three orcs at the same time, he would need to use both skills to survive.

Aptly scaled to their difficulty, the orcs had given Zhang Yang a luxurious amount of experience points, which was shared with the bear and Felice. The bear had reached Level 99, and Felice had gained 3 Levels. Zhang Yang alone had only managed to raise a tiny microscopic bump on his experience bar. After Level 100, the experience needed to level up was just too much. Level 96 players would take 1 whole month to reach Level 100, for god's sake!

The Valley was not huge to begin with, and Zhang Yang had only taken 3 hours or so to reach the deepest part of the valley. There, at the edge of a thick forest, Zhang Yang could see a spring. The pool of water was not far from the smelly green colored river, yet it maintained a beautiful, clear color. Zhang Yang soaked his sweaty hands into the pool, and he could see beautiful starlights glistening at the bottom of the pool.

Zhang Yang took out the flask that he had obtained and filled the glass bottle up with the water. The quest notification popped up, and notified a change in the quest.

[Calming Ethereal Holy Water] (Quest Item)

Item Expiration: 4 Hours 59 Minutes 59 Seconds.

Crap!

There was even a time limit for the item! Zhang Yang had greatly appreciated Felice's help in killing the monsters. Thanks to her, they had managed to this spring in 3 hours! Without her, they might have taken close to 6 hours to kill their way there! If they had taken that long to arrive to the spring, the elite monsters that they had killed on their way here would have respawned after 5 hours. That meant Zhang Yang would have to kill the monster on the entrance of the valley again, which would only further delay the time taken to return to the old man! The quest item could have expired and he would either have to double back, or the quest might even be deemed a failure!

Zhang Yang kept the bottle of holy water in his inventory and rushed out of the valley. With no monsters around to block his way, Zhang Yang had only taken 20 minutes to leave the valley and reach the graveyard.

"Old man, I've brought back the water."

Douglas limped his way around and said, "Well. I never expected to see you so soon! You have indeed proven your words!"

Zhang Yang took out the bottle of holy water and gave it to the old man. He was slightly annoyed at the man, when he had previously mentioned the number of warriors who have gone and

never came back. Zhang Yang was the first person to arrive at this place. What warriors were he talking about?!

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Calming Ethereal Holy Water. Obtained 5,000,000 Experience Points!’

"This is but the first step, young warrior. What you have to do next is to sprinkle the water on the bones of the fallen warriors. With that, they can finally rest in peace."

‘Ding! Douglas has a quest for you: Cleansing the Spectres. Will you accept it?’

[Cleansing the Spectre] (Difficulty Level: C)

Description: Use the holy water and sprinkle it on the Spectres in their graves to grant them peace.

Progress: Cleansed Spectre 0/100

[Calming Ethereal Holy Water] (Quest Item)

Use: Cleanses the souls of the Spectres, granting them peace to leave this world. Can only be used on the corpse of a defeated enemy.

Zhang Yang left the old man behind and went into the graveyard. There were many roaming skeletal warriors, and Zhang Yang had

engaged with one in no time. The skeletal warrior had produced a bow out of thin air and had fired an arrow at Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang did not even needed to unsheathe his sword, his bear and Felice had whacked the poor Spectre up in less than 30 seconds.

Zhang Yang walked over to the battle and by the time he had taken out the Holy water, the skeletal warrior was already defeated. Zhang Yang then used the [Calming Ethereal Holy Water] on the corpse. The water was completely absorbed into the bones. Before Zhang Yang could even close the bottle, a human ghost appeared from the remains, and bowed respectfully at Zhang Yang before dispersing into millions of light particles.

One down, 99 more to go.

Light particles spread all over the graveyard as Zhang Yang, Felice, and the bear raided the entire graveyard, and killed every single roaming skeletal monster. A problem was found when Zhang Yang had cleared the entire graveyard and his quest progress was stuck at 99/100. There were no more Spectres for him to cleanse anymore! Even though normal tiered monsters respawned fairly quickly. It would still take 3 hours for them to respawn. To make matters worse, Zhang Yang had only taken close to half an hour to kill every single Spectre within the vicinity! He would have to wait for 2 hours and 30 minutes for the Spectre to spawn again!

Zhang Yang got around the graveyard frantically, and started to search for any leftover monsters that he had missed. Fortunately for him, he finally found one. The skeletal monsters were so similar to that of regular humans! It was natural for Zhang Yang to

miss out one or two. The one he found was rather different, compared to the regular skeletal monsters. It was seated on the ground, and was resting his head on his palms, like he was actually thinking.

Zhang Yang paced over to the skeletal monster and had Felice kill the thing in less than 4 strokes. When Zhang Yang poured the holy water on its remains, a human ghost appeared. But this time, the ghost carried a name tag.

[Sous's Soul] (Spirit)

Level: 1

This ghost was not the same as the previous 99 souls that Zhang Yang had cleansed. After it appeared, the ghost had bowed at Zhang Yang and had opened its ethereal mouth. "Forgive me for asking. But, could you, kind adventurer, fulfill my one last wish?"

Zhang Yang nodded. "Do you have unfinished business?"

"Yes." Sous nodded and gazed at the general direction of Morning Town. "I have a younger sister living in that town. She's... She was born blind. My parents were killed by the demons a long time ago. Hence, both of us had grown up together. However, I left this earth a little too early to let go of my younger sister! I cannot leave this world not knowing that she is safe without me! Before I left her to join the expedition army, I had promised to return to her with a Star Spirit Flower. That flower is a mythical flower that would cure anything, even the blind! However, now that I am dead, I



cannot fulfill my promise. Adventurer, I beg of you, to bring my sister a Star Spirit Flower. She is called Luilina. Please, do this in my stead."

‘Ding! Sous’s Soul has a quest for you: Sous’s Last Wish. Will you accept it?’

Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, "You are a respected human being and a kind brother. I give you my word."

"I thank you from the bottom of my heart, young adventurer," said Sous before his soul faded away.

There was a long silence, when suddenly, Felice hugged Zhang Yang from behind. With tears in her eyes, she pleaded, "Big Brother! You cannot leave me behind!"

Zhang Yang smiled. "Silly child. I promised you, didn’t I? I will always be there to protect you!" Zhang Yang patted her head.

"Mm..."

Zhang Yang opened the quest log and read the quest description.

[Sous’s Last Wish] (Difficulty Level: B)

Description: Sous wishes that you will help him deliver a special flower to his younger sister, Luilina. Such a flower can only be

found at the highest peak of Red Copper Mountain. Red Copper Mountain is located to the south. Luilina is currently living in the outskirts of Morning Town.

Progress: Obtained the Star Spirit Flower 0/1

Zhang Yang first returned to Douglas and completed the mission for only 200,000 experience points. However, despite the abysmal amount of experience points, Zhang Yang was not disappointed. The main quest was not cleansing the Spectres. He knew that the quest might have led him to another which, he hoped, could lead him to get the [Territory Command Order], for Morning Town.

Zhang Yang rode towards the south, with Felice in her Dragonhawk form. The little merry party reached to the Red Copper Mountain, after only 2 hours of hiking.

The mountain was grand and tall. The Red Copper Mountain had gotten its name from the color of the soil and the color of the trees growing ever so scarcely around the mountain. With little to no trees at all, the surface of the mountain was made up of steep cliffs, which made climbing it rather difficult. However, it did not stop Zhang Yang from reaching halfway through where he had encountered the first monster. The monster was a large snake that measured close to 10 meters in length.

[Spectrum Venomous Snake] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 110

HP: 17,600

Defense: 100

Magic Attack: 3,106 – 3,506 (Natural Damage)

Skills:

[Venom Spit]: Deals 200% Natural damage with a 10% chance to cause {Poisoned} to the target, which will cause the target to received 20% extra damage when attacked with Natural damage attacks. Cooldown: 2 seconds.

# Chapter 465: Flying Mount!

---

Puah!

A venomous projectile flew through the air and splattered all over Zhang Yang's armor. The green liquid almost immediately started sliding off his armor. The damage done to him was only 3,061 Natural damage.

The monsters in the Chaos Realm were a distinct step above their pre-Chaos Realm brethren. Immediately, Felice started acting on her own, without waiting for a single word from Zhang Yang. She shot down from the sky, and morphed back into an energetic young woman. With a quick thrust of her spear, Felice stabbed the snake.

‘-6,201!’

She was already Level 77, having grown far stronger since the time Zhang Yang fought the orcs. Sadly, her attacks have been reduced by the system's Level Gap suppression. On monsters over level 107, she would only deal 50% of her damage! However, even with half of her attacks "taken" away by the system, one attack from her spear was already enough to take away 1/3 of the snake's HP.

Zhang Yang smirked. He was extremely satisfied to see how much Felice had grown. To speed things up, Zhang Yang and the bear joined the fray, landing one attack each and killing the snake before it could even launch a second attack.

She could already deal such a high amount of damage at only Level 77. What would happen when she reaches Level 100? Would she kill a monster with one hit? Zhang Yang could not wait to find out. With her alone, Zhang Yang would be unstoppable!

He reached down and picked up the loot, obtaining a few pieces of [Snake Meat]. He could bring the materials back and pass it to any guild member who has taken up the Cooking profession.

Zhang Yang continued up the mountainous road and killed more snakes that ambushed him. The snakes were hiding in the creeks along the pathway and they had jumped up from behind Zhang Yang as he walked past by. Zhang Yang was not bothered by it. He was already strong to begin with. Now that he had Felice and his bear together with him, he killed them all in less than 2 hits. Zhang Yang killed on and on and managed to get the bear to Level 100, while Felice had reached Level 80.

The Level 100 Gold-Eared White Bear had 43,680 HP with Zhang Yang's Vitality Aura boost, and an Attack Power of 5,886 – 6,486, attacking once every 3 seconds. Its DPS was at 2,062.

As for Felice, she was at Level 80 and had a total HP of 139,300 in her human form, boosted by Zhang Yang's Vitality Aura. Her melee attack power was 14,145 – 15,145 with an attack interval of 3.8 seconds. Her DPS was 3,855.

Zhang Yang had nothing to say. The bear had a great track record from the beginning. This was just the bear living up to its

standards. That alone pleased Zhang Yang. But when he saw Felice's stats, he&nbsp;was overjoyed, and slightly ashamed. Felice's stats had already surpassed his own! His own HP was 97,190, his attack was 4,081 – 4,481, and his DPS was 1,529. How could he be the master when his Battle Companion is already stronger than him!

"Felice. You make me feel so tiny!" said Zhang Yang, with a sigh. Right now, he could not live up to his promise to protect her. Right now, it's the other way around!

Felice smiled warmly and said, "Big Brother, you need not worry! I'm sure big brother will be stronger in the future."

Such a kind little girl, unlike that little brat Wei Yan Er who would always tease him at every chance she gets!

As they continued on slaying more and more snakes and obtaining more [Snake Meat], Zhang Yang found an odd little shiny thing lying next to the [Snake Meat].

"Hmm?"

It was a snake, measuring only about half a foot long. It was completely white, and had silvery lining all over its tiny, miniature body. For someone like Zhang Yang, he could appreciate the snake's beauty. Its eyes were smaller than green peas, but the brilliant green would actually surpass a jade!

The odd thing about it was the fact that the snake had a pair of tiny little wings sticking out from its back. It was actually hovering a few inches from the ground!

[Juvenile Snowy Scale Wind Serpent] (Rare Yellow-Gold Flying Mount, Beast)

Level: 0

Note: Can be sealed.

A flying mount!

Zhang Yang eyes glinted with joy! He had never expected to find a Flying Mount so soon in the Chaos Realm! Even though it was only a Yellow-Gold tier, Zhang Yang did not mind having a lower attack power mount, since the primary purpose of a Flying Mount is to fly! Just by being the first player to obtain a Flying Mount was enough for him to ignore the shortcomings of it. It was just lying there for him to take! What is there to complain about?!

Zhang Yang immediately took out a [Sealing Lease] and used it on the little Wind Serpent to seal it.

1%...2%...3%...57%...Pak! Fail...

As if the little serpent had taken notice of Zhang Yang's presence, it extended its wings and started to take off. Felice immediately morphed into her Dragonhawk form and growled at it. Seeing a

large hostile enemy coming at it, the little serpent turned around and cowered behind Zhang Yang's greaves.

It was natural to be afraid of Felice. She did carry the name - "Dragon" after all!

Zhang Yang took out another [Sealing Lease] and used it to the little serpent.

1%...2%...34%... Pak! Fail...

Zhang Yang remained calm, he still had 8 more turns to make it his. On the other hand, Felice was agitated. In a louder voice, she growled and shrieked at the little serpent. The poor little fellow trembled and curled up at Zhang Yang's greaves. Felice growled again in a lower volume, as if she was trying to convey a warning. The little serpent better submits itself to Zhang Yang, or she would gobble it up!

Zhang Yang tried for the third time.

1%...2%...3%...97%...98%...99%...100%!

‘Ding! You have successfully sealed the Juvenile Snow Scale Wind Serpent as your Flying Mount!’

‘Ding! You have captured your first Flying Mount! The tutorial will commence. Before Level 30, the Flying Mount cannot be used as a Mount nor a Battle Mount. The Juvenile Snow Scale Wind



Serpent will follow the player around upon summoning and will share a portion of the experience points you gain from combat. The Flying Mount will be usable after reaching Level 30. When the Flying Mount reaches Level 100, it can be used to ferry multiple players at the same time. Please visit the official site for more inquiries or use the in-game communicator to speak to one of our correspondents. Please enjoy the game. Thank you.'

The Juvenile Snow Scale Wind Serpent had disappeared from the world and Zhang Yang inventory had gained a new lease.

Zhang Yang smiled, as he thought it that was funny to think that the serpent will acquiesce to a kind approach instead of tough love. It was like the serpent was in a police interrogation room, and he was playing the role of the good cop while Felice acted as the bad cop.&nbsp;

"Nice one!"

"Teehee..." Felice blushed and nodded her head in acknowledgment. Zhang Yang could not take that level of cuteness and had to caress her head softly.

Zhang Yang summoned the little serpent out to gain experience. Since it was only Level 0, the little serpent was hovering around by his side like a pet that would not contribute in any battles. It would have to gain more experience to level up and reach Level 30 to attack. Zhang Yang did not mind having the snake leech experience points from him. He did, after all, gain the first Flying Mount. The joy of it was justifiable! Level 30 was nothing. Zhang Yang could find a massive field and start mass-killing to gain that

amount of experience points easily. Plus, he wasn't technically alone. He had Felice in her Dragonhawk form and she alone, could wipe the monsters out!

After half an hour of hiking, Zhang Yang arrived at the mountain top but had yet to find the Star Spirit Flower. Zhang Yang circled around the top of the mountain and stumble upon a large Three-Headed Crimson Hydra that was resting on a large boulder. The Hydra was at least 30 to 40 meters in both height and width. Its scales were deep red in color. Zhang Yang would not have noticed the Hydra if not for three heads sticking out from the massive body.

All three head of the Hydra shared the same shape, but each of them had a distinct color. One was green, one was red, and one was white. The heads were all triangular in shape, making it look like a king cobra.

[Three-Headed Crimson Hydra] (Yellow-Gold, Beast)

Level: 115

HP: 5,750,000

Defense: 2,000

Melee Attack: 12,434 – 13,434

Magic Attack: 7,390 – 7,990

## Skills:

[Fatal Poison]: Causes {Poisoned} to a target, and deals 200% Magic damage of Natural element. The target will have a certain chance to receive the same damage as the previous attack. Lasts for 15 seconds. Effect does not stack.

[Burning Fangs]: Spits poisonous fire projectiles at the target. Deals 200% Magic damage in the form of Fire Damage. Causes the target have a certain chance to be blinded. Lasts for 15 seconds. Effect does not stack.

[Ice Burst]: Fires an Icy projectile to the target. Deals 200% Magic attack in the form of Ice Damage. Immobilizes the target for 5 seconds.

Note: The King of snakes at Red Copper Mountain. Be advised, many have fallen to the Hydra.

In almost every common situation, the quest item would be situated right next to a boss which would have to be killed before the player could retrieve the quest item.

Instead of jumping into battle, he turned around to scout the area. Behind the boss, hiding among the smaller rocks around, was a mythical flower. The flower was shiny, and had petals that glowed with the starry shine of a star!

Although Zhang Yang was too far away from the flower, and could not directly access the properties window of the flower, but he was already guessing that it was the quest item he needed.

Zhang Yang turned around and checked Felice's stats. She was already Level 83 and was 32 levels behind the boss. She would still suffer from the Level Gap Suppression attack reduction. After a few seconds of thinking, Zhang Yang said, "Let's skip the boss for now. We'll find some more monsters to grind and gain a few levels before we fight the boss."

Felice lowered her head. "I'm sorry, Felice is too weak to fight. I'm sorry for dragging big brother's feet."

Zhang Yang caressed her head and said, "There's nothing wrong. You have done a great job growing so fast. Without you here, I would already have been overwhelmed."

Felice's sorrow turned into a smile, and she followed Zhang Yang down the mountain to kill a few more monsters. Zhang Yang had even unsummoned the bear and the little serpent to increase the experience gain for Felice. After an hour of speed grinding, Felice finally reached Level 85. Although her stats were about the same as when she was Level 80, her attacks would not suffer any reduction from the Level gap Suppression when she fights the Hydra.

Zhang Yang summoned the bear and the Juvenile Flying Serpent, and returned to the hill to prepare for the boss fight. The white bear was the attacker, but Juvenile Flying Serpent had yet to reach Level 30. To hasten the progress of it becoming a legitimate flying mount, Zhang Yang had to summon it out to feed it experience

points.

"Alright. Let's kill the Hydra!"

Zhang Yang jumped onto the bear and charged bravely at the Hydra.&nbsp;

{Spear of Obliteration}!

‘-4,219!’

"HSSS!" The Hydra immediately shot up and hissed loudly. At that close proximity, Zhang Yang could finally observe the entire boss' body. It was a streamlined creature with no legs. Like a normal snake, it had a long body, and the three heads branched out from 2/3 of its frontal end.

FWOOSH!

Like a one meter steel pillar flying down from above, the Hydra lashed its tail at Zhang Yang's head.

{Block}!

Zhang Yang lifted his shield and successfully blocked the tail attack. Now that the boss was only a Yellow-Gold tier, Zhang Yang did not suffer any knockback effects, and could even swat the tail aside, as if it was made of straw! Bullying the boss was possible

thanks to his Violet-Platinum equipment!

# Chapter 466: Luilina

---

Hydra resumed an attack stance. After the green head retracted back, the red color head expanded the venom sac below its jaw and spat out a stream of fire, passing right through Zhang Yang's face.

‘-9,882!’

Zhang Yang rolled over quickly. He had already taken a huge amount of damage, and had also gained a debuff called [Burning], which could induce {Blindness} at a certain rate within 15 seconds.

"Bloody snake! How dare you!" Felice jumped into the air and changed to her Dragonhawk form. She shot into the sky and flew closer to the boss, attacking him with a [Fire Missile] to enact vengeance.

‘-8,921!’

The boss took its share of damage, slightly higher than what it had done to Zhang Yang, and wiggled its head.

Zhang Yang frowned. Right then, Felice was only 30 Levels behind the Hydra. Technically, her attacks should be higher than that! Zhang Yang thought for a while and had an idea. "Felice! Attack the white head after this!"

"Yes! Big brother!" Felice nodded her head and flapped her wings to readjust her position in the air to target the white head.

Pew!

‘-17,188!’

Bingo!

The Hydra took almost double the original damage. All three heads retracted and winced in pain.

"Big Brother! You're a genius!" Felice cried out happily.

Zhang Yang laughed. Felice's attack was fire based. The red color head of the Hydra should be Fire based as well. Hence, it should have a higher resistance towards Fire attacks! That was the reason why Felice's attack could not inflict the damage that it was meant to be.

Even though the three heads were dealing elemental-based magic attacks, it still preferred to use melee attacks. Using its massive and thick snake body, Hydra hurled itself at Zhang Yang, far more often than it did use a magical attack. As a Guardian, Zhang Yang had a higher affinity to physical Defense. He would take no more than 6,000 damage whenever {Block} was not available.

Occasionally, the boss would spew green colored clouds to poison Zhang Yang. At other times, it would blow out a cloud of ice to freeze Zhang Yang for 5 seconds. The Fire attack was also used occasionally to blind Zhang Yang. During {Blindness}, Zhang Yang



could only guess the location of the Hydra and hack away blindly.

Felice was performing at her best. More and more {Fire Missiles} were sent to the white head, dealing a constant damage of 17,000 and higher. However, during the moments when Zhang Yang could not attack or be rendered immobilized, he would lose a great deal of aggro, causing the Hydra to target Felice instead.

When the Hydra switched its target, it turned to Felice and pounced, extending its neck and biting down on Felice. Felice was not able to dodge in time, and was brought down to the land by the boss. Within a split second, Felice had morphed back to her human form and started going to work with her spear.

In her Dragonhawk form, Felice was vulnerable to attacks, since her Defense was only 880. However, in her Human form, Felice's Defense was significantly higher at 3,760 Defense value.

Felice was only Level 85, but her stats were higher than normal. Hence, she could fight toe-to-toe with the Yellow-Gold boss, and showed no signs of losing! Zhang Yang could not help but frown with worry. Ever since he had entered the game, this was his first time being OTed. Luckily the target that OTed him was an NPC. If that was not the case, he would have been ashamed of himself.

"Stinky snake! I am your opponent! Why are you attacking a little girl for! Do you not know shame!" cried Zhang Yang. He came out of the icy prison and headed to the boss. With quick action, Zhang Yang cast {Provoke} and managed to draw the attention of the boss.

"Big Brother! I'm not afraid of the snake! I can take him on!" said Felice as she morphed back to her Dragonhawk form and attacked the Hydra with more {Fire Missile}. Even though she had much higher Defense in her Human form, she could deal much higher damage in her Dragonhawk form!

Zhang Yang hacked at the boss and said, "Big brother is a Guardian. Let big brother take the hits! Felice can attack him while I draw his attention!"

"Yes! Big brother!" said Felice obediently and continued her barrage of {Fire Missiles}.

Together, their continuous attacks had forced the Hydra to flinch and hiss, more than anything else. At one point, the Hydra had to move its massive body around, whipping its tail all over the terrain and smashing the boulders around into tiny pebbles.

Felice was just too powerful. Her Dragonhawk form had more than 9,000 DPS, which was much more than Zhang Yang, even with the bear helping out! Felice was even stronger than the super attackers like Sun Xin Yu, Daffodil Daydream, and Lost Dream!

Zhang Yang was extremely grateful to have her. Fuh! As expected of the first-born Battle Companion in the entire game!

Needless to say, the boss was just a Yellow-Gold boss, and only lasted for about 6 minutes, before it curled up and died with a sorrowful wail.

By the end of the battle, Zhang Yang had used both {Shield Wall} and {Berserker's Heal}.

Shring! Shring! Shring!

The boss gave a large amount of experience points, allowing Felice, the white bear, and the flying serpent to gain levels. Even though the experience points was shared equally to all parties, the amount of experience points was enough to grant the little flying serpent 5 levels, pushing its level from Level 27 to Level 32 in one go. With that, the little flying serpent immediately grew to become a 7 meter long, flying serpent!

Since it had reached the Level 30 threshold, the flying serpent could no longer appear in the field as a pet and had turned into a small light orb, returning to Zhang Yang's inventory.

"Big brother! I'll help you pick the flower!" said Felice proactively. She morphed into her Dragonhawk form and flew over to the cliff side to pick the Star Spirit Flower.

Hmm. This should be how a little girl behaves. If Wei Yan Er ever behaved in such a way however, it would probably only happen during the end of the world.

As Felice flew back to Zhang Yang, he went over to the loot and picked up 4 equipment. 3 of them were Gray-Silver tiers and the remaining one was a Yellow-Gold tier.

[Snake Scale Chest Plate] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +370

Strength: +331

Dexterity: +148

Equip Effect: Increases your attack and healing rate by 2%.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 110

Zhang Yang swooped all the equipment into his inventory, only examining the Yellow-Gold equipment. For him, none of the equipment was worth keeping. At least, they could be sold for some tens of thousands of gold coins as a reward for killing the Hydra. It was a good amount of side income to feed those girls in his house.

By then, Felice had arrived at Zhang Yang's side. She handed the flower to Zhang Yang and stood aside, quietly and obediently.&nbsp;

With quest completed, Zhang Yang unsummoned the bear and replaced his mount with the Snow Scale Flying Serpent. The flying serpent was 7 meters in length. Its wingspan was 10 meters wide. It was no less intimidating than Felice's Dragonhawk form.

Felice only glared at the Flying Serpent, and the proud flying serpent retracted its head closer to its body. It stared at Felice with admiration.

Zhang Yang cracked a laugh and mounted the flying serpent, descending the mountain.

It was a pity that the Level 32 flying serpent could only "glide" around the surface, instead of actually flying. Whenever Zhang Yang encountered a larger obstacle, it could not fly over and could only circle around it. Luckily, as the flying serpent could travel in the air, it was still much faster than the white bear. After a few hours, Zhang Yang arrived at Morning Town.

The small town was empty and had little to no people walking in the streets. After Zhang Yang explored the entire town, he had only stumbled upon less than 10 pedestrians. Thankfully, the streets were clear enough for Zhang Yang to speed through to reach the western outskirts of the town, where Sous' little sister, Luilina resided.

Zhang Yang arrived at a small, flower garden that had many beautiful flowers, planted unevenly throughout the garden. The person who did the gardening was clearly not a professional.

Zhang Yang trod across the garden carefully and saw a small hut at the west end of the garden. The door was wide open, and there was no one inside the house.

Zhang Yang guessed that the small house belonged to Luilina. But, where was the person?

Zhang Yang frowned and started to kick some dirt around the garden, thinking about her possible locations. Just then, Felice cried out, "Big brother! Over there!" Felice pointed at the far side of the garden. A girl was walking out of the forest, carrying a small flower basket in her left arm, and a walking stick at her right.

[Luilina] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level:1

Note: Sous' little sister, a poor, blind girl.

Luilina looked like she was already at her 18s. She had a long blonde hair that flowed gently in the wind. Her complexion was perfect, and she had a slender, lithe body. She would have been the perfect woman to marry, if not for her permanently closed eyes. The dress she wore was aged and cheap. Although there were patches all over her dress, it had been well taken care off.

Naturally, her hearing would be well-honed, so she quickly noticed Zhang Yang's presence from afar, and raised her head at his general direction. She opened her eyelids and exposed a pair of

clouded eyes, "Who's there?"

"I'm a friend of your brother," said Zhang Yang softly.

"My brother's friend?" Luilina spoke softly. There was an obvious tone of sorrow in her voice.

Zhang Yang got her attention and proceeded to give the flower to the girl. At first, she was genuinely surprised for receiving such a flower. But no sooner, a smile appeared. "Did brother...ask you to deliver this flower?"

When the girl received the flower, it started glowing brightly. Particles of light seeped out of the petals and flew into Luilina's eyes. The cloudy layer of her eyes dissipated, and her normal black pupils were revealed. More and more light particles zoomed into her eyes and made both of them glow with a soft radiance.

"I...I...I can see!" cried the petite, little girl happily. Tears started to flow down her pinkish cheeks and she pointed her fingers to the surroundings. "T-The sky is blue! I can see it! The trees are green! Red roses too! Ah! I see them blooming! How beautiful! sob."

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Sous’ Last Wish. Obtained 200,000 Experience Points!’

Zhang Yang wiped away her tears and said, "You brother, Sous never forgot the promise he made. Luilina. From the bottom of my heart, I am sorry for your loss. You have the world's best brother!"

Luilina smiled cheerfully and said, "Indeed he was."

Felice pouted her lips and before she could say anything, Zhang Yang pulled her back. "I'm glad that you think so."

Luilina smiled at Zhang Yang and said, "You're a good big brother as well! I must thank you for granting his last wish. Please, rest at my house. It's not far from here!"

When a girl offers an invitation, there's no reason to reject. Especially, since he had nothing to do after the quest was completed. Perhaps, her invitation to her house might trigger some sort of event!

All three of them walked to her house and made themselves comfortable. Although the house was not big, nor luxuriously decorated, it was tidy and clean. There was even a scent of flowery smell that lingered around the house. The three of them started to talk. Luilina talked about her brother, where during the whole time Felice could not help but to divert the conversation to be about Zhang Yang.

Not long, the glow in Luilina's eyes faded away and a layer of cloudy membrane coated her eyes. Luilina returned to become a blind girl.

Zhang Yang was surprised. The Star Spirit Flower was potent enough to shed light into the eyes of a blind girl, allowing her to see temporarily, but not cure her blindness.&nbsp;



"Erhm...Luilina..." said Zhang Yang.

"Worry not, big brother. I am happy. Although it was momentary, I had my fun looking at the world." Luilina turned to Zhang Yang with her dead eyes and smiled.

Zhang Yang hesitated, but eventually caved in and revealed to Luilina, her brother's story. He told her about the war, the expedition, Sous' death, and even how Sous was able to rest in peace knowing that Zhang Yang was able to fulfill his last wish. Luilina cried endlessly when she listened to Zhang Yang's story.

Time passed on when Zhang Yang realized that, it was already late in the evening. Zhang Yang bade Luilina farewell and headed back to town.

Zhang Yang felt annoyed. Luilina's tragic loss and her sad life had left him hanging with a cliffhanger end to the quest. Zhang Yang wandered about town aimlessly, unable to get over it yet. However, a short distance away from Luilina's house, he spotted three drunk youngsters zigzagging around. They were obviously heavily intoxicated.

Zhang Yang took notice of them but did not put it into his mind. Not until the thought of it returned to him after the silhouette of Morning Town came to his vision. Besides the forest, there was nothing outside the town, besides Luilina's house. The three drunk youngsters must be heading to Luilina's! To make things worse, they were drunk, intoxicated, and tipsy. They could do things to a

helpless, blind girl living alone!

Zhang Yang turned around swiftly and shot towards Luilina's house without hesitation.

Just when he touched down, he heard a loud scream of a girl coming from inside Luilina's house. Rage built up in his heart and Zhang Yang ran towards the house.

The door was left opened and Zhang Yang could see the three drunkards holding Luilina down, their hands roughly exploring her body! Her dress was torn apart, leaving the most important places still intact. If Zhang Yang had been slightly later, he might have been too late.

One of the youngsters was shouting dementedly, "Stop pretending, little minx! Consider it your lucky day that a man such as I would be willing to touch you! You'll be thanking me when I'm done with you! Haha! In fact, you'll be begging for more!"

"Haha! Young Master Bendoch is right! The little minx is indeed beautiful! It's a shame that those pretty eyes do not work, or else she would have been the most beautiful girl in town!" said another man.

"Enough! Get on it already. I'm waiting for my turn!" said the last youngster as he started to remove his pants.

Zhang Yang was still at the entrance of the house as they

expressed their monstrous intentions. With heavy killing aura, Zhang Yang shot into the house and swung his sword in a wide arc, as hard as he could.

"ARGH!" one of the youngsters got hit and wailed in pain as he lost a large portion of his HP.

They were all Level 105 normal tier NPCs. Such a strike should have killed them easily!

# Chapter 467: Begging for Life, when Death Knocks

---

"You! Who are you!" One of them looked like their ringleader, the one they called Young Master Bendoch shouted at Zhang Yang with anger. The moment one of them had been slashed, the other two had sobered up immediately upon the sight of spilled blood.

"Me? I am no one. Just a passing grim reaper!"

Zhang Yang took note of their green colored name tags and was troubled by it. Killing a friendly NPC would not do him any good. There might even be a chance of him increasing the enmity of the residents who live in the town of Morning. It might even affect the quest availability or worse, he might not even be able to get himself a [Territory Command Order].

Right then, Zhang Yang had already succumbed to his anger. With furious killing intent in his eyes, he brandished his sword, not hiding his intention to spare any of them. When Felice arrived at Zhang Yang's side, she was infuriated. Fiery sparks burst out of from the tip of her spear.

"You dare to assault me?!" the youngest among them walked out and pat his shoulder proudly. "I am the only son of the Mayor of Morning Town, Rockya! Touch me, and I'll make sure that father assembles an army to grind your bones to dust!"

"Yeah! That's right! You're nothing but a foreigner! Young Master Bendoch, please, help me. I will torture this man to death!"

said the other youngster who had been wounded by Zhang Yang.

More confident than ever, Bendoch stuck out his chest proudly and pointed rudely at Zhang Yang. "Peasant, I am now giving you a chance to beg for your life! Do it, or I shall have father kill all your family and friends!"

"Young Master Bendoch! Look!" The unharmed youngster pointed at Felice.

"Such beauty!" Bendoch could not contain his lust when he saw Felice standing behind Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed, and his anger subsided a little. Not only were they completely oblivious to the threat, that was a really bad target to direct your lust at! Only the worst of men would have such poor judgment! They were barking up the wrong tree. So what if Bendoch's father is the mayor? He was just the mayor of a small town! He had no authority over Zhang Yang!

"What a waste of a human life...I guess you will do better in your next lives." Zhang Yang said coldly and brandished his sword. Without hesitation, Zhang Yang sliced and diced the youngsters in Luilina's house.

"Grah!"

"ARGH!"

"Mama!"

Crying and wailing like little girls, the three were like tiny bats trying to attack a giant golem. Before the presence of Zhang Yang and Felice, the three youngsters were cut down to their last drops of HP. When he struck them again, they stopped taking damage for a reason.

"Mercy! Have mercy!" cried the trio as they planted their heads on the floor, begging for their lives.

‘Ding! You have received an optional quest, if you choose to spare the three youngsters, the quest option will end. If you choose to kill all three of them, the quest shall start. For the next 3 hours, you will be marked as an enemy of Morning Town, and will be hunted by all soldiers of Morning Town. If you are killed within the stipulated duration, your death will result in quest failure. The penalty for failing the quest will be Level&nbsp;-5!’

Losing 5 Levels would also mean that Zhang Yang would automatically be kicked out of the Chaos Realm!

However, the thought of him failing was only a brief second. Zhang Yang did not give it much thought, and killed all the perpetrators there, ending their pathetic lives.

"Big Brother...D-Did you k-kill them?" said Luilina as she sobbed away.

"Don't worry. Everything is alright now. I'll protect you! I shall protect you in your brother's place!" Zhang Yang comforted the sobbing Luilina.

Instead of calming down, Luilina was horrified. "Big Brother! Bendoch was the only son of the mayor of Morning Town. You must leave now! Please! There is a magic charm on Bendoch! The mayor will know if something were to happen to his son! Please run away as far as you can! No matter how strong you were, there's no way for you to defeat an army!"

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "Very well. In that case, we shall go! Follow me!"

Luilina shook her head and wiped away her tears. "I can't. I was born here. I was raised here. I can't just leave!"

"But...If you remain here with the dead guys, I'm sure the mayor himself would not let you walk away unscathed!" said Felice worriedly persuaded her to leave the house. "Follow big brother! He will take care of you!"

Luilina hesitated for a while and shook her head.

Zhang Yang sighed. "Are you afraid of holding us back?"

Luilina jerked a little. "I am but a blind helpless little girl. If I join you, I will only be a liability! Furthermore...I—" Luilina sucked in a deep breath. "This house is precious to me! It's a house both my

brother and I lived in! I—I don't want to leave here."

Zhang Yang chuckled. "Very well. In that case, allow me to remain here as well! Let's wait for the army then! I'll beat them all to a pulp!"

Luilina started to breathe raggedly. "You can't! That's way too dangerous!"

Zhang Yang kept quiet and smiled. He prepared to barricade the house and planned a bottleneck strategy. Not sooner later, Luilina tapped her walking stick against his greaves. "Bro brother...I...I will follow you! Let's leave..."

The little girl had nothing to pack but a garden hoe. According to her, it was her most precious possession, since it was a gift from her brother, Sous. He had made it by hand, specially for Luilina.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "You brave girl. You have done the right thing."

Zhang Yang summoned the flying serpent and placed Luilina on its back. Felice morphed into her Dragonhawk form and flew into the sky.

'Ding! You have been given a quest: Survive against all odds. If you give up the mission, the system shall deem the quest as a failure. In the stipulated duration, the deaths of Luilina or yourself, shall be deemed as a quest failure. The penalty for failing



the quest is Level -5!’

Well...Zhang Yang would have to keep himself alive, while also making sure Luilina that survives the army attack.

Zhang Yang stopped flying suddenly and dropped to the ground. He figured something out and summoned the bear. Zhang Yang figured that the bear would be better at transporting the girl, since it is much stronger than the recently obtained flying serpent. Furthermore, it was much safer for a blind girl to travel on solid ground, than in the air.

"Big brother! They have mobilized an entire army after us!" said Felice. She could soar much higher into the air, and had a clearer view of the oncoming enemy.

"Good job Felice. Let's move on!"

Zhang Yang and Luilina rode the bear and moved on. The bear had grown slightly bigger now, and had a fabulous butt. From the back, you could see its huge hairy butt jiggling hilariously. Under normal conditions, Zhang Yang could never place anyone else on the mount. Since Luilina was a quest NPC, the system might have allowed a player and an NPC to ride the mount at the same time. With one more load on its back, the bear movement speed was made slightly slower. Felice continued to fly in the sky to update Zhang Yang of the enemy's position.

Just 7 to 8 minutes later, Felice had no need to report any longer. Zhang Yang only needed to turn his head around, and he could see

a sea of flames coming, in the form of riders, holding torches in their hands. By his calculations, the army would only need 3 to 4 more minutes to catch up with Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang stared at the army worriedly, when he had a sudden stroke of a genius idea. He turned the bear around and moved out of the pathway, and headed to a steep slope towards the far west.

As he rode on as swiftly as he could, the army behind him had closed the gap to only a few hundred meters behind! Zhang Yang climbed up the slope and finally met a dead end, with many random boulders of different sizes. With determination and a prepared stance, Zhang Yang stopped and turned around to face the incoming army.

Chiang! Chiang ! Chiang!

The riders had arrived and surrounded Zhang Yang in a large circle, cutting him off all escape routes.

Even though Luilina could not see, her other senses served her well. She knew what was going on. Colors drained away from her face as she gripped Zhang Yang's hands tighter.

Zhang Yang only smiled. As they were waiting for someone to walk to the front, Zhang Yang took the opportunity to analyze the situation. There were more than 50 riders around, fully clad in metal armor.

[Morning Town Knights] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 105

HP: 1,050,000

Defense: 1,100

Melee Attack: 7,464 – 8,264

Skills:

[Force Strike]: Forcefully bashes the target and deals 150% melee attack. Grants a 10% chance for an additional attack.

Note: The main attack force of Morning Town, only loyal to Mayor Rockya.

The knights around opened a pathway up to allow an individual to move to the front.

[Rider's Captain Seiya] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 110

HP: 5,500,000

Defense: 2,000

Melee Attack: 9,812 – 10,812

Skills:

[Eye 4 Eye]: Sacrifices your own HP to deal devastating damage to the enemy. Deals 2% HP damage for every 1% HP lost. Maximum damage: 90%.

[Sacrificial Heal]: Sacrifices one of your underling to restore 50% HP.

Note: Famous for his brutal tactics in warfare. Rockya's loyal underdog.

Crap...

Zhang Yang swallowed his saliva. 50 elite tier enemies were too much for Zhang Yang to handle. Add in a Yellow-Gold boss in the fray...it might be the end of Zhang Yang.&nbsp;Yellow-Gold bosses were not worth the effort to kill anymore. The problem was that the boss in front of him was "un-skippable". What more, the powerful attack power of Seiya was only going to make the fight difficult.

"Brave as you may be, your unworldly act of killing Bendoch will

be judged by the gods! And I, Seiya shall send you to him!" Seiya's voice was so heavily laced with killing intent. He waved his hands, and all 50 knights charged towards Zhang Yang.

"Ah, I'll send you to him alright!" Zhang Yang drew in a deep breath and yelled at the top of his lungs. "Felice!"

Felice shot down to his side. Zhang Yang then scooped Luilina off her feet and tossed her to Felice. "Take her somewhere safe!"

"But, what about you?" cried Felice worriedly.

"Big brother knows what he is doing. Off you go!" said Zhang Yang with a confident smile.

Felice nodded and held Luilina in her claws, and shot back up into the sky.

Zhang Yang jumped back on his bear and pulled on the reins. With one strong stroke, Zhang Yang slashed apart a large boulder that lay behind him.

‘-932!’

Along with a bright spark, the stone seemed to have taken damage. The earth rumbled so violently as if someone had turned on their mother's vibrator. Everyone, including Zhang Yang himself, lost their balance and fell over.

BOOM! THUD!

Two large pillars broke out of the earth and formed an arm! Another arm burst out in a similar fashion, and a stone giant started pulling itself above the surface!

More and more of its body started to appear. Before he knew it, the massive stone giant had already managed to "sprout" to his chest level. The knights and Zhang Yang were thrown off their mounts and started rolling down the slope uncontrollably.

After the massive tremor ended, the stone giant finally revealed itself to be a 60 to 70 meters tall monster!

A loud, deep growl, similar to that of a ship's horn, burst through the airspace. It lifted one of its massive stone arms and slammed it down on the person who had disturbed its slumber, Zhang Yang!

{Shadow of the Void}!

Zhang Yang disappeared into another dimension just before the arm reached him.

The stone giant growled again and shifted its target towards the knights who had been left behind by Zhang Yang. Since Zhang Yang had left the battle with {Shadow of the Void} all aggro that had been generated by him was shifted to the knights, making the poor knights to receive the hellish punches of the stone giant!

# Chapter 468: The Enemy of my Enemy is... Let's Just Set Them Upon Each Other

---

Zhang Yang knew this stone giant from his past life. Located near the first territory after arriving at the Chaos Realm, this Mythical tier boss resided on a hill. Since the boss lingered around the hill close to the town, many players have repeatedly committed suicide against it, hoping to get a shot at killing it. In his past life, he had seen the boss a couple of times in his previous life. At most, the boss was constantly fighting with players that had come from Morning Town.

Now that Chaos Realm was just released, and Zhang Yang was the only person who could access this realm, the boss was alive, well, and left alone. Not until Zhang Yang had roused it just to help him kick some butts!

This was the reason why Zhang Yang had lured the army to the slope, in the first place. He figured that the boss could do the dirty work for him. After which, when he has successfully triggered the boss, he would escape the battle via {Shadow of the Void}, and let boss take care of the army for him!

They were no match for the stone giant. With its massive stone arms, one clean slam to the ground was enough to send stones ricocheting to the sky and soldiers to the heavens. Thanks to the aggro system, the NPC army and the stone giant engaged each other in a fight.

Zhang Yang had escaped several hundred meters away from where he disappeared. There, he noticed that the bear had already

died and had reappeared in his inventory as the reins. Felice shot down to the earth and placed Luilina gently down. After carrying Luilina for a short distance, poor Felice had reverted back to her human form, drenched in sweat. She was lying on the ground, gasping for breath, as if she had just finished a marathon.

[Stone Giant Yanita] (Mythical, Elemental Being)

Level: 120

HP: 36,000,000

Defense: 7,000

Melee Attack: 31,115 – 33,115

Skill:

[Earthly Smash]: Slams the earth with the force of mother earth. Deals 30,000 physical damage to all targets, 40 meters around the caster.

[Stomp]:&nbsp;Stomps the ground with the power of the earth. Deals 300,000 damage to all targets within 3 x 3 meters of the targeted area.

[Toss]: Picks a boulder nearby and tosses it at a target. Deals 100% melee attack to the target. Range: 3 meters – 40 meters.



Note: A wild ancient stone giant, awoken from its long eternal slumber. Whoever who disturbs it would have to accept its tectonic wrath!

Seiya's troops were in serious trouble. With one Yellow-Gold boss and 50 elite tier Knights, the accumulated attack power was like an ant, compared to the Mythical boss. In a monster vs monster fight, unless the fight is dictated by lore, a higher tiered monster would always reign supreme.

The stone giant slammed the ground and dealt 30,000 damage. It was a damage designed to severely cripple players, not NPCs. That amount of damage was nothing, compared to the 1,000,000 HP NPC elite Knights. One strike was only enough to take off 10% of their HP. As for Seiya, his attacks could only deal around 1,000 damage to the monster. It was a landslide match-up.

Similarly to the boss, Seiya's attacks of between 5,000 and 6,000 would take forever to hack away the 30 million HP of his enemy...

The stone giant was an ancient being. As per usual gaming concepts, the older the age of the monster or NPC, the stronger it would get. This stone giant was like an ancient killing machine, with a berserked speed, this elemental being bashed the living hell out of the Knights, killing them all in just 10 minutes or so. Seiya was the only one who had survived the ordeal and had managed to escape. Even though the boss was Mythical tier, it lumbered with the speed of a stone giant. After Seiya had taken off on his horse, the boss turned back after running for a distance, and went back to its hibernation state.

When the stone giant finally stopped giving chase, Seiya stopped his horse and gasped for air. Little did he know that Felice was right above him, and had shot him with a {Fire Missile}. The attack came down from the sky and had caught him off guard.

By then, Zhang Yang was able to resummon the bear and charged towards Seiya.

"YOU!" cried Seiya with rage. It was all his fault that all his Knights were killed! He had been played like a fool! It was his fault that he was forced to tuck his tails between his legs and run away like a true coward! Even though he was a plaything for the Mythical tier boss, he was still a Yellow-Gold tier that could easily take on a single player! He pulled the reins on his horse and charged at Zhang Yang. "Hmph! You've come at the best moment! I shall kill you, and put the blame on you for killing all the soldiers that came with me! That way, Master Rockya would not punish me!"

Zhang Yang ignored the idiotic speech and lunged himself at Seiya. Seiya was just a Yellow-Gold boss, he was not an opponent that would require intense planning and strategy to kill. Furthermore, he had already taken much damage from the previous fight with the stone giant. Even without Felice's help, he alone would be able to kill him without any trouble!

It was like killing a trapped monkey!

Wham! Bam!

Felice was furious. She was greatly angered when the man had publicly expressed his intentions of killing her "Big Brother"! With fury, Felice spat out {Fire Missile} as rapidly as she could, and burned Seiya till his armor was glowing red hot! His entire armor was so hot that it looked more like lava than anything else! His body was steaming with vapor, and he looked like a deliciously cooked lobster!

"Bastard! Bastard!" yelled the boss helplessly. The man was a coward. At the moment he realized that he was not capable of defeating his opponent, he turned tail and ran. Zhang Yang would never allow that. He quickly chased after the boss. Felice, on the other hand, had no trouble keeping up with a man on a horse. She was, after all, a creature of flight. With a swoop of her wings, she reached the boss. If her {Fire Missile} took too long to cast, she would revert back to her human form to attack with her spear, and then go back to chasing him in her Dragonhawk form.

After running for quite a distance, but still far from safety, Seiya realized that escape was not an option. He turned around hoping to fight them off, but ended up being chewed alive by Zhang Yang and Felice.

In less than a minute, Seiya was defeated and had dropped a Yellow-Gold equipment and two Gray-Silver equipment. Although defeating Seiya was partly thanks to the stone giant, Zhang Yang felt no guilt since it was his plan after all! He scooped up all the equipment without hesitation. Among the equipment, one of it was a One-Handed Hammer. At the current stage of the game, One-Handed Weapon and Shield were the most expensive equipment in the market, since they were rare, and most sought after. They

could be sold for at least 100,000 gold coins!

By borrowing the stone giant's power, Zhang Yang had only taken less than 20 minutes to defeat the army. He started to feel a little over his head and went back to where he had dropped off Luilina.

‘Ding! You have eliminated the first wave of troops! Obtained Luck +1 and 5,000,000 Experience Points. Please make adequate preparations for the second wave! The second wave will start in 64 minutes, 28 seconds!’

Second wave!?

Zhang Yang was shocked and annoyed. A second wave? However, the quest had mentioned that the entire quest would span over 3 hours. If the second wave comes after one hour, it had to be the last.

Perhaps, since the penalty for failing the quest was high, the reward for succeeding in clearing it would be luxurious! Losing Levels was nothing all too serious, since Zhang Yang could always regain them. Levels are earned by investing time into the game. However, Luck attribute points were different. Zhang Yang had amassed a total of 19 Luck points since the start of the game and now had a 2% chance to trigger a Lucky strike! Furthermore, by having higher Luck points, the chance of him creating Transmuted grade potions would increase!

With great risks, come great rewards!

Even though he still had one more wave of troops after him, Zhang Yang did not fret, since he had found a reliable "attacker". When the second wave comes, he could repeat the same thing and trigger the stone giant again. With nothing to do at the moment, Zhang Yang summoned the flying serpent and brought Felice around to grind. There was still more than 1 hour before it happens!

Felice was a beast, and not just in the literal meaning of it. Her killing rate was much faster than Zhang Yang. In one hour, they had amassed so much experience points that the serpent had reached Level 39, and Felice had reached Level 87. It was a pity, for she only had 3 Levels to Level 90, where she would gain another huge boost to her stats.

With the time almost up, Zhang Yang summoned out the bear and brought Luilina with him, and waited at the same spot where the stone giant was resting at.

"Big Brother! Here they come!" cried Felice in the air.

Zhang Yang stared in the direction of Morning Town and saw nothing but empty hills and flat plains. There was no sign of an army!

"Grr..."

Just then, Zhang Yang heard the roar of a beast coming from the sky. Zhang Yang was greatly surprised. He looked up, and saw a

formation of griffins rushing across the night sky, towards him!

Crap! Flying Mounts!?

Still, as he thought of it, he was currently in the Chaos Realm, where Flying Mounts would play a huge role. If a player could own Flying Mounts, why can't NPC do so? If Zhang Yang had waited patiently, and trained his flying serpent to Level 100 before starting the quest, he would not have needed to expend any effort at all, he would only need to wait in the air for 3 hours. These flying mount-type enemies were here to prevent players from exploiting such a loophole.

Thud...Thud...Thud...

One by one, the soldiers that were riding on the griffins landed on the area where Zhang Yang was waiting. Some of them were still airborne and formed a neat formation, circling Zhang Yang from above, with more than 100 units!

[Morning Town Cavalry] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 110

HP: 1,100,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 5,383 – 6,183

Ranged Attack: 8,194 – 8,994

Skills:

[Armor Penetrating Arrow]: Fires a piercing arrow at a target, deals 150% ranged physical attack, unaffected by Defense.

Note: Morning Town air force defense. Master Rockya's elite units.

Similar to the previous attacking army, this wave had one boss who prominently stood out among the soldiers. He rode a larger griffin and had a large, longbow slung across his back.

[Captain of the Morning Town Cavalry, Branden] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 5,500,000

Defense: 2,000

Melee Attack: 6,514 – 7,314

Ranged Attack: 9,347 – 11,347

Skills:

[Armor Penetrating Arrow]: Fires a piercing arrow to a target, deals 150% ranged physical attack. Reduces 50% of the target's Defense for 15 seconds. Effect cannot be stacked. This skill ignore all Defense.

[Fatal Arrow]: Deals a fatal attack. Causes 150% ranged physical attack and prevents the target from receiving any buffs. Reduces 50% of all healing rate on the target. Lasts for 10 seconds. Effect cannot be stacked.



## Chapter 469: An Upgrade on the Pet Mount

---

Zhang Yan did not dare to risk giving these monsters the chance to strike first!

These are all ranged-attacking monsters, and they had already surrounded Zhang Yang from all directions! Just imagine this, if 50+ of these monsters launched their assaults on Zhang Yang at the same time, he would be instantly-killed, even if he were to activate his {Shield Wall}! So Zhang Yang made a quick decision to throw Luilina over to Felice and say, "Felice, take Luilina and get the hell out of here!"

"Roger!" Felice was well aware that Zhang Yang had more than one method of escaping, so she did not raise any objections this time around, and started taking off, with Luilina in her arms.

"After them! Do not let them escape!" Branden growled ruthlessly.

Zhang Yang did not even summon any of his [Mounts] this time to prevent any unnecessary deaths of his beloved pets. He turned around and plunged his [Sword of Purging Devourer] into the ground and started saying a 'prayer', "Mr. Stone, when more players are strong enough to enter this realm, you are going to have a miserable life ahead, where you will be killed over again, and again. So, why don't you kill some of these scums and unleash your wrath while you can? Get some payback in advance, and think later!"

‘-862!’

A damage value appeared on the spot where Zhang Yang had plunged his sword in. The entire pile of rocks began to tremble again. The gigantic body mass of Stone Giant Yanita emerged from the ground, right before the eyes of everyone. With an intimidating, thunderous roar, it slammed its hand onto Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Shadow of the Void} and disengaged from the battle with Stone Giant Yanita immediately! It was not the time to toy around anymore!

Shoof! Zhang Yang broke out of the ‘horse-hive’ defense of the cavalry army, and left the entire army to endure the wrath of Stone Giant Yanita.

"Rawgh!" The Stone Giant let out an outburst of rage as this was already the second time it had been poked, right in the \*ss, just as it was having a good nap! Such interruptions can never be forgiven! The Stone Giant instantly went berserk, as it began to slam its hands all around, like a crazed monkey! A few of the griffins were smashed into mush, and fell from the sky in pieces. Their riders either shared their fate, or dropped straight to their deaths! Some lucky ones survived the fall. But could it really be called luck? They survived, just to face the wrath of the Stone Giant on the ground!

Meanwhile far from the battlefield, Zhang Yang reappeared as his {Shadow of the Void} began to fade. Felice approached Zhang Yang, still carrying Luilina. She barely hovered above the ground,

as she was exhausted from carrying the NPC! But she did not drop her of course. However, there were still 7 Griffin-riders pursuing them, firing arrows at Felice! Zhang Yang let out a battle cry and summoned Whitey. He leaped on Whitey's back and charged towards the enemies.

"Brother!" Felice flopped to the ground, unable to fight back as she was still carrying the NPC! So, she could only endure all the attacks from the enemies. Fortunately for her, Felice had an extremely long health bar. Or else, she would have been taken out already!

"Kill! No mercy!" The 7 Morning Town Cavalries landed onto the ground as well, as they continued to shoot arrows from their bows. Shoof! Shoof! Shoof! The arrows flew right at Zhang Yang and Felice with precise accuracy!

Zhang Yang quickly jumped down from Whitey, and placed Luilina on the back of Whitey. Zhang Yang gave a command in his mind, and Whitey immediately carried Luilina and ran in the opposite direction. Without the NPC in the way, Zhang Yang could finally unleash his power, without having to hold back! He pulled his sword out and raised his shield, and then he began to charge at the Morning Town Cavalries! As he was charging through the arrows that were flying towards him, the arrows were deflected off his armor and fell to the ground, one after another. The sound of arrowheads clashing into the armor was really loud and clear.

Because Felice was also facing the same type of attacks, she transformed back into her humanoid form, drawing her lance. She seemed to enjoy the heat of battle, with Zhang Yang by her side.

These monsters were in the air, and Zhang Yang had no idea on how to gather the monsters in one spot. The monsters would automatically fly away from each other the moment when they got too close to each other. There was no point in Zhang Yang and Felice trying to force them into one same spot. Therefore, Zhang Yang had to battle without kiting the monsters into one spot.

Without caring much about it, Zhang Yang targeted one of the monsters and began to slash like hell. Now he only had to wait for the cooldown period of his {Spear of Obliteration} to be over. Then, all he needed to do in order to hook the aggro of the other 6 monsters over to him is to throw the {Spear of Obliteration} at them! Even though Felice had a very long health bar, and very thick armor and defense, she did not have the ability to recover her health. If the monsters ever focused fire on her, she would still go down easily!

The regular arrows of the monster could only inflict him with about 3,000 damage, but the {Armor Penetrating Arrows} had extremely sharp edges. One arrow could deal more than 9,000 damage on Zhang Yang! Fortunately for him, the cooldown period for this skill is very long. If they could fire them rapidly, Zhang Yang would be finished off in no time!

Zhang Yang was constantly spamming all his Status Restriction Effect Skills, timing them appropriately. He tried to stun the monsters to reduce the damage he would receive as the battle went on.

Although the humanoid form of Felice had weaker attack power

compared to her Dragonhawk form, Felice was still so much more aggressive and stronger than Zhang Yang! She had already slain one of the monsters within 2 minutes, and had went on to take on her second monster. As she tangled with one of the monsters currently attacking, Zhang Yang could feel his pressure being lifted substantially!

As Zhang Yang took down another monster on his end, he finally let out a breath of relief. The difference of battling 4 monsters at once, compared to 6, was a lot. It was like a 50% drop in difficulty!

After another round of mindless slashing, Zhang Yang had already used up all his skills. He had even activated his {Rearm}! After slaying another 3 monsters, Zhang Yang activated his {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from the battle and went to the side to patch himself up with some [Bandages]. He was only left with about 2,000 health points! He had to leave Felice with the remaining monsters.

After he patched up and took some [Snacks], Zhang Yang rejoined back the battle and activated {Provoke} to hook the boss back to him. At that moment, Felice was left with only 8,000 health points!

Using everything they had, the two of them finally took down the last monster, and Zhang Yang quickly took out his [Snacks] and continued to heal himself. What actually surprised him was that Felice could also heal up by consuming [Snacks]! Seeing how she has been ‘functioning’ so far, other than the fact that she is an AI, Felice is basically similar to a normal player already!

After just a while, the two of them had regained their full health states. Whitey had also returned with Luilina upon the mind command that Zhang Yang had transmitted.

Zhang Yang turned his head around, and looked at the direction of the other battlefield. The Morning Town Cavalries were basically flying around in the air while they were battling the Stone Giant Yanita. Therefore, the strongest skill that the Stone Giant had - {Earthly Smash} had totally no effect on the Morning Town Cavalries. The Stone Giant could only use {Toss} as it's main attack. The damage that the boss could do to the cavalry army was largely restricted. That was why it had only taken out about 20 Morning Calvaries after all this while.

Of course, compared to Zhang Yang's performance, it was doing far better. Zhang Yang should be burying himself alive in shame!

After some time, all of the Morning Town Cavalries were completely wiped out by the Stone Giant, and the boss still had about 20,000,000 health points. Zhang Yang took a good look at it, and decided to give up on the idea. The army had not weakened it at all! If his party of 10 were all here, it could probably be done. But now that he had seen how powerful this boss is, it would be better for him to just give up on his previous plan and walk away!

After Yanita had wiped out the cavalry, it went back to its peaceful sleep. Unfortunately, Branden was so prideful that he had not retreated when he had the chance. He charged in at the boss and was crushed to his demise, leaving no chance for Zhang Yang to cut in and slay him!

Of course, Branden had a Flying Mount, so Zhang Yang would not have any chance to slay him at all, in the first place!

‘Ding! The second wave of pursuers have been wiped out, you have completed the quest: Survive the desperate circumstances - much earlier than expected. Acquired 10,000,000 experience points, Lucky Attribute +1 as your reward!’

‘Ding! You have acquired a selective quest: In for a penny, in for a pound, accept or decline?’

Zhang Yang frowned and accepted the continuation of the quest.

[In for a penny, In for a pound] (Difficulty: A-rank)

Description: You have wiped out the defensive force of the Morning Town. Now, Rockya is a general without his army! You have slain his son, warrior. He is not going to let you off this easily! So, you have decided that since you’re already in for a penny, why not in for a pound and finish what’s been started! Travel back to Morning Town and slay Rockya!

Completion: Kill Rockya 0/1

Zhang Yang widened his eyes, as he began to see a Territory waving at him! He was another step closer to owning a new Territory!

Zhang Yang did not rush back to the Morning Town. Instead, he

brought Felice and Snow-Scale Wind Serpent along to level up first. After all, he was all alone at the moment, so he would not be able to seek help from his party members and guild members. He could only rely on himself, his Flying Mount, and Felice!

Though the description said that the Morning Town had lost most of its Defense force, it still was the lair of this foul Rockya! It would be best to keep an eye out and be ready for anything! After all, Zhang Yang had a lot of time to spare on hand. It would take at least 1 month for other players to be able to enter the Chaos Realm. Furthermore, the quest did not state any time limit, so he could take his own sweet time at completing the quest.

After looking around for a bit, Zhang Yang found himself on a deserted mountain. He could see a large amount of Normal-tiered Spectres wandering around the area, without any sense of purpose.

He decided to choose that spot to grind.

Zhang Yang got Felice to transform into her Dragonhawk Form to lure the monsters, while he looked out for a cave. After he kept Luilina safe in the cave, he summoned the [Snow-scale Wind Serpent], and both of them guarded the entrance of the cave. In just a brief period of time, Felice came back with a large number of monsters. Judging from the looks of it, there should be at least a hundred of them!

As Felice flew past Zhang Yang from above, she transformed back to her Humanoid Form, and stood ready with her lance!



These Spectres began to gush towards Zhang Yang. He activated his {Blood Rage} a few seconds before the monsters reached him. He had already acquired 30 points of Rage Points. The moment the monsters got close to him, he activated his {Blast Wave}!

Instantly, a damage of '-1,418' was inflicted onto each of the monsters within the effective range, and the scene was glorious! The special effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] got triggered, and another wave of damage was inflicted upon every single monster within the effective range, over and over again!

When Zhang Yang took over the aggro of the monsters, Felice transformed into her Dragonhawk Form and flew out of the cave, hovering above them all. Then, she spat out her {Pulverizing Flame} between her open beak, and covered the ground in a sea of flames! The ground started burning up as the monsters that were within the effective range of the attack were inflicted with a damage of 3,000 fire damage for every second! The attack was really powerful and intimidating!

However, although these skeletal creatures from the foul depths of darkness could not fly, they did not just stand there, waiting for their health points to deplete. Many of these Spectre monsters had ranged attacks, so they started firing their arrows, inflicting damage on Felice! Although these are just normal monsters, but tens or hundreds of them shooting at the same time would also inflict extremely great damage to a person over time. After the {Pulverizing Flame} was over, Felice was only left with about 10% health! So, she quickly flew into the cave, to the back of Zhang Yang, to take shelter from the arrows.

Zhang Yang handed her a [Bandage] and Felice quickly transformed herself back to Humanoid Form before applying the [Bandage]. She patched herself up, and her health was brought back up by 20,000 points. Unfortunate for her, this amount of healing was far from enough. She had lost so much more than that! So, she could only wait out the cooldown for the [Bandage] to complete its cycle.

Still, with her 'flamethrower' attack, Felice had managed to inflict a total of 1,500,000 points of damage, while burning about 80 monsters to a crisp in the process! A stream of rich experience points came in and the little Serpent was leveled up twice! Unfortunately, Felice needed even more experience points to level up again. She still needed about 10% more before she could reach Level 86.

Zhang Yang wielded his [Sword of Purging Devourer], slashing and slicing up the monsters before him. After a while, more monsters were slain, and Felice had finally acquired enough experience points to level up! A stream of golden light coursed through her entire body, and she reached Level 86! Her health bar was full again!

At the same time, the cooldown period for her {Pulverizing Flame} was over. So Felice transformed herself into her Dragonhawk Form, flew out on the monsters and activated her {Pulverizing Flame of Rage} once more! That attack inflicted a great number of damage to the monsters as the fire blazed on.

After 3 rounds of {Pulverizing Flame of Rage}, hundreds of Spectres lay dead. Looking at the chart of damage output, the

damage output of Felice was not far behind Zhang Yang's! Zhang Yang could not help but to praise her in his heart. Although Zhang Yang's damage output was not as good as the DPS players on his party like Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er, he was still unsurpassed in AoE attacks, especially since he had the [Dark Enigmatic Sword]. The special effect of the sword enabled him to trigger repeated AoE attacks onto the monsters within effective range! That made him very powerful in terms of AoE killing, to the point that no one could rival him!

With Felice's aid, be it one on one or an AoE kill, Zhang Yang had the right to look down upon the entire world!

He could not help but to 'pet' Felice on her head and said, "Felice, you really are a great and incredible helper for me!"

Felice turned to him and smiled, her face is so cute that Zhang Yang wanted to melt on the spot!

After finishing up the first wave of the monsters, Felice flew out to lure the second wave. After they had settled the second wave, it was time for a third wave! This little cave behind Zhang Yang had unwittingly been turned into the graveyard of the Spectre. After just three hours, the dead bodies of these skeletal Spectres had piled up like mountains around the entrance of the cave! Zhang Yang would take the time to pick up the loots available on the ground whenever Felice flew out to lure new wave of monsters back to him. Every time, he would only manage to pick up about one-third of the loot from the ground, before Felice comes back with a new wave.

Zhang Yang was also trying to pick up the more valuable loot, but many would still disappear and be flushed away by the system. If Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er could only see this, they would definitely be heartbroken to see all the ‘valuables’ disappearing!

Level 90, Level 100, Level 101!

Five hours later, Felice had reached the ‘limit capacity’ on her level, as pets and Battle-Companions could not exceed the level of the player, their owner. So, now that Felice has reached the same Level as Zhang Yang, she would no longer be able to share experience points with Zhang Yang. The experience points would only be shared among Zhang Yang and the [Snow-Scale Wind Serpent].

After Felice had reached Level 100, all of her attributes got a major upgrade!

[Felice] (Humanoid Form)

Level: 101

HP: 174,190 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 4,480

Melee Attack: 17,535 - 18, 535 (Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds, DPS: 4,746)

## Skills:

[Blazing Dragon's Spear]: Inflicts 100% melee attack, with fire damage on a target. Required: Melee Weapon. Cool Down: 1 second. Consume: 50 Mana points

[Dragon's Spear Barrage]: Inflicts 150% melee attack of physical damage onto a target, with a 10% rate of stunning the target for 2 seconds. Effective on Bosses as well, but with a greatly diminished rate. Required: Melee Weapon. Cool Down: 1 minute. Consumes: 50 Mana points.

[Absolute Defense]: When being hit, takes 1% damage from all attacks, lasts for 2 minutes. Cooldown: 12 hours. This effect can only take place when Felice is in her Human&nbsp;Form, and will wear off the moment she changes her form.

It seems that Felice has acquired a new skill in her Human Form, and that skill was a ridiculously powerful 'Shield Wall'!

[Felice] (Dragonhawk Form)

Level: 101

HP: 131,660 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 880

Magic Resistance: 4,480

Magic Attack: 10,517 - 11,117

It did not matter whatever form Felice was in, be in Human Form or Dragonhawk Form, her attributes were enough to put every single Tanker and DPS player to shame! She had become so much more powerful than them all!

They had almost cleared out all the monsters in this area, and the remaining monsters were just too scattered, so Zhang Yang was not in the mood to waste time in slaying them. He rode on the [Snow-Scale Wind Serpent] and flew to another end of the mountain. He located a small cave and began to 'harvest' more experience points. Soon after, [Snow-Scale Wind Serpent] had already reached Level 84!

Because Felice could no longer earn experience points, the [Snow-Scale Wind Serpent] was receiving the bulk of it! After merely two hours, [Snow-Scale Wind Serpent] had finally reached Level 100!

A stream of golden light beamed across the body of the [Snow-Scale Wind Serpent] as the body of the Serpent expanded out, growing up to a total length of 10 meters! It had a wingspan of about 15 to 16 meters! It looked mighty, and magnificent!

[Snow-Scale Wind Serpent] (Yellow-Gold Flying Battle Mount)

Level: 100

HP: 33,600 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 1,800

Magic Attack: 4,256 - 5,056

Skills:

[Shared Life] (Passive): Unites the health points of the pet and the owner together.

[Venom Spout]: Spouts venom towards a target, inflict 100% Magic Attack of Nature Damage, there is a 10% rate of poisoning the target. The target will receive 20% additional damage when being struck with Nature Attribute Attacks during effective period. Lasts for 10 seconds. The effects cannot be stacked. Instant cast. Cooldown: 2 seconds.

This is actually a Spell type [Mount]! This is wonderful! Magic Attacks will not be affected by the Defense of monsters, including Bosses!

With everyone prepared now, it's time to collect the bounty for Rockya!

# Chapter 470: Mayor Rockya

---

Zhang Yang hopped on to the [Snow-Scale Wind Serpent] as Felice and Luilina followed him up. As he telepathically controlled it, the Serpent began to hover and fly into the sky, heading towards the Morning Town.

Finally, it was possible to soar freely in the sky! The feeling is just too sweet!

The flying speed of the Serpent was at least three times faster than the movement speed on the ground. In just 10 minutes, Zhang Yang could see the Morning Town from afar! Zhang Yang took a stop at the front of Luilina's little cottage, and put the blind little girl there as a temporary measure. He planned to slay Rockya first, which should guarantee Luilina's safety after that.

The Serpent soared into the sky with Zhang Yang and Felice, right after Zhang Yang was done putting the NPC in her little cottage. As they arrived on top of the Morning Town, the first rays of the morning sun were already streaking across the world, blanketing it with warmth and beauty. Zhang Yang proudly stood atop the Serpent as she searched for the whereabouts of Rockya's house. It should be really simple. All Zhang Yang had to do was to look out for a large house, with the largest land and the best decorations!

Zhang Yang did not take long before he located a fancy large house on the northern side of the town. The Serpent let out a roar and flew straight towards the yard of the fancy house. They landed in the garden yard, right before the doorsteps of the house.



"Who goes there? How dare you trespass the property of Master Rockya!" a series of clumsy footsteps were heard coming from the path ahead, as 4 guards arrived at the scene. Each of them held a blade in their hands, and they were all fully armored Level 110 Elites. Their attributes were about the same as the two waves of cavalries that had attempted to pursue and hunt down Zhang Yang.

After letting out a shout, the four guards raised their weapons and attempted to slash him. Felice raised her lance and engaged in battle with one of the guards. As for the remaining 3, Zhang Yang went up to 'entertain' them.

Previously, Zhang Yang and Felice had survived a full-scale assault from 7 of these elites, so it stands to reason that 4 elites wouldn't be a problem for them! Furthermore, Felice and the Serpent had both surpassed Level 100, so their DPS capabilities had greatly improved. They bombarded the four elite monsters to the point that they could not even fight back! In just a brief moment, the monsters collapsed onto the ground and stayed dead. They dropped a number of loot.

The Serpent flicked its pair of wings and glided across the ground in a snakey zig-zag, but the hall was just ahead, and its head was too huge! It barely squeezed itself through the entrance, as it could only 'rant' out its dissatisfaction and discomfort by hissing sharply into the hallway.

Zhang Yang did not plan to charge in alone like an idiot, so instead, he shouted, "Rockya, you are one fine sun of a beach! Now

is the time that you pay for all the crimes you have committed!"

"You vulgar piece of sh\*t! How dare you accuse me of such crimes!" A middle-aged man leaped down from the balcony of the second floor! With a heavy landing that shook the ground, Zhang Yang could see that the man's body mass was huge! This man was about 1.9 meters tall, with a macho body. His arms were thicker and larger than a normal human's thigh!

[Mayor of Morning Town, Rockya] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 120

HP: 12,000,000

Defense: 3,300

Melee Attack: 17,297 - 19,297

Skills:

[Quadruplex Strike]: Hits the target 4 times in a row, inflicting 100% melee attack of Physical Damage on every hit! However, the user will be affected by the {Exhausted} effect, damage received will increase by 100%, lasts for 10 seconds. The [Quadruplex Strike] cannot be dodged, evaded or immune. Casting time: 2 seconds.

[Fatal Blow]: Inflicts 150% melee attack of physical damage to the target. Reduces 50% healing effect of the target. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Note: The Mayor of Morning Town. A foul and merciless man. Always takes advantage of the town folk and has done countless evil deeds!

Zhang Yang immediately started thinking up of a suitable method to handle this boss. The {Quadruplex Strike} could not be blocked. So it can only be waded through with either high health points, or a {Shield Wall}, or using an invincibility effect. While {Fatal Blow} could be blocked with {Block}, it had a negative effect, which Zhang Yang had to try avoiding. Or else, his {Berserker's Heal} and other healing skills would get a large 'discount' on their healing effects.

"You piece of sh\*t! You killed my son! Slaughtered him like he was a nobody! I want you to pay with your blood!" Rockya pulled out his sword from the scabbard hanging from his waist. The sword looked more ceremonial than functional, as grand and ornate as one could be. He charged at Zhang Yang with rage. As he leaped towards Zhang Yang like an ancient general leaping across the sky, he brought his sword down with all his might.

Zhang Yang immediately raised up his shield and activated his {Shield Wall}. Although the effect of reducing 50% healing effect was extremely annoying, but that effect would only last for 10 seconds. As long as he doesn't heal during that time, it wouldn't make much difference! If he accidentally wastes the cooldown of his {Block}, he would be receiving at least 10,000 damage from each

blow of the boss, and that would not be 'fun' at all!

Felice transformed into her Dragonhawk Form, and blasted the boss with her {Fire Missile}! Boom! The fireball blasted onto the boss and inflicted the boss with an approximate damage of 20,000 points. Her DPS had already broken through the 10,000 point!

However, Rockya was unlike the previous boss, like Branden. While he was wielding his sword, his left arm was not left unattended as well! Hardening up his fist, the boss let out a powerful punch at the Serpent, all of a sudden! After a loud bang, the Serpent was blasted by the impact of the punch and flew backward for about seven to eight meters far! The Serpent felt the excruciating pain and tears began to roll from its eyes.

That was a 'Supporting Attack'! Although it did not inflict any damage at all, that punch was really intimidating! It showed the powerful strength of the boss!

Although Zhang Yang was mounted atop his [Battle Mount] for the moment and his health points had been boosted high up, the disadvantage of being mounted was made very apparent here! The body mass of the Serpent was so large that it was hard to evade blows! He could not dodge the attacks according to his will, as the space was really limited! He quickly dismounted the Serpent. Then only, did he begin to really fight the boss seriously?

"You lowlife scum! Just die already!" The blade of the boss's sword flashed bloody-red, and a progression bar appeared right above the head of the boss! Two seconds later, the boss swung his sword at Zhang Yang! The blade of the sword was swung so swiftly

that it was like a flash of lighting, no, it had turned into four slashes!

It was the {Quadruplex Strike}! The boss had activated it!

‘-10659!’

‘-11,237!’

‘-10,052!’

‘-11,889!’

The four flashes of the lightning from the blade happened at almost the same instant! 40,000 damage! It did a great number on Zhang Yang! Fortunately, the Maximum Health Points of Zhang Yang had already reached 97,000 at the moment, so the boss could not instantly-kill him so easily!

That was really awesome!

Zhang Yang quickly gulped down a bottle of [Healing Potion] and healed himself by 10,000 points.

"Die! Die! Die!" The boss was screaming his lungs out as he began to swing again. But this time, the blade of his sword had darkened instead.

Zhang Yang's {Block} had just cooled down, so he raised his shield and activated the skill again to shield himself from the damage. After that, he quickly brought up the Battle Log to confirm his suspicions. The strike that the boss had just hit him with was the {Fatal Blow}. He began to calculate the cooldown of that skill. So, all he needed to do was to wait for the boss to strike him with another {Fatal Blow}, then only would he be able to calculate the cooldown for the boss's {Fatal Blow}! And then, he should be able to allocate the use of his {Block} appropriately, according to his health bar condition.

About 20 seconds later, the boss activated the second {Fatal Blow} and inflicted Zhang Yang with a damage of 17,882 points, at the same time, inflicting Zhang Yang with a negative effect which reduces 50% of Zhang Yang's healing effectiveness!

Zhang Yang already knew this would happen, and was prepared for it.

After battling for some time, the health bar of Zhang Yang was about to hit the bottom, after being bombarded by tons of skills by the boss. He quickly mounted the Serpent and instantly acquired a boost of 33,000 health points. Then, he endured another 3 hits from the boss before activating his powerful healing skill, the {Berserker's Heal}! After that, he jumped down from the Serpent and continued to battle the boss.

"You shameless lowlife scum! Argh!" Seeing Zhang Yang's health bar returning back to its full state, the boss was enraged, and he threw a punch at Zhang Yang with his empty hand.

Zhang Yang dodged a little to the side and with a quick spin, he slammed his shield right into the face of the boss! Well, it would be impolite not to reciprocate after all. So, Zhang Yang merely responded to the boss!

Pang! The face of the boss was stamped with a new reddish mark!

Rockya was so angry that he continued to roar. Although the slam in the face did not inflict any damage, but it was most humiliating! The boss was already furious at Zhang Yang for killing his son, and now, another bash in the face had just made him so angry that his face turned red!

"Haha! A wise man once taught me, when you hit someone, just hit him in the face! Are you having fun yet?" Zhang Yang laughed out loud. The boss was a Violet-Platinum boss after all, and Zhang Yang did not have any advantages in terms of equipment, and he was Level 120 too at that! He had to be really powerful! If it wasn't for Felice's aid, Zhang Yang would never have come alone to challenge the boss!

"Just die!" Rockya was so angry that he lost his breath and his face started turning purple instead. He continued to wave his sword at Zhang Yang!

Boom! Boom! Boom! The battle was fierce!

Felice had become the number one DPS in the boss battle. Her DPS had reached up to 10,000 points, and she had already surpassed Zhang Yang on the list! The boss suddenly turned

around and switched his target onto Felice! Yes, that happens when your DPS is higher than others, the aggro of the boss would go after the higher DPS. However, Felice was staying high up in the air, in her Dragonhawk Form, and the boss does not have any Flying Mount in his possession, so he could only roar at Felice from the ground. Unable to do anything, he turned back to Zhang Yang.

The battle continued on for about 2 minutes, and Zhang Yang had already activated his {Berserker's heal}, {Last Vigor}, and {Shield Wall} after being bombarded by the boss. Although he could still activate {Rearm} to refresh all the cooldown of his skills, the boss has only lost about 2,400,000 health points. If he used {Rearm} now, he could only inflict so much damage to the boss before all his skills are used again. It would not be enough to take down a boss with a total of 12,000,000 health points!

Zhang Yang quickly said, "Felice, come help me tank the boss for a while!"

"Roger, big brother!" Felice agreed to help, and she began to descend from the air, and transformed herself into her Human Form. Then she went up, burying the tip of her lance in the side of the boss.

As the aggro of the boss was already hooked to her earlier on because of her DPS being the highest in the battle, the boss had turned to her right way as she was descending to the ground. Rockya let out a battle cry before launching his assault on Felice.

Zhang Yang quickly activated {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from the boss battle and sat aside to heal up with his [Snacks] he



brought along.

Felice had already activated her {Absolute Defence}! Every single hit that landed on her only managed to inflict her with 100+ damage. They were mere tickles.

After Zhang Yang had recovered back to his full health state, he immediately charged back at the boss, and began his aggressive assaults on the boss.

Since Felice had already activated her {Absolute Defence}, it would be wise to let her tank the boss for a little longer. Better to make use of everything when it's still worth the while! Two minutes left before the {Absolute Defense} fades away!

75%, 60%, 55%... two minutes later, the health bar of the boss had been reduced down to 53%.

"Felice, get out of there now!" Zhang Yang shouted at Felice.

"Roger! Big brother!" Felice transformed into her Dragonhawk Form once again and flew up into the air. Rockya could do nothing but watch her take off!

"I'm angry! You won't like me when I'm angry!" Rockya ground his teeth together, then he turned to Zhang yang furiously.

The two minutes that Felice had bought for Zhang Yang, was

long enough for Zhang Yang's life-saving skills to cool down. After using all of his life-saving skills once more, the boss was left with only 30% health!

{Rearm}!

Zhang Yang cleared out all the cooldown period of his skills and was ready to repeat what he did for the previous two rounds! One more time!

25%, 20%, 15%... the health bar of the boss was reducing constantly. However, when the health bar of Rockya was at 3%, all of Zhang Yang's life-saving skills had already been activated!

The boss still had about 350,000 health points on him, while Zhang Yang had already activated his {Rearm}, and he only had about 50,000 health points left.

But Zhang Yang was not worried by the circumstances at all. He knows that he still had a last resort, the [Zombie Potion]! So, even if he really dies, he could still come back as a zombie and continue to attack the boss! Of course, he must make sure the boss is taken out within 30 seconds, for that would be how long the potion lasts!

It was now 350,000 points against 50,000 points!

270,000 points against 40,000 points! 180,000 points against 30,000 points!

Suddenly, a progression bar appeared right below the head of the boss. It was another {Quadruplex Strike} under 'construction'! If that strike comes, Zhang Yang would surely be dead!

Shoof!

The shadow of a lance suddenly flew at the boss! It was Felice, flying down towards the boss at a high speed, already in her human form! With her {Dragon's Spear Barrage} activated, she inflicted the boss with a damage of more than 25,000 points and stunned the boss, interrupting the boss from casting the spell for his {Quadruplex Strike}! Bravo!

Zhang Yang felt a tremendous joy in his heart. Although he was prepared to die, if he did not have to, of course, he would take that option!

While the boss was weakened, stunned, Zhang Yang, Felice and the Serpent lashed out with all their might. Rockya could only let out a miserable scream and collapsed onto the ground, nice and slow. He finally died! At the same instant, Zhang Yang was only left with about 8,000 health points! It was really close! Most importantly, he did not have to die!

# Chapter 471: Daffodil in distress!

---

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: In for a penny, in for a pound! Acquired 5,000,000 experience points!’

The boss was finally dead, and it was time to ‘harvest’ the loot and see what the boss dropped.

Rockya had dropped a total of 4 pieces of equipment, but among the 4, only one of them was a Violet-Platinum Tier equipment, and the remaining 3 were all Yellow-Gold Tier equipment. Ever since the number of Violet-Platinum bosses appearing is getting more and more, the Yellow-Gold Tier equipment were slowly dropping in popularity and value. It seems that the Violet-Platinum Tier equipment has taken over the role!

This special piece of Violet-Platinum equipment is a light-silver leather cloth. Purplish sparkles hovered over the equipment, making it look otherworldly.

[Silver Tiger Fur Cuirass] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +847

Strength: +242

Agility: +548

Equip: Increases 3% damage.

Equip: Increases Health Points by 1,200.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

A 3% increase in damage and an additional 1,200 health points? Well, damn! That's pretty good! Zhang Yang happily. He has decided to give it to Sun Xin Yu. No matter what, she was now one of his 'wives', of course he would naturally pick her over others. What that Fatty Han doesn't know wouldn't hurt him.

After picking up the remaining 3 Yellow-Gold equipment, the dead body of the boss was still lying quietly on the ground. Zhang Yang could not risk missing out anything, so he lifted a leg and kicked the dead body aside. As he took a closer look, he found a small piece of green jade on the ground!

Without the need to check on it, Zhang Yang already knew what it is, it was the [Territory Command Order] that he urgently needed! Because the word - [Order] was stamped in the middle of the [Territory Command Order] on it, in clear red! The name 'Morning Town' was crafted on the back of that jade.

[Territory Command Order: Morning Town]

Use: Launches a ‘Territory Conquest’ after 72 hours. The battle will last for 3 hours long. The last player with the [Territory Command Order] shall become the new Baron of the Morning Town.

Holding the [Territory Command Order] in his hands, Zhang Yang could not help but laugh out loud. Only one player in the entire game server could enter the Chaos Realm at the moment! This ‘Territory Conquest’ would be a very relaxing process! Zhang Yang could even set up a small cozy chair and lean back against it, enjoying the sun, while having a good nap! No one else would be able to enter the Chaos Realm to snatch the [Territory Command Order] from him.

If One Sword Stroke, Humbly Gentleman and his other ‘nemesis’ hears about this, would they become so envious that they would smash their skulls or dig out their eyes? Zhang Yang could not stop smiling as he visualized their expressions!

Without wasting any more time, Zhang Yang activated the [Territory Command Order], and instantly, the server began to make the announcements!

‘Server Announcement: A Territory without a Baron has appeared in the Chaos Realm. The ‘Territory Conquest’ will commence in 72 hours. All players, please be ready for it! The Territory was&nbsp;located at the Wilderness of Dubaiya, and the specific location will be announced when the ‘Territory Conquest’ begins! The ‘Territory Conquest’ will last for 3 hours long. When the battle is over, the last player carrying the [Territory Command

Order] will become the new Baron for the Territory!’

The announcement was made 5 times repeatedly across the system server.

Right after the announcements stopped, Zhang Yang received countless private messages, while the guild chat blew up! Everyone knew for a fact that only Zhang Yang had reached Level 100 and he was the only one that is eligible to enter the Chaos Realm in the current stage of the game. So unquestionably, the person who is going to get the [Territory Command Order] would be Zhang Yang! No one else!

Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince, Sword of Light and the rest of his allies started sending in their congratulations. They repeatedly praised Zhang Yang for being extremely lucky, for he had managed to get a [Territory Command Order], an extremely rare item in the game, in such a short period of time, after entering the Chaos Realm!

As Zhang Yang is the player above Level 100, this [Territory Command Order] was like a free gift from the game itself. Of course everyone would look at him in envy!

When Liu Wei received the news, he smashed his game helmet onto the ground.

"Noob tank! Daffodil got killed by some ruffians, and they're watching over her dead body! The moment she respawns, she'll be killed immediately! Come help her!" Zhang Yang suddenly received

a private message from Wei Yan Er.

"What?" Zhang Yang felt a rush of anger up his head. He has always been a man who protects the weak. He would rather do something wrong and get himself locked up, instead of watching the weak gets bullied! His determination in such regards is really admirable! Furthermore, Daffodil Daydream has been a gentle and kind person. She always treated everyone in the guild with her kindness and she is well-known for that. Now that someone was actually camping over her dead body, of course it would anger Zhang Yang and his guild members!

He quickly contacted Daffodil Daydream through the voice communication device, "Daffodil, where are you now?"

Daffodil Daydream was shocked and relieved at the same time to hear Zhang Yang's voice, then she said, "I'm currently lying dead by the Crimson Flame Hills. I was there to grind my levels. Never expected to be ambushed there. They stopped me and said that they wanted my staff. Of course I did not agree, so they started attacking me. I killed 3 of them, but there were too many of them! So, I was killed after that. Since then, they have been guarding over my dead body. I do not dare to resurrect, I'm worried I might drop the staff if I get myself killed again!"

This lady is a smart lady indeed. From the way Zhang Yang had spoken when he contacted her, she knew that he already had the gist of her situation, and wasted no time telling him the details.

Zhang Yang suddenly remembered something. When he was identifying equipment with his fellow ladies at the Identification



Shop, they had met Royal Highness of Thunder. As he was tearing up his [Teleportation Scroll], Zhang Yang asked, "Are the players from The Myth?"

"Yes! It's them alright! And their leader is called Royal Highness of Thunder! Seems more like a Royal Highness of assh\*le to me!"

So it was really him! That day, his greedy face had been projected right at Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang had intended to warn Daffodil Daydream about this, but the server was closed for 3 days straight. So, Zhang Yang had completely forgotten about this little man!

Looks like the man had been thinking about this for the past three days. The moment the server was reopened, he actually came after Daffodil, guarding by her dead body, all for the staff!

A stream of light beamed upon Zhang Yang as he transported himself back to Thunderstorm Castle. After walking out of the palace, he summoned the Serpent out.

The appearance of the Serpent right in the middle of the Thunderstorm Castle attracted a lot of unwanted attention. Many players began to round up around Zhang Yang and the Serpent. To them, no pet or mount could be this big!

In a game, 'size' came before power. If you happened to be riding on a Black-Steel mount the size of a small mounting, it would still attract more attention than a small Mythical dragon!

Needless to say, the Serpent looked magnificent. Its body was covered in snowy scales, and it had a large and long body! In contrast, it had small, green eyes that looked more like beans. The Serpent did not look scary at all. Instead, it looks kind of cute.

"Wow! What kind of Mount is that? It looks awesome!"

"Is this a snake? How can there be a pair of wings on it?"

"Snakes can't fly! If they do, aren't they supposed to be dragons?"

"Hah! You morons! How could Mounts even fly! Do not think that it can fly just because it has wings. I can tell! Its as good as an Ostrich!"

"That's right! The official notes said that [Flying Mounts] can be obtained only from the Chaos Realm. It's only been a day since the Chaos Realm is opened. It's impossible to catch a [Flying Mount] so soon!"

Zhang Yang jumped onto the Serpent and gave a command through his mind. The Serpent fluttered its wings and plunged straight into the sky!

Everyone on the ground was silent.

Zhang Yang sent Daffodil Daydream a party invitation, but Daffodil had already joined a party. Hundred Shots quickly added Zhang Yang into the party right after that. Other than Zhang Yang,

there were also a few of their regular party members. Only Sun Xin Yu happened to be offline, as she was currently working at the station. They were now grouped together because they had all found out about the trouble that Daffodil Daydream was in right now.

All of them had used their [Teleportation Scroll] to travel back to Thunderstorm Castle. Then they began to rush over to the Crimson Flame Hills. The Crimson Flame Hills was a Level 70 Map. Although it was just located at the side of the Forest of Tanila, which was close to Thunderstorm Castle, it would still require about 3 to 4 hours for them to get there.

The [Flying Mount] of Zhang Yang is three times faster than any of the [Mounts] on the ground. So he traveled like a rocket that pierced through the air. After just a while, he caught up to the second last in place, Endless Starlight. He overtook Starlight in just the blink of an eye.

Endless Starlight was surprised, so he asked, "Boss, you were the last to depart from Thunderstorm Castle, how did you overtake me so quickly! What the hell! How did you get so much speed? Boss, even if you want to save Daffodil, you can't just use some sort of cheat codes, man! You will be banned!"

Zhang Yang could only frown at Starlight. Fortunately for him, there was only one such whiner in the party at the moment. The other whiner, Fatty Han, was not here at the moment. The party chat would have devolved into everyone arguing and fighting over pointless topics if that wasn't the case!

Shoof! Shoof! Shoof!

Zhang Yang soon overtook Lost Dream, Hundred Shots and Wei Yan Er. With his [Flying Mount], he could ignore the geometry of the ground, and just fly straight towards his destination. He was at least five times faster than everyone!

Wei Yan Er was also surprised, then she said, "Noob tank! When did you run ahead of me? I didn't even see you approaching me!"

Zhang Yang laughed and finally, and he posted the Snow-Scale Wind Serpent's information onto the party channel.

"... Zhan Yu, you are one lucky son of the b\*tch! Not only you get a [Territory Command Order], which is considered lucky enough, you actually managed to be the first in the entire game to get a [Flying Mount]!" Lost Dream was admiring Zhang Yang.

"Silly Yu, bring me along when you grind, I want to go to the Chaos Realm!"

"Me too! Me too! Take me with you!"

Zhang Yang cannot afford to stay idle to babysit Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er in grinding their levels because the upcoming month would be a crucial month. He would like to make use of the at time to conquer more Territories before players start to come into the Chaos Realm. Of course, Territories required costs to manage. So from the perspective of economic, it would actually be

more cost-efficient to only conquer one Territory!

As all servers were natural enemies, even if Zhang Yang really takes down the Gateway Territory for the Japan-Korea server in the Chaos Realm, it would still be impossible for him to open up the Gateway Territory to the players in the Japan-Korea server to swarm in. Only the players in China server would be able to use the Teleportation Circle of the Gateway Territory that Zhang Yang has conquered. More importantly, the cost required to maintain the Teleportation Circle would not change, even if nobody were to use it. The cost was fixed. Nothing can be done to change that. Therefore, having two Territories would mean that Zhang Yang would have to pay for one extra Teleportation Circle, all for nothing.

Conquering Gateway Territories of other servers would be a means of strategy at winning the game. The eight regions of the game were meant to fight against each other. The game developers had always encouraged players to fight against each other, when they first created the game! Zhang Yang was just taking preemptive actions now!

Shoof! Shoof!

Zhang Yang overtook Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart with his high speed, and became the first in place to rush towards the Crimson Flame Hills.

...

Right in the middle of a vast land of the Crimson Flame Hills, Royal Highness of Thunder and his small army from The Myth stood around the dead body of Daffodil Daydream in a fishnet formation. Players who are dead can revive themselves within the range of 30 meters from where they were killed. So if one plans to camp by the dead body of a player, then one must make sure that they cover all possible spots of respawning.

"Master Thunder, we have been camping around this little b\*tch's dead body for over two hours already. Are we still camping any longer? Looks like she's not willing to resurrect at all!" one of the 'goons' from The Myth said.

"Nonsense! Of course we are going to camp! Didn't you see this little b\*tch using 10,000 gold coins to identify that staff? When have you ever come across a weapon or an equipment that required 10,000 gold coins to be identified? Hmm? If this staff is to be sold out in the market, it can cost 10,000,000 to 20,000,000 dollars! So forget 2 hours, even if it's two days or two months, we must camp here until she gives up the staff!" Royal Highness of Thunder shouted and screamed at that member of his guild, until his saliva splattered on the poor guy's face!

"Correct! Master Thunder is brilliant!"

"Furthermore, didn't this little b\*tch dropped a pair of Violet-Platinum boots when we first killed her? Haha! Just one pair of boots of this caliber can earn us tens of thousands! Humph! I do not only want that staff, I want to force her to drop every single piece of equipment on her, and let her run naked in front of my eyes! Literally! Haha!" Royal Highness of Thunder was laughing

arrogantly.

Just as they were discussing about how to make Daffodil go naked, a shadow came over their heads and the ground around them. They could feel strong winds beginning to blow around them!

# Chapter 472: Massacre

---

Royal Highness of Thunder and his 'goons' reflexively craned their necks upwards to look into the sky.

What they saw was a gigantic shadow of a bird hovering in the midair. As the sun was just over the 'gigantic bird', they were partially blinded by the sunlight, and could barely make out the scene. Most of them had almost instantly shut their eyes, staring back to the ground, recovering from the glare.

Hoof!

Zhang Yang gave a command to the Serpent, and they both landed heavily onto the ground. Felice was also standing atop the Serpent's back like a steadfast bodyguard, her lance held ready.

"Huh?" the goons from The Myth were all stunned when they saw the Serpent landing right before their eyes.

Could this be? The legendary [Flying Mount], circulating in the official forums?

Zhang Yang stared at them, with blazing eyes and gazed at the dead body of Daffodil Daydream. Without wasting any time, he said, "Felice, focus on the Magic Type enemies! Burn them all to a crisp!"

"Roger, big brother!" Felice nodded and she transformed into her



Dragon-hawk Form. She rose into the air as she started casting her {Fire Missile}, aiming at one of the Spellcasters of The Myth.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang rode on the Serpent, ready to slaughter up one of their Hunters. The movement speed of the Serpent was extremely swift. Before that Hunter could even blink, the Serpent was already right in front of his face. With a quiver in his [Sword of Purging Devourer], Zhang Yang swung his sword straight at the Hunter's throat and inflicted him with a damage of '-4,198'.

The Serpent was not willing to sit back and do nothing, it opened its mouth wide and began to spout out some greenish corrosive venom right from its mouth. The Hunter's face was covered in the greenish venom, as his 'handsome' face started sizzling away! He was inflicted with a damage of '-9,283'!

The equipment of that Hunter was pretty decent. He actually had over 25,000 health points. These two attacks had managed to take out half of his health bar. He screamed in terror as he tried to leap 10 meters back with his {Leap Dodge}!&nbsp;

Zhang Yang laughed at him as he saw the Hunter failing to react in a way a professional player would. So, he activated his {Charge} and came straight from the back of the Serpent and clashed into the Hunter like a lightning bolt, giving the Hunter a good Stun. Zhang Yang accumulated 10 Rage Points immediately after doing that. Because non-lethal skills did not share the common cool down period, and Zhang Yang did not have to wait for the cooldown, he immediately wielded his [Sword of Purging Devourer] once again and activated his {Destructive Smash}.

‘-25,722!’

An extremely high damage value was inflicted onto the Hunter! It appeared that the {Lucky strike} had been triggered on that particular strike, and the damage of Zhang Yang’s {Destructive Smash} was tripled!

Not even a second had passed since Zhang Yang’s arrival from the skies! Everyone from The Myth had not even been able to react yet, and one of them had already been taken out!

On the other side of things, Felice had already finished her casting of the {Fire Missile}! Crimson red flames were shot straight out from her small little beak, and the unfortunate Spellcaster was immolated.

‘-22,034!’

The {Fire Missile} was ridiculous, killing the Spellcaster on the spot, in just one single blow! There was no holding back at all!

"Bastards!" finally, the members of The Myth had come to their senses, and they started fight back. As Felice was still hovering midair, the ranged Profession players, like Spellcasters and Hunters started targeting Felice out of convenience. Meanwhile, the melee Profession players charged towards Zhang Yang. They seemed to be fairly experienced in group battles.

Zhang Yang laughed and jumped back onto the Serpent. The

Serpent casually hovered off the ground, and out of their formations. Zhang Yang reached out and slashed at a passing Thief.

‘-4,122!’

‘-8,649!’

After just one hit of his regular attack, the Rage Points accumulated was enough to let Zhang Yang activate his {Horizontal Sweep}. So, he used the skill immediately right after the regular slash and the two damage values were inflicted onto the Thief almost at the same instant, severely wounding the Thief. The Thief was terrified and quickly activated his {Blur} to get away.

It was futile!

‘-8,744!’

The cooldown for the Serpent’s {Venom Spout} was over! It opened up its big mouth and spat the greenish venom onto the Thief’s face, inflicting him with a damage of more than 8,000 points, finishing him off!

"What the fart! Who is this! How could his damage so high and powerful!"

"He has a [Flying Mount]!"

"Only players who enter the Chaos Realm can get [Flying Mounts]!"

"Nonsense, only one person can actually enter the Chaos Realm at the moment! That is ---"

"Zhan Yu!"

The members of The Myth finally figured out who was slaughtering them up, as their faces turned pale. Well, like they say, a big tree makes a good shelter. Now, Zhang Yang was a superstar, and Lone Desert Smoke had long been established as the best of the best in the entire China server! Who would dare to launch an assault against them?

"Ignore that eagle, hawk, or whatever bird that is! Everyone, focus on Zhan Yu! Guildmaster Heaven's Pride has given his words! Anyone will get 100,000 dollars for each kill on Zhang Yang! Brothers, we don't have to scare ourselves sh\*itless! Everybody, charge!" Royal Highness of Thunder was shouting in excitement.

Money is a mysterious force that motivates and moves people into even throwing their lives into doing the impossible. The Myth began to act, after listening to Royal Highness of Thunder. They really believed that they had the advantage in numbers, even believing that if every single one of them spat on Zhang Yang, he would eventually drown from the sheer amount of sputum!

They began to charge at Zhang Yang, forgetting their previous

fear. Now, they were attacking with full coordination! However, the [Flying Mount] was ridiculously quick! Regular attacks could not even land on Zhang Yang. They could only rely on the system's lock-on, along with their skills.

However ---

‘-0!’

‘-213!’

‘-0!’

‘-891!’

A series of low damage values were inflicted on Zhang Yang. To a player who is currently mounted, with a total of 130,000 health points, those were mosquito bites. Zhang Yang could hardly even feel a thing!

"Sun of a beach! What kind of equipment does this guy have on him? How is he so tough? Can anything hurt him!"

"Guardians are naturally designed to withstand Physical Damage! Spellcasters can make a difference! Let's insta-kill him!"

"We shall become famous after killing Zhan Yu!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and laughed as he rode on the Serpent. The Serpent was weaving about, swiftly and unpredictably, like the wind. They went up to a Spellcaster, and Zhang Yang slammed his shield into the Spellcaster with powerful brute force, launching him into the air like a piece of paper caught in the wind. The Spellcaster flopped onto the ground, his chanting having been interrupted!

‘Supporting Attack’!

With the Serpent’s swift movements, Zhang Yang had finally unleashed his full potential. He moved through his enemies freely, while dodging every single hit coming from the members of The Myth, using his ‘Supporting Attacks’ on the Spellcasters with full force whenever they started chanting, interrupting their skills again and again, with the extremely powerful impact of his shield against their faces! None of the Spellcasters were allowed to even cast a single spell!

Ignoring Zhang Yang had been a gross miscalculation on the part of The Myth! Felice was still hovering midair, bringing hell to their formations!

Pak! Pak! Pak!

Fireballs came raining from the sky, and descended onto the members of The Myth. Those who were low on health were instantly killed by the flames, while the others ate an additional fireball or two, before they too joined their comrades in the graveyard!

So, who should they focus on? It had become a million-dollar question!

If they focused on the one in the air, it was pointless taking down a non-player battle companion! But, if they focused on Zhang Yang, could they really take him down? Could they even hurt him? Physical attacks did absolutely nothing, but Magic attacks might work! However, those Spellcasters were being toyed around so roughly by Zhang Yang and his shield, that they were constantly sent flying about like grains of rice! They could do nothing to Zhang Yang! Nothing at all!

Were their standards and level really that far apart? Were they really so weak, or was Zhang Yang just too bloody strong?

Tens of player were unable to take down one single player? Was this it?

Royal Highness of Thunder could not accept the ending of this because he was certain that the [Epicormic Branch of the Tree of Life] had to be the finest staff at the current stage of the game. He would do anything for it! But because the server was closed for a couple of days, he had been bouncing on the tip of his toes, waiting for the perfect chance for Daffodil Daydream to finally act on her own, without party members around her. He had even managed to kill Daffodil Daydream once, and had taken her Violet-Platinum boots. Although the boots were not as precious as the staff he aimed to get, but Royal Highness of Thunder had already tasted the 'sweetness' of getting a Violet-Platinum equipment! That was why he was so insistent on camping by the side of Daffodil's dead

body.

The appearance of Zhang Yang had made him shocked and excited at the same time. Liu Wei had set a bounty on Zhang Yang's head. Anyone who kills Zhang Yang would be rewarded handsomely!

It was supposed to be a double win for him. But, who would have thought Zhang Yang was practically invincible! Zhang Yang had been able to oppress them single-handedly! They could only postpone the inevitable!

"Kill! Use everything you've got! He's just one man! He can't possibly fly solo for long!" Royal Highness of Thunder could only blurt out empty words of encouragement.

In the end, online games were all about the standards of equipment! Powerful equipment would not always make up for a lack of skills, but they definitely made a huge difference! Zhang Yang happened to have an abundance of both. He had the equipment, and he had the skills! It was a divine combination!

Zhang Yang continued dodging at leisure, and he also had {Warrior's Will} to cancel out all the Status Restriction Effects on him. Also, his [Heart of the Death Knight] could decrease 50% of the time he would be under a Status Restriction Effect! With so many tricks up his sleeves, the members of The Myth were toyed around like fools, and they could not do anything about it!

Even if Zhang Yang chose not to cancel any of the Status



Restriction Effects with his skills, he still had 130,000 health points to tank against their assaults! He also had a 20% passive immunity to damage, 2,320 defense points, 2,228 points of damage absorption effect! Even if he stood there and did nothing, they would still take 4 to 5 minutes to empty out his HP bar alone!

Let's not forget that Felice was still supporting Zhang Yang in midair with her {Fire Missile}.

Each {Fire Missile} could inflict up to 20,000 points of damage. Who would be stupid enough to stand there and let her rain her {Fire Missiles} down on them? If their health points were just a little lower, they might just get themselves instant-killed. Even their tanks could only withstand two or three of those fireballs! They did not have any super healers like Han Ying Xue to heal them up!

Pak! Pak! Pak!

Felice was like floating turret, launching {Fire Missiles} after {Fire Missiles}. The death count was really 'astounding'!

It was a total massacre!

11 left! 9 Left! 5 left! 2 left!

Zhang Yang raised up his sword and plunged his sword straight into a Berserker, sending him straight to the graveyard! From that moment onwards, the only member of The Myth that was left

standing was Royal Highness of Thunder himself!

"Daffodil Daydream, you can resurrect yourself now." Zhang Yang informed her through the party channel.

"Alright." Daffodil Daydream had released her soul and had been waiting by her body.

Crunch!

Zhang Yang bashed his shield right into the face of Royal Highness of Thunder and instantly, the face of Royal Highness of Thunder started bleeding. Pah! He spat out some broken teeth! Half of his face had swollen up immediately! He had survived up to this point, only because Zhang Yang had left him alive on purpose. He has better plans for this 'pr\*ck'!

"Zhan Yu! Don't cross the line!" Royal Highness was speaking through his swollen face. He could not even pronounce his words nicely, "Our master, Heaven's Pride, is not someone you can trifle around with ---"

Poom!

Zhang Yang smashed his shield into his face again, and more blood splattered on the ground as Royal Highness of Thunder was sent flying 4 meters away again!

Right after Royal Highness staggered to his feet-poom! Another

blow landed straight on his face! Zhang Yang hammered him with the shield again!

Those were all 'Supporting Attacks', unable to inflict a single point of damage on Royal Highness of Thunder, However, it was truly embarrassing to be humiliated this way. Royal Highness held a fairly high rank in The Myth, but now that he was being smacked in the face, like a little kid being repeatedly smacked on his butt!

Zhang Yang turned over and asked in a cold tone, "Daffodil, how long did he camp by your dead body?"

"More than two hours!"

"Very well then, I shall slap him for 3 hours!" Zhang Yang said calmly. That dead calm was enough to send a chill down Royal Highness of Thunder's spine. He knew just then, that, sh\*t was about to happen.

Piak!

Pak!

Pak!

Royal Highness of Thunder turned into a life target practice. After a series of smashes and bashes, his face was so swollen, that it no longer looked like a face of a human. But, Zhang Yang did not stop there or even think of ending it right then. He wordlessly

continued to bash that swollen face up! He just kept on hitting Royal Highness of Thunder right in the face! It was brutal!

The eyes of Daffodil Daydream began to well up with tears as she watched Zhang Yang standing up for her. She was touched to the point that she did not know what to say.

Royal Highness of Thunder could no longer keep count on how many times he had been struck in the face. So, he decided to lie down on the ground like Snoopy does on the roof his kennel. He believed that Zhang Yang would stop if he stayed down.

But he was wrong, very wrong! The moment he lay on the ground, Zhang Yang began to use his legs instead of his shield! He started kicking the face of Royal Highness of Thunder like a soccer ball!

Royal Highness of Thunder could only cry and endure the pain. He would never have thought that it would be possible to torture people like this in {{God's Miracle}}! He believed that if he could not win, he could just run. And if he cannot run, then he could just die and run back to his dead body to resurrect once again!

But now, he could not even run if he wanted to, and he could not even die if he wanted to! Zhang Yang was not inflicting any damage on him! He was still at full health! What he was experiencing now was worse than death!

After being kicked and stepped on for tens of minutes, Royal Highness of Thunder finally could not take the humiliation

anymore, so he decided to sign out of the game immediately. However, it was another dead end! He immediately received a system notification: You cannot sign out of the game while you are engaged in battle. If you forcefully disconnect yourself from the server, your character will receive a penalty of -3 Levels!

Royal Highness of Thunder could only grieve in silence, "..."

It's extremely difficult and time-consuming to level up even once! After getting over Level 90, it would take about 12 days in real-time just to gain 1 Level! So, a penalty of -3 levels would mean the loss of a whole month! Now that everyone was fighting to get into the Chaos Realm as soon as possible, a drop of 1 level would already be a major setback. A penalty for dropping by 3 levels? That was unthinkable!

Therefore, Royal Highness of Thunder had no choice but to endure the punishment!

He silently took the blows, believing that as long as he did not fight back, the other party might eventually get bored!

Zhang Yang did not hold back in any of his attacks. 3 hours went on, and Zhang Yang had made sure that Royal Highness of Thunder had suffered for 3 hours, before he ended his life with a few slashes of his sword. But that wasn't the end. He had already stationed Wei Yan Er and the others by the Graveyard nearby. Although Royal Highness of Thunder chose to resurrect at the Graveyard immediately, he was immediately put down again by Wei Yan Er and the others.

After killing him another 5 times, Royal Highness of Thunder finally dropped the Violet-Platinum boots that he had snatched earlier from Daffodil Daydream! After picking up the boots, the gang called it a day and left Royal Highness of Thunder alone. But, what they left behind was a broken man with a broken mind and a shattered ego.

Everyone was furious at the imprudence of The Myth, so Hundred Shots decided to put up a new order in the guild. The Myth was now a kill-on-sight target!

Although The Myth had been a very prestigious guild in Zhang Yang's previous life, the current The Myth was still too weak at the moment. Although they had managed to convince some skillful players from Imperial Sky to defect to them, but the standard and the size of the guild was still far from being a prestigious guild! How could they withstand the wrath of the Lone Desert Smoke? They would only be slaughtered like rats!

Who wouldn't like to relentlessly beat a dog that is already in the water? Imperial Sky had been very hostile towards The Myth. Now that the Lone Desert Smoke had lit The Myth up, Imperial Sky also started attacking The Myth! As The Myth was now sandwiched in between two large-scaled, furious guilds, they were utterly miserable, with every step they take being a potentially perilous one. Anyone from Lone Desert Smoke and Imperial Sky would slaughter them, the moment they find out that they belonged to The Myth! The members of The Myth no longer even dared show their guild name in public!

72 hours of the in-game time passed, and Zhang Yang was forcefully teleported back to Morning Town.

‘Server Announcement: A new Territory has spawned at the coordinates XXXXX, YYYYY. Territory name: Morning Town! The ‘Territory Conquest’ will last for 3 hours, and the last player who holds the [Territory Command Order] shall claim the Territory and become the new Baron of Morning Town! From now onwards, the Wilderness of Dubaiya will be set up as a special battle area, all players shall not enter! When players die, they will be transported back to their main cities and revive there!’

‘Server Announcement: Currently, the player currently holding the [Territory Command Order]: Zhan Yu! The player holding the [Territory Command Order] will be marked with a special indicator, and the player will not be able to leave the Territory Area!’

‘Server Announcement: The ‘Territory Conquest’ has begun! Commencing countdown!’

Phew~~

A burst of cold wind blew past Zhang Yang as he was surrounded by emptiness. It was a horrible sensation, but did nothing to dampen Zhang Yang’s bright mood, for in this ‘Territory Conquest’, Zhang Yang was the only chess piece in the entire area! So, he just stood there like an idiot, letting the cold wind hammer against his face.

One Sword Stroke, "..."

Snow Seeker, "..."

Greensleeves Prince, "..."

"You f\*cking b\*st\*rd!" Liu Wei smashed his newly replaced, brand new game-helmet up again.



# Chapter 473: Winst Castle

---

Well, this had to be the easiest, most peaceful, and most boring ‘Territory Conquest’ in the entire history of gaming!

Zhang Yang sat on Whitey and wandered around the small town. The Mayor was dead, thanks to Zhang Yang, but it seemed that nothing had changed at all. His death had not changed anything at all! The entire town was still very silent. The town folks were still doing what they were supposed to do. Nothing had changed at all!

1 minute, 5 minutes, 10 minutes ... 1 hour, 2 hours, 3 hours!

‘Server Announcement: The ‘Territory Conquest’ has ended, the last player with the [Territory Command Order] is --- Player Zhan Yu! Morning Town is now a private Territory. Everyone shall be teleported back to their main cities immediately!’

It was an ending that everyone saw coming. No matter how envious the other people were, the irrefutable fact was that the Morning Town belonged to Zhang Yang now!

Zhang Yang did not change the name of the Territory. He kept the name as it was. After that, he turned his attention to the most crucial part of setting up a Territory, the Teleportation Circle! This facility would affect everyone in the future! So, without hesitation, he quickly spent 1,000,000 gold coins on it! Naturally, Zhang Yang only built a one-way Teleportation Circle that would teleport players from Morning Town to White Jade Castle, and linked his [Teleportation Scroll] to the new Teleportation Circle.

From now onwards, everyone would have a convenient way to Chaos Realm, once they have reached the required levels.

Han Ying Xue and the others were loved much more than they can imagine. When they reach Level 100, Zhang Yang would just invite all of them by forming a party and using his [Party Summon Order] to summon all of them over to the Chaos Realm, saving them a lot of time. They would not have to lift even a single foot.

After done setting up the Teleportation Circle, the next thing to set up were the defenses of the Territory. Zhang Yang spent another fortune, fortifying his new Territory. Castle walls emerged from the ground all around the Territory area. Two large metallic doors fortified the main entrance. Of course, Zhang Yang was only able to set up Level 1 Defenses, and money was not the issue. The required mining ores were hard to come.

Since Zhang Yang need not worry about other players attacking his Territory for the time being, Zhang Yang decided to take his own sweet time at collecting the required materials, and focused his attention on locating a second Territory.

After they left Morning Town, Zhang Yang flew atop his Serpent, towards the Gulattoo Icelands. It was where the Koreans and Japanese players would emerge from, the moment they enter the Chaos Realm! Furthermore, Zhang Yang remembered the place well. After all, there had been many large-scale wars between the players of China server and the Japan-Korea server. He had participated in so many of the battles there, more than he could remember!

‘Server Announcement: Derick - King of White Jade Kingdom has stepped down, Princess Serena will now lay claim to the throne!’

As he flew through the air, Zhang Yang suddenly received a Server Announcement!

Huh? So Princess Serena has taken the place of her rightful throne!

Zhang Yang was shocked. There had been no such occurrence in his previous life! Ever since he had completed the quest for locating the [Ancient Godly Weapon, Meteor Sword], everything had taken a new turn that was never around in his previous life! They even added a new system called the Battle-Companion system, and now Princess Serena is stepping to be the ruler of White Jade Kingdom!

Alright, let’s put that aside for now, and focus on the main aim!

The Serpent was fast, and more importantly, it could fly. So, it could ignore the geometry of the ground, flying over the mountains and the seas!.

However, the sky was also a hostile area!

Suddenly, a large, eagle-like creature flew at Zhang Yang and the Serpent like a missile, its two metallic claws outstretched! It was

aiming for the Serpent's throat!

[Sky Devourer Condor] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 112

HP: 17,680

Defense: 100

Melee Attack: 5,186 - 5,986

Skill:

[Tear]: Uses metallic claws to tear open its target, inflicting 150% melee attack of Physical Damage to the target.

Note: A ruthless predator of the sky, loves to prey on pythons.

So, it was just a normal tier monster. Zhang Yang did not even feel like killing it himself, so he ignored it, knowing that Felice would automatically act on her own accord. Felice spat a {Fire Missile} and burnt the Condor into a 'roasted chicken' in an instant. The 'roasted chicken' then dropped from the sky and crashed into the ground.

Zhang Yang could only shake his head. He thought to himself

about it, what if he was riding on a Phoenix? Would the Condor still have dared to attack him with its claws? Would it even dare to approach him?

After flying for over an hour, Zhang Yang arrived at the Gulattoo Iceands. Right before his eyes lay a vast, white snowy area, covered in glaciers, showing off the magnificent scenery of the North.

Zhang Yang took out his world map to study it for a bit, before telepathically commanding the Serpent to go northwest.

Quite a number of monsters tried to ambush Zhang Yang. But, none of them could stand before a furious Felice! A few elite tier monsters were able to survive her fireballs, forcing Zhang Yang to spend some time finishing them off. But, none of them could stop Zhang Yang from going forwards!

After flying for another ten minutes, Zhang Yang finally arrived at his destination. A huge castle was now right beneath them. The tallest building within the castle was a hall, and a white-themed flag was installed right on top of the palace. It bore a fierce tiger as its mascot. The flag fluttered as it caught the wind.

"Outsiders! This is the territory of the Duchess Winst! Get to the ground at once! This is a restricted area!" Just as Zhang Yang was admiring the magnificent scenery of the castle, suddenly, three knights riding on Snow Condors flew out from the midst of the castle and blocked Zhang Yang's way.

Their names were currently green, so there was absolutely nothing to gain from attacking them. Zhang Yang nodded and commanded his Serpent to land. After they had all landed on a flat platform within the castle area, Zhang Yang noticed several dozens more of Snow Condor in the area. It was obvious that these Snow Condors were Winst's aerial units.

The three knights had also landed and they had dismounted the Snow Condors. One of them walked up and said, "Outsider, tell me your name!"

"Zhan Yu, an adventurer from the White Jade Castle!"

"White Jade Castle?" The three knights exchanged looks and they started to look at Zhang Yang in disdain. "What kind of small f\*cking castle is that? Never heard of it!"&nbsp;

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh at them deep in his heart. White Jade Castle was the center of White Jade Kingdom. The land was so vast, being much larger and wider than this small little piece of land this Duchess Winst had! These three imbeciles were just frogs in a well, they must not have seen the outside world yet, other than this little piece of land. They could actually feel so proud, occupying such a small piece of land and castle!

But Zhang Yang had no reason to argue with three NPCs, they were not human after all, so he said, "I have heard great tales about the prestigious name of Duchess Winst, so I have traveled a great distance from White Jade Kingdom just to open my eyes to the greatness of Duchess Winst. I really do hope that you sirs can allow that, and let me experience the divinity of this land!"

All three knights started cracking grins as he continued buttering them up, and the leader of the knight said, "Alright, since you are so sincere, we shall allow you to stay and look around for a few days! But, strictly no flying above the castle! This is your only warning, or we will attack immediately!"

Zhang Yang summoned Whitey and left the platform. The streets were very lively, brimming with activity in every corner. Stalls covered both sides of the streets!

After walking for some distance, Zhang Yang found himself on a very wide street. The two sides of the street were full of people, but there was not a single person in the middle of that road. It was like they were making way for a very important person.

"Rumors say that the 'precious' master tailor of Duchess Winst has crafted another fantastic formal dress!"

"I heard that only intelligent people can access the necessary spectrum in their vision to even see the dress. If you're stupid, you lack the faculties to even process the visual input!"

"That's really fantastic! So...it's like a stupidity detector!"

"Jakyl! Bet 5 coins that you can't see it!"

"Pui! You may have smashed my head between doors a thousand times, but I'm still more intelligent than you!"

People started chattering as Zhang Yang stood close by to eavesdrop.

... "The Emperor's New Clothes"? Zhang Yang frowned. He gritted his teeth, preparing himself for a horrific sight. Wrinkled old buttocks, I'm ready, come to me!

"The Duchess is here!" everyone began to feel excited as they started talking louder and louder.

Zhang Yang had also fixed his eyes on the road. All he saw was a band of people walking down on the road like bosses. However, the one in the front was not a middle-age man - as the original tale went, or a wrinkly old lady - as Zhang Yang had assumed, but a lady with blonde hair, blue eyes, and a boombalicious body! This lady was completely naked, with her head raised high, as if she was above all others!

Unfortunately, the 'vital' parts of this beauty had been censored by mosaic boxes! God d\*mn it! What a way to shoot men down.

[Duchess Winst] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 120

HP: 12,000,000



MP: 1,000,000

Defense: 3,300

Magic Attack: 10,249 - 11,449

Skill:

[Magic Barrier]: Opens up a magic barrier to shield yourself from harm. The magic barrier can absorb damage. The specific amount of damage that can be absorbed differs based on the number of players engaged in battle. The magic barrier can absorb an additional 10,000 damage with each additional player in the battle. When [Magic Barrier] is in effect, the [Radiant Punishment] cannot be interrupted. Instant activation.

[Light of the Stars]: Summons light from the stars, inflicts 100,000 Holy Damage to all targets within the area of 100-meter radius, having the user as the center point. Chanting time: 2 seconds.

[Radiant Punishment]: Punishes the target, inflicting 150% magic attack of Holy Damage on the target. Instant activation. Cool down period: 2 seconds.

Note: The owner of the Winst Castle, the 17th Duchess of the Winst, a true narcissist.

Well who would have thought this ‘Duchess Winst’ was such a

young, hot lady!

Staring at the lady whose butt cheeks took turns bouncing up and down with each step she took, with her 'explosively' large pair of boobies perked up by her straight back, Zhang Yang could not help but to feel 'satisfied'. He could only feel sorry and pity for Fatty Han and Endless Starlight. If these two were here with him to 'savor' this scenery, they would definitely drool and flood the street!

"Do I look beautiful?" the Duchess was shaking her hot-ass body, while walking through the street, looking around proudly. She also posed seductively in many ways, trying to show off her 'New Dress'.

"Does my new dress looks beautiful on me?"

How could a man.. eherm... a person say that a lady is not beautiful, when that lady stood buck naked in public? The people at both sides of the road were nodding indefinitely. The truth was, they were already 'stunned' by what they saw. They also praised and tried to 'butter' her up by saying that she's very beautiful and that the dress was simply stunning.

Just then, a sharp, shrill voice tipped the balance of the fragile, tense atmosphere, "But, this big sister does not have anything on her!"

A vague voice of a child came right out from the crowd and silenced the entire street. All of a sudden, the people began to

chatter again, as people started dropping their pretenses! Zhang Yang could see the smile on the Duchess's face froze, and then her face turned black as she started to heat up. Suddenly, she shouted with anger, turned around and ran back to where she came from. It was like a free, naked show for the public!

Not long after that, the entire castle imposed a martial law. The silver Snow Condors began to fly into the sky, one after another, and the knights on them were shouting continuously, trying to inform everyone in the area, "From now on, a martial law is in effect. Everyone must remain in your own homes! You are not allowed to shelter any outsiders! Or else, you will be executed for treason!"

The streets that was filled with chattering and laughter instantly turned quiet. Only Zhang Yang and another mysterious man in a cloak remained standing at the far side of the street.

"My friend, mind lending me a hand?" the mysterious man took the cloak off his head and revealed a handsome face. His smile revealed his perfect, white teeth.

# Chapter 474: Messick

---

[Messick] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 110

HP: 1,100,000

MP: 10,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 8,094 - 9,094

Skills:

[Light of Life]: Recovers 10% health points. Consumes: 500 MP

[Foul Chatters]: Begins to curse at a target, inflicting a large amount of aggro. Instant activation. Cool down: 5 seconds.

Note: Calls himself the best tailor in the world.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh. So this was the person who had tricked the Duchess into walking naked in the public! So he said, "You really have balls of steel! You even dare make fun of a Duchess!"

Messick laughed and said, "I say you, my friend, can't we get out of this dangerous place first, before we speak any further?"

‘Ding! Messick has given you a quest: Escape from Winst Castle. Will you accept it?’

Obviously, to conquer the castle and make it his own Territory, Zhang Yang would have to overthrow Duchess Winst and take her place. This daring tailor must be her ‘worst enemy’ in this story. So, aiding him against the Duchess should lead him to a final battle with Duchess Winst!

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and accepted the quest.

[Escape from the Winst Castle] (Difficulty: C)

Description: You chose to aid Messick. Messick is currently being pursued by Duchess Winst and her men. You have made yourself a public enemy of Duchess Winst and her men! Help Messick escape from Winst Castle, and do not let him die!

Completion: Aid Messick in escape from the Winst Castle 0/1

Fortunately for him, this quest did not have any penalties that could potentially reduce his levels. On the other side of things, there weren't any rewards that would give Zhang Yang any luck attributes!

Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh and summoned out his Serpent. Meanwhile, Felice had transformed herself into her Dragon-hawk Form, ready to make an expeditious retreat. But before Zhang Yang could call out her name, Messick had already tried to climb up on her back! Felice was so furious that she had swiveled her head around and launched a {Fire Missile}.

Messick was struck in the face, turning black like a big piece of charcoal. Zhang Yang could not help but to shake his head again and again. This 'brother' would still think of taking advantage of a lady at a time like this! Zhang Yang was at a loss for words, unable to find anything to say about this NPC.

Without wasting any more time, Zhang Yang lashed out, aiming at Messick's despicable buttocks, and with a powerful kick, he launched Messick onto the back of Serpent, jumped aboard and gave a command to take off. The Serpent immediately fluttered its wings and flew right into the sky. They flew right out of Winst Castle.

However, their movement attracted 5 knights who were patrolling in the surrounding areas of Winst Castle! They immediately reacted and flew right towards Zhang Yang on their Snow Condors.

The flying speed of the Serpent was indeed impressive! With just a few flaps of its wings, it had already brought Zhang Yang and Messick to the exterior of Winst Castle. There were only 5 knights on their tails. Zhang Yang quickly patted on the Serpent's neck, controlling it to turn around. They headed straight to face the 5 knights.

"Hey, are you actually thinking of battling in the sky?" Messick rubbed his forehead with his hand, looking very anxious, "Please, put me down first before you do that! I have acrophobia! You know what that means? I'm terrified of heights! Argh!"

Zhang Yang had no time to 'entertain' Messick, as they were already on the verge of crashing into one of the knights! Right before they reached the knight, Zhang Yang gave a good swing at one of the Snow Condors with his [Sword of Purging Devourer].

Felice had also joined the battle, as she could fly on her own. Immediately, she began to chant the spell for her {Fire Missile}!

The battle has begun!

"Haha! How could you start the 'party' without me!" Messick grumbled as he produced a piece of clothing from out of nowhere! In a flash he had jumped into the jumpsuit-like apparel, except that it was webbed between the arms and ribs. The fabric there was as thin as a cicada's wings. When he opened up his hands, he looked like a bat!

"So, my friend! Just let the girl give me a sweet kiss later, and then I'll take care of these 5 fools for you! Very well! That's the deal!" Messick was muttering more to himself than to anyone else. Before Zhang Yang could say a word, Messick had already jumped off the back of Serpent. Was he trying to get himself killed by falling? And didn't he just say that he had a fear of heights?

As he opened up his arms, he actually started gliding like a flying squirrel! More impressively, Messick could evidently steer himself into his desired direction! He glided through the air and flew towards a Snow Condor.

Tsk! That is pretty impressive!

Bang!

Messick kept his 'wings' as he landed onto the Snow Condor. He raised up his fist and gave the knight on the Snow Condor a powerful punch that the knight would never forget!

Although he did not seem to be very likable or reliable, for that matter, he was still an elite tiered NPC after all! His punch inflicted about 7,000 damage on the knight!

After Zhang Yang turned around to take a look at him and saw how he was doing, he instantly felt relieved. Although the attacks of Messick were not particularly powerful, he did have the ability to regenerate his own health points. Against an equally powerful monster, he would naturally outlast them! Zhang Yang tried to hook the aggro of the other 4 monsters over to himself. Although the DPS of Felice was extremely high, but Zhang Yang had {Provoke}, so he still managed to reel in the aggro of the monsters.

The Serpent helped whenever it could. Spits of greenish venom were splattered on the monsters, dealing a DPS of up to 4,500 points! After just a while, the first knight had fallen! The second knight followed, and the third, and moving on to the forth! After



slaying all 4 knights, Zhang Yang and Felice quickly turned their attention towards the fifth knight that Messick was dealing with. It did not take them long before they too, slew that knight and brought the battle to an end.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Escape from the Winst Castle! Acquired 500,000 experience points!’

Zhang Yang commanded the Serpent to bring them down to the ground, and then he looked at Messick and said, "Now, we should be able to have a proper conversation, right?" It would be illogical if the quest ended here, there had to be more to it! There should be a chain of quests coming up!

Messick suddenly turned serious, he stopped fidgeting as he looked at the direction of Winst Castle, "I'm a person who loves traveling around the world. So, when I was 15, I left Winst Castle to pursue my dream, traveling all over the land and gathering more knowledge. Everything was great, until 3 years ago. I received news about my parents' death! They were great tailors. But, just because they could not make a dress that would satisfy that f\*cking b\*tch, Winst, she sentenced them to their death and chopped their heads off in public!"

No wonder Messick had gone through all the trouble just to embarrass that Duchess Winst! There was such deep hatred involved!

Messick laughed at himself and said, "After I found out about my parents' death, I actually came back and attempted to murder that b\*tch to avenge my parents' death! How ridiculous of me to

actually think that I can do it! When I arrived back at the town, I realized that the b\*tch has a massive army under her command, and she's really powerful herself. I would have no chance at all!"

"So, I came up with another plan. I got close to her and tried to persuade her that I'm the best tailor there is in the entire world! Slowly, I convinced her by making some nice dresses for her, until I began to gain her trust. That was when I knew it was about time. So, I decided to humiliate her instead of trying to murder her. I made up a lie about how I have made a fantastic dress that could differentiate between the wise and the stupid. I believe you heard and seen enough to understand whose stupidity it actually determined in the end! That stupid b\*tch actually bought it, and she really 'wore' it in the streets! Haha! She really did embarrass herself to the core!"

He smiled even more 'maliciously' than Fatty Han and Endless Starlight.

Zhang Yang shook his head again and again as he knew, this fellow must also be an 'impressive' pervert, himself!

Messick paused his smile and said, "So don't laugh at me for not daring enough to fight that b\*tch! I don't want to die for anything! Now that I'm still alive, my existence is the only 'stain' on her life! My friend, I'll be traveling to other places once more, you should get moving, and get the hell out of here!"

Having finished retelling his backstory, Messick actually turned around and ran into the distance. In just a few seconds, he had already vanished from his sight! That fellow truly ran like a

cockroach!

Zhang Yang frowned, speechless at what that had just happened. So, this quest really ends here, after aiding that Messick in running away? That's it?

Just as Zhang Yang started to ponder on his next move, he saw Messick jumping right out of the bush! Zhang Yang could not help but laugh, "What happened? Don't tell me, you already started to miss me the moment we parted?!"

"No, d\*amnit! There's a bunch of knights behind me!" Messick screamed miserably as he fell to the ground right in front of Zhang Yang, with his bottom facing the sky. Zhang Yang saw that there was at least 7 to 8 arrows buried in his \*ss! He could not help but to wonder if any of the arrows had actually 'penetrated' his anus!

Right after witnessing Messick's fall, a platoon of 12 flying knights appeared right before Zhang Yang. Each of them carried longbows, and they were all riding majestic looking Snow Condors.

"Brother! Please, help me!" Messick reached out for Zhang Yang in desperation.

"Huh? Isn't this the other guy that aided Messick in humiliating Duchess Winst? Kill him as well!" one of the knights shouted, and the 12 of them began to load their arrows into their longbows. Then, they began to fire the arrows at Zhang Yang and Messick!

What the f\*ck!

This bastard! So, he ran off after he said he would, and now he brought so many knights back to Zhang Yang! What a troublesome guy!

Zhang Yang let out a battle cry and quickly jumped back onto the Serpent. Together, they charged at the enemies! Now that his life was at stake, Messick no longer performed any more unnecessary flourishes! He charged at one of the knights and began to launch his assaults.

Messick had about 1,100,000 health points, and he also had the skill - {Light of Life} to regenerate his own health points! He also had the skill - {Foul Chatters} that was so piercing to the ears, that even Zhang Yang was close to being provoked, himself! He was basically a self-healing meat shield! On the other hand, there were only 12 elite tier monsters. Even if Zhang Yang did not dare lure all of them in at once, he could let Messick tank all of them as he focuses on one monster at a time. It would actually be more effective that way!

"Hey there! You bunch of stupid ass\*les! I haven't even impregnated your wives yet! Why are you going so far!" Messick would try to provoke the monsters with his tongue as he fought. Every time he opened his mouth, a series of foul, provocative words flew right out from his mouth and enraged the knights. The knights were so enraged that they could not stop hitting him with everything they got! So, this skill - {Foul Chatters} was ridiculously effective! Zhang Yang had finally seen it with his own eyes!

So Zhang Yang and Felice only focused on one monster at a time. With support from the Serpent, the three of them managed to bring down the health bar of their target down to 50%.

"Brother, my friend! I need help! Argh!" Messick was being turned into a pincushion, as more arrows struck him, his eyes rolling upwards from the pain.

Well, he did have {Light of Life} to regenerate his own health points, and the cooldown period of this skill was extremely short! Although he looked like he was in bad shape, but his health bar was still at around 50%! He was still far from death!

Zhang Yang did not 'entertain' him, he simply continued to focus his assaults on his opponent until they were&nbsp;dead, before he activated his {Provoke} and brought the second monster over to him. After slaying the second, Zhang Yang moved on to the third knight, and then the forth... even though Messick looked all battered and bloody, but his health bar was ridiculously long, and he had the ability to regenerate his own health points. Messick was definitely an unkillable cockroach!

However, Messick only had 10,000 MP. He could only activate his {Light of Life} 20 times, which was about twice the amount of his full health points! In other words, he is like having two HP bars which he can use as a back up when he is low on health! When Zhang Yang took down the seventh knight, Messick had finally ran out of MP, and was truly getting into trouble.

For the remainder of the battle, Zhang Yang hooked in the rest of the monsters and tanked them himself. Felice and the Serpent

threw in a deadly combination of flame and venom. After some slashing and bashing, burning and bombarding, Zhang Yang had finally taken out all 12 knights!

"Pui! That b\*tch really is malicious! She actually sent a heavy platoon to guard the only passage out of Winst Castle! My friend, what say you, escort me out of this hell! I need you, my friend!" Messick was plucking the arrows from his body as he pleaded for Zhang Yang to get him out of the area safely.

Zhang Yang folded his arms across his chest and said, "What's in it for me? Nothing, right? Not interested!"

Messick was beginning to feel anxious, as he began to show his pitiful face at Zhang Yang. But Zhang Yang did not fall for it. Then, he finally broke and said, "Alright! Fine! If you can escort me out of this place safely, I will tell you a secret! It would definitely make you rich! You'll earn a fortune, that will last you for the rest of your life!"

Zhang Yang only looked at Messick without saying a word.

"... very well then, it is the treasure house of the Winst family! I know where it is, and I also happen to know how to activate it!"

# Chapter 475: Returning to the Winst Castle

---

That got Zhang Yang's attention, so it might really be true that there was a treasure chamber deep within the Territory!

He smiled and said, "Alright, seeing that you are so sincere already, I shall help you one more time!"

"You! You only agreed to help because you heard about the treasure chamber!" Messick was annoyed, "You are even more shameless than I am!"

"Don't you dare say something like that to my big brother!" Felice was annoyed by Messick's words, so she raised up her lance and jabbed the sharp tip straight into Messick butt. Previously, Zhang Yang wasn't aware of any of the arrows had really gone straight into Messick's anus, but this time, he was very positive that the lance totally penetrated Messick's 'vital' spot. Messick was in much pain that he kept howling towards the sky as he jumped about 3 meters high, with his hands pressed against his face! His face had turned really pale!

After recovering from the pain, Messick began to whine and complain, "I'd say you, my friend! You must educate this foul little lady friend of yours over here! I might just die thanks to her, before the underlings of that Duchess b\*tch can get to me!"

Zhang Yang faked a cough and told Felice with a serious face, "Felice, you really should not do that. This fellow is just too d\*mned dirty. You will just taint your hands by poking him with

your lance! So just use your {Fire Missile} next time, if he tries anything weird again!"

"Roger, big brother!" Felice readily agreed to Zhang Yang's words.

Messick rolled his eyes and frowned, "I'd say you, my friend. You must not mislead little girls! You see, I have more time than you do, so why don't you let me aid you in educating her for a few days..."

Boom!

Felice had immediately turned into a magnificent Dragonhawk and had coughed out a blast of {Fire Missile} straight at Messick's face. Messick let out a miserable cry once more, his face blackened with soot once again. So, he lay down on the ground, pretending to be dead.

Zhang Yang kicked him back up the Serpent and jumped on as well, "Felice, let's get moving!"

So, the Serpent and Felice fluttered their wings and shot up into the sky in the same instant. The scene was beautiful, and spectacular! They flew towards the direction of the mountains.

Just like the Morning Town, the Winst Castle was right in the middle of the only route to travel in and out of the Ten Barren Seas from the Japan-Korea server. In other words, the only way of



getting into the Ten Barren Seas would be through the Winst Castle! However, possessing a [Flying Mount] changes that. Zhang Yang and Messick could ride the Serpent and simply fly over the mountains and other obstacles on the ground. After about 10 minutes of soaring through the sky, they had crossed over mountains and arrived at a vast and snowy ice land.

The Serpent landed and lowered its head to let Zhang Yang and Messick dismount it.

Messick let out a yawn and stretched his back right after he got down from the 'transportation'. Then, his eyes began to 'lurk' around, trying to seek for a chance to escape.

Zhang Yang gave a signal to Felice, and that little lady understood. She immediately opened up her beak and spat another {Fire Missile} straight towards Messick.

"Argh ---" Messick had lost count of how many times he had shouted in misery as he was once again standing in the middle of a sea of flames, like a rat, without a place to run.

Zhang Yang nodded at Felice again before she stopped her attack, and transformed back to her Humanoid Form. He laughed and said, "Phony tailor, it's your turn to hold up to your end of the deal!"

Messick was at the end of his rope, so he resignedly said, "My friend, your little lady over here is too 'hot' for me! But, I like it!"

Zhang Yang frowned immediately because this fellow here was definitely on the same 'level' as Fatty Han and Endless Starlight! If Fatty Han takes him as a Battle Companion, then... well, things would surely get 'merrier'!

Theoretically, players could pick any creature with limited A.I. as their Battle Companions. That would include monsters, NPCs, and even bosses! But, signing the Contract Bond to acquire a Battle Companion would be extremely difficult. The player must get the 'consent' of the monster or the NPC first, and they had to agree on their own accord!

As Felice was basically the first Battle Companion in the entire game, so her situation was slightly different. Normally, players would need to purchase a [Book of Contract Bond] in order to 'persuade' a monster or an NPC to become the player's Battle Companion. Only after the player and the monster or NPC have both signed the Contract Bond, then only the process would be complete. That way, players would be able to store the Battle Companion into their personal Battle Companion Slot. After that, players would be able to summon these Battle Companions at will.

When he saw Felice getting furious, he quickly stopped her and said, "If you don't want to turn into a roasted pig, you start talking, we had a deal! So, stop whining and get to the point! Now!"

"Alright! I'm not going back to Winst Castle to see that crazy b\*tch anymore anyway!" Messick got to his feet and activated his {Light of Life}, and the burn marks on him vanished in an instant. He moved his arms and legs around a little bit and said, "You better empty out her Treasure Chamber, so that she learns well! Get her

angry and run! Haha!"

Finally, Messick has told Zhang Yang about the hidden location of this Treasure Chamber and the method of operating the mechanism of it to enter the chamber. Right after he was done talking, Messick hurriedly left, as he noticed Felice staring at him murderously, yet again! As she had transformed into her Dragonhawk Form again while he was still talking, that wretched Messick could not help but feel a chill down his spine! Fearful of being burned yet again, he had taken his leave in a hurry

Zhang Yang turned his sight towards the direction of Winst Castle, and said, "Felice, let's go back to Winst Castle now!"

The Serpent took flight again, and under the cover of the lightless night, he managed to get back into the castle without being noticed!

Following the instructions that Messick had given him, Zhang Yang arrived at the tallest building of the entire castle. It was the same, conspicuous tower with the flag, that had gotten Zhang Yang's attention when he first got here. Four statues of ancient gods were placed right outside the palace. Each of the statues held up a different kung-fu pose.

Zhang Yang began to lead Felice and the Serpent into the palace as the Serpent was struggling to fit its long and large body into space.

"Who goes there!" two heavily armored guards with lances in

their hands suddenly leaped out from behind the pillars! Their lances flew at Zhang Yang, before he could even retort.

[Palace Guard] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 17,800

Defense: 100

Melee Attack: 5,103 - 6,103

These Normal Tiered monsters had no skills of their own whatsoever. They only knew regular attacks!

Felice answered them with her own lance. Slash! Slash! One slash at a time, she took out the two Palace Guards with ease! Having such a powerful Battle Companion, Zhang Yang became much more relaxed. Against normal monsters, he no longer needed to raise a finger. Felice would easily wipe the floor with them! Even if the monsters survived the first hit from Felice's lance, the Serpent would finish them off! So, it did not matter, even if Felice does not manage to take them out with a single blow.

Proceeding forward like an unstoppable train, Zhang Yang ventured deeper into the palace. He stopped at a towering statue.

According to Messick, there would be a switch mechanism right on the back of this statue. All Zhang Yang needed to do to get the entrance open would be to turn the switch button 3 times to the left, 4 times to the right, and 2 times to the left. After Zhang Yang did what he was told, he heard a sound - 'Click cluck!'. A door appeared right behind the statue, and the path that leads down to the underground seemed eerie and spooky.

Zhang Yang went down the stairs swiftly, Felice following closely behind. Meanwhile, the Serpent attempted to squeeze itself into the entrance, however, got its body stuck in between two walls beside it! The big fellow was unwilling to admit the fact that it was no longer a cute, little thing, but a giant beast. It blinked its two little eyes pitifully at Zhang Yang, trying to wriggle its butt&nbsp;in, as if it wanted to prove that it still had a slim, small body! Well, it looked more cute than pitiful.

As Zhang Yang could feel the dust falling from the ceiling, he could not help but to get worried that if Serpent continues forcing its way through, the entire underground tunnel might just collapse! So, he quickly unsummoned Serpent and continued his way deeper into the Treasure Chamber that he had been promised. As hoped, he did arrive at the Treasure Chamber! That Messick may not be all bad, after all!

The chamber was vast, and torches hung on the walls, illuminating the entire chamber. There was a large number of Treasure Chests lying around the sides of the room where Zhang Yang stood. Some of the Treasure Chests were open, and there were countless jewelry, gold, silver and other kinds of treasure within those chests! Illuminated by the torches, the treasures looked like a scene from a fairytale!

"Who dares to trespass into the Treasure Chamber of the Winst Family! Whoever you are, you must die!" Suddenly, a guard with a full set of Heavy Armor came out of nowhere and swung his sword towards Zhang Yang!

[Treasure Chamber Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 1,150,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 8,123 - 9,123

Skill:

[Heart Pierce]: Inflicts a massive blow to the target. The attack depends on the duration of the charge. Inflicts a basic damage of 100% melee attack. Damage will increase by 100% for every 1 more second of chanting period. Can stack up to 500% of damage. Chanting time: 1 - 4 seconds. Range: 30 meters.

Note: Loyal Squire of the Winst Family, guards the safety of the Treasure Chamber. Anyone who dares trespass the Treasure Chamber becomes their target for elimination!

This {Heart Pierce} was something to watch out for!

It was still manageable for Zhang Yang as there was only one monster coming at him with {Heart Pierce}. But, what if a few more monsters charged at Zhang Yang with {Heart Pierce}? What that was more impressive the fact that this monster was supposed to be a melee-type monster, but its {Heart Pierce} was actually a ranged attack! What the hell is this!

As he thought about this, Zhang Yang had already charged up to the monster, with his [Sword of Purging Devourer] drawn! He swung his sword across the air and the sharp edge of his sword cut through the armor of the monster. The sound of metal clashing into each other clanged across the area repeatedly, as Zhang Yang continuously slashing the monster without mercy.

Felice had also transformed into Dragonhawk Form and had begun to launch her skill - {Fire Missile}!

The existence of this elite monster was definitely a nightmare to every other single player in the current stage of the game! Its normal attack was already 8,600 damage! Players would normally only have about 30,000 HP, even if the players are equipped with a full set of Yellow-Gold equipment. They would most probably die after four to five hits from the monster!

Zhang Yang was no such player, however. The normal attack of the Palace Guard could only deal about 3,000 damage, due to his ridiculously high defense. Even though the Palace guard had a terrifyingly long health bar of 1,150,000 health points, Zhang Yang and Felice working together was another different matter! It would

only take about 1 minute for them to slay this monster.

Not long after the battle started, a progress bar suddenly appeared right above the head of the Palace Guard. Zhang Yang saw it with his sharp eyes and he reacted almost immediately. He smacked the Palace Guard with his shield and threw him off his balance. The progress bar of the monster was interrupted before it could even be launched!

Shoof!

However, the monster was still able to land one attack on Zhang Yang, inflicting Zhang Yang with a damage of 2,842 points!

Well, it was a Skill attack, and as long as the monster can lock onto a target, then the monster would definitely be able to hit its target! However, because the progress bar of the monster was interrupted by Zhang Yang's 'Supporting Attack', the monster could only inflict Zhang Yang with 100% Basic Damage, and Zhang Yang did not feel a thing at all!

The battle raged on, with the sound of the metal clashing into each other. Zhang Yang had fully exerted the potential of 'Supporting Attack'. He oppressed the monster with his crazy and powerful moves, to the point that the monster could not even regain its balance! Out of 5 of his poorly swung normal attacks, it would be considered to be very lucky if one of its attacks could even land on Zhang Yang!

In just a brief moment, the Palace Guard clanked to the ground,



dead, dropping a pair of Gray-Silver Tier gloves. Unfortunately, Gray-Silver Tier equipment were no longer worth a penny at all! Maybe the gloves, shields, and necklaces could still be sold for hundreds of gold, but the gloves and chest plates of this tier would only sell for about 50 gold, at best.

Zhang Yang continued to push deeper into the Treasure Chamber. Naturally, Palace Guards would cut in and interrupt his process, coming in one after another. However, every single one of them fell quickly under his sword, providing a substantial amount of experience points.

As Serpent was too big to move freely in the Treasure Chamber, Zhang Yang summoned Whitey instead to move faster. Why didn't he summon Mythical Turtle? The reason was simple, it was because the Turtle was simply too slow! Unless Turtle had a pair of rockets strapped behind its back, it would not be able to keep up with the rapid pace that Zhang Yang had set.

After pushing forward for a while, Zhang Yang found himself in a large hall. And finally, there was a more powerful monster in front of him!

[Guardian Tenbardu] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 5,750,000

Defense: 2,000

Melee Attack: 9,820 - 10,820

Skills:

[Ground Crusher]: Cracks the ground open with extreme power, causing the floor to break, creating rocks that will be launched at its target, inflicting 200% Physical Damage to the target.

[Meteor Summon]: Summons a wave of meteors that will rain down upon an area of 10 X 10 meter square, inflicting 20,000 Physical Damage every second! Lasts for 5 seconds.

[Bleed]: Target will bleed continuously while being struck in the head, neck, chest and other vital parts of the body, inflicting an amount of health loss, equivalent to 1% of the target's maximum HP.

Note: The left-hand man of the Duchess Winst.

This boss was completely bare-chested, only wearing a pair of trousers. He was similarly bare-footed, and he wore a pair of punching gloves on his hands. Vague, cold, light beamed from in between his fingers.

Zhang Yang had no worry of facing a Yellow-Gold boss, however, there were 5 fully-armored Elite Tier Palace Guards, standing right behind Guardian Tenbardu! Those were the deadly Palace Guards

who were capable of using {Heart Pierce}! If they ever activated their skills at the same time...

Zhang Yang took a deep breath, preparing for a tough battle ahead, awakening his full potential!

"Felice, just follow my lead! Whichever monster I take, support me with everything you've got!"

"Roger, big brother!" Felice nodded.

With a throw of {Spear of Obliteration}, the battle finally began!

"Where did the rat come from? How dare you trespass the Treasure Chamber! Allow me, Tenbardu, to be the one who ends your life!" Tenbardu was not particularly tall, but his muscular body packed a lot of power. Those bulging, explosive muscles would twitch and jerk about whenever he moved.

His footwork was extremely swift, as he charged up to Zhang Yang at supersonic speed! He raised his fist and threw a punch at Zhang Yang's head!

The Physical Attacks of the boss had a {Bleed} effect. Zhang Yang did not dare to let the boss hit his 'vital' parts! So, he quickly raised up his shield when he saw the fist flying at him! It would really be troublesome, if Zhang Yang ever lets the boss touch any of his 'vital' parts!

Kaboom!

The fist of Tenbardu landed on the shield solidly, pushing Zhang Yang two to three steps back! Obviously, the boss slightly overpowered him!

Zhang Yang already has a full set of Violet-Platinum equipment over his body, so he would have enough strength to literally crush a Yellow-Gold boss! But, his [Titan Wall] was just a Level 80 Violet-Platinum shield. It would not be a problem for him to crush a Level 80 Yellow-Gold boss! But, Tenbardu is a Level 115 Yellow-Gold boss! Those numbers made a lot of difference!

Furthermore, Zhang Yang was geared up for defensive battles. Naturally, he would be lacking in the offense department.

"Kill!" The five elite Place Guards also joined the battle. They started to surround Zhang Yang in a circular formation.

Zhang Yang picked one of the Palace Guards, and began to launch his assaults aggressively, with his [Sword of Purging Devourer].

Felice was unlike a [Mount] which would require Zhang Yang's command to act, this little lady had a high amount of autonomy, which would allow her to adapt and act in various situations. She immediately joined the battle and supported Zhang Yang with her {Fire Missile}.

The moment that Zhang Yang had been waiting for finally

arrived! The Rage Points that Zhang Yang accumulated was enough for him to strike! With a stomp on the ground, Zhang Yang activated his {Thunder Strike} and caught all 5 Palace Guards with slow down effects. He quickly ran out of their formation to minimize his injuries. But, the boss was not affected by his {Thunder Strike}. He continued punching at the face and neck of Zhang Yang, trying to inflict Zhang Yang with his {Bleed} effect!

Zhang Yang was not able to evade the swift punches of the boss, but he could at least put up his best efforts at preventing the boss from punching the 'vital' points of his body! His main aim was to avoid being afflicted with the {Bleed} effect!

The attack power of Felice was extremely powerful! With just a few strikes, she had already managed to hook over the aggro of the Palace Guard. However, Zhang Yang activated his {Provoke} to hook the monster back to him as a temporary measure.

After a short while, the five elite monsters suddenly stopped their assaults. Progress bars appeared on their heads, all of a sudden!

They were about to activate their {Heart Pierce} together!

## Chapter 476: Monk of Flame Inheritance

---

Zhang Yang let out an intimidating roar. Instead of retreating, he pushed forwards against the elite monsters, slamming his shield into one of the monster's faces! At the same instant, he raised his right leg and gave a powerful kick right at the other elite monster beside the monster he was currently engaged with.

Bam! Book!

Although Zhang Yang was at a disadvantage in terms of, Strength when standing up against a Level 115 Yellow-Gold boss, but he could still take on the Elite Tier monsters without much trouble. The two Elite Tier monsters staggered back as he pressed on, unable to retaliate. Their chanting for {Heart Pierce} were repeatedly interrupted!

‘-2,814!’

‘-2,711!’

Zhang Yang was inflicted with two basic damage values of the monsters' normal attacks, rather than two {Heart Pierce}, as he had managed to interrupt the monsters from casting the skills.

He then turned around and launched another sidekick at the third Elite Tier Palace Guard without any moment of pause. With a similarly powerful force from his kick, the guard was forced to stop chanting for his skill. Zhang Yang kicked the body of the guard until he was slouched over!

‘-2,911!’

Another normal attack landed on Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang quickly reacted, and activated his {Blast Wave}!

Pak! Pak!

The remaining two Palace Guards were stunned at the same time, and their chanting for {Heart Pierce} was interrupted as well! The main reason why Zhang Yang did not just activate his {Blast Wave} straight, was because the effective area of {Blast Wave} not being wide enough to cover all 5 monsters. Plus, the 5 monsters were not standing in the same spot. As they were surrounding Zhang Yang from 5 different directions, Zhang Yang could only hit 2 or 3 of them with his {Blast Wave}. If they were standing in front of Zhang Yang on the same spot, Zhang Yang would not have to go through so much trouble!

The 5 Palace Guards were busy trying to chant their skills, but instead, each of them only managed to inflict Zhang Yang with their basic damage. What a sad case for them!

The boss came right up and launched an angry attack at Zhang Yang, and that punch landed right on Zhang Yang’s neck! As the sharp edge of the glove slid over his neck, he succeeded in giving Zhang Yang’s throat a surgically narrow cut! Instantly, fresh blood started oozing out from the cut!

‘-4,183!’

‘-972!’

The first damage value came from the punch of the boss, it was a direct hit! And the second damage value came from the {Bleed} effect, which reduced 1% of Zhang Yang's health bar!

The small amount of damage wasn't a problem at all. But the main problem was that Zhang Yang's throat had been sliced right open! Although it wouldn't inflict him with any additional damage, that cut on his throat would not allow him to consume [Potions], because the Potion would simply drip out from the cut on the throat! It had become a serious problem for him! Of course, the cut, or any other wounds would disappear as time passed by, but still, it would require about 30 seconds for that to happen!

"I am Tenbardu ! I am the undefeated!" The boss roared into the sky and launched another powerful punch towards the ground.

Instantly, a large crack appeared on the ground, and it rapidly streaked towards Zhang Yang, at blinding speed! Zhang Yang was not able to react to that. He lost his footing and he started falling into the crack! As the ground rushed up to meet him, Felice dove down and wrapped her claws around Zhang Yang's shoulders, lifting Zhang Yang up in the nick of time. Then, she carried him up for about 3 to 4 meters high into the air.

Crack! Crack! Boom!

The crack continued to expand by up to 30 meters far, opening up



by about 3 meters! Following the crack's expansion, a row of sharp stones sprouted out from the ground, forming an uneven, crude wall, made of stone!

It was the boss's skill - {Ground Crusher}!

"Good job! Felice! You saved my life! Haha!" Zhang Yang was laughing out of pure joy as he extended his gratitude towards Felice.

Felice blushed as she smiled, then she continued to rain hellfire upon one of the Elite monsters with her {Fire Missile}!

"B\*stard!" Tenbardu let out a roar of anger as he continued to pursue Zhang Yang.

One minute later, the first Elite monster finally fell to Zhang Yang, Felice and Whitey's combined assaults!

"You bastards! How dare you kill my men!" Tenbardu was enraged at the death of his man. He reached out for the sky and launched a powerful attack. The ceiling of the Treasure Chamber suddenly became a realm filled with stars! Shoof shoof shoof! Countless meteors were raining down to the ground in an area of 10 X 10 meter square feet, right in front of the boss! It was like a hail of mortars during a world war!

{Meteor Summon}!

‘-11,916!’

Zhang Yang was inflicted with a high damage value as he was caught in the middle of the ‘meteor shower’. He quickly made a tactical retreat by backpedaling rapidly, until he was out of the effective range of the {Meteor Summon}!

"Haha! Yes, you should run, like the stray dog that you are when you are facing me, the Guardian Tenbardu!" the boss laughed out loud and continued to pursue Zhang Yang. He launched his assaults aggressively, and every single hit from the boss went for the ‘vital’ spots around Zhang Yang’s head! The eyes, the neck, even the ears!

Suddenly, "{Ground Crusher}"!

Tenbardu punched the ground again, as another crack expanded across the ground and another roll of stone hideous stone spikes sprouted out from the crack! The rumbling sound was ‘spectacular’ to hear.

Actually, this boss was not really that difficult to take on. But, the 5 Elite monsters that came with him had made him significantly more difficult. If Zhang Yang only had to tank against the boss’s aggressive assaults, with all his skills unleashed, he could have easily taken the boss down!

If Zhang Yang was still the old Zhang Yang, then he would have failed to survive against a boss with the support of 5 super strong Elite monsters. Now that he had Felice supporting him, his damage

output had increased by more than double, or maybe triple! As time passed by, the remaining 4 Elite monsters soon fell, one after another!

Since all of the ‘supporters’ were now dead, the boss had now become child’s play. He could actually torture the boss at leisure!

Activating super skills one after another, Zhang Yang unleashed hell upon the boss. In less than 5 minutes, Tenbardu let out a miserable cry and collapsed onto the ground. After the long animation of the boss’ dramatic death finally ended, the loot began to drop out of the dead body.

Naturally, Zhang Yang would not even look at the normal Yellow-Gold equipment and the Gray-Silver equipment. He shoved all of them into his inventory immediately. But, after picking up 4 pieces of equipment, he discovered a piece of pale-silver fragment lying on the ground. It was like a small corner of a broken turtle shell. Both sides of the fragment had mysterious runes.

[Monk of Flame Inheritance Fragment (3)] (Inheritance Class: Z)

Description: Collect all 4 pieces of the ‘Monk of Flame Inheritance’ fragments, combine them to acquire the Inheritance Keepsake of the Monk of Flame. By doing so, you shall activate the Quest Line for ‘Monk of Flame Inheritance’. Upon the completion of the final quest of the Quest Line, you shall acquire the Monk of Flame Inheritance. Other than the skills of your own Class, you shall obtain parts of the skills the Monk of Flame has to offer. All 4 pieces of the [Monk of Flame Inheritance Fragments] will resonate when they are close to each other. If you are killed by other players

who also happen to have the [Monk of Flame Inheritance Fragment], the [Monk of Flame Inheritance Fragment] on you shall drop, and other players would be able to claim it. All [Monk of Flame Inheritance Fragments] cannot be stored anywhere, only taken along by the players.

It was an Inheritance Fragment!

Still, Zhang Yang could only stare at it in dismay. After entering the Chaos Realm, well, the Inheritance Patch had been released upon the opening of the Chaos Realm. So it was perfectly normal for players to get [Inheritance Fragments] from bosses! This Class Z [Monk of Flame Inheritance] belonged to the lowest category of all! No wonder Zhang Yang got it from killing a mere Yellow-Gold boss!

The best Inheritance ranking would naturally be the Class S, followed by the Class A, then the Class B, Class C, Class D, Class E, Class F, Class G, Class H, and last but not least, the Class Z, making up a total of 10 Classes. So, Class Z was the worst of all Inheritances! Among the 10 Classes, Class C Inheritance was a ‘dividing crest’ that showcased the power difference between the different Classes. Those Inheritances that were above Class C would allow players to activate "Transformation Skills", an awesome skill to have! Unfortunately, those Inheritances that are lower than Class C does not have such perks. Players would only get to acquire new skills according to the Inheritances that they acquire.

Let’s have a look at the [Vampire Inheritance] fragment which was currently in Zhang Yang’s possession. Zhang Yang could

activate the Vampiric Transformation if he wanted to, and it would last for 1 hour. This transformation would offer the player incredible regeneration, and also the ability to feed on blood to recover health points! Basically, this Inheritance Fragment would turn a player indestructible! Of course, the cooldown period of this Transformation Skill would be as long as 72 hours! So, the possessor could only use it to show off, once in a while!

So after the Inheritance Patch was released, the strength and capability of a guild would be decided based on the number of players in their guild who were capable of ‘transforming’! The more players with Inheritances of Classes C and above, the stronger the guild would be, and also, the better they would be able to perform in both assault and defense battles!

According to rumors from his previous life, Imperial Sky, at its peak, had over a hundred players with at least a Class C Inheritance. Many of them ‘transformed’ as they charged towards the castle during ‘Territory Conquests’. If other guilds did not have the same number of players with at least Class C Inheritances, then there would be no way for a guild to hold out against the assault of Imperial Sky! It would be like a hot knife cutting through butter!

Because of that, Imperial Sky was able to secure the ‘throne’ to the best guild in the entire China server, in Zhang Yang’s previous life! The Crimson Rage from his previous life was also considered as a super strong guild, however, the number of players with at least Class C Inheritances were not more than 40! The guild, Clear Water, that Zhang Yang had belonged to in his previous life only had 7 players with at least Class C Inheritances!

After putting the Inheritance Fragment into his inventory, Zhang Yang would not waste his time collecting the remaining fragments of this particular Inheritance. After all, it was the lowest Class there is. So, he decided to take it back to White Jade City to try to sell it. There should be some people who would willing to purchase it to try its effect.

The only inconvenience that these Inheritance Fragments would bring upon players would be, that players had to equip it, in order for the effect to be available. So, he cannot sell it in his Little Merchandise or throw it into the Auction House.

After clearing the stage, Zhang Yang continued to proceed deeper into the Treasure Chamber and slew a couple more monsters. Then, he arrived at a secret chamber which was much smaller. There, he encountered the second boss. It also happened to be the end of the entire Treasure Chamber. This boss was a middle-aged man, a Spellcaster clad in a white robe. He wore a magic hat on top of his head. He was very skinny, and he held an emerald staff in his right hand.

[Chiller Shenro] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 5,750,000

Defense: 2,000

Magic Attack: 5,752 - 6,552

Skills:

[Frost Arrow]: Launches a Frost Attack at the target, inflicts 200% Magic Attack of Frost Damage to the target and reduces 50% movement speed of the target. Lasts for 5 seconds. Casting time: 2 seconds.

[Frost Coffin]: Randomly forms a Frost Coffin around a target, inflicts 50,000 Frost Damage to all targets within attack range and freezes the target. Targets that are frozen would not be able to do anything for 10 seconds. The {Frost Coffin} could be activated instantly. But the duration for the {Frost Coffin} to completely solidify would be 3 seconds.

Note: The right-hand man of Duchess Winst.

Fortunately, this boss did not have any underlings around him.

So, Zhang Yang had nothing to be afraid of. All he needed to do was to watch out for the {Frost Coffin}. This 'right-hand' posed minimal threat to Zhang Yang!

"Felice, let's do this!"

Zhang Yang charged towards the boss with large steps. Along the way, he charged up and threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss.

A damage value was inflicted upon the boss. Shenro let out a nasal shout and raised up the staff in his hand at Zhang Yang as he began to cast the spell for {Frost Arrow}.

At the same time, Felice had completed casting her skill, and the {Fire Missile} was ready to take off! A fist-sized {Fire Missile} was blasted straight at the boss. Her attack was much higher than Zhang Yang's. Her {Fire Missile} did a damage of '-21,231', and the aggro of the boss was switched over to her, making her the primary target of the boss.

But, the boss was already begun with his chanting. It was not possible to interrupt his spell at that point. He had activated his {Frost Arrow}, before he switched his target to Felice! An arrow formed from the frost out of mid-air and was fired straight at Zhang Yang, damaging him by 7,612 points.

Although that amount of damage was not really that high in the first place, the spells of the boss could not be interrupted, nor blocked with skills. So the DPS of the boss had reached up to 4,000 damage already! Zhang Yang only had about 97,000 Maximum HP! With his current amount of HP, he could only tank against the attacks of the boss for about 25 seconds, tops!

Furthermore, the total DPS that Zhang Yang, Felice and Whitey could channel out at the moment, was only about 20,000 damage. So, it would still need about 5 minutes to empty out a total of 5,750,000 HP!



Obviously, it was not possible to tank against the boss. So the most logical course of action would be to use the terrain of the ground when it comes to soloing a Magic type boss, or a Ranged boss, for that matter.

Zhang Yang ran towards the boss as rapidly as he could. When he was 10 meters from the boss, Zhang Yang activated his {Charge} and crashed into the boss. With a flick of his [Sword of Purging Devourer], he began to launch his assaults on the boss, as aggressively as possible. Trying hard to maximize the efficiency of his attacks, he also used his shield to bash the boss in the face.

Even though Shenro was a Magic type boss, his Strength was still similar to a Melee type boss. Zhang Yang kept bashing his shield into the face of the boss, and although there were marks of his shield stamped on the boss's face, the boss was not staggered at all. The chanting of the boss was not interrupted at all!

Well, logically speaking, because Magic type bosses usually needed to chant in order to launch their skills, if players could easily tie them down with supporting attacks like that, Magic bosses would turn into 'Santa Clauses', giving players 'free and easy' equipment! It just simply would not do! Players would take advantage of that and slaughter the Magic bosses repeatedly for powerful equipment, which would eventually break the game!

# Chapter 477: The Return of the Whiner

---

Zhang Yang went all out, trying his very best to capture the aggro of the boss.

However, his DPS never even surpassed 4,000 damage. To get the boss' attention from Felice, one would have to reach a DPS of 10,000 damage, at least! That wouldn't be achieved so easily! After pushing himself, having gulped down a bottle of [Power Potion] and even activating his {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, Zhang Yang finally succeeded at becoming the primary target of the boss.

30 seconds after the battle raged on, Zhang Yang found himself close to death, having been tossed around relentlessly by the boss, without any moment of pause. He had no choice but to activate his {Berserker's Heal}, and healed himself back up to full health again.

Right after that, Shenro raised his staff and chanted a few spells in quick succession. Instantly, the air surrounding of Zhang Yang began to freeze, and a layer of frost began to form on the ground, followed by a second piece of frost rising up vertically to the left of Zhang Yang, and the third wall of frost forming on the right side! The frost walls slowly merged together as they tried to 'imprison' Zhang Yang.

Well, obviously, that was the {Frost Coffin}! The boss was up to no good!

Zhang Yang quickly turned around and ran like hell. Whitey turned tail and lumbered after him. Felice conveniently started

flying away. Wings are always convenient. However, the effective area of the {Frost Coffin} was vast. It covered a 20 meters radius area across the ground! Even though there is a 3-second gap for the {Frost Coffin} to completely form, if a player did not react at the very moment when the boss begins to chant the spell for the skill, then the player will definitely be unable to get out of the effective area of the skill!

3 seconds later, the {Frost Coffin} had completely formed. Instantly, the entire effective area was covered in frost! Zhang Yang could see and feel the chill through every single cell of his body! It was extremely cold!

Without prolonging the battle, Zhang Yang charged back into the battle with his {Charge}. He raised his sword once more and began to inflict the boss with as much damage as possible.

Shenro let out a thunderous roar and he struck Zhang Yang with another shot of his {Frost Arrow}.

Zhang Yang was going all out. After he activated his {Shield Wall}, {Last Vigor}, and {Blood of Life}, he immediately activated his {Rearm} to reset the cooldown of all his skills! Right after that, he continued to bombard the boss with all his Skills again. Once they were in cool down again, he retreated to the narrow parts of the chamber. He went up to the path right outside the entrance, and used the corner of the entrance to remain out of the boss' line of sight. By moving just that little bit at the right timing as the boss tried to angle his way about, he managed to prevent the boss from hitting him.

Consuming [Bandages]!

‘+4,000!’

‘+4,000!’

...

Zhang Yang began to heal up repeatedly, as the green numerical values started appearing right on top of his head one after another.

Shenro was halfway chanting his {Frost Arrow} when he was forced to stop his chanting, and had to shuffle his feet in order to get to Zhang Yang who was now healing himself uninterruptedly.

Zhang Yang could only use his ‘First Aid Kit’ four times before the boss stood right before him! As Zhang Yang was using his fifth [Bandage], the boss was already right in front of him! Actually, Shenro could have interrupted Zhang Yang from using [Bandage] to heal for the fifth time, by throwing a normal punch at Zhang Yang. However, the first choice of attack for all Magic type bosses in this game would always be to chant a Magic type skill. So, when the boss was done chanting his skill for another {Frost Arrow}, Zhang Yang had already healed himself up by another 8,000 HP!

Before the boss could let his arrow fly, Zhang Yang quickly stepped back into the secret chamber. The boss had to follow him, of course. That marked the beginning of the wild goose chase.

"You coward! Face me, and fight like a man!" Shenro roared and hobbled after Zhang Yang, as they ran in and out of the entrance.

In, and out, and in, and out...

Like an idiot, the boss followed Zhang Yang about, unable to strike him.

Although Zhang Yang was moving around a lot more now, his DPS never got any lower! He kept using his two powerful skills - {Horizontal Sweep} and {Destructive Smash} the moment the cooldown periods were over. He was so efficient, that not a single second was wasted! His constant movement was more to wait for their cooldown periods than to evade the boss!

Whenever the {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} were ready, Zhang Yang would stop running and step right up to fight the boss head-on. Whenever his health started getting too low, he would start running in and out of the entrance again. The boss was in a total mess as he as being herded around a like a cow!

80%, 60%, 40%... the 5,750,000 HP of the boss was dropping rapidly!

If Zhang Yang had an Inheritance above the Class of C at the moment, he would only have to activate his 'Transformation,' and then he would be good to tank up against a Violet-Platinum boss alone, without any problems at all! Without even talking about the power of a Class S Inheritance, even the Class B King Kong Inheritance that Zhang Yang once possessed in his previous life,

could turn him into a King Kong, and gain an instant boost, giving him 300% Defense, 70% Magic Immunity, 20 times his Maximum Health Points, and 3 times his attack power! These transformation power ups were enough for Zhang Yang to completely overpower a Violet-Platinum boss!

Inheritances were over-the-top!

Unfortunately, searching for an Inheritance with a 'Transformation Effect' was difficult enough. It would only be more difficult getting a Class S Inheritance. As previously mentioned, in the near future, the power of guilds would directly correlate to the number of members who can transform. Even a low leveled guild, completely made up of 50 players who are capable of transforming would flood the earth with the blood of their enemies! Inheritances with 'Transformation Effects' would determine the strength of guilds in the future!

So Zhang Yang is very determined to acquire the God of War Inheritance! All he can hope is that the Inheritance will 'wait' for him before anyone else claims it!

Zhang Yang had been silently reminding himself to search for the [God of War Inheritance Fragments] right after he secures Winst Castle as his second Territory.

Now that Zhang Yang has opened up the Chaos Realm, every server would enter the Chaos Realm from their own respective entrances. Judging from the current situation, these 'special' Territory points would be as easy to acquire as Morning Town. As for other Territories that were spread across the Chaos Realm,

they would require tougher quests. Well, the game developers had been considerate when they were designing this part of the game. They did not intend to have players waste half a day every time they had to travel around the Chaos Realm. With eight Territories acting as starting points for the players from all eight different servers across the world, the players had to travel a great distance to meet up at the center point!

So, one month would be enough for Zhang Yang to conquer all eight Territories from all eight servers! However, if he really did that, he would be declaring war on the other seven servers. All other seven servers would definitely join forces to take down the China server!

Never, ever unite your enemies to a single cause! So, Zhang Yang would only be taking the Gateway Territory belonging to the Japan-Korea server.

Five minutes later, Shenron finally admitted his defeat as he let out a miserable scream and fell beneath the [Sword of Purging Devourer]. As a parting 'gift', it had left Zhang Yang with a substantial amount of experience points.

The loot dropped by Shenron were considered average. There was only 1 Yellow-Gold equipment and 3 Gray-Silver equipment, which could still be sold for gold coins. So, Zhang Yang swept them into his inventory. Unfortunately, the boss did not drop any [Inheritance Fragments], slightly disappointing Zhang Yang.

The guardian no longer being in the way, Zhang Yang moved on to claim his treasure!

After looking around in the secret chamber, Zhang Yang realized that none of them were actually valuable! Even though the secret chamber was littered with treasure chests, it was all junk?! How ridiculous! All he found were some [Pearls] and [Jewelries]! Each of these [Pearls] and [Jewelries] could only get him some silver coins if he sold them in the market! The only thing that mattered in this game would be gold coins, and these [Pearl] and [Jewelry] would have to be sold to NPC businessmen in order to turn them into something worthwhile. Zhang Yang resignedly accepted what he could get, for these [Pearls] and [Jewelries] could at least earn him some money.

After searching around for 5 to 6 minutes, Zhang Yang only found more [Pearls] and [Jewelries] in all of the chests. But one particular chest was locked.

It would seem that the ‘real’ treasure was here, buried within this dark-red chest!

Zhang Yang drew his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and swung it at the chest. All he heard was a ‘Chiang!’, and sparks were seen as the sword edge clashed into the lock of the chest. There was not even a scratch on the lock of the chest!

Chiang! Chiang! Chiang!

Zhang Yang could not believe it with his own eyes. Even after dozens of strikes with his powerful sword, the chest remained intact.



So this is it? Dead end?

Zhang Yang frowned. Just as he was to retrace his steps, hoping to find something that he might have missed out, he heard the sound of footsteps approaching him. Thud, thud, thud! The footsteps indicated that someone was approaching him in a hurry. He quickly turned his head around and saw Duchess Winst in a gorgeous aristocratic dress standing right at the entrance of the Treasure Chamber.

Zhang Yang almost failed to recognize her, after she had put on a dress! The difference was really astounding!

Standing right before Zhang Yang, this blonde woman did look very noble and refined, calm and poised, even though she wasn't exactly resting. She looked totally different from the Duchess that Zhang Yang had seen naked in the street. The neckline plunged down and her two boobies were half-exposed in the air. Pressed against each other, a very deep, defined cleavage was formed in between the two large boobies, and she looked marvelously seductive.

"You daredevil! How dare you trespass my Treasure Chamber! Death is your only way out!" the Duchess raised her staff up and pointed it at Zhang Yang with an intimidating aura. Her boobies jiggled with that sudden movement.

Zhang Yang frowned again, for a different reason this time. Is the boss here to battle him, or is she here to seduce him? She was not

making any sense at all!

He laughed out loud and said, "My dear Duchess, why aren't you wearing that 'Fantastic' dress today?"

Winst was instantly enraged! The staff in her hand suddenly glowed with a golden light, followed by a stream of lightning bolts striking down on Zhang Yang! All at once, Zhang Yang was inflicted with a damage of 10,000 points.

Zhang Yang frowned, sensing trouble in the coming fight. The {Radiant Punishment} of the boss had not required any chanting time! He would not be able to fight her like he did against Shenro! So, no more playing with angles and obstacles! It would be suicidal, moving around, trying to kite her as he waits for the cooldown of his skills!

This Duchess has extremely powerful attacks, and she could also activate her {Magic Barrier}. Fortunately for Zhang Yang, the amount of damage that the {Magic Barrier} could absorb would depend on the number of players around the boss! However, it would still be a serious problem if she is able to activate this skill frequently enough.

Well, Guardians are naturally at a disadvantage when they ever encounter a Magic type boss. So Zhang Yang could not even think of any possible way that he can win this battle!

Should he activate his {Shadow of the Void}, and make his escape, first? He could wait for Han Ying Xue and his gang to reach

Level 100 first before they come back together and slay this b\*tch. However, it had its risks too! A large number of players from all eight different servers across the world would have already entered the Chaos-Realm by that time! What if the Japan-Korea server ever forms an 'international alliance' with other servers? Things would escalate, and get messier if he ever waits that long!

No matter the cost, Zhang Yang decided to take down this b\*tch and take over the Gateway Territory for the Japan-Korea region before that happens! He planned to make the players from the Japan-Korea region look bad again.

"Hey, my man! I've thought it through, and I have decided to come back and make another scene!" Just as Zhang Yang was about to make a tactical retreat, the voice of a macho man was heard from the same direction of the Duchess. A man with a handsome, yet wretched face appeared right behind the boss.

It was Messick! The whiner!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud, Messick has {Foul Chatters}, which can hook over the aggro of the boss! It could not be helped, he was born with those perfect, Aryan looks that were asking for a punch to dislodge the perfect symmetry. He also has {Life of Light} to recover his own HP. So, he would definitely be the most suitable tank against this boss!

Messick had an MP bar that was long enough for him to activate {Life of Light} for 20 times, which would recover a total amount of 2,200,000 HP. Furthermore, he has a total of 1,100,000 HP. So, he basically has a total of 3,300,000 HP before he dies! If the boss

wanted to kill him first, it would require about six to seven minutes!

Zhang Yang himself would be able to tank against her for two to three minutes long. If the boss really cannot be killed within that time, then Zhang Yang would have to admit defeat.

Shoof!

With a {Charge} Zhang Yang triggered the boss battle. Currently, the cooldown for all his 'healing' skills was over. So, he should be able to tank against the boss for a good while. When he no longer can tank, he would activate his {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from battle, leaving Messick to be the main tankier of this battle. By the time Messick falls, the cooldown periods for his {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} should all be over by then.

Pak! Pak! Pak!

Streams of lightning fell upon Zhang Yang, one after another, inflicting him with a damage of 10,000 points, repeatedly. Meanwhile, Felice and Whitey were also attacking the boss with all their might, showing that they were not just a bunch of [Looney Toons](#) cheering for him with some useless fireworks. On the other hand, Messick's mouth was really full of foul words! He pratted on at the Duchess, saying that her boobies were mismatched and oddly shaped, and that her butt was shapeless. Zhang Yang also heard something along the lines of her thighs being as large as elephant's legs, and something that had to do with her farting like a skunk! The Duchess was so greatly provoked that she started smoking up in anger!

In the list of the boss's aggro, the aggro for Messick was increasing, extremely rapidly. In just a few seconds, it had already exceeded Felice's! So it would only be a matter of time before Messick would capture the aggro of the boss over from Zhang Yang, and become the main tanker in the battle!

Well, it was impossible to understate, or downplay the power of {Foul Chatters}. Zhang Yang could not help but think that only Messick has the power to sway bosses over to him by the word of mouth! The one and only!

Looney Toons: a bunch of people that only jokes around and do nothing contributing.

# Chapter 478: The Unkillable Cockroach

---

Streams of lightning rained down upon Zhang Yang as high damage values, ranging between 11,000 points and 12,000 points were inflicted upon him, one after another. After just a brief period of time, Zhang Yang was already forced to activate his {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} to keep himself alive for a little longer, followed by the activation of his {Last Vigor} and {Blood of Life}. While he was at it, he also consumed [Potions] every time the global cool down period for using [Potions] was over.

Meanwhile, the aggro value on Messick was increasing drastically. Zhang Yang was now certain that he would not even have to activate his {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from the battle. All he had to do now was to stop attacking for a moment, and Messick would definitely gain the aggro of the boss!

"That's right, b\*tch! Your tits are fake, I know! And that's not it! The doctor who did that was crappy. He actually made them lopsided, look at that! One's like a huge melon, the other is a wrinkled-up raisin! Haha!" Messick was blabbering out more nonsense with his mouth, trying his very best to provoke the Duchess, "Hey, don't look at me like that! I'm just being honest. Hey, let's not forget that I was your tailor. So, which part of your body haven't I touched?"

Zhang Yang frowned, sweat dripping down his brow. This wretched fellow was good. The best of the best in his art!

The Duchess was enraged to the point that her chest was about to

explode. Without any hesitation, she left Zhang Yang alone and started to point her staff at Messick. Bam! She gave Messick a {Radiant Punishment} to release her anger.

‘-15,973!’&nbsp;

Messick did not have any damage absorption abilities like Zhang Yang had. So, he had no choice but to take on the full damage of the {Radiant Punishment}.

"Wow! You really are a b\*tch after all! So mean and ferocious! You should get yourself abducted by bandits and get banging together all night long! That should be plenty of fun for them, and you!" Messick continued spouting out more nonsense, even as the boss mercilessly bombarded him.

It was a certainty now, that this fellow really had a foul mouth!

Zhang Yang had also activated his {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from the battle. At a safe cover, he started to consume the [Snacks] that he had prepared to replenish himself. Although the aggro value of the boss on Messick was already a lot higher than the aggro value on Zhang Yang, he was still dangerously close to the boss. If the boss ever decides to activate her {Light of the Stars} all of a sudden, then Zhang Yang would be as good as dead!

After a brief moment, Zhang Yang had recovered his HP back to its full state. He let out a battle cry and charged back to the boss. Zhang Yang flung a {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss, and clashed into the boss with {Charge} at the same instant.

"You low-life traitors!" the Duchess screamed through her teeth. Although her face had not yet been touched by Zhang Yang, but the color of her face was changing rapidly! Obviously, Messick's {Foul Chattering} was driving her crazy!

Voom!

A translucent barrier appeared around the Duchess all of a sudden, shielding her from harm. At the same time, a progress bar appeared right above her head, as she began to chant.

{Light of the Stars}!

"Felice! Attack her! Quickly!" Zhang Yang cried out in panic. This skill could inflict damage to all targets within the area of 100-meter radius, and the damage of this skill went up to 100,000 Holy Damage! Although Zhang Yang would not be instantly-killed because of his high amount of damage absorption, that skill would definitely put him close to death!

Furthermore, the cooldown of the skill was really short! Even Zhang Yang and Felice would be killed if the Duchess activates {Light of the Stars} again!

Based on the description of the skill, the {Light of the Stars} could be interrupted, provided that the {Magic Barrier} of the boss is destroyed!



Fortunately for Zhang Yang, the amount of damage this {Magic Barrier} absorbs would be based on the number of players present! Although there were 3 persons and a pet launching their assaults towards the boss at the moment, Zhang Yang was the only player around! So, the {Magic Barrier} could only absorb a total of 10,000 points of damage!

However, all skills shared a global cooldown period, and Magic Skills required cast times. A mere 2 seconds was what they had to destroy the {Magic Barrier}. If they could not get their skills ready at the right moment, it would be all over!

Felice charged at the boss down from the sky. Although her {Fire Missile} could have destroyed the boss's {Magic Barrier} in a single hit, but she too required 2 seconds to cast the spell. Furthermore, the {Fire Missile} was a ranged attack. It would require more time to travel through the air! By the time the {Fire Missile} strikes the boss, it would already have taken about 2.2 seconds to 2.5 seconds!

So, she immediately transformed into her Human Form and raised her lance straight at the boss, and stabbed forward!

‘-7,825!’

‘-16,175!’

A {Spear of Blazing Dragon}, followed by a normal attack managed to destroy the {Magic Barrier}, while also inflicting a damage of 24,000 points!

As the barrier was now down, Zhang Yang quickly raised his shield up and smashed it into the boss. Activating {Crash Magic}!

Pak!

Right before the progress bar was about to complete, the Duchess was interrupted. She let out a scream of frustration and raised her staff up again. A stream of lightning flew at the head of Messick.

Messick was zapped to the point that he was screaming in weird, falsettos and acciaccaturas, but his vulgar tongue forever remained in his mouth. He continued to provoke the Duchess by criticizing her body, her face, and her temper. With his tongue alone, he had made the Duchess sound like a tasteless, ugly b\*tch. The Duchess was so furious that her blood veins were about to pop!

No wonder [Zhuge Liang](#) could really mess [Zhou Yu](#) up with his so-called 'wisdom'. Zhang Yang could not help but to feel a chill down his spine as he listened to Messick's foul words! Still to deal with the killer of your parents in such a light-hearted manner was already an act of mercy!

After a brief moment, the Duchess shielded herself with another {Magic Barrier} again, and started to chant the spell for the {Light of the Stars}.

This time however, she had picked the wrong time to do so. Even before her {Magic Barrier} was erected, Felice was already launching a {Fire Missile} at the boss! The barrier was almost immediately destroyed half a second later! Zhang Yang laughed out

loud as he continued to gave the boss a {Crash Magic} and interrupted the boss's chanting progress.

So there were benefits in having lesser people in a boss battle, after all. If hundreds of players were to battle this boss at the same time, even if they had the necessary DPS to carry their weight (Each additional players increases the amount of damage that the {Magic Barrier} can absorb by 10,000 points, and the chanting of the spell must be interrupted within 2 seconds, so each player would have to have a DpS of about 5,000 damage.), the limited space would make it impossible for them to efficiently dish out that amount all the time. They were free gifts for the boss.

If the {Magic Barrier} could not be destroyed in time, the {Light of the Stars} would rain hell upon the players, doing 100,000 Holy Damage. So, other than an insanely powerful tanker like Zhang Yang, who has an insanely powerful set of equipment, with an insanely long HP bar, and a 20% passive damage absorption, other players would never survive this without activating their life-saving skills!

"Guards! Guards!" The Duchess was having trouble taking down Zhang Yang, and it was starting to annoy her, and she had been listening the foul words coming out from the foul mouth of Messick the whole while! Of course, she was already at the verge of losing herself to her own anger! In frustration, she began shouting for reinforcements.

Zhang Yang was shocked for a moment, as he had not expected the boss to call for back up! If the boss really summons a few elite monsters like the Palace Guards at a crucial time like this, then

victory would seem unlikely! Yet, this had not been mentioned in her description!

After waiting for awhile with bated breath, there were no signs of any new monsters coming in. Zhang Yang let out a breath of relief. Apparently, the boss was just rambling in fury.

Although there were not many people in the boss battle, the damage output of Zhang Yang and Felice was more than sufficient. Felice's DPS had exceeded 10,000 damage, putting every single player in the world to shame! Although the HP of the Duchess was massive, it was still being drained at a rapid pace!

However, the assaults of the boss were not weak at all. Messick was forced to activate his {Light of Life} repeatedly just to stay alive! But, he could only hold on for another 6 minutes before he runs out of MP to activate his life-saving skill. Now, he could only stare at his own HP reducing down rapidly!

At the same time, the boss was still left with about 2,500,000 HP!

"Brother, promise me that you will kill this b\*tch, and avenge my parents for me!" Messick turned his head towards Zhang Yang and revealed the sad, resolute expression of a warrior about to meet his end.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "You can go peacefully now. I will avenge you and your parents!"

"%#^&!@%\$!" Zhang Yang could only see the mouth of Messick moving rapidly, as his voice was muted. As for the words were coming out from his mouth, Zhang Yang could actually guess them. Those words were not decent words, not even close! Zhang Yang managed to lip read stuff like 'your mum' and 'c\*nt'!

Without the {Light of Life} supporting him, the HP bar of Messick was traveling down a one-way track. In just a brief moment, his HP had been reduced from 500,000 points, down to only 300,000 points, and then further down to 100,000 points. By the end of it, his HP bar was emptied out, and he finally collapsed onto the ground and died. It was a valiant effort. He had actually tanked against the boss for close to seven minutes! It was something that not even Zhang Yang could do!

"Haha! Now, it's your turn!" the Duchess turned towards Zhang Yang and Felice, and she began to charge towards Zhang Yang. She started to bombard Zhang Yang aggressively. All this while, Zhang Yang was trying to hook the aggro of the boss as well as he could, and Felice had been holding back to make his job easier. So, currently on the aggro list, Zhang Yang had managed to get a little more aggro value than Felice could.

But, the boss was left with about 1,000,000 HP at the moment. All the skills Zhang Yang had were on standby. Victory was now a certainty!

He quickly gulped down his [Power Potion] and activated his {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}!

Without the need to hold back anymore, Zhang Yang began to

unleash all of his potential.

The HP of the boss began to drop even more rapidly, starting from 1,000,000 HP, down to 800,000 HP, then further down to 500,000 HP! The Duchess was getting angrier and angrier by the second. She shouted and screamed repeatedly as the rate of her activating the {Magic Barrier} and the {Light of the Stars} grew in frequency! Although there was no indication, or description saying that the boss would go into a Berserk Mode, she was definitely acting like it now! Her {Magic Shield} would be activated once every 10 seconds! Each time however, she was quickly interrupted!

The {Crash Magic} of Zhang Yang had a cool down period of 10 seconds. Soon, it would no longer keep up with the constantly increasing rate of the {Light of the Stars}, so Zhang Yang would no longer be able to interrupt the boss with this skill!

The boss was still left with about 230,000 HP at the current situation. Suddenly, she began to chant another fresh round of {Light of the Stars}! But, Zhang Yang had just only interrupted her 5 seconds ago! So, he could only stare at the boss as she continued chanting!

{Dragon Lance of War}!

Felice flew right towards the boss at a high speed, lance-first! Not only did she damage the boss tremendously, she had also stunned the Duchess for 2 seconds long!

The {Light of the Stars} was interrupted once again!

"Nicely done!" Zhang Yang praised Felice and took the opportunity to channel as much damage as possible onto the boss.

2 seconds had passed and the Duchess had recovered from the stun effect. She once again began to chant the spell for the {Light of the Stars}. She seemed to go all out, as she knew that she was about to die! Going out with a bang, perhaps?

Zhang Yang had also activated his {Sacrifice} and {Shield Wall}. He started the final sprint to the finish!

Pak!

The boss had finally succeeded in chanting the spell for the {Light of the Stars}! Instantly, the entire secret chamber was lit up with the beaming stars all around. It was like countless lasers shooting across the area!

‘-37,772!’

‘-10,000!’&nbsp;

Both Zhang Yang and Felice suffered heavy damage. That was the final chance for the boss!

150,000! 100,000!, 50,000!

"Argh ---" the Duchess finally let out a miserable scream as her graceful body slid to the ground slowly. Her body fell right on top of Messick's dead body, and she dropped a bunch of loot.

It was not easy at all! Battling a Magic type boss was really tiring! If it weren't for Messick, the super strong human shield and his {Foul Chatters}, Zhang Yang would not have been able to take down the boss by himself! He would not even know how to battle the boss in the first place!

The Duchess had dropped one piece of Violet-Platinum equipment and two pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment. Other than that, there was a shiny, silver key. This key was initially hung around her neck. Felice had spotted it with her sharp eyes and had held it up to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was very sure that this key would unlock the dark-red chest that he had found earlier on! He patted Felice on the head and praised her.

Zhang Yang kept the two Yellow-Gold equipment in his inventory without even taking a look at their attributes. Then, he moved his hands toward the Violet-Platinum shield that radiated in a purplish light.

[Mark of the Winst] (Violet-Platinum, Shield)

Defense: +2,016

Vitality: +1,411



Equip: Absorbs 688 damage when being hit.

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 5,600 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

This shield was truly worthy of being a Violet-Platinum Tier equipment. To compare with Zhang Yang's current shield, his [Titan Wall] only adds an additional 1,344 vitality points, after identification! After all, the levels of the two equipment had a 50% difference, so their attributes would also have a 50% difference!

However, when Zhang Yang reaches Level 120, he would already be focusing on Mythical Tier equipment! Although this shield seemed promising, but players would only get to equip it when they reach Level 120. As it was not really that practical to use, Zhang Yang decided to put it up for sale. No matter what, a Violet-Platinum Tier equipment should be worth at least a couple of millions, and the money would cover some of his own expenses.

Just as he was about to use the key on the lock of the Treasure Chest, the dead body of the boss suddenly twitched! It was an unexpected twist of events!

Zhang Yang was so terrified that he had let out a very high pitched scream! How could the dead body of the boss still move after dropping the loot! Is she zombified or what?

Then, a hand came right up from beneath the dead body and pushed the dead body of the Duchess aside. It was Messick! He crawled right back on his feet and started to whine as usual, "Pui! Pui! Pui! This stinky b\*tch really goes heavy on the perfume! I was about to suffocate!"

... holy sh\*t, this fellow really is an unkillable cockroach!

Zhang Yang walked up to him, pulled out his sword and jabbed it into Messick's butt.

"Argh ---" Messick grabbed on his butt as he screamed in pain and jumped. Then, he tightened his teeth and stared at Zhang Yang, "What was that about!?"

"I couldn't tell if you were a person or a ghost!" Zhang Yang teased.

Messick: "..."

"How can you be not dead?" Zhang Yang was very curious, as he witnessed Messick being struck to the ground with his own eyes.

"What the f\*ck! Were you really wishing for my death that badly?" Messick rolled his eyes at Zhang Yang.

Playing dead?

Zhang Yang could not help but frowned. There had been no mention of this 'playing dead' skill, not in the description of the NPC, and not in the skill lists as well. Well, whatever, he's alive and well now! Zhang Yang walked up to the Treasure Chest, and he bent down to unlock the chest.

After using the key on the lock, the lock fell off. Zhang Yang reached out and opened up the chest. The next thing Zhang Yang saw was beautiful, bright light, shining out of the chest.

There was a pale-yellowish necklace that looked ancient, a piece of bronze armor plating, a yellow-gold scale, a piece of green jade-like [Order], and a scroll.

"Treasure!" Messick immediately regained his bubbly demeanor. He charged up to the chest and tried to snatch it from Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang furiously kicked him aside, "Everything outside this Treasure Chest is yours, I only want these few pieces!"

"Pui! Those are all junk! How can you compare them to these fine babes here! Don't mistake me as a tasteless hillbilly!" Messick cupped his hands over his butt as he charged back at the Treasure Chest.

This time, Felice ran up and blocked his path. With her lance pointed between his eyes, she stared at Messick coldly and said, "Don't get any funny ideas!".

"Hehe, aren't we 'brothers-in-arms'? I say you, my brother. People say that there are three things that determine the 'brotherhood' of men! One, to battle side by side with each other! Second, drinking booze and the third, picking up women together! We may have not yet fulfilled the latter two, but we have definitely fought side by side, together! I don't mind having a toast with you at the bar and introducing you to some women later! So, don't you pretend like nothing ever happened between us..."

And the NPC went on with his own 'speech'.

Zhang Yang shook his head as he commanded Felice to block that annoying NPC from touching the chest. Now, Zhang Yang could finally pick at the chest in peace.

Zhuge Liang: military leader and prime minister of Shu Han during the Three Kingdoms period. He constantly defeated Zhou Yu when it came to war tactics, the main hero of the fictional Romance of Three Kingdoms

Zhou Yu: a military general and strategist serving under the warlord Sun Ce in the late Eastern Han dynasty. Always gets outsmarted by Zhuge Liang when it comes to war tactics.

# Chapter 479: The Forbidden Scroll

---

The ancient-looking pale-yellowish necklace and the bronze armor plate were both Violet-Platinum Tier. Unfortunately, although both of these equipment were powerful, players could only equip them when they reach Level 120! By Level 110, Zhang Yang would no longer be looking for Violet-Platinums. He would be hunting for Mythical Tiered equipment. These Level 120 Violet-Platinum equipment would be mere decorations by then.

Still, they would fetch a great price! If Zhang Yang sells them, they would definitely capture the eyes of a large number of buyers, and earn Zhang Yang a lot of money! They were still good loot, no matter what.

The single piece of yellow-gold scale was not an equipment, but instead, it was a material.

[Golden Dragon Scale] (Material)

Description: A piece of scale that fell from the body of the Golden Dragon. Even though the scale has fallen off the dragon, you can still feel the terrifying power that surges through the scale! If you collect a few more pieces of these [Golden Dragon Scales] and locate a fine Grandmaster, then you can create a very powerful equipment!

A dragon scale? This is an awesome find!

According to Zhang Yang's knowledge, special equipment such as

the [Colorful Dragon Scale Armor] and the [Dragon Scale Shield] can only be forged with the highest quality of [Recipes]. Not only would [Recipes] be required, all sorts of other specific materials were required to forge these special equipment. For instance, all sorts of [Dragon Scale] were required in order to forge Holy Tier equipment!

It was like winning a lottery!

Zhang Yang put the [Golden Dragon Scale] into his inventory as quickly as he was able to. Although one piece of [Dragon Scale] was not enough to forge anything, but without starting at 1%, there will never be a 100%! So, it's a good start!

The following items that Zhang Yang at was the scroll.

Before he could even take it up to examine, Zhang Yang already saw that the scroll was shrouded in an evil presence. It was visibly covering the scroll. Skulls floated amongst the shroud, moaning and groaning!

Is this a [Forbidden Scroll]?

Zhang Yang was shocked and excited at the same time. A [Forbidden Scroll] is also a type of the [Magic Scroll]. But, because of its terrifying power which could bring unimaginable destruction, it is 'Forbidden'! In his previous life, as Zhang Yang had started the game too late, he had only managed to hear about a number of extremely rare and powerful items, without having any of them in his hands. He had no idea how much power they had, exactly.

So, how powerful is a [Forbidden Scroll]?

There was once a world war between the China region and the Japan-Korea region in Zhang Yang's previous life. The China region had recruited over 300 million players, and they managed to crush the stronghold at their Gateway Territory, charging straight into the main cities of the Japan-Korea region! They took down a total of 5 main cities within 3 days!

However, the Japan-Korea region attempted to cut off the Chinese supply routes instead, as they sent out an army directly towards the Gateway Territory of the China region. It was a good move. When the enemy is too strong to take on, then, attack something important to the enemy! So, they launched an army of their own towards the stronghold at the Gateway Territory of the China region, in order to drive the army of the China region back to save their own Gateway Territory! But, Crimson Rage that was in charge in the defense of the Gateway Territory did not even flinch as they faced the massive army. Instead, Snow Seeker only tore off one scroll, just one! It was the scroll of [Heaven's Fall]!

Lo and behold, and heaven truly fell upon the enemy!

At that moment, the ground shook and cracked, the mountains split and scattered! Volcanic lava spewed out from the cracks in the ground! Other than the Territory, everything within the range of 10 Kilometers was demolished!

The Korean-Japan army was immediately wiped out! Only

hundreds of them survived the effects of [Heaven's Fall]!

Another example, also from Zhang Yang's previous life, was when the Imperial Sky battled a Super Boss - Crystal Dragon Cassiudoss, in the Lost Land! Anyone who had ever fought the boss would understand that this Crystal Dragon Cassiudoss was like a BUG in the game! Not only was the HP bar of the boss too long, the boss also had ridiculous AoE attacks. Any player would just die when the boss started bombarding the area with waves of extremely powerful AoE attacks. There was no way of even getting close to it!

Imperial Sky had used a total of three [Forbidden Scroll: Light of Divinity] during that boss battle ----- providing all players within the effective area of the scroll with 80% damage immunity effects, and also a substantial amount of HP recovery. So, they survived the ridiculous assaults from the boss and finally slew the Crystal Dragon Cassiudoss, claiming the title of First Clear for the boss stage!

Of course, those [Forbidden Scroll: Light of Divinity] were very hard to come by in the first place. There was no fixed rate of the scroll dropping. One [Forbidden Scroll: Light of Divinity] was already like a winning lottery ticket! One [Forbidden Scroll: Light of Divinity] could reach up to tens of millions of gold coins! If this item ever appeared in the Auction House, only the large-scale guilds could afford to bid for it!

Zhang Yang was so excited to see the scroll that he hurriedly unfurled it. While he was at it, the shroud of dark energy aura started surging even more violently as he unrolled more of it. It



was getting stronger by the moment, as if the dark energy was gushing out from the scroll!

[Forbidden Scroll: Scourging Doomsday] (Consumable)

Use: With the user as the central point, all targets within the effective area of 5 Kilometers radius will be punished with the Judgement of Doomsday. All targets will lose 10% of their HP per second. The maximum HP that the targets lose cannot exceed 100,000 damage. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Required Level: 100

What the hell! So powerful!

The effective range was 5 Kilometers wide! That was a little too much! No wonder Crimson Rage could wipe out the entire army of the Japan-Korea region with [Heaven's Fall] in his previous life! So one, [Forbidden Scroll] already has this much power! Reducing 10% of the targets' HP in every second? It would actually be even more effective if the enemies are stronger! Although it was limited to only a maximum of 100,000 damage every second, that was still a total of 3,000,000 HP being reduced within a duration of 30 seconds! Let's not forget the area this effect would take place! 5 Kilometers wide! Who could outrun that?

Zhang Yang put the [Forbidden Scroll: Scourging Doomsday] into his inventory without any hesitation. This is actually a weapon of mass destruction! It's a nuke in a world of magical cannons! No one would even dare to mess with you, if they ever find out that you

have such an insanely powerful weapon in your hands!

"Hey, brother. You can't just take everything!" Messick was looking forlornly at Zhang Yang, as if his parents had just died --- well, his parents did die. He begged, "I also helped you a lot. I even told you everything about this place!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Let's put it this way. When I become the new Baron of this town, I shall give you a high ranking!"

Messick rolled his eyes at Zhang Yang and he said, "Although this stinky b\*tch has died, do you really think that it's that easy for you to become the next Baron?"

Without saying a word, Zhang Yang took out the final piece of green jade-like [Order] that was the last item the chest, tapped on it gently and said, "Everything will be different, with this!"

'Region Announcement: A Territory without a Baron has appeared in the Chaos Realm. The 'Territory Conquest' will commence in 72 hours. All players, please be ready for it! The Territory is located at the Gulattoo Iceland, the specific location will be announced when the 'Territory Conquest' begin! The 'Territory Conquest' will last for 3 hours long. When the battle is over, the last player with the [Territory Command Order] will become the new Baron of the Territory!'

So this green jade-like [Order] was actually a [Territory Command Order]. Zhang Yang had used it immediately upon

picking it up.

"Huh? A [Territory Command Order]!" Messick was staring at Zhang Yang with bulging eyes, "You actually got a [Territory Command Order]? How lucky are you!"

With the Region Announcements appearing on the region, Zhang Yang received multiple private messages from Snow Seeker and his other alliances and friends. It was a real shock for them that Zhang Yang could actually take down two Territories within 4 days! More importantly, Zhang Yang was all alone in the Chaos Realm! So he must have slain the bosses and conquered the Territory all by himself.

Zhang Yang decided to let Messick remain within the castle. After Fatty Han and the other gang members reach Level 100, he would come back with them to 'take care' of him! This NPC had super high HP, and he could also recover his own HP. He also had {Foul Chatters} which did a great job at provoking enemies into attacking him! So, this NPC was definitely a very suitable 'candidate' for a secondary tanking role. This was why Zhang Yang had decided to keep him as a Battle Companion.

Zhang Yang was only uncertain if Messick would still have such an amount of HP after he becomes a Battle Companion.

So, upon the activation of the second piece of [Territory Command Order] in hand, all Zhang Yang would have to do right now is to wait for the 72 hours to pass, before he can claim this Territory. Zhang Yang used a [Teleportation Scroll] and traveled back to Morning Town, and he was finally ready to look for the

quest that would lead him to the [God of War Inheritance]. Not long after he left the ground with the Serpent, he saw a large dragon flying towards him at a high speed. In just an instant, the dragon had arrived right before Zhang Yang.

It was a blue dragon. Its body was hundreds of meters long. A man in shining armor, with a long lance in his arm, sat on its back.

[White Jade Dragon Knight] (Elite, Humanoid Creature)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Defense: ???

Attack: ???

Skills: ???

Note: The elite force of White Jade Kingdom, representing its strength!

"Zhan Yu! Under the command of her majesty Queen Serena, I hereby summon you back to the main palace of the city. The Queen would like to have a few words with you!" The Dragon Knight patted the dragon and stopped in front of Zhang Yang as he declared those words.

... is this another main quest for him?

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "I shall return immediately to see her majesty, Queen Serena."

"Godspeed!" The Dragon Knight let out a roar, patted the dragon, and headed back in a hurry. As the dragon flapped its wings, in just a blink of an eye, the Knight and the dragon were already hundreds meters away from Zhang Yang. The dragon was far faster than the Serpent!

Zhang Yang grew envious of the Knight, and immediately started thinking of getting a new [Flying Mount]! A dragon, perhaps! But the question was, when would he be able to do that?

After landing on the ground, he took out his [Teleportation Scroll] and teleported back to White Jade Castle. After he arrived at White Jade City, Zhang Yang summoned the Serpent, and rode it towards the palace. As the Serpent flew across the sky, many people were caught off-guard, as the shadow looming past them was the last thing they would expect. Some of them started drooling as they imagined themselves flying on a serpent too.

After arriving at the entrance of the palace, Zhang Yang dismounted and reported himself to the two palace guards at the gate. Then, the guards escorted him straight into the main palace, and into the Royal Chamber of the Dawning Light. It belonged to the late King of the White Jade Kingdom, Derick. Now that Serena has stepped up, it was a given that this main palace belonged to her

now!

The former princess now wore a grand and magnificent royal robe, which tightly wrapped around her slim, slender body. A crown sat on her head. The Ancient Godly Weapon, Meteor Sword hung by her waist. She looks extremely domineering and intimidating, being the true queen of the kingdom!

"My Queen." Zhang Yang started bowing.

"No need for that!" Serena stood up from her throne and said, "Zhan Yu, I wish to go to war, to expand the land of White Jade Kingdom and to share our prosperity. I am going to make significant achievements, unlike all the languishing kings and queens of the world! Would you aid me in such a quest?"

So, what is this new queen up to now?

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "I, Zhan Yu will share your worries and solve your problems, and my sword will always be by your side!"

"Very well!" Serena nodded and said, "I am promoting you to be the War General of this expedition. You shall conquer the world with me tomorrow! We shall first conquer the Black Dragon Kingdom, the Emerald Kingdom, Tranquil Wind Kingdom and the other remaining Kingdoms of the 7 main Kingdoms. After that, we shall march into the Chaos Realm and dominate the world. The heavenly glory of the Imperial Heaven's Empire shall flourish, once again!"

Zhang Yang felt a chill straight down his spine. In his previous life, all 8 Kingdoms had remained independent for as long as he could remember. There were never wars or expeditions among Kingdoms. But in this life, Queen Serena actually planned to start a war to combine the eight Kingdoms into one! This was a completely new turn of events!

"Go now, and rest. Tomorrow, we shall set out for war!"

After Zhang Yang left the palace, he quickly informed Han Ying Xue and the others about this. Everyone was confused and shocked to know about the war. So, when war sparks between two Kingdoms, what could players earn from being a part of the war, then?

The region answered their questions almost immediately.

‘Region Announcement: White Jade Queen Serena has declared war against the Emerald Kingdom! The war will commence in 24 hours. All players can join the war and earn Merit Points by slaying players and NPCs. Merit Points can be used to exchange high quality equipment, potions, gemstones and scrolls. For more specific information, kindly go to the Special Merchant in the Main City Hall of War!’

# Chapter 480: Declaring War over Emerald City

---

Right after the Server Announcement, every single player in the China region was feverish with excitement!

A war between two Kingdoms! The first war between two Kingdoms!

Many players traveled back to their main cities to take a look at what the Special Merchant had to offer, to see how much Merit Points would require for each of the equipment and items available. After taking a good look at the list, everyone was shocked to find that among the list, there were a few pieces of Level 100 Violet-Platinum equipment!

At the current stage of the game, players would already be respected and cheered on for having a full set of Yellow-Gold equipment. After all, the number of Violet-Platinum bosses appearing across the open world map was just too small. So Violet-Platinum equipment can only belong to those players at the top. Even rich players needed luck to get a Violet-Platinum equipment!

Now that they had a chance of obtaining Violet-Platinum equipment without the need to defeat a boss, of course everyone would be happy! They only needed to kill NPCs and players to stand a chance at obtaining Violet-Platinum equipment!

Although this war was limited only between White Jade Kingdom and Emerald Kingdom, the announcement did not state



that players from other cities would not be able to join the war! Players from the other 6 cities could join the war tomorrow and choose their sides. However, they had to make their decision before the war begins, or they would lose the opportunity of joining the war. They would not be able to switch sides after that, until the end of the war.

Of course, the players from White Jade Castle and Emerald City could not pick sides. They would have to fight for their own main cities.

"Noob tank, the NPC here does have some good stuff for sale!" Wei Yan Er suddenly screamed in joy and posted a link to one of the items on sale.

[Dual Bladed Axe of the Grand Marshal] (Violet-Platinum, Two-handed Axe)

Attack: 4,242 - 5,242

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DpS: 1,248

{Level 3 Socket 1}

{Level 3 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases 10% damage.

Equip: When you hit a target, there is a rate of 1% at inflicting 300% damage.

Equip: Increases 2% Critical Rate.

Required Level: 100

The DPS, the attacks and the additional effects of this two-handed axe was the pinnacle of the Violet-Platinum Tier! It could only be surpassed by a Mythical Tier or Ethereal Tier!

Zhang Yang could not help but to laugh, then he said, "So, how much Merit Points does this axe cost?"

"40,000 points!"

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "Then, I suppose that it's not going to be easy to earn Merit Points, or else the axe would have cost more than that!"

Fatty Han, Endless Starlight and the other gang members joined in on the discussion. At the same time, Zhang Yang had also started sharing some information on the Chaos Realm. When Zhang Yang mentioned Messick the whiner, Fatty Han and Endless Starlight seemed to show a lot of interest in him. They both made up their minds that the first thing they would do in the Chaos Realm would be to meet up with this Messick. They believed that

they would be able to bring Messick down to his knees by intimidating him! Or, they could use their hardcore attitudes on Messick, and the man would surely raise his ass up for them!

Naturally, the vulgar words from the mouths of these two wretched men had provoked the ladies, and they were scolded by the ladies like hell.

As the war was just upon them, all players from all eight main cities were preparing themselves. Equipment, check! Weapon, check! Potions, check! They were checking to see that everything was in place to make sure that they could perform at their best in the coming war. As the official notes had stated very clearly, players killed during the war would not be given any form of penalties, nor will they lose Experience Points upon deaths of their avatar in the game. Players will not even drop equipment upon death as well! The only penalty they would get is the reduction of their equipment's durability, by 10%.

That did not matter to them at all. Who would still keep count on the repair costs when they could just earn Merit Points for better equipment without the need of spending a dime at all, and now that they were basically 'immune' to all penalties of dying, who would not push themselves to their full potential, in order to earn some fine equipment for themselves?

However, Zhang Yang could only shake his head again and again as he could see through the real 'agenda' behind this big event. The game developer would never devalue the high Tier equipment, so it will surely be extremely difficult for players to earn the Merit Points! So, it would seem that a lot of players would have to pay

the system to repair their equipment when the war begins, and the developers are only going to earn another round of fortune! Most players would only earn enough Merit Points to exchange some fine quality [Potions].

After reaching Level 100, players would no longer get benefits from the merchants! For instance, the Level 4 [Gemstones] were not available for sale. Players would be required to battle monsters and bosses in order to obtain them. The Level 4 [Mana Potion] and Level 4 [Healing Potion] were also unavailable in Potion Shops, players could only obtain them via Alchemy.

However, the Recipes for the [Level 4 Mana Potion] and [Level 4 Healing Potion] were extremely rare to come by, and even Zhang Yang had spent a lot of effort on getting his hands on these two Recipes. Currently, most players with the Alchemy Profession could only make Level 3 [Mana Potions] and [Healing Potions], at best. So, the market had increased the prices for the [Level 4 Mana Potion] and [Level 4 Healing Potion] by up to 100 gold coins for a bottle! Even though they definitely overpriced, the demand simply overshadowed all other concerns!

For that, players started going crazy when they discovered that the 'Merit Point Dealer' for the upcoming war event had these Potions on 'sale'. The Merit Points required in order to exchange potions were not high. Each [Level 4 Gemstone] only cost 2,000 Merit Points, while [Level 4 Mana Potion] and [Level 4 Healing Potion] only cost 200 Merit Points.

Unfortunately, all the items and equipment that players earn from this event would be bound to the players. The developers

have made it so to prevent players from selling their spoils for money.

24 hours had passed in just a few blinks of an eye, and a Temporary Teleportation Door appeared in the middle of the central square of White Jade Castle. Players would be transported to the outer skirts of Emerald City's Tama Fortress. This Tama Fortress was basically the counterpart of White Jade's own Tukula, which was the fortress that was once conquered by the demons. It was then released from the grasp of the demons after the Level 50 Expedition.

When the time was up, the Temporary Teleportation Door was activated. Players were teleported over to a location, about 1,000 meters away from Tama Fortress, one after another.

Right behind the players was the massive army of White Jade Kingdom. The troops were lined up in neat formations, complete with military columns and square formations. Each formation consisted of tens of thousands of soldiers. There were a total of 500 square formations! The scene was spectacular!

At the other end of the battlefield, the players of the Emerald City were also on standby, stationed atop the walls of their fort. The players from the opposing sides met each others' gazes in a tense silence. As this event presented great opportunities to the players, almost all players from all 8 main cities had joined the war. The battlefield had been occupied by players from all 8 main cities!

The number of 'supporters' for both the White Jade Kingdom

and the Emerald Kingdom remained unknown for the moment, as the system did not state the numerical statistics of it for players to refer to.

As they stood in silence, Queen Serena finally arrived through the Temporary Teleportation Door on a white battle horse. Right behind her were a platoon of elite guards, with nothing to indicate their Levels. Right above her was a platoon of Dragon Knights! Her honor guards simply looked intimidating! Meanwhile, other than the players who were standing atop Tama Fortress, mere 1,000 NPC soldiers stood with them. It was obvious that the defenses of Tama Fortress were greatly outnumbered by the assault force of White Jade Kingdom!

The new Queen then raised her [Meteor Sword] and let out a battle cry, "Warriors of White Jade Kingdom, the time to write your legacy is now, or never!"

‘Ding! The war between ‘White Jade Kingdom’ and ‘Emerald Kingdom’ has begun! You will earn 1 ‘Merit Point’ for each enemy player you kill. You will earn 1 ‘Merit Point’ for each normal Tiered NPC soldier you kill. You will earn more ‘Merit Points’ by killing a general! The war will end when the Monarch of either side dies!’

‘Ding! If you die in the battle, you must wait for 30 minutes before you can revive (Excluding the effects of special skills). Each player can only resurrect 3 times at most. Players will be spawned at their corresponding main cities if they die for the fourth time.’

‘Ding! After the war is over, the player with the most Merit

Points will be awarded the title of 'Imperial Aggrandizer' (Correspondent to White Jade Kingdom) or 'Imperial Aegis' (Correspondent to Emerald Kingdom).'

All players from both sides received the notification from the system.

After a brief moment of silence, the players on the side of the White Jade Kingdom let out a heaven-shaking, thunderous roar as they began to charge towards the direction of Tama Fortress!

At the same instant, Zhang Yang suddenly received another notification from the system.

'Ding! You have been appointed by Queen Serena as the War General of this expedition. You will earn 1% worth of Merit Points from all kills on opposition players and NPCs who are killed by the NPCs of White Jade Kingdom.'

Zhang Yang was pleasantly surprised at the sudden 'gift' from the system!

Although 1% was a small number, there were about 5 million of NPCs in this war! If each of the NPCs managed to kill one player or one NPC of the opposition, then Zhang Yang would earn 50,000 Merit Points by simply standing at one corner!

Zhang Yang felt like crying tears of gratitude, there and then, as he had finally experienced the advantage of the 'affection' that

Queen Serena had for him, for the first time!

Meanwhile, the NPC army of White Jade Kingdom marched towards the wall of Tama Fortress. The massive army still maintained their formation as they marched forward. Looking at the crowd of people, Zhang Yang felt tempted to take the [Forbidden Scroll] out from his inventory and use it on the enemy.

The scene was really spectacular and breathtaking!

"Zhan Yu ---" One Sword Stroke approached Zhang Yang atop his mount, he did not intend to join into the battle so soon. He went up to Zhang Yang and smiled, "Well, it's really rare to see you, without having the need to battle!"

Right beside One Sword Stroke was a young beautiful lady on a black panther, having an ID name that matched quite well with the ID name of One Sword Stroke. Her name was 'One Sword Smile', and she was only Level 56 at the moment.

Zhang Yang tensed up the moment after he recognized the lady, she looked just like someone he knew --- Luo Xin Yan! It was so obvious, and it made sense as well! However, Zhang Yang only looked at Luo Xin Yan for a brief moment, before he turned his eyes back at One Sword Stroke saying, "Looks like we can't afford to battle each other today!"

Imperial Sky and Lone Desert Smoke have been competing against each other in every battle and every event. Meanwhile, the Silky Soft Battle Team and the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle



Team were and forever would be a nemesis for the S-rank Professional League Championship! So Zhang Yang and One Sword Stroke have always been enemies. But now that Imperial Sky have chosen to support White Jade Kingdom, they could not afford to battle each other at a crucial event like this.

One Sword Stroke smiled and pointed at Luo Xin Yan, "Allow me to introduce to you, my girlfriend!"

"Don't you dare say that you know me!" right before Zhang Yang could even react and talk, he had already received a private message from Luo Xin Yan. He was a little shocked, but after putting some thoughts in it, he understood. Luo Xin Yan had not yet revealed it all to One Sword Stroke. After all, knowing that she had been a corporate spy would really make people uncomfortable. If One Sword Stroke ever finds out that she had once been a spy, and was possibly 'spy'ing on him, even now, then everything that Luo Xin Yan has done would be reduced to 'dust'.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely without a word.

Although the relationship between Lone Desert Smoke and the Imperial Sky had improved a little after the event of Liu Wei betraying and leaving Imperial Sky, they could not be called allies just yet. Zhang Yang did not particularly like One Sword Stroke either, so professional courtesy would only bring him to acknowledge the other man this much.

Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince and the other guildmasters of larger guilds walked up to Zhang Yang right after that. After they greeted each other with some small talks, suddenly, One Sword

Stroke came up with an idea, "Why don't we compete and see who gets the title of the 'Imperial Aggrandizer'!"

With him voicing that out, Greensleeves Prince, Sword of Light and the others agreed to compete against each other to see who would be the winner. Well, everyone should have a little competition for being the best, at least!

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "I will not be joining this time!" He had an additional method of earning Merit Points, so it was extremely easy for him to 'win'. If he joined in this little competition, it would be as good as cheating.

However, as Luo Xin Yan was still eager to take revenge on Zhang Yang for humiliating her back in the day, she spoke in a cold tone, "So, even the mighty and powerful Zhan Yu would get cold feet sometimes, I assume?"

One Sword Stroke laughed out loud and said, "Brother Zhan Yu is definitely not afraid of us at all, he is probably too powerful to compete with us, the 'insignificant' ones! He probably doesn't want this to be one-sided!"

With those words, One Sword Stroke had turned Snow Seeker and the other guildmasters against him. Well, words are the most powerful weapon in the world, sometimes.

Zhang Yang could not help but sigh. He had not planned to join in, as it was already one-sided, and it would not be due to his individual prowess. Since One Sword Stroke had already placed his

face so near for Zhang Yang to bash, why not just cooperate and bash it more than just once then? Zhang Yang could not let him down, as Zhang Yang was moved by his passion and sincerity!

"Alright. Since that everyone is in the mood, then I will not take the fun out of you guys! Let's compete, then!"

## Chapter 481: Chapter 482 The Siege

---

Zhang Yang summoned the flying serpent, much to the delight of Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue. Both of them insisted to ride along, something which he did not mind. The serpent had reached a point where it was strong enough to lift 3 to 5 players. However, in this mode of transportation, players who are riding along would not be able to participate in fights.

The flying serpent shot into the sky, taking Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue, and Wei Yan Er to the front lines. The moment they reached, the little brat and Han Ying Xue summoned their own mounts and headed straight into enemy lines. With Han Ying Xue taking care of Wei Yan Er, Zhang Yang was left at ease. Together with Felice, they went back up to the skies. Why not make use of the First Flying Mount in the game? It would be a shame not to!

The battle was completely one-sided. White Jade Kingdom's army had almost 5,000,000 soldiers. including the almighty killing machine, Prince Serena. Escorting her was a group of elite dragon riders. The Kingdom's army was large, but the group of elite dragon riders were the most outstanding units. The Level-hidden elite tiers had the power that was equivalent to Mythical or an Ethereal tier monsters!

As for Prince Serena herself, when she was merely a Holy tier NPC she could already massacre a field full of players with her Sword of Life and Death. Now that she had already procured the Meteor Sword and gained the status of Ascended, how powerful could be she? Emerald Kingdom was no match to this level of power!

White Jade Kingdom's army pushed on hard, and had soon crossed the border's river. A single fortress stood to defend it, but it was nothing, compared to the devastating power of 5 million soldiers.

From the player's perspective, the war meant nothing but the opportunity to gather a few Merit Points. The outcome of the war would not cause much effect to their lifestyles. No changes would be made to the losing city, no permanent loss of power, much rather, they would all be under the same united banner. This was not even a civil war, where one side would be sure to suffer a penalty. Hence, players had no care about winning or losing. They only wanted to farm more Merit Points. Thus, the war was fought with no morale nor raging vigor. No vengeance, no greed, just a bunch of players participating in a huge event.

The enemy players were now fighting on the frontlines, halting the NPC soldiers. Against these tougher enemies, they were having trouble killing enemies and gaining more merit points. As a result, Zhang Yang's 'passive' income of merit points was also dropping. In this situation, Felice had rushed out, and blasted the earth with her {Pulverizing Flame}, sending a sea of flames across the ground.

Unlike NPC, players would never stand to fight till they fall, giving free kills and points to the enemy. They would withdraw from the front lines and recuperate in safety. It was these very players, who were on their way to the rear, critically low on HP, who were Felice's targets. Her attacks were precise. With {Pulverizing Flame} blasting down, dealing 3000 Fire damage a second to an area of 10 x 10 meters, many of those players were quickly finished off.

Many of them had 5,000 to 6,000 HP and the risky daredevils had even lesser, at 2,000 to 3,000 HP. One single blast of {Pulverizing Flame} was enough to wipe them all clean, earning him a large amount of Merit Points. Whenever Felice was done with her attack, Zhang Yang would immediately call her back and unsummoned her from the world. It was to hide her away from the other players who had taken notice the situation and were about to launch their attacks on Felice. Since her attack took 30 seconds to cool down, it was best to hide her away, even for a brief moment.

Princess Serena led her company of dragon riders and moved on towards the fortress. An ambitious guild, hoping for fame and glory, had ambushed Princess Serena in a pincer attack. However, Princess Serena did not even need to raise a finger. The 12 dragon riders had zoomed down to ground level and unleashed their dragon breath fire on all the players in the area. In less than half a minute, more than 10,000 players were dead.

It was a shame that the kills of the dragon knights did not garner him Merit points. If Princess Serena were to lift her finger, the earth would split in two; her Meteor Sword would obliterate all that is living in sight.

Just like that, the entire White Jade Kingdom's army marched on forward. The Emerald Kingdom's forces were forced to rapidly withdraw. With haste, the fortress was taken over easily. The invading forces marched on and took over the Level 40 maps, Level 30, Level 20, and eventually, the Castle of Emerald itself!

The NPC army had been left behind, marching in their fixed,

rigid formation. The battle was now between the players of the two kingdoms, since the army's movement speed was slow. Players themselves had obtained a large number of Merit points. Zhang Yang naturally had obtained far more than anyone else, for his points had already surpassed 8,000! 2/3 of the points came from Felice alone. Her carpet bombing, and Zhang Yang's aerial capabilities gave them a solid edge over everyone else. They had constantly been targeting the retreating, weakened players.

Just as the raging players was about to invade the castle gates, a few spots on the castle wall glowed brightly. A beam of light flashed by and landed down like a heavy, particle beam cannon. When the blast subsided, the area was vaporized. Nothing in ground zero survived.

Without a doubt, it was a Magic Cannon! The strongest defense mechanism! Without a siege catapult, it would almost be impossible to directly deal with the super-powered cannons. Right now, there was no other way, but to rush in with sheer numbers.

Hundreds of blasts later, the players of White Jade Kingdom finally saw reason, returned to lick their wounds at the back of the marching army. If they are killed for more than three times, the fourth death would result in expulsion from the war.

"Argh crap! I died! Bloody cannons! Was I too outstanding? Too good looking for you!?" said Wei Yan Er, having been among those who were vaporized.

"I told you so. Don't always rush into things! You've gone from putting a load on me, to actually dragging me down with you!" Han

Ying Xue sighed.

Zhang Yang chuckled to himself. With Han Ying Xue's healing capability, the only items that would really overwhelm her healing would be the instant-kill magic cannons.

"How many points has the little brat earned so far?"

"Nyehehe. I got more than 1,400 points!" said the little girl like a big smile on her tiny little face. "Oh crap! I'll need to wait for 30 minutes before I can revive! How much have you guys collected?"

"Woah. The little girl got 1,400?! I only have 800!" said Lost Dream.

"Hm. I have around 1,200." Said Hundred Shots.

Everyone reported their collected Merit points. Some were happy with their "scores" while some were lamenting over it. Technically, ranged attackers should be earning more than melee attackers. Ranged attackers could snipe at a fleeing target, afterall, or pick off a nearby enemy who is one hit from dying to the blows of another.

Ranged attackers also had many AoE skills at their disposal. The points system does not count the amount of damage that you deal, but the number of players who have died by your hands. For the valiant but inefficient, even if they deal a total of 10 million damage, that might not have even earned them 10,000 points! As the saying goes, the early bird gets the worm, but the second



mouse gets the cheese!

By the end of it, only Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight had still remained silent. Fatty Han called out, "Hey! Starlight! How many points did you get?"

"...74..." said Endless Starlight sadly.

Everyone laughed, after Endless Starlight awkwardly revealed his score.

It was understandable, still. A tank would have trouble dealing damage in the first place, and if their opponents decided to run away, a tank could not do anything about it, besides waving them goodbye. Truthfully speaking, Endless Starlight had done a good job snagging 70 points.

"How about Zhang Yang?" Hundred Shots added.

Zhang Yang smirked. He did not want to reveal his total points, since it might actually cause them to feel despair. Vaguely, Zhang Yang said, "Only a few thousand points. More than you guys anyway."

"How many exactly?" said Han Ying Xue as she emphasized on the last word.

"...8,275!"

"What the—That's a lot!"

"You cheating noob tank! How did you manage to kill so many people? This young lady here has been running around like a mad dog! I even rushed into their ranks to swing about, and only managed to accumulated 1,400 points! Cheater!"

"Hm.., 8,000 points is indeed hard to believe. If the system had calculated by damage dealt, it would make sense for Zhang Yang to get 8,000 points. But by the number of players killed, 8,000 points is just too much to be true!" said Daffodil Daydream.

Zhang Yang laughed.&nbsp;None of them had Flying Mounts yet, so they would have no idea on how flying would make a whole difference in warfare. He could easily fly behind enemy lines and kill players before escaping. Since players can only attack targets within 30 meters, Zhang Yang would only need to fly 31 meters above them to stay safe!

As they were happily chatting, more hot-headed players had rushed to the castle. However, despite their reckless bravery, the magic cannon had blasted them off into oblivion.

The magic cannon power was just too strong. It was firing continuously, without any signs of overheating or running out of ammo.

Many players from the White Jade side were starting to worry. None of them had any idea on how to get past the massive firing

range. Not even numbers can solve this problem! You can send in 5 million players, and all of them would be blasted to smithereens.

Just then, Princess Serena opened her mouth, but Zhang Yang was too far to hear anything. When she stopped talking, the 12 dragon riders behind her sortied. Like F22 fighter jets, the 12 dragons shot past the field. Even though there was only 12 of them, each dragon was at least a few hundred meters wide! When all 12 of them formed a V-shaped formation, they could easily eclipse the sun and cover the entire earth in darkness.

The dragons reached the castle within 4 flaps of their gigantic wings. 12 dragons spew raging hot fire on the castle walls, which immediately caved in. The flames had obliterated the cannons, along with their operators.

Boom! Boom!

The remaining cannons immediately retaliated. The magic cannons turned upwards to the dragons. Despite being huge, the dragons were as agile as tiny raccoons. Even before the cannons fired, the riders would already take evasive action, by simply anticipating the unmistakable glow of the barrels!

The dragons flew back to the castle top and blasted the castle walls again. More and more magic cannons were destroyed!&nbsp;

Having taken so many fireballs directly, the walls were beginning to cave in. Crack lines started forming on their surfaces. The cracks appeared like thunder during a storm, spreading quickly

from the top to the bottom of the castle. More and more cracks branched out, as if the wall was aging at a rapid speed. No sooner later, a large part of the castle crumbled like the hollowed-out, rotten trunk of a tree.

Vrouum! Rawgh!

Just when almost all of the magic cannon of Emerald Castle had fallen, 12 dragons burst out of the crumbling castle walls, and charged towards the White Jade Kingdom's dragon riders. Dragons from both sides of the war started launching fireballs at each other.

Now that is what you call toe-to-toe, wing-to-wing.

"Charge!"

"Hurrah!!"

Even though there were still numerous magic cannons that were still functioning in other parts of the castle, players had gained enough morale to charge up the front. Players of White Jade burned with intense morale and swarmed the castle like a tsunami.

Similarly, when the dragons from Emerald Castle had burst out heroically, their players had also rushed out of the castle to fight the incoming players.

The result of the war did not matter to either side, since their

main objective was to earn as many Merit Points as they could. Hence, neither side would want to have their fight in the castle, even though it would be easier to engage in a defensive fight. On a flat, empty terrain, players could blatantly engage with each other, be it kill or be killed, and the war would be over quickly that way. Time is of the essence since the war would end, once either leader of the warring kingdoms is killed.

Pew! Pew!

The magic cannons on the castle wall constantly blasted the players. However, since they had been vastly reduced, the light beams blasting into the sea of players would be like bowling balls hurled into the Pacific Ocean. They would hardly make any difference, in the grand scale of things.

The war zone was starting to turn ugly. Every second of every minute, players would be dying. The cycle continued on and on. Screams filled the sky as the sun started to set, slowly relieving the last rays of light from the blood-soaked shade of a once grassy plain. The battle was only between players. The NPC army in Emerald Kingdom was not moving, and the NPC army of White Jade Castle had yet to arrive. Apparently, the system had made it so to provide time for players to fight each other. If both NPC armies were to fight, the war would end in a heartbeat.

10 minutes...20 minutes...30 minutes...3 hours...5 hours...10 hours...

Even though players who fall in the war could revive after 30 minutes, the number of players in the battlefield had decreased

dramatically, as their Merit points rose exponentially.

After dying for the fourth time, players would be revived back at their main city, unable to participate in the war any further. As for players who originated from Emerald City, they would be revived at White Jade Kingdom, instead of their own original "birthplace".

When the war was still at its premature stage, it was a chaotic crossfire of players swinging wildly at anything that moved, and even if Zhang Yang used {Shield Wall,} he would be instantly killed. Even professional players will face a great deal of trouble trying to survive in the chaotic war. However, when the number of players started to drop, the weapon tiers, skills, players co-op, and party formation would start to shine.

Right then, the players who were still alive on the field were the strongest in both skills and equipment. Players who had died 30 minutes before had come back to revive, only to be killed swiftly again by the much stronger survivors. The numbers had decreased from 200 million to only 500,000 players. These 500,000 players on the field were the elite among the elites. Hence, players from both sides of the war had a silent agreement to not engage in an all-out slugfest. Instead, they went around to search for newly revived players. There was no reason to go for an all-out kill. They were fighting for Merit points, not for the glory of mankind itself.

# Chapter 482: The Appearance of the Emerald Kingdom's King

---

Players had all the right to spend every single second, fighting for merit points. But, wisdom sometimes trumps strength. Reviving on the spot would only give you 20% HP for a start. It's not safe to roam around with such low health. The battlefield may look empty, but the place was filled with invisible Thieves lurking about, preying on the weak. Suffice to say, if you are newly revived, the first few seconds where you sit down to heal would be the most dangerous period. Since you can only revive yourself for a total of three times, the remaining players would be extremely cautious about their lives, while Thieves would have their eyes and ears wide open. Professional players had something else in mind, besides obtaining equipment, they wanted to get Titles. Those rewards can never be discarded after gaining levels, unlike that of an equipment. It would be something that you can wear on your name tag till kingdom comes! Plus, it's cool!

At that stage, no one was willing to take risks, hence, high leveled players tend to avoid each other, aiming instead for stragglers and errant weaklings. At most, they would only withdraw from the area respectfully.

That would be the norm, but things were different for the little brat. That little kid did not care about her odds, the ire of others, the incredulity of her actions. None of that mattered to her, she simply pounced on anything that stirred. Thanks to her efforts, Zhang Yang's little band had gathered up into an unstoppable force.

Zhang Yang would be in the air, attacking players as they move forward. Many players obviously thought they would be able to defeat them by swarming up to them in large numbers, but were inevitably defeated by Zhang Yang and his party.

Booooo-----

The horn of war was blown, and could be heard several kilometers from the castle. The metal gates opened up and a neatly organized formation of NPC soldiers marched out from the small castle gates. One by one, platoons came out and formed a bigger formation in the field outside the castle. One more horn was blown, and a handsome, middle-aged man rode out of the castle on a dark red horse. The soldiers made way for the man and he stood at the front of the front line. The man wore a suit of armor that gave out a bright, golden luster. He wielded a normal sized battle hammer on his right, and a bloodied red shield at his left. The cape on his back fluttered in the wind, further adding onto the image of strength to him and his army behind.

[Moucander, King of Emerald Kingdom] (Ascended, Humanoid)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Defense: ???

Attack Power: ???



Skills: ???

Note: The King of Emerald Kingdom. For 12 years, he ruled, he fought, he endured.

The boss has finally made an appearance.

"Kill the boss! EQs! EQs!" cried players when they saw the tag "Ascended". How much was a Violet-Platinum worth, during this stage of the game? If a Violet-Platinum equipment could be sold for several hundred thousand, how much would a Ascended equipment be? After all, an Open World high-level boss' first kill would be accompanied by a server announcement, so, who would not be jealous?

When the boss finally made his appearance, players lit up with joy. However, they were so blinded by greed and ambition that they failed to notice the army behind him.

During that moment, the army of White Jade Kingdom had finally arrived. However, the final "trump card" was not there. Queen Serena and her elite team of dragon riders were nowhere to be seen.

After a short exchange of verbal assaults, armies from both sides let out a deafening battle cry, and like two great tsunamis, the two enemies clashed with each other, head to head. Players had taken the chance to join the fray and quietly meted out the final hits to farm Merit Points. Be it as they may, no one could compete with

Zhang Yang in terms of efficiency.&nbsp;

He had a flying mount to begin with. His movement speed was unmatched at the moment. Like a heavily armored, flying brick of an assassin, he remained hidden in the shadows, sneaking in from where no one could see him.

The flying snake shot down to the earth at breakneck speed and spat its poison attacks. Players with HP lesser than 9,000 would be instantly killed by Zhang Yang. On the other hand, Zhang Yang's {Blast Wave} could wipe out a large area of players. Whenever there were concentrated clumps of players, their numbers would work in his favor, triggering his {Blast Wave} over again and again. Even though the damage dealt by {Blast Wave} was low, it was enough to land the final killing blows.

On the side note, he was the General of the White Jade Expedition Army. The NPC army would grant Zhang Yang 1% of the Merit Points. His Merit points were rocketing at such a speed that he had already surpassed 200,000 points in a blink of an eye.

With NPCs sortied out in the field, the power levels were on an even scale. The battle continued on, as blood was spilled, and bodies were dropping. If Zhang Yang were to turn back, all he would only be greeted by the sight of an endless red. The greens were all submerged and dyed in the blood of both players and NPC soldiers. The blood fest continued on for another two hours, and even though players had joined the fight, their numbers were still at a stable 400,000 or so. By then, most of the NPCs had already fallen. When their numbers run out, the boss should finally step in.

A sea of players rushed towards the last boss, even though they knew that the boss was a Ascended tier level. Their reasoning was that, if each of the 100,000 players could at least deal 100 damage to the boss, the total would go up to 1 million damage. A few rounds of that should easily solve the problem! Or so they thought...

On the other side of the battlefield, players from Emerald Kingdom had hated the fact that they could not switch sides to attack the boss. Some of them were shouting many kinds of proposals, but only one got through.

"Guys! It doesn't matter which kingdom wins.&nbsp;How about we think of the bigger picture? Players of Emerald Kingdom shall make way for players from White Jade Kingdom to kill the boss without any interruption. We hope that you would do the same for us when the boss for White Jade Kingdom appears later! If we could cooperate together, it would easier to defeat the bosses!"

The proposal immediately gained everyone's agreement, but it was only a premature decision. Before Queen Serena appear, no one would be willing to give up their one and only boss to the opposite side.

"Wait!"&nbsp;cried Zhang Yang, stopping Wei Yan Er from rushing over. "Calm down. Do you remember when we first fought the Mythical tier boss? The dungeon had a pile of Mythical tier equipment for us to use, then. Even so, it was a miracle for us to survive the battle! Ascended and Mythical equipment are three tiers apart. The boss is not someone we can just defeat with sheer

numbers. Wait for Queen Serena and let them fight it out. We cannot and never would be able to survive a hit from the boss! Let the two Ascended bosses fight it out, and then we'll attack from behind."

The little brat sulked when Zhang Yang had stopped her but calmed down when she listened to Zhang Yang's explanation. Then again, even if players from Emerald Kingdom verbally agreed to let them fight the boss without interruption, would they hold on to their words? There were many who shared the same line of thought as Zhang Yang. Instead of rushing in like retards, they stood back and observed.

"Fools. You dare to attack a king?!" Moucander muttered and swung his hammer into the air. In an instant, the air around literally cracked. The air where he struck his hammer then made mirror-like cracks that hovered in the air. When the players had stupidly rushed through the cracks, they broke and dealt massive damage to those who ran through the cracks.

‘-155,324!’

‘-167,283!’

...

All players within a hundred radius from the boss were instantly inflicted with damages of more than 150,000! All players were killed faster than the attack from a magic cannon blast. After the attack, no one was standing. No one made any noise. No one

survived.

...

Such power can only be that of an Ascended tier boss.

Players that were rushing from behind immediately held their steps and turned around to flee. No one, not even the strongest tanks could take such a hit and still survive! The boss' first attack was already an AoE attack type, with at least a hundred-meter wide radius. How could anyone survive such an attack, even before landing a single hit on the boss?

When Moucander laid down the first strike, he had let out a loud battle cry and gained the bloodlust. He charged up front and chased after players to kill. With his powerful attacks, he had no need to even reach the players to kill them. All he needed to do was to swing his hammer in the air, and he could deal destructive attacks on everyone within the vicinity of a hundred meters. To make things worse, the skill's cooldown time was merely 10 seconds!

Almost immediately, all the players from White Jade Kingdom turned tail and ran with haste. Some unfortunate players who had just waited 30 minutes to revive were killed instantly when the boss' attacks were within their respawn locations. Those ill-fated players had no idea what killed them and had to spent another 30 minutes waiting. Some were even instantly kicked out, because they had already ran out of tries.

In such a chaotic scene, no one could even uphold the agreement proposed by the Emerald Kingdom players. Verbal agreements meant nothing, when players from White Jade Kingdom were running away like sheep. During this commotion, reasoning made no sense anymore. Greed ruled the battle ground when players from Emerald Kingdom started to "reinforce" their king and kill the players. Now, White Jade Kingdom was actually running out of players.

Moucander's devastating attack and its ridiculously short cooldown time could possibly have turned him into a world class boss. To defeat a boss of such caliber, a large number of player would have to join hands and charge in with sheer numbers, and among those vast number of players, they had to have decent skill and equipment! That, or, players would be wiped out before they can even approach the boss!

That, or the [Forbidden Scroll]!

"Dummy! What should we do? If we let this go on, our forces will be completely annihilated!" cried Han Ying Xue.

Zhang Yang looked down and then turned back. "Right now, all we can do is to hang on until Queen Serena gets here. That's no other way!"

Even though Zhang Yang had a [Forbidden Scroll] in his inventory, he had no intention of wasting it on the boss. The scroll would be extremely effective against players or NPC armies! It would be a complete waste to use the scroll right there and then.

As the situation continued to worsen, One Sword Scroll, Greensleeve Prince, and Snow Seeker had started leading their troops towards Zhang Yang's party. Somehow, in their opinion, if they were to stand behind the world's greatest tank, things would be fine.

Zhang Yang could not help but frowned. If he had unlimited {Shield Walls}, he could at least put up a fight with the Ascended boss. But now, there is literally nothing to do besides waiting for Queen Serena to arrive and babysit them all.

"Haha! Fools! Know your place! Die and rot in hell!" Moucander laughed as he rode his super-speedy mount and chased down more players, wiping them out by droves with his hammer. His movement speed was just a little over the speed of Zhang Yang's flying mount!

Eventually, the number of players of White Jade Kingdom dropped from 400,000 to 200,000. The power balance had been shattered. If Moucander were to stop and return to his castle, players of White Jade Kingdom would still retreat as far as they could, since the number of both sides differed too greatly.

# Chapter 483: The Queen's Protection

---

"Oyy! Stop following us! Buzz off!" cried Zhang Yang. For a while now Zhang Yang and his party had been flitting about, trying to remain inconspicuous, while One Sword Stroke, Snow Seeker and Greensleeve Prince had followed them closely. Zhang Yang was immensely annoyed. With such a large number of player concentrated in a small area, it would surely attract the attention of the boss! If that happens, they would be in serious trouble!

Lo and behold, speak of the devil and he doth appear. Moucander tugged on his reins, and rode like the wind towards Zhang Yang!

"Oh @#\$\$@!" Zhang Yang face turned white. These idiots!

Most unhelpfully, One Sword Stroke and Snow Seeker scattered from his party.

Moucander paused only a brief second, and decided to charge towards Zhang Yang.

"Mother f\*cker!" Fatty Han cried. They were very well aware of the boss' power by now!

Zhang Yang immediately called out, "I'll take the boss! RUN!"

"But--!"



"No buts! RUN! I have a flying mount, I can just fly up in the sky, and there nothing the boss can do to me!" cried Zhang Yang angrily.

"No. That's not what...I mean, you should have done that earlier. We wouldn't have to panic, then!"

"D\*mn you!"

Zhang Yang then left his party behind, and flew in a different direction. With a flying mount, Zhang Yang had been a red-hot target for anyone else, besides the boss. It was already a blessing for the boss to lay off him for so long.

"Trying to escape?!" Moucander smirked as he charged towards Zhang Yang's general direction.

Zhang Yang coughed out a laugh and kited the boss towards him. After noticing the distance between the boss and him getting closer, he shot up to the sky. Even though the boss' mount was no slower than Zhang Yang's flying mount, it should not be able to chase him in the sky!

Just as he turned around to taunt the boss, he was greeted with a huge surprise. The boss had left the surface of the earth, and was airborne!

"What the f\*ck?" Zhang Yang was surprised and struck speechlessly. More importantly, he was terrified. How could a man

with no wings fly!? He was like superman! He was literally flying vertically, at such a terrifying speed and had effortlessly chased after Zhang Yang in no time at all!

200 meters...160 meters...120 meters....

Just when he had narrowed the gap to 100 meters, the boss widened his eyes in concentration and threw the hammer in his hand towards Zhang Yang.

WHAT THE HELL!

Zhang Yang screamed in his heart. He was carrying a shield! He should be a tank! That would only mean that the hammer throw would be a boss' version of the {Spear of Obliteration}!

With no time to be questioning the logic of the skill, Zhang Yang instantly activated {Shield Wall}.

‘-23,772!’

First, he flew like Superman. The next thing Zhang Yang saw was that the hammer had flown back like a rocket, and back to his hands. Oh come on! Thor and Mjolnir?

The boss was annoyed. It was as if he had expected his hammer to kill his target in one hit. He weighed the hammer in his hand, and hurled his hammer again.

Zhang Yang frowned like a deranged man. Wasn't that a skill!? How could it not have cooldown!? That, or the cooldown was already ticking at the moment he hurled his hammer out, and when he received his hammer back, it was ready to be used again! That's too short!

‘-24,582!’

Zhang Yang took another blow. But it did not stop there, the boss continuously hurled his hammer over and over again, with the sole purpose of killing him. Luckily, Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall} had the Titan's Chest Plate reinforcement effect to restore his HP. If he had not, the {Shield Wall} would only allow Zhang Yang to endure a few hits at most! Still, it was only 15 seconds! With only a few seconds left on the timer, Zhang Yang knew that the end was coming soon. He made up his mind to kite the boss for just a little while longer to buy time for Queen Serena to arrive.&nbsp;

Having run out of all his emergency skills, Zhang Yang equipped the Lover's Charm. Just before he activated it, a loud thunderous voice roared through the high heavens.

"Moucander! You dare!"

The sky cracked a thunderous roar. From the edge of the horizon, a green sword aura burst out and morphed into a large dragon. The dragon homed in on Moucander and struck him to the ground.

WHAM!

Like a meteor, Moucander crashed into the earth and made a huge crater with him at the core of the crash site. A large mushroom cloud of dust formed. After that, the dragon dissipated into millions of particles, vanishing without a trace.

Crack!

The earth split apart, and out came Moucander from the crater, with his face covered in dirt.

"Serena--!" Moucander cursed like venom.

Not far from where the sword aura first burst out, Queen Serena had finally arrived. The young queen rode gallantly and charged forward with the sword in her hands, pointing towards the enemy. "Moucander! We shan't forgive the man who would harm Our beloved general! We shall obliterate you, till your bones dried out and your flesh festers with maggots! Hell will give you no quarter!"

She thrust her sword into the air and sent out a similarly green light aura to the sky. The dragon reappeared and lunged itself towards Moucander.

"Hmph. Looking down on us?" Moucander bellowed, and hurled his hammer at the dragon.

BOOM!

Another loud thunderous crack burst out to the high heavens. This time, Moucander had barely managed to evade the dragon. However, the force of the dragon was proven to be stronger, sending Moucander hurtling back a great distance.

Everyone, including Zhang Yang stared, with their jaws dropped down to the center of the earth. The previous demonstration of Moucander was terrifying, but that was him attacking the players. He had not yet displayed his full potential. But now that he had an equal opponent to fight, he was being pushed back by Queen Serena with her sword! Now, everyone knew the power of a Ascended tier boss, and what they could do!

Aside from that, the one thing that no one could understand was the relationship between Queen Serena and Zhang Yang.

"Did I just hear her say, "beloved general"?"

"F\*ck! Moucander was chasing Zhan Yu like a dog, and that Queen Serena came to rescue Zhang Yu and beat Moucander up!"

"What the hell is happening? How did Zhan Yu get someone as powerful as Serena to cover his \*ss?!"

"Goddammit! That's a queen! Zhan Yu is so lucky!"

Everyone was impressed, in awe, envious, and jealous of Zhang Yang's luck. If they could, they would want to walk in his shoes, literally for a day! On the other hand, One Sword Stroke, Luo Xin

Yan, and the many others who followed them were jealous! That being said, they had every reason to feel jealous, little did they know the hardships Zhang Yang had gone through to gain such favors.

"Meteor Sword!? That is the ancient weapon!" Moucander cried in surprise, when he had a clear view of the sword that Queen Serena held in her hands, as their weapons crossed.

"Moucander...We would have spared your life if you were to surrender to Our reign! Yet you have raised your sword at Our beloved general! Death is all We will give!" cried Queen Serena with a heavy killing intent! She swung her sword with force and sent out the dragon once again.

Zhang Yang felt a little overjoyed. Being nothing more than a common player, the Queen herself was so enraged on his behalf, how could he not feel happy?

Moucander roared with rage and charged towards Serena at lightning speed. He raised his shield up high and lunged at the dragon. "Fool, do not overestimate yourself, just because you are wielding an ancient sword! Begone! I shall personally have your head!"

He was an Ascended tier boss. Other than Celestial tiers, most bosses would gain a boost of status points when they were enraged, similar to that of a Berserk state. Moucander brandished his hammer and struck down the dragon. With the dragon out of his way, Moucander lunged at Serena. Serena did not waver, and parried his hammer strike with her sword. They started raining

blows on each other with fervor. Amid the fight, the sword glowed and formed the same dragon.

Both Kingdom's representatives were Ascended tier, there was no way for players to get between them. Their power was so strong that even the sheer rebound of their attacks would kill players who got too close. Zhang Yang was nothing but a helpless soldier when two super-powered bosses were having their slugfest.

There were many players on the sidelines, staring in awe while others were already calculating the timing to land the killing blow. Should they land the killing hit, they would receive a large pool of experience points! Perhaps, even an Ascended tier equipment drop! Despite that, none of them were willing or stupid enough to charge in. They would end up being a pile of ash before they could even breathe! No one would even go near to the bosses! It would be suicidal.

In the air, Zhang Yang did his own calculations. He had the skill - {Shadow of the Void} that would grant him 20 seconds of invincibility to get close to the boss. If his position and timing were accurate, he could land the final blow without being killed himself. However, the accuracy required would be down to the millisecond. If he appears just a little earlier, he could be turned into sand before he could blink.

To get the glory, one must walk through the valley of shadow and death!&nbsp;With that resolution in mind, Zhang Yang steeled his decision.

Even though both bosses were Ascended tier, Serena clearly had

the upper hand. Every time the Meteor Sword struck Moucander, the sword would send the dragon out and deal enough damage to take away 1% of Moucander's HP. Right then, a Level 110 Mythical tier boss would have 33,000,000 HP. An Ascended tier boss would normally be Level 200 or more, and their HP would be more than a few 100 million! 1% of that would at least be a few million!

"Holy crap! That babe packs a punch!" said Fatty Han, after staring at her violently jiggling boobs during the entire time.

"Huh. After getting that sword, the princess turned into a Queen that could rival the gods!" said Endless Starlight, as his eyes remained glued to the globes.

Boom! Foom!

When the sword and the hammer struck each other, the excessive power that leaked out shattered mountains afar, and even the fabric of reality around them were twisting and churning around chaotically! Black holes were forming and disappearing rapidly around Serena and Moucander! Zhang Yang gulped down his saliva, wondering if he would actually be safe within the dimension of the {Shadow of the Void}...

Although Moucander was the same tier as Serena, his attack power was much weaker than her. When he had already lost more than 20% HP, Serena had only lost 2% of her own HP. To put things into comparison, Moucander was fighting 5 of himself!

"Protect his majesty!" cried the soldiers of Emerald Kingdom who



were covered in white ceremonial robes. They then got together and chanted a healing spell.

Green healing texts started to pop up on Moucander's character, but his long HP showed no indication of it!

## Chapter 484: S Class Inheritance Fragment

---

"Futile!" Serena proclaimed, as she swung her sword and blasted the healers behind Moucander with a wide green sword aura. The green light radiance morphed into the dragon and tore them all to pieces. Without any signs of losing strength, the green dragon flew straight on and clawed its way through the castle wall. A loud crashing noise was heard, and the castle wall collapsed, revealing a large hole that drew the attention of many players around.

The blade aura had more power than it was expected to have and soared to the sky, at where the Dragonriders of Emerald Kingdom hovered. The light force cleaved through the giant dragon in half and brought its rider down.&nbsp;

It couldn't be help, that's the power of the Meteor Sword. Players had to drop their jaw and stare in amazement. The sword had destroyed the castle wall. That was justified. But the residual power had even killed a giant dragon that had its level hidden away from players! Who in the field had not raided the Level 50 dungeon Poison Fireland? The little bugger that disguised its dragon form had managed to deceive many unfortunate players. Those who wanted revenge had even returned to the dungeon at Level 80 or 90 and would still be killed in a blast! That's just how powerful a giant dragon was! And yet, Serena had only needed to graze the dragon to cleaved it in two! There were no words to describe her power!

After Serena's display of power, the hatred in the glare of players towards Zhang Yang had grown stronger. Now that the relationship of Serena and Zhang Yang had been publicly displayed, if Zhang Yang were to be killed and have his corpse

camped, he could easily call for the Queen to rescue him! Whether or not it was possible, it's better to be safe than sorry.

"Lucky f\*cker!"

Not far from the battle, Liu Wei cursed. He was being guarded by more than 20 players around. He spat on the ground with such enmity towards Zhang Yang, he was willing to give up his life to kill that bugger.

His talent in gaming was only average, but he had money. A lot of money. With close to unlimited financial supplies, he had hired many professional players to be his underlings and had spent enough money to buy himself a full set of the best equipment available in the market. Through his monetary efforts, he had managed to survive till this point. Just then, he noticed the presence of One Sword Stroke and Luo Xin Yan in the corner of his sight. A sudden rage rose to him like bile.

It's not that he held precious memories with the woman. It was the humiliation she had put him through. Word had already got out. Liu Wei had already become the laughing stock of his circle of friends. If he does not do something about this, he would not have the right to raise his head in his circle.&nbsp;

However, that's easier said than done. One Sword Stroke's family business had gained massive profits through the help of Luo Xin Yan, who provided business strategies. One Sword Stroke's family business had multiplied their business profit to several folds over the past few months. Even though their 700 to 800 million dollar company would never stand on par with the Liu's family multi-

billion dollar assets, they were not easy to be trampled upon.

Zhang Yang was despicable, but One Sword Stroke and Luo Xin Yan were his prime source of shame, and he made up his mind there and then.

...

Players from both sides of the war had started their final push. Since they would never get anywhere close to the two bosses without killing themselves, its best to just fight among themselves. However, it was obvious that Serena was having the upper hand in the battle, Moucander was bound to fall sooner or later. The victory of White Jade Kingdom was as clear as day!

Hence, many of the players had given up on killing the boss. Instead, they turned their sights to the players instead. Best not to cry over spilled milk, and start farming cows instead.

The battle between Serena and Moucander was almost coming to an end. The Queen had laid down more attacks than Moucander could, leaving the king battered and covered in his own blood. Zhang Yang's eyes were constantly glued to Moucander's character. He had taken into account Serena's attack and Moucander HP loss per second and was constantly making adjustments to his timing!

2%! It's time!

Zhang Yang activated {Shadow of the Void} and rushed towards Moucander. His heart was beating at such a rate that he might even die of cardiac arrest, there and then. The battle between Moucander and Serena was so intense, that the attacks in the crossfire would reach as far as hundreds of meters away. It was made that way by the system so that players were not able to reach the boss! The game was only at the age of the Violet-Platinum. Mythical equipment were rare enough and it would be a huge problem if an Ascended tier equipment appeared now!

Based on the game's setting, you qualify to loot the drops of a monster, as long as you have scratched it. The question then, is, would the boss drop anything at all? If he does not, it would be a slap in the face, but if he does, it would be another question of snatching the loot. However, right then, no one could even get close to the boss, much less attack them. Naturally, no one would have a chance, at all! If others can't get it, and I can't get it, what's there to complain about?!

Zhang Yang counted the seconds down. 1...2...3...4...10...15...16...

At that moment, he manually disabled {Shadow of the Void} and unleashed {Killing Cleave} at Moucander. He knew that he only had a one split second window to land a hit. If he fails to kill the boss with it, he would get caught in the crossfire and be killed instantly. Technically, he would use {Horizontal Sweep} or {Blast Wave} that had AoE attacks, which could tough the boss in passing. But then again, there was a problem with the boss' high defense value.

In his past life, he had fought a Holy tier boss before, and

remembered that the boss' Defense value was close to 20,000. Supposedly, this Ascended tier boss should have more than that amount. Even if Zhang Yang had Level 4 {Eagle Eye} that could ignore 65% of the enemy's Defense, it should still be high enough to only deal Suppressed damage (1 damage). Worst off, the gap between his level and the boss' level was more than 30 Levels, and he would not be even able to deal any damage at all! With no damage, his effort would be all but for naught.

That is why he resorted to the {Killing Cleave}. The skill ignored all Defense, was un-Blockable, and unavoidable. It was probably the only skill that would deal damage to the boss!

‘-8,522!’

Splat!

Zhang Yang thrust his sword into Moucander's back. His blade protruded out of the King's chest. Surprised, Moucander stared down at his chest to look at the blade, and turned back to see his killer. His HP was down to 6,000 HP before that blow, and to have a Level 101 player kill him?!

The boss dropped the shield and sword in his hands and fell to the ground, as his life force seeped out of him completely. 10 minutes ago, he had been boldly chasing after Zhang Yang, yet now, he was killed by that same puny, weakling.

"Hmph." Zhang Yang scoffed. He felt satisfied. Call it what you may, cowardice, experience, backstabbing, but revenge was still

sweet revenge!

‘Ding! You have killed Moucander, King of Emerald Kingdom. Obtained 100,000,000 Experience Points!’

‘Ding! You have utilized an unorthodox method to kill the first Open-World Ascended tier boss. You have lost the qualifications to be named in the Hall of Fame!’

100,000,000 Experience points!?

Shring!

Zhang Yang’s character glowed in a golden hue, and gained a level. That was one of the reasons why Zhang Yang wanted to land the killing blow! It was to allow him to obtain the 50% experience points gain. In the game, the system would grant 50% of the entire experience pool provided from the monster to the player who lands the killing blow.

Zhang Yang smirked. It was a huge gain. He then turned his sight to the body of the fallen king and noticed two loot. One was a dark-green, two-handed battle axe and a milky-white shard that looked like a jade fragment.

It was a pity that the boss had only dropped two drops. Still, it was more than he could have asked more. Zhang Yang had only needed to land a hit to gain two drops from the boss. It was an Ascended boss after all, and for the system to drop anything at all

was already a blessing.

‘Server Announcement: Moucander, King of Emerald Kingdom had been slain! The War of Kingdom had ended! The player with the highest score: Zhan Yu, shall be given a title "Imperial Aggrandizer"!’

‘Server Announcement: White Jade Kingdom has absorbed the Emerald Kingdom. The origins of players of both major cities will not be affected.’

With the system announcing the title owner, the battle had officially closed its curtains.

Everyone had seen the bright flash of light coming from Zhang Yang. If they had any sense of logical thinking, they would have easily guessed that he had landed a hit on the boss, and had obtained a massive amount of experience points to gain a level. Those who had eyes as sharp as eagles had noticed Zhang Yang looting the battle axe and the milky piece of jade. That was the drop of an Ascended boss! The urge to rush over at him and kill him for the equipment was overpowering!

Zhang Yang noticed their rash behavior and felt a little disappointed in their stupid actions. Could they not see that Queen Serena was standing right next to Zhang Yang? His "bodyguard" had just defeated another Ascended tier boss, all by herself! Her power exceeded that of a god even though she only bore the title of Ascended.



Before the greedy players got close to him, logic found its way back into their heads and calmed them down.

"Noob tank! Did you just kill the boss? Nyahahaha! Come on! Show me the goods! I wanna see how strong an Ascended tier equipment is!" cried the little girl.

Fatty Han and the rest of the party cheered for Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang gave his thanks.

The battle axe was extremely strong for its level. At his current Strength level, Zhang Yang could barely lift the weapon up, much less swing it around! The blade of the axe was curved like a scythe. There were markings on the blade that glowed with a pale, blood-colored hue. The shaft of the axe had black linings that flowed with a dark energy, from the blade, down to the hilt.

[Agos, The Destroyer's Blade] (Ascended, Two-Handed Axe)

Weapon Attack: 30,612 – 36,612

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 8,845

Equip Effect: Increases 35% damage.

Equip Effect: Increases 3.5% Critical rate.

Equip Effect: Upon attack, grants a chance to trigger the Destroyer's Blade effect to deal 5.6x damage.

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 200

Special: Lowers the Level Requirement by 20 Levels.

Zhang Yang had nothing to say. As expected from an Ascended tier weapon! In his previous life, he had never even been able to obtain such a weapon before!

Before Identifying, the item would only have 70% of the original specs. Upon identifying, the axe should have more than 12,000 DPS, 50% damage increment, 5% critical rate increment, and a chance to deal 8x damage!

Better yet, the weapon even had a special effect that would allow Zhang Yang to equip the axe at Level 180!

Zhang Yang believed that he could finish the God of War Inheritance quest before he reaches Level 150! By then, he could equip a Two-Handed weapon on his main hand, and a Shield on his secondary!

Zhang Yang could hardly contain his excitement! He was about to

unlock the power of a Berserker, and the ultimate defense of a Guardian! How strong would he be, when he gains this Inheritance!

"Hey hey! Dummy~ What did you get? I see that you're smiling like a retard! You must have obtained a legendary item!" Han Ying Xue laughed.

Zhang Yang chuckled and posted the axe's properties in the party channel.

"Holy moley! That's crazy damage right there!"

"D\*mn! It's more than 30,000 damage in one hit! You plan to behead someone with that?"

"Haha! That's my weapon! Good job! Since you can't really use it, this young lady shall take it off your hands!"

Everyone was enjoying themselves, chattering about the equipment prowess. Not far from where they gathered, players noticed Zhang Yang had already picked one equipment out of the loot. Greed had managed to find its way back into their hearts as the players roared and charged towards Zhang Yang!

"Insolent!" Serena roared and swung her sword around. The green dragon appeared, and swept all players off their feet, instantly killing them!

Just then, they remembered that this very NPC had just killed Moucander with relative ease. She was much stronger than Moucander ever was! How could they, mere players, be her opponents?

In an instant, no other players dared to charge forward. Some of them had a plan. Mentally planning their assault, hoping that Serena would eventually leave Zhang Yang alone at some point in time! That would be their cue to kill Zhang Yang, and get his equipment!

Zhang Yang glared around and continued to pick up the last piece of drop on the floor.

[[Milkmaid Deity](#) Inheritance Fragment Piece] (Inheritance Class: S)

Description: Collect 10 Fragment of Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Fragment to form a complete Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Keepsake. You can initiate the Inheritance quest for Milkmaid Deity. You will obtain the Inheritance - Milkmaid Deity upon clearing the quest line. You will gain skills of your related class and skills of Milkmaid Deity. All Inheritance Fragments will resonate with each other and if you are killed while carrying an Inheritance Fragment in your inventory, the Inheritance Fragment will drop at a 100% rate. All Inheritance Fragments can only be stored in a player's inventory.

Special Requirement: Milkmaid Deity Inheritance quest can only be taken by Priest class.

HOHO! S class Inheritance Fragment! So is this how you get it?!

According to Zhang Yang's knowledge, there were only five S class Inheritances in his past life. The warrior class, God of War Inheritance was taken by a North America player. The Knight class, God of Holy Knights Inheritance was taken by a European player. The Hunter class, Shadow Striker fell into the hands of an India player. The Thief class, Shadow Dancer inheritance went to Sun Xin Yu, and the Spellcaster Inheritance, God of Arcane Magic Inheritance was taken by a player from the Japan-Korea region.

As for the sixth Inheritance, the Priest class S class inheritance was never found! The developers of the game had never revealed the method of obtaining it. No one knew the method of obtaining the Inheritance, much less even, the name of it!

Now, the mystery had been solved! The Priest class S class Inheritance was called Milkmaid Deity! Zhang Yang frowned. Which bugger was the person who was in charge of naming the Inheritances! S class Inheritances are such a big deal, that once obtained, the player will be wearing the title like a crown! Who in their right mind would want to have a tag named "Milkmaid Deity!"

The original name of Milkmaid Deity was 奶牛之神. Which literally translates to Milk – Cow – God. In mandarin, or China's mandarin, 奶牛 also means babysitting or supporting. The term is used to dub healers. Initially, we planned on using God of Heavy Support, or other names that carry the meaning of support. However, there would, of course be jokes about Han Ying Xue having more milk to heal which brings us back to square one. In

the end, we've figured that the most suitable translation would be Milkmaid Deity.

# Chapter 485: Milkmaid Deity

---

Zhang Yang fiddled with the Inheritance Fragment and thought of the God of War Inheritance.

In his previous life, the blabbering North America player had publicly announced the method of obtaining the first fragment of the God of War. As long as you get your hands on the first piece of the Inheritance Fragment, the system will automatically lead you to the next fragment, either through quests or other means when a player enters the map that has a piece of the Inheritance Fragment. It was made easy for players to collect all other Inheritance Fragments.

Hence, as long as players get the first one, the rest of the Inheritance Fragments would be easy to collect over time. The first piece of the God of War Inheritance Fragment was not obtained by quest nor a boss drop. It was found deep inside a cave! It was as easy as finding a cave! The problem however, was getting into the cave.

Zhang Yang noticed that something was wrong when he obtained the fragment. The first thought was that the system must have watered down the difficulty. The only Inheritance Fragments that could be obtained bosses were lower class Inheritances. For example, the Monk of Flame Inheritance Fragment. The Inheritance required only four pieces. Zhang Yang could have easily obtained them by killing more bosses. Z class Inheritance quests were fairly easy to complete. The Inheritance quest would require players to run a few errands or fight a few medium difficulty bosses. It was only a matter time and effort when it comes to obtaining lower class Inheritances.

High level Inheritances do not behave the same way. For example, Zhang Yang's Inheritance in his past life was the King Kong Inheritance. All eight Inheritance Fragment pieces were obtained through all sorts of methods, such as quest rewards or treasure chests. None of it was obtained from a boss drop. Quest rewards that were based on Inheritance Fragment were fair on average, however, those Fragments that were obtained from Treasure Chests were a hassle. The system would only provide a vague description of the Fragments' locations. Players would have to search every nook and cranny of every corner of the location that the system provides. Zhang Yang had taken over half a month (real time) searching the entire valley for the sixth piece of his Fragment. Half a god d\*mned month!

Whether the system has watered down the difficulty or not, an S class Inheritance is something that only 6 persons in the world can own. Zhang Yang posted the S class Inheritance Fragment to the party channel, and everyone was thrown off their feet.

"Milkmaid...Deity?" In truth, they were more confused than amazed.

"Sis! I think, you might actually be the milk cow, not the milk maid, if you get this Inheritance!" laughed the little girl as she rolled about, clutching her stomach.

Han Ying Xue snorted. She thrust out her chest proudly and said, "How could you compare such beautiful features to the likes of a cow!?"



"I'll be d\*mned! That's an S class Inheritance. Just how strong would a person be, once they obtain that..."

Curious and intrigued, no one in this world had yet to obtain the first Inheritance. No one knew to what extent does the strength of the Inheritance stretch. However, there was without a doubt that the Inheritance Fragment would go to Han Ying Xue. Milkmaid deity...The name of the Inheritance was obviously directed towards healing and supporting. Since Han Ying Xue already has massive boobies, would her cup size increase from D to E after...

After the battle ended, Zhang Yang followed Serena and entered the Emerald Kingdom. The new Queen circled around the main cities, followed closely by the large army behind her. After demonstrating her powers to the citizens of Emerald Kingdom, she quickly gained support from the NPC citizens and successfully assimilated the kingdom. No NPCs seemed to protest. This was how the developers of the game had envisioned a hostile take over, apparently.

Since PvP in the main city is disabled, Zhang Yang had no fear of getting jumped on. He bade farewell to Serena and joined Han Ying Xue and everyone else at the White Jade Kingdom to spend his Merit points.

Zhang Yang had a total of 200,000 and more Merit points and was completely clueless at how to spend them all! The merchant sold a total of seven Guardian specific equipment that were respectively meant for the Head, Body, Hands, Leg, Foot, Primary and Secondary weapon slot. All of them were Level 100 Violet-Platinum tier. Even though every individual piece was stronger

than his current equipment, he was wearing a set equipment! In the end, the effect of the Titan Armor set was much stronger. The only slot worth changing was his weapon.

However, the Sword of Purging Devourer had yet to be fully unsealed! Furthermore, the sword was just too strong to give up on, for a random weapon that only has a 2.5 seconds attack interval! It was not exceptionally strong, thus it wasn't worth the change.

Even though the equipment offered by the Merit points merchant were strong, none of them were worth buying. Zhang Yang had absolutely zero desire of purchasing them. Other items, such as the [Level 4 Vitality Potion] was not worth it as well. Zhang Yang was an Alchemist. He could make potions and create Transmuted grade potions. The potions that the merchant was selling did not have any Transmutations, hence, potions were out of the picture. Lastly, at the end of the item page were the [Level 4 Gemstone].

He had over 200,000 Merit points. Each [Level 4 Gemstone] would cost 2,000 Merit points. That means he could buy at least 100 pieces. There were only 11 sockets for one character's total equipment, how could he use all 100 Gemstones?!

While other players were contemplating on choosing the right item to buy with their limited Merit points, Zhang Yang was annoyed at having too many Merit points, for he did not know where else to spend them on! If anyone else knew about this, they might be downright pissed.

Other than the [Level 4 Gemstone], Zhang Yang had nothing else

to spend the Merit points on, since most of the items sold by the Merit points merchant would be bounded to him, and cannot be sold nor traded. It makes no sense to earn any money from this.

After buying 60 pieces of [Level 4 Vitality Gemstones], he spent the rest of his remaining Merit points on [Level 4 Strength Gemstones]. He was not sure on when he would complete the God of War Inheritance quest, but when he does, he would need to prepare himself two equipment types. One for Defensive purposes, and the other for Attacking purposes. After spending all his Merit points, Zhang Yang stored all his [Level 4 Gemstone] to his warehouse. He also emptied out most of his inventory and readied himself for the Chaos Realm once again.

In 30 hours, the Territorial War for Wynst Castle would start. Zhang Yang had not immediately started his journey on searching for the first God of War Inheritance Fragment. He decided to grind a little around the area instead. Without much time, Zhang Yang was teleported to Wynst Castle and had waited aimlessly for 3 hours, till he obtained the Territory with no effort.

After he gained ownership of the castle, Zhang Yang wanted to modify part of the castle for a change. Since the territory was part of the Japan-Korea region, and their entrance gate to the Chaos Realm, players will force themselves into the town if they did not possess any flying mounts. That, or, they would forever be stuck in the small region outside the Chaos Realm.

It was a predictable scene. When players of Japan-Korea region find out their gateway to the Chaos Realm occupied by others, they would be enraged, and would initiate an all-out-round-the-clock

war. That is why, Wynst Castle has to be fortified to prevent the downfall of the castle, or it should at least provide a major inconvenience to them.

Of course, it would be impossible to rely on a single castle to block all players from Japan-Korea region. Unless Zhang Yang manages to gather all players from China to join his fight in keeping them back. Zhang Yang wanted to capture the territory simply to annoy the players there. He wanted to slow their progress down a little, and deny them their teleportation points, making them take the long route each time they had to travel to the Chaos Realm.

Regardless of their methods, the territory would most like spend more of its time smoking and on fire, than standing with the regality of a territory. Still, without a [Territory Conquest Order], no one could claim the territory. They could force their way through and damage the territory as much as they could, but the players from Japan-Korea region would never be able to use the Teleportation points.

However, even if someone were able to get their hands on a [Territory Conquest Order], the fight would be between two guilds. In a guild vs guild fight, Zhang Yang and his Lone Desert Smoke would never lose to anyone!

Corner someone to a wall, and they would have nothing to move but front. Players of Japan-Korea region might even mobilize their strongest players and attack the castle with a [Territory Conquest Order]. Even though Lone Desert Smoke was strong, but without the use of the Forbidden Scroll, they might lose to the strongest

alliances from another region!

That was why Zhang Yang decided to add a few magic cannons to the castle wall.

After one comes another, and just when the Emerald Kingdom was taken down by White Jade Kingdom, Serena had started another Kingdom War with the next kingdom, the Black Dragon Kingdom.

Similar to the war from before, players could earn Merit points by killing NPC troops or enemy players. Besides White Jade Kingdom, Emerald Kingdom, and Black Dragon Kingdom, players from other major cities could freely support the kingdom of their choice. Since Emerald Kingdom had already been assimilated by White Jade, they had no other choice but to support White Jade.

Right then, Zhang Yang had no use of Merit points, and he would not have joined the battle if he was not able to defeat the boss like Moucander. However, surprisingly, Zhang Yang was instantly killed when he had used {Shadow of the Void} to get close to the boss fight. The developers might have already found out about his exploitation and had decided to remove the loophole. Then again, it was good enough that the system had not confiscated the Ascended axe, and the S-class Inheritance Fragment from Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang knew better than to be angered about it, and dared not voice his complaints, fearing that they might actually confiscate them!

In the end, Zhang Yang decided to skip the next war and the following wars, since he had already obtained the title "The

Challenger". Since he had no use for Merit points, and nothing to gain from risking his life to kill the boss, Zhang Yang left the city wars entirely to spend his time on something more productive.

With the Meteor Sword in the hands of Queen Serena, war was nothing but a playground for her. After Black Dragon Kingdom, she had even managed to conquer Blood Moon Kingdom, Crimson Sky Kingdom, and the other 5 cities, and had formed the first United Kingdom of China! (In-Game, not the UK in real life).

This did not even happen in his past life!

After conquering the entire of China's region, the Queen was not satisfied with her conquest, and had readied her army to enter the Chaos Realm! Zhang Yang had mixed feelings about the changes that he had brought into this world.&nbsp;

Just when Serena had united China, Zhang Yang had started his search for the God of War Inheritance.

He remembered the words of the North America player from his previous life. Something about the first God of War Inheritance Fragment coming from the Flatlands of the Man Eating Monster. Coincidentally, the required materials to break the second seal for the Sword of Purging Devourer were [Zinc Alloys] which were available in the Flatlands of the Man Eating Monster. However, the priority was the God of War Inheritance, and the quest to break the sword's seal would come second.

Zhang Yang summoned the flying serpent and soared into the sky

to travel to the Flatlands of the Man-Eating Monster. The map in the Chaos Realm was so vast and huge! The Wilderness of Dubaiya was already four times the size of the Ten Barren Sea! To travel from Morning Town to the Flatlands of the Man-Eating Monster had taken him close to one whole day!

The name, Flatlands of the Man-Eating Monster was aptly given, as the place was roaming with Man-Eating Orcs measuring up to 10 meters in height, similar to the ones Zhang Yang had faced before. Even though the society of the orcs was primitive, they were naturally born with the instincts of warriors and hunters. As soon Zhang Yang entered the borders of the Flatlands of the Man-Eating Monster, he was nearly shot down from the sky by a flying boulder. It was an orc that had fired the rocky projectile. As it picked up another boulder from the ground, saliva was oozing out from the corners of his mouth, as he stared at Zhang Yang.

# Chapter 486: Cloak of the Orcs

---

Zhang Yang ignored the monster. There's no reason to make a detour for a single orc.

Even though there were monsters that were airborne and sharing the same airspace as he, there were more monsters that were roaming the earth than in the air. Zhang Yang had merely spent a short time defeating monsters that were randomly scattered in the airspace and reached his destination, the Cavern of Lava and Amber.

The map was the lair of the Man-Eating Orcs. Even though Zhang Yang had not yet entered the system of caverns, he had a good idea about the sheer number of orcs in the map by counting the orcs that were coming in and out of the cavern.

[Molten Man-Eating Orc] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 125

HP: 1,250,000

Defense: 1,300

Melee Attack: 8,381 – 10,381

Skills:



[Raging Smash]: Bashes the target with rage. Inflicts 150% melee physical damage. Has a fixed chance of stunning the target.

[Rock Toss]: Tosses a rock at an enemy. Deals 100% melee physical damage. Cooldown: 2 seconds. Range: 3 – 30 meters. Instant cast.

Melee monsters were harder to kill. If Zhang Yang rounded them up, they would bombard him with a shower of flying rocks and kill him instantly. When a melee monster could use ranged attacks, kiting would be a fatal and useless strategy.

To sneak past them would be a challenge for Zhang Yang, since the monsters were all gathering rather closely to each other. If he accidentally draws the attention of one monster, it would trigger the nearby monsters as well. To put in perspective, it will be hard for him to sneak into the lair. The place was like a major city to the monsters, like how White Jade Castle was to the players there. Imagine how hard it would be for an orc to infiltrate the city, when there are so many pairs of vigilant eyes looking about.&nbsp;

Zhang Yang flew onwards and reached a small river. He descended to a lower altitude and spotted a small straw house at the side of the winding river. He got off the flying serpent and demolished the fences, and made his way to the doorway of the house. He put away his sword and knocked lightly on the door.

The wooden door of the house was so old and battered, it literally shattered down into broken wooden pieces when Zhang Yang's

metal gauntlet touched the door.

"Bloody hell. Which bugger did it!?" cried an angry male voice from inside the house. Zhang Yang moved away and saw a 10-meter-tall male orc. It grits its teeth and expressed enmity towards Zhang Yang.

[The "Honest" Gululu] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 120

HP: 1,200,000

Defense: 1,300

Melee Attack: 8,352 – 10,352

Skills:

[Sneak Away]: When Gululu's HP reaches 20%, he will try to sneak away.

Hmph. This is the person Zhang Yang was looking for!

"Die! Filthy orc!" cried Zhang Yang as he drew out his sword and slashed at Gululu rapidly. The flying serpent and Felice immediately started their attacks only after Zhang Yang had

landed his attack.

Gululu grew madder and hurled his fist towards Zhang Yang and begin bashing him. In just a matter of seconds, Zhang Yang and his two other "minions" had clobbered him up to a pulp!

As the skill described, when Gululu's HP reached 20%, it immediately waved its left arms and disappeared in a puff of smoke! That was supposed to be Gululu's {Sneak Away} which was extremely similar to a Thief's {Vanish}.

Zhang Yang adjusted his position and struck down the earth with {Thunder Strike}. The electric wave spread across the ground and zapped Gululu's massive body, jolting him out of his stealth mode.

As Zhang Yang approached him to lay down more attacks, Gululu got down on all fours and begged, "Please, spare my life! Have mercy!"

Zhang Yang did not and continued slashing away like the wind.

"Please stop! I'm not an Orc! Don't kill me!" Gululu wailed out in pain.&nbsp;

Zhang Yang stopped then and placed his sword over his neck. "If a pig says that it's not a pig, would people believe that?"

"No! Please! I'm really not an orc," said Gululu as he tore off something from his chest. He started tearing off his clothes and

revealed himself as a small red-bearded dwarf with a height of roughly around 1 meter. The cloth that he had torn off was a faint, white color fabric that pulsed in and out of the visible spectrum.&nbsp;The piece of t cloth was called the [Cloak of the Orcs]. Equipping it would grant the appearance of a Man-Eating Orc to the player, which would last for 24 hours. After turning into an orc, the player will be deemed as a "Friendly" to the orcs and could roam around the Cavern of Lave and Amber without being attacked. Players can also complete a few orc quests to gain access to merchants to buy a few local products.

Zhang Yang's main purpose was to venture into the deepest part of the cavern. That was where the first piece of the Inheritance Fragment would be. In which, Zhang Yang would have to search for the NPC and get his hands on the [Cloak of the Orcs].

"A dwarf?" Zhang Yang laughed. "Sure, I'll spare you. In return for that fabric."

"No! Over my dead body!" said Gululu as he shook his head like a turning fan. "I have spent my entire fortune for this cloak! I'd die before I surrender this!"

Even though the NPC's name contained the word "Honest", it was bracketed with double quotation marks. Zhang Yang had encountered this NPC in the past and knew very well how "honest" he really is. Zhang Yang remained cool and said, "That's fine by me. I'll kill you first, and pry the cloak off your dead fingers."

Gululu blinked rapidly and quickly went on all fours again when he saw Zhang Yang drawing out his sword. "Please! Wait! How

about I tell you a secret? This cloak has a time limit to it. Even if I give it to you, you would not make full use of it! However, if you really need it. I can make one for you if you bring me the necessary items!"

‘Ding! The "Honest" Gululu has a quest for you: Making the Cloak of the Orcs. Will you accept it?’

Since it was not possible to take the cloak from the dwarf, Zhang Yang had no choice but to accept it.

Zhang Yang nodded and accepted the quest request.

[Making the Cloak of the Orcs] (Difficulty Level: C)

Description: Gululu has agreed to make you a [Cloak of the Orcs], in exchange for his life. Gather the following materials, 1000x [Inscribed Cloth] (You can obtain Inscribed Cloth from any humanoid monsters above Level 90), 20x [Magic Dye] (Purchase from Ankhgar, the Traveling Merchant), 5x [Psychedelic Deer Fur] (Obtainable from killing and skinning an adolescent Psychedelic Deer. Psychedelic Deers are roaming in the west of the Psychedelic Valley).

Progress:    Inscribed    Cloth    128/1000&nbsp;Magic    Dye  
0/20&nbsp;Psychedelic Deer Fur 0/5

Quest Reward: Cloak of the Orcs x1

## [Cloak of the Orcs] (Tool)

Use: Transforms you into a Man-Eating Orc. Gululu is terrible at such handiwork, but it is believed that the cloak he makes would be able to fool the dumb orcs. However, be wary of the Iron Fangs White Wolf, for their sensitive noses could easily snuff out intruders.

Leve Requirement: 100

Binds upon Acquisition.

Among the three types of material needed, the [Inscribed Cloth] was the highest in quantity. However, it was also the most easily obtainable material. You could easily farm the cloth from any humanoid monsters around. The toughest one was the [Magic Dye]. Even though it could be bought with gold coins, the traveling merchant was always traveling! There was no fixed position to locate the bugger, and it would take some time to track him down!

In his previous life, there was one player who was too free and had nothing to do, and decided to follow the NPC around. He then charged players for 1 gold coin for the location of the traveling merchant. It was extremely cheap, so that player had amassed millions of gold coins in the time span of 2 years. Since Ankhgar was always hard to track down, a player would not mind paying such a small sum of gold to get his precise location.

Even with the flying mount, Zhang Yang would need to fly around the map to search for that one single NPC. It was difficult,

for if he flew too high, the ground would not be visible, but if he flew too low, the scope of his vision would be narrowed. It could not be helped, for the sake of the God of War Inheritance, Zhang Yang would have to search every nook and cranny to find that traveling bugger.

Zhang Yang hopped atop the flying serpent and left Gululu's straw house. Even though Ankhgar was constantly traveling, he had a few fixed routes. In the massive map, there are four long pathways for him to travel by. If players have a flying mount, they could circle over the pathway and find the NPC from the high altitude. The idea was simple enough, but the time taken was another matter...

Zhang Yang had taken more than 2 whole days of in-game time to finally find Ankhgar. When he saw the NPC, he wanted to take out his sword and dismember his legs so that he would not be traveling, anymore!

Zhang Yang descended and jumped down from the air, and landed down next to the merchant. "Traveling merchant! May I have a look at your goods?"

"Mmm. You have good eyes. What do you need? I have the nude shots of Duchess Fischer. I even have the video recording of the Elven Priestess - Phoebe Moonwalker's bathing scene! Worry not, for all of the imagery is recorded with the highest-grade crystal ball! I promise ultra-HD quality pictures! Fret not of any mosaic censorship, my friend!"

Ankhgar was a male human adult, aged roughly around 30. He

had a face full of untrimmed beard and messy hair. After his introductory speech, the man unpacked his cloth baggage and displayed a variety of items on the ground.

Zhang Yang winced. Looks like Messick is not the only perverted NPC in the game, after all.

Zhang Yang browsed the item menu and found the [Magic Dye] that he needed. Each bottle cost only 5 gold coins. Zhang Yang had spent 100 gold coins to buy 20 bottles to meet the quest requirement. Even though it was not much of a burden to his wallet, it was a massive blow to his psychological state of mind!

The [Magic Dye] was bound to Zhang Yang upon his purchase. Which meant that only the player who bought the item could use it. No wonder the player could make a living from selling the location of the traveling merchant! Anyone could have earned the same amount of money if they could just buy the merchant's wares in bulk and sell them in major cities.

Zhang Yang had bought a total of 100 bottles, instead of 20, for insurance. 100 bottles could make a total of 5 [Cloak of the Orcs]. Since the Caverns of Lave and Amber was huge to begin with, Zhang Yang might take a long time to search the entire system of tunnels in the cavern. It's better to be safe and sorry. Who knows, how long Zhang Yang might take to search the fragment of the God of War Inheritance? If he had only one or two [Cloak of the Orcs] and had used them all, and still failed to find the Fragment, he might have to spend another 2 days just to search for the freaking traveling merchant!



Zhang Yang kept the 100 bottles of [Magic Dye] and flew away, all the time holding back the massive urge to slice off the merchant's legs! Next, Zhang Yang traveled west for his next objective, the Fur of the Psychedelic Deer.

"Yo! Wanna check out the latest work of Master Chen, the Great God of&nbsp;Trend? Buy a copy of "A Crazy Night with Chihu Xent"! Live your life the fullest, bro!" cried Ankhgar from the ground.

# Chapter 487: Boy? Or Girl?

---

After flying for half an hour, Zhang Yang arrived at the airspace of the Psychedelic Valley. He then descended down towards the earth surface and found himself in the middle of a beautiful flourishing valley that was filled with life. The rivers were clean, the trees were growing thickly in the forest, and the animals were thriving. There were even rabbits among other small critters, playing around in a small flower bush. It was like Eden. However, even in the most peaceful of environments, danger could exist in many ways. Just when one of the little rabbit was happy hopping around a tree, the root shot out and grabbed the little rabbit. The tree's trunk cracked open a mouth and swallowed it whole.

Felice was a young, growing girl. She was attracted to small cute animal, just like any other girl around. As she was happily following the rabbit, she was heavily startled by the tree's action. The little girl was not a calm little girl. She immediately morphed into her Dragonhawk form and blasted the tree with her {Fire Missile}.

The carnivorous tree was hidden all too well in plain sight. Before it attacked, Zhang Yang had not noticed it at all! Normally, if an entity is a monster, a name tag would be placed on its character. This carnivorous tree looked and behaved just like every other harmless tree in the forest. The system would reveal the name tag, only when the carnivorous tree starts to attack.

[Psychedelic Carnivorous Tree] (Normal, Elemental Being)

Level: 125

HP: 19,400

Defense: 100

Melee Attack: 5,598 – 6,598

Skills:

[Engulf]: Swallows a target whole and digests it in its trunk. Deals 3,000 natural damage every second. Lasts for 3 seconds. When the skill is in effect, the target will be immobilized and cannot engage in any movement. Instant cast. Range: Melee Range.

[Tree Bark]: Immune to all Natural type damage.

Pew!

Felice blasted the tree for 20,122 Fire damage, which had immolated the entire tree, causing it to be killed in one shot.

After the tree died, it dropped a piece of [Solid Wood] which could be used for construction purposes. Zhang Yang smirked and took the wood. Territories required many materials in order to level up. Each consecutive Leveling would require even more materials. Many of the materials required cannot be purchased from NPCs, and players would have to farm them from monsters.

Zhang Yang left the flying serpent to roam around the airspace 10 meters above them, while he and Felice would move on the ground to search for the Psychedelic deer.

Ssh Shh!

Without warning, one tree uprooted itself and started hurling its massive vines towards the flying serpent. The vines were simply too fast. There were just too many of them, and Zhang Yang had no idea on how to block all the attacks, even with his god-like blocking technique. With haste, the vines wrapped around the flying serpent and forcefully pulled the serpent towards itself. This time, an evil face appeared on the trunk of the tree. A wide crack appeared and spread open, revealing a disgusting mouth-like opening. The tree being pulled the serpent and Zhang Yang closer to its mouth!

[Psychedelic Elite Carnivorous Tree] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 125

HP: 1,250,000

Defense: 1,300

Melee Attack: 8,381 – 10,381

Skills:

[Engulf]: Swallows a target whole and digests in its trunk. Deals 5,000 natural damage every second. Last for 5 seconds. During the skill is in effect, the target will be immobilized and cannot engage in any movement. Instant cast. Range: Melee Range.

[Tree Bark]: Immune to all Natural type damage.

Elite tiered monsters are in another league compared to the normal tier monsters. Even though they possessed the same skill, the damage and effort of the skill differed from each other.

"BROTHER--!" Felice screamed in horror as she saw how her beloved Zhang Yang was about to be swallowed whole by the monster. She descended down from the sky like a rocket and morphed into her human form in mid-air. She spun the spear on top of her head as quickly as a helicopter's blade and slashed it downwards to attack the tree.

CRACK!

‘-26,052!’

The stun effect was in place, and the carnivorous tree turned limp. The vines that had entrapped the serpent and Zhang Yang loosened up. The serpent quickly wriggled out of the wooden vines and managed to get itself back into the airspace. Mad with rage, the serpent spat its venom attack on the monster. A large "Immune" text popped out when the venom attack landed. The serpent was not like a Battle Companion, for they did not possess

enough sentience and knowledge to understand the mechanism. When the serpent noticed its attack had done nothing to the tree, it sucked in a long breath and spat more venom instead.

"Haha! Dumb snake!" Zhang Yang lightly bashed the flying serpent's head and laughed. This was one of the weaknesses of a spell-type battle mount. In a scenario where the monster has magic immunity, the battle mount could not deal any damage at all! Zhang Yang laughed and called out, "Felice is much better than you!"

Instead of a cute smile, Felice sulked instead. "Big brother...how could you compare me with a stupid animal...?"

"Sorry! My bad! My bad!" said Zhang Yang almost immediately. He then quickly lunged himself at the carnivorous tree and slashed away.

The poor Snow-Scale Wind Serpent blinked its green little eyes and stared incredulously at Felice for a moment. If it could open its mount and talk, it would be saying, "Please... You morph into a big-\*ss bird thing and pew pew your fire missiles! You are spitting red fire while I spit green poison! We're just the same! Who are you calling stupid! You dumb chick!"

"Aurgh..." the carnivorous tree groaned and flung out more vines to entrap Zhang Yang. Even though the properties had explained that it was a melee type monster, its vine could reach out as far as 50 meters away! It's even further than a regular ranged attack! Furthermore, the vines it projects out could reach as many as a thousand! Zhang Yang could barely defend himself with {Block}

and other defensive maneuvers, but the flying serpent he was on would take the hit and will be trapped by the vine attack! It would just be the same as taking the attack himself!

What a troublesome monster!

Zhang Yang believed that if Wei Yan Er or Lost Dream, and other players who had super-charged attack skills would still lose to this tree if they did not resort to their ulti skills. Or perhaps they could not even defeat one without ultis!

Fortunately, even if the vine attacks could not be properly blocked, the attacks would still factor in the target's defense and damage reduction passives. The attack done on Zhang Yang was only over 3,000, which was considered as cats claw to him.

Felice, in her Dragonhawk form had been attacking the tree with many blasts of {Fire Missiles}. Even though the tree was immune to Natural damage, it was exceptionally susceptible to Fire type attacks. Each of Felice's attack could deal around 30,000 to 40,000 damage! If Zhang Yang had not reacted quickly to control the aggro of the monster, Felice would have been the first on its aggro list.

After a messy trading of attacks, the carnivorous tree was finally burnt into a crisp, and dropped seven counts of [Solid Wood] which made Zhang Yang happy, though for only a second. Even after the tree was reduced down to a burst block of trunk, the flying serpent was still mad at it and continued to spit more venom on its crispy wooden corpse. Zhang Yang laughed and patted the serpent's head, saying, "Enough with the spitting! Look at the

ground! Geezz. How am I supposed to pick up the wood with all your saliva on it!"

Suddenly, Zhang Yang remembered something. "I haven't given you a proper name yet, have I? Hm...since the white bear is called Whitey, I shall call you Whitey Jr!"

Whitey Jr. blinked and stared at Zhang Yang, and did not react in any way at all. It's hard to tell whether or not the serpent liked the name!

Zhang Yang moved on and finally found himself a Psychedelic Deer!

The Psychedelic Deer was just a normal monster. Felice could easily kill the poor deer with one single blast of {Fire Missile}. However, Zhang Yang had done this quest before in his past life and he knew one annoying detail about it. Only the male Psychedelic deer would drop their fur! If Zhang Yang simply goes about killing every deer he sees, all of the Psychedelic deer would run away and hide when the kill count reaches a certain number! If that happens, the respawn duration would reach as high as 2 to 3 days long! Zhang Yang would never wait that long just to farm for 5 counts of fur!

He turned to Felice and said, "Felice, could you fly over there and checked the gender of the deer out for me?"

Felice gave Zhang Yang a poker face and remained quiet.



Battle Companion were not servants, they did not need to obey every single command from a player. If they felt that something was wrong, they can choose to deny the command. If the players choose to forcefully make the Battle Companion obey him or her, it could break the contract and the Battle Companion might even choose to leave the player.

Felice would not listen and obey such a disgraceful command, and Zhang Yang had to do it himself.

Zhang Yang went prone on the ground and crawled over to the Psychedelic Deer. The deer was as tall as a regular size human, and could easily be spotted from a good distance. When it heard Zhang Yang crawling over, it whipped its head up and jumped to its hooves to charge towards him.

Bump!

Zhang Yang quickly got up to his feet and defended himself with his shield. He lifted the shield upwards and forcefully bashed the deer away. At his current Strength value, he could easily knock away the deer without moving a budge. The poor deer fell off its feet and landed on its back.

Zhang Yang immediately ran up, and grabbed the hind legs, spreading them apart!

Psychedelic Deer: "..."

Zhang Yang: "..."

"It's a girl." Said Zhang Yang as he quickly released the deer and ran back. Zhang Yang returned to the flying serpent and shot into the sky, leaving the furious female deer stomping the ground in anger.

Please, forgive me for my sins!

Zhang Yang felt like he was a pervert old uncle that runs around a park to trick little girls into doing some crazy, unspeakable sh\*t with them! That was a man tricking another, but Zhang Yang just had to spread the legs of a female deer! How shameful would it be if someone had recorded the scene and distributed it throughout China!&nbsp;

Felice, who had been watching from the sidelines since the beginning, was rolling on the floor, laughing her lungs out. After a round of persuading, Felice had finally caved in and agreed to check on the gender of the deer they encountered. The two of them continued their sexual harassment journey and left many traumatized victims in their wake. If the deer could speak, the entire valley would have been screaming with cries of help like "THERE'S A PERVERT AROUND!!"

The number of female deer in this valley were too many to count. 30 minutes since their first victim, Zhang Yang had only managed to kill 3 male deer and obtain their fur. From a "dirty" perspective, those three "dudes" had a sea of hundreds of female doe to copulate! What a time to be alive!&nbsp;No wonder the number of male deer were so little, perhaps all of them were already "worn"

out from the number of doe around!

Zhang Yang suddenly recalled the 6 female vixens in his office and felt a sudden chill down his spine. If he had not had such a strong will to resist their temptations, Zhang Yang would have already been swallowed whole by the six horny vixens! Zhang Yang Jr. might be rendered completely useless by the end of the day!

After close to an hour of hunting and harassing, Zhang Yang finally collected 5 counts of Deer fur. He then quickly made his way back to Gululu's straw house, all the while trying to make himself forget that he had ever done this deer harassing...thing...

Along the way back, Zhang Yang had a more leisure experience, farming the [Inscribed Cloths]. Zhang Yang had no need to target a specific monster or gender, and only killed any humanoid monster that was available along the route to Gululu's house. Just halfway through the journey, Zhang Yang had already amassed more than 1,000 [Inscribed Cloth]. Zhang Yang zoomed into the air and reached Gululu's straw house in just one hour.

Zhang Yang entered the house and found Gululu tinkering with something on the table. When he saw Zhang Yang entering the room, he quickly grabbed a white cloth on the side and hid it from view hastily. Angry and annoyed, Gululu stood up and yelled, "Could you at least knock the door!"

Zhang Yang shrugged. "What door?"

Gululu sighed heavily. There was a door, but it was already

destroyed by Zhang Yang when he first came to his house. Gululu walked out of his seat and used his body to block the item from Zhang Yang's line of sight. "Why are you back so early?"

"Meh. All the things that you asked for? I got them." Zhang Yang unloaded his inventory and placed the items that he had asked for on the table.

"Not bad, for a human! Hm...This is good...This is great! With this, I can finally enter the—" Gululu bit his own tongue to stop himself from saying anything more. Pretending that it had not happened, Gululu examined the items on the table.

"Alright. Leave me alone. I need complete silence to focus on my work!" said Gululu, as he shoved Zhang Yang out of the house.

Zhang Yang already knew that the NPC was a big cheater. The materials he gathered was more than enough to make 3 [Cloak of the Orcs]! The dwarf had cheated him of his materials and had even refused to let Zhang Yang observe the crafting process. Perhaps, he was trying to use the extra materials to do something else...?

Zhang Yang had merely waited outside the house for a while when Gululu stomped out and threw a large piece of fabric at Zhang Yang. "Take it and leave! Do not let me see you again! I'll have you know that I chipped in my own materials to craft this for you!"

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Making the Cloak of the

Orcs!’

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Clock of the Orcs!’

What a shame that the quest had not given any experience points!&nbsp;

The quest was a repeatable quest. As long as a player could hand over the three materials in their correct amounts, Gululu would craft out the [Cloak of the Orcs] again. However, since the NPC would consume all materials, even if it was enough to make two cloaks, the trade had to be precise, or the NPC would silently keep the materials to himself.

Zhang Yang rode on the flying serpent and came to the Cavern of Lave and Amber. Zhang Yang put on the [Cloak of the Orc] and his character was turned into a huge, 10-meter-tall male orc, wearing only a piece of small loincloth like a Japanese sumo wrestler.

"Haha! Big brother is so shameless!" cried Felice as she blushed.

"Laugh? Haha! I’ll grab you!" said Zhang Yang as he gently lifted Felice and put her on his shoulder. He then paced quickly into the caverns.

The form he took just then was extremely huge and heavy. Each of his steps was so heavy that his lightest footsteps already shook the ground.

"Ho. Food! Good Food! Me eat!" cried one of the Man-Earing Orcs when it saw Felice on Zhang Yang's shoulder. It rushed towards Zhang Yang with both its hands outstretched.

Wham!

Zhang Yang greeted the incoming orc with a high-five to his face. The orc was blown off his feet and was sent flying till he smashed strongly, face-first into the cavern wall.

"Hahaha! You funny! He strong! Haha!" the orcs around the cavern laughed barbarically.&nbsp;

Among the orcs, it was a culture for them to respect the strong. When they see something they want, they would take it without question. Naturally, if they faced an overpowering foe, they would respect the stronger one and give up.

That was why Zhang Yang had wanted to display his strength when one of the orcs wanted to attack him for Felice. The orc that was "high-fived" to the face sulked angrily and sneaked away with a shameful expression.

## Chapter 488: A Vixen Orc?!

---

His strength clearly demonstrated before every orc present and they submissively made way for him. That was what power could do in the orcish society. Not politics, not money, but by fists of fury. Whoever who wields the biggest stick shall be treated with utmost respect. As the saying goes, the strong prey on the weak.&nbsp;

Zhang Yang ventured into the deepest section of the orcs' lair.

The Cavern of Lava and Amber was unsurprisingly huge, considering the average height of the orcs which surpassed 10 meters when standing upright. The ceiling of the cave loomed 40 meters above the ground, providing sufficient space to move in comfort. Despite being in a cave, its interior was well-lit with shards of white stalactites that hung down a few inches from the ceiling. The stalactites were filled with glowing white, non-florescent liquid, giving off a warm light that was easy on the eyes. Although they did not provide the lighting of modern-day bulbs, Zhang Yang could view his surroundings and walk easily, without the need to squint his eyes.

After walking far enough to be out of the range where news of his strength had spread, he was challenged again by random orcs who wanted Felice as his dinner. They would only crumble before Zhang Yang, who found no need to draw his sword.

The cavern was ancient and was filled with many mineral deposits around the ground and the walls of the cavern system. There were many rare and high-leveled metal ores like Platinum

and Magnesium which were needed to raise the Level of his territory to Level 4. It was a pity that Zhang Yang had the Herb Foraging Familiar instead of the Mineral Foraging Familiar. Zhang Yang could only stare at the precious metals as he walked past them since he could not engage in any actions that would break off his camouflage.

The concentration of minerals that spawned here could rival that of a Mining Cave! However, being the lair of high leveled orcs, the monsters here were at least Level 120 Elite tier monsters. It would be a challenge to occupy this place perpetually. Professional miners would never reach a higher level than other players due to their specialized roles. It would be impossible for them to defeat the Level 120 Elite tier orc inhabitants of the cave. If a large number of players was sortied to handle the problem, the expenses would not be covered by the earnings of the miners here. That was why, even when many players had already reached Level 150 in Zhang Yang's previous life, the place was never occupied by any groups of players or guilds.

Zhang Yang continued on his venture and encountered a massive female orc that had appeared out of nowhere.

"Food! Good!" Her voice was so deep that anyone could have mistaken her for a male. It was not just that alone, her appearance was bigger than Zhang Yang by one or two meters. Her chest was grotesquely huge, covered only by a thin layer of fur pelt. The muscles in both of her arms and chest were bursting with power! Imagine being choked by those...

The female orc glared at Zhang Yang and bellowed arrogantly,



"Shorty! Give me that piece of meat!"

Zhang Yang grunted in annoyance and swung his fist at the female orc.&nbsp;

"You dare to hit me!? Why would you not listen to me! In that case, I shall make you listen to me!" The female orc bellowed ragingly and hurled its spiked club at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang did not take out his sword and shield, as his character was currently in the shape of an orc. Although he had grown much larger, the sword and the shield remained the same. In his hands, the sword was like a toothpick and the shield was like a maple leaf. How could he hold a toothpick up and a leaf as a sword and a shield?

Zhang Yang held nothing back at all, guiding his fist into the face of the female orc. He pulled his fist back and sent it off again, wasting no time. His continuous punches came like lightning, with almost no intervals between. After one punch landed, another landed on her face. And another one after that. Zhang Yang was like Ip Man doing his consecutive chain punches, too fast to even see. She took so many hits that she lost her balance and fell to the ground. The punches were all Supporting Attacks. The attack interval of a Supporting Attack is fully determined by the user's own dexterity and agility. Thanks to his training, Zhang Yang could punch 7 strikes in a second. To him, it was not as fast, but it was enough to send his enemy to the ground.

Thud!

With swollen eyes that were bulging out of their sockets, the female orc did not get up. Instead, she went on all fours and begged for her life.&nbsp;

"I yield! I yield!" said the female orc, as she spat out a couple of broken teeth and a pool of saliva, mixed with her own blood.

Zhang Yang could not equip his sword and was only able to deal Supporting Attacks. The damage dealt to the monster were all superficial. Zhang Yang scoffed, blew air to his fist, looked away arrogantly, and left the female orc be.

"Wait! Shorty! At least, share the little human with me! At most, I'll be in bed with you for one night!" said the female orc, disgruntled. She got up to her feet and winked at him. Zhang Yang saw how she had posed herself suggestively, and that wink so disgusting that it had almost forced Zhang Yang to display yesterday's semi-digested dinner to the world.

A vixen! A female orc vixen!?

Never in his life was there ever such a savage entity that would rely on seduction to get what it wants. No wonder they say that Love is blind. Well...true love, that is...

Zhang Yang forced himself to swallow the disgust and ignore the "hot chick" that was selling off her body for a good meal, and continued on his way.

"Hey! I must say, shorty...I am the most beautiful orc around here. Other orcs have been begging to have a night with me, and I would be demanding 3 good meals! You're not too tall for my taste, but you have the strength that suits me. I'll give you one last chance. I'll have you know that chances like this do not come around often!"&nbsp;said the self-proclaimed beauty queen.

Zhang Yang groaned painfully. He cringed and spun around to give her a good round house kick to the head. Now that he had released his annoyance and anger, he turned back and walked away. Just as he took his first step, he felt a tight grip on his other leg. He turned down and saw the female orc hugging his left leg with both of her hands. Zhang Yang grunted and forcefully shook his leg free, but the female orc was holding on tightly!

"Mmm~~ You're the strongest orc that I have ever seen in my life! Please! Take me! I'm in love with you! Please, take me! I promise that I'll never sleep with another orc in my life, ever again!" said the female orc in ecstasy as she crawled to Zhang Yang and hugged Zhang Yang's leg with her hands and feet.

Love? Love my butt!

Zhang Yang let out some cold sweat and decided to punch some common sense into the female orc's head. After a good amount of beating, the female orc finally loosened her grip, allowing Zhang Yang to wriggled away. The moment Zhang Yang got back his legs, he jumped to his feet and sprinted like Usain Bolt.

Being strong had never been such a nuisance before!

"Teehee! Big brother is such a captivating man, that no matter what form you take, there will always be girls flocking to you!" said Felice smugly.

Zhang Yang cringed and frowned. While he was having the time of his life, the little girl had thought that he was an omnipotent god!

After shaking off the sex-crazy female orc, Zhang Yang searched around the cavern and went in deeper. After a great deal of searching, Zhang Yang finally stumbled across the aforementioned Iron Fanged White Wolf. Unlike the green name tagged orcs around, the Iron Fanged White Wolf had a red colored name tag which meant that they would immediately attack Zhang Yang if he walks into their aggro range.

Even though Felice is capable of killing the normal tier wolves with one clean blast, Zhang Yang's camouflage would immediately be dispelled the moment Zhang Yang is engaged in a fight. It would be a bad idea, since he had already infiltrated deep into the enemy's lair. Unless he uses {Burrow} to run away, he would be surrounded by a large number of Elite tier orcs and be beaten to death!

After evading the Iron Fanged White Wolf, Zhang Yang moved around the cavern and took a longer route to reach the deepest and darkest section of the entire system of the cavern. The cave that he arrived at was as large as a football field. To think that the God of War Fragment would be hidden in this place, it would take Zhang

Yang a great deal of time to search for it! Although it was not comparable to searching for a needle in a haystack, it was not that simple as well. It's just a matter of time and the level of patience that one has.

The cave was the orc race's sacred ground. The entrance of the cave was heavily guarded by over 20 orcs and four Iron Fanged White Wolves. The problem was that the wolves were constantly on high alert, not providing any chance for him to sneak past!&nbsp;Zhang Yang could fight his way in, but there were 20 and more elite orcs, and one of them was a Violet-Platinum boss! Zhang Yang did not dare do it.

Technically, he could, by getting himself killed again and again. When players revive at a spot, they could choose to revive anywhere, 30 meters away from their bodies. Hence, even though they would be killed instantly after reviving, they could progress slowly by respawning 30 meters forward each time. It might consume a lot of time, but it should be possible to reach the end of the cavern.

This strategy can only be applied if the place is not a dungeon-based instance. In a proper dungeon, after a player dies, they can only revive at the entrance of the dungeon and would have to run physically to their bodies. Zhang Yang did not need to do anything so tedious, as he had {Burrow} and {Shadow of the Void} to sneak past the enemy guards.

Since he had no idea on what was hidden in the cave, Zhang Yang decided to use {Burrow}. {Shadow of the Void} would remove all living entities in his vision, whereas with{Burrow}, Zhang Yang

could still observe anything above the ground. If there are monsters inside the cave, things could end badly for him.

Zhang Yang returned Felice to his inventory and activated {Burrow}. The ground beneath his feet turned into liquid form, allowing Zhang Yang to sink in like a submarine. Zhang Yang sunk 20 meters into the ground and walked underneath the feet of the monsters and into the cave. Luckily, there were no monsters inside the cave and after walking away from the cave entrance, Zhang Yang resurfaced on the ground and brought out Felice back to the world as they started their journey to search for the God of War Inheritance Fragment.

Only after entering, did Zhang Yang understand why the orcs were guarding this place. There were many giant-sized coffins inside the cave, scattered all over the area. In his previous life, Zhang Yang had only managed to complete a few quests in this place to purchase a few skill books and recipes from the Reputation merchant there. Never once had he ventured this deep into the cave to stumble across this sacred ground.

It looks like Zhang Yang would be grave-robbing once again. With great force, both Zhang Yang and Felice opened the cases of each coffin and practically rummaged the contents inside for the Inheritance Fragment.

As time went on, Zhang Yang took 10 hours or so to have searched only 25% of the total coffins in the area. The only silver lining was that it was a sacred ground. There would not be a single monster inside there to interrupt them. Even though Zhang Yang was no longer disguised by the [Cloak of the Orcs,] he had no fear

of being discovered.

24 hours later, Zhang Yang was losing patience.

Luckily, only the first pieces of Inheritance Fragments are the hardest to find. With the first piece acquired, it would serve as something like a GPS, guiding players to other Inheritance Fragments. However, those would merely be the pre-requisite quests. After gathering all the fragments, Zhang Yang would have to complete another series of quest to obtain the God of War Inheritance.

Zhang Yang logged out a few times for his biological needs and workout routine. He occasionally had fun with Wei Yan Er, and even teased Han Ying Xue along the way. Two days had passed, and Zhang Yang had almost turned over every coffin in the cave, making no progress whatsoever.

Was the...the American pig trolling the world, making up a tall tale about his Inheritance? If that was the case, he would conquer the territory for the North America region, kill that f\*cker, and camp around his body for 3 days and 3 nights!&nbsp;

Just when he was about to throw a fit, Zhang Yang notice a shadow moving around the entrance. It slunk around to a corner of the cave. It squatted on the ground and got busy with something.

Zhang Yang moved in closer without making any noise, and realized that it was the dwarf, Gululu!

# Chapter 489: Starting the Inheritance Quest

---

How did that dwarf get in?

Zhang Yang moved like a shadow and quietly hid behind a coffin closest to the dwarf. He peered out and saw that he was unpacking many large bottles, mixing them up together. There was cloud of colored gas floating up and around him. After mixing a couple more liquids, he raised a bottle of what seemed to be a completed potion and spoke to himself happily. "I did it! I will be the first to find the ancient treasure! I will be the one to write this historical event down in the books! I will be the greatest explorer there is! I will be the richest there is!"

Gululu then poured the liquid onto a solid block on the floor, melting it away. The rock was pitch-black and looked extremely tough, but when Gululu poured the liquid over it, it turned into a sand and was blown away. Gululu then brushed the now softened rock away and unearthed a black colored box.

The box was not big. It measured only 20cm wide, 10cm long, and 10cm tall. It looked plain, and was not even locked.

"Ah! My precious!" cried Gululu happily. He then opened the box's lid and tossed it aside. There was a large, 17 to 18 cm long metal pole. The metal pole was extremely tattered, and both ends appeared to have been broken off something larger. It seemed to be the broken-off handle of an axe, or a hammer.&nbsp;

It had to be the Fragment of the God of War Inheritance!



Just when the dwarf NPC reached out to touch it, Zhang Yang reached out as well and tapped Gululu's shoulder.

"WOAH!"

The dwarf jumped in surprise and leaped up 2 meters high in the air. Zhang Yang was greatly impressed at his sudden burst of strength and grinned. Gululu, on the other hand, turned to Zhang Yang in shock and asked, "Why are you here?"

Zhang Yang smiled silently, his hand shot out to grab the metal pole in the box.

"Argh! It's mine! My precious!" cried Gululu in a fit of anger. He then took out a large battle hammer and swung it at Zhang Yang's head.

Zhang Yang raised his shield effortlessly and deflected the hammer, knocking it completely off-course. Zhang Yang snickered and said, "Dwarf, that thing belongs to no one! Finder's keepers, loser's weepers!"

"Bastard! I found it! It belongs to me! I have been searching for more than 10 years! I shall have your head!" cried Gululu angrily.

Zhang Yang finally understood how things were. The NPC was the "guide" for the God of War Inheritance quest. As long as player waited in the cave long enough, the NPC would appear! As long as

the player takes note of such small, slinky actions, they would find the Fragment of the God of War Inheritance. That, or they would not be able to find such a small, unassuming object in such a large field.

It was kind of sad for the dwarf. If the Fragment is taken away from the NPC, it would be forever gone, since the quest is Unique, and could never be repeated again.

Felice morphed into her human form and thrust her spear at Gululu. "Little Dwarf! How disrespectful you are to big brother!"

Gululu was terrified of Felice. Back then, the fair maiden had launched a {Fire Missile} and burned half of this brown beard away. Dwarves treated their beards as prized possessions, and would never shave them off. Gululu remembered her fire attack very well and cowed away.

Zhang Yang took the chance and took hold of the metal pole as Gululu scrambled from Felice.

[God of War Inheritance Fragment (1)] (Inheritance Class: S)

Description: Gather all God of War Inheritance Fragments to form a complete God of War Keepsake. You can start the Inheritance quest after obtaining the Keepsake. You will acquire the Inheritance God of War after completing a series of quests. You will gain a boost to your class skills and also the God of War Inheritance skill. All Fragments of the God of War Inheritance will resonate with each other. If you are killed by a player who

possesses a piece of the same Fragment, the Fragment in your inventory will be dropped upon your death. All Inheritance Fragments can only be stored in your inventory.

Special Restriction: God of War Inheritance can only be acquired by Warrior classes.

Got it!

Now that he thought about it, the first piece of the Inheritance Fragment had been rather easy to obtain, since all he did was running and searching. That was only due to Zhang Yang's past experience. If he had not been reborn with his memories intact, it would have been impossible for him to obtain the piece! In fact, that knowledge was not enough, even if players, other than Zhang Yang had managed to get into the cave, they would need to have the luck of spotting Gululu!

Luck! Luck is required to obtain most of the Inheritances! Naturally, some players were lacking in the financial aspect. Some of them would be willing to sell the piece of Inheritance that they had, and sell it off to the highest bidder. Even it is an extremely rare piece, money comes first for these folk. As the game progressed, higher leveled Inheritances played an important role in taking the top. The inheritance that could induce a transformation, even more so! If players had chosen to sell an Inheritance Fragment that was capable of transforming a player, it would be a mistake that would haunt them for the rest of their lives!

Once a player activates the Inheritance transformation, they

could easily raid a Hard mode dungeon alone, or perhaps even a Hardcore mode as well! During PvP battles, unless players had transformation skills of their own, they should simply throw in the towel when facing one such player.

Now that Zhang Yang had easily swiped away the hard-earned treasure that Gululu had found, the poor dwarf stomped on the ground angrily like a child. The dwarf was so enraged that he even ignored Felice and charged towards Zhang Yang to fight him head on. The little dwarf swung his hammer rapidly at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang only laughed and held his arm out, holding the short dwarf back by his head. No matter how fast or strong the dwarf was, it meant nothing if he could not even touch Zhang Yang! Still, Gululu was a green name tag entity, killing him would not do any good to Zhang Yang.

"Bastard! I'll bash yer head in!" cried Gululu as he withdrew a few steps away. Gululu then took aim and came at Zhang Yang with a jump attack. However, Zhang Yang was much quicker, and he easily avoided the jump attack simply by taking a few steps back. Gululu's attack landed on a coffin instead and knocked the entire thing down.

Wham!

The lid of the coffin cracked open and the body inside rolled out.

"Who dares disturb the dead!" a low voice echoed through the entire cave. What followed next were massive skeleton hands

bursting out from inside the other coffins, each of them spawning an Orc Spectres!

F\*ck me, that's more than a thousand elite Spectre monsters! What a cunning NPC!&nbsp;

"Felice!" Zhang Yang called out to her and Felice nodded her head. Zhang Yang then unsummoned her and immediately activated {Burrow} to escape via the underground pathway. Poor Gululu had his plan backfire on him, as he had become the one and only target for the spectres to attack. It would not be a good end for him...

Zhang Yang then used a [Teleportation Scroll] to return to Morning town. Now that he had the first and vital piece of the Inheritance Fragment, the next steps would be&nbsp;to hunt for the remaining 9 Fragments. Zhang Yang wanted to complete the Inheritance before more players from the Japan-Korea region enters the Chaos Realm. By then, he could transform and kill all the players himself! How awesome would that be! Haha!

Zhang Yang smirked. Now that he had the first piece, the nine others should be easier to hunt. Zhang Yang mounted on Whitey Jr. and flew, map after map. As long as there is a piece of the God of War Inheritance Fragment available in the map Zhang Yang arrives in, the system would automatically notify Zhang Yang about it. Most of the Inheritance Fragments should be included in a quest. They could be hidden in plain sight, or stashed in the most obscure of places. When Zhang Yang holds the first piece of the God of War Inheritance Fragment near another Fragment, both Fragments would glow and produce a bright light, which would

show the position of the Fragment.

The Fragment pieces are not dropped by monsters in the first place. They were merely hidden away in random places that had many monsters guarding them. Before actually hunting them, Zhang Yang would have to kill his way around to make sure that the place was safe. The God of War Inheritance Fragments were all over the place, they were deep in a valley, sometimes buried deep in a snow pile, buried on the side of a steep cliff, buried deep in the desert, and the last piece was in a pot, deep in the ocean! There was even a Level 135 Mythical tier shark boss guarding it!

Zhang Yang got Felice to lure the boss away, and he rode the Mythical Turtle to swim towards the pot to get the Inheritance Fragment. The pot was buried in the seabed, and it took quite some time to retrieve the last piece of the Inheritance Fragment!

Zhang Yang unsummoned both the Mythical Turtle and Felice, before leaving the battlefield with {Shadow of the Void}. Zhang Yang arrived at a safe location and quickly teleported to Morning town.

His hands trembling with excitement, Zhang Yang assembled all the Fragment pieces together with extreme care. As the last piece fell in place, a bright radiant glow burst out, and all of the fragment pieces fused together, as if they were being welded together. The fragment pieces formed a long battle axe, shining with an intense radiance.

Zhang Yang picked up the hammer and found that it was unexpectedly easy to lift. Zhang Yang took the axe up and carefully

examined the axe. All of the fragments had magically welded together. The surface of the axe was so smooth, and there were no traces of any cracks!

[God of War Inheritance Keepsake] (Quest Item)

Use: Initiates the God of War Inheritance quest.

Class Requirement: Warrior

Level Requirement: 100

Without hesitating, Zhang Yang initiated the quest. The axe glowed brightly, and the light entered his body as it surrounded him like an ethereal spirit.

‘Ding! You have initiated the God of War Inheritance. This is a series of quests. When you have completed all the quests, you will obtain the God of War Inheritance!’

‘Ding! You have accepted a quest: The Search for Meka!’

[The Search for Meka] (Difficulty Level: D)

Description: After gruesome hours of searching, you have collected all 10 pieces of the Inheritance Fragments and formed an ancient axe. Based on your inexperienced knowledge of history, you have failed to determine the origin of the axe. However, you

have heard of an old warrior named Meka. With the man's vast experience with weapons, he might be able to tell you something. Meka is currently residing at the Shuhada Lake of the Dayu Rainforest. What are you waiting for! Get to it, quickly!

Completion: Find Meka and ask him of the axe's origin 0/1

More running around again...

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. However, it was a good thing, as he was the first player in the entire world to start an Inheritance quest. Perhaps, if word gets out that he is the first to obtain an Inheritance, people will start going crazy! Nobody but Zhang Yang was in the Chaos Realm, and nobody else had ever laid eyes upon an Inheritance Fragment. For him to acquire a complete set of an S-tiered Inheritance would be too much for them. Zhang Yang should be looking out for flying slippers coming his way.

Zhang Yang summoned Whitey Jr. and shot to the sky towards the Dayu Rainforest. The poor flying serpent was pushed to the limits as Zhang Yang flew nonstop for several hours. When Zhang Yang reached the Dayu Rainforest, he stopped for a while, allowing the serpent to have its rest as he determined the direction to Shuhada Lake. The Dayu Rainforest was like the Amazon rainforest, where trees grew to the scrape the skies. Zhang Yang flew over the forest and saw nothing but vast greenery. Luckily, the lake was huge and easy to spot from the sky. Since Zhang Yang had some recollections of the place from his past life, he had only taken another 10 minutes prior to the previous rest and arrived at his destination, the Shuhada Lake.



Zhang Yang had determined the exact location via the minimap and landed next the blue lake. The flying serpent was so exhausted that it lay flat on the ground and refused to move. Even when Felice tried to growl at it, the flying serpent did not budge.

Since Flying Mounts were more suitable for long distance travel, Zhang Yang unsummoned the flying serpent and summoned the bear for a change. He rode the bear around the lake and begun his search for the NPC called Meka.

# Chapter 490: Meka

---

Meka was not difficult to spot. In no time at all, Zhang Yang had already found a small hut by the lake. There was a vegetation farm next to the hut. A middle-aged man was in the midst of it, watering the plants. The man was sloppily dressed in tattered cloth linen clothes. Everything from his movements, to his appearance, had no indication of his colorful past. Still, there was one thing about his appearance. Zhang Yang could see that, beneath the ragged clothes, the man had a muscular body. He had a pretty good looking face too. Zhang Yang believed that if he were to change into something a little more luxurious, he would easily be one of those noble elitists. Even right then, there was a sense of maturity, especially the light in his eyes. He had some mysterious charm that would entice even the loveliest of maidens!

He was definitely a man of tales.

[Meka] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 120

HP: 1,200,000

Defense: 1,300

Melee Attack: ???

Skills: ???

Note: Once a world-renowned warrior, until he took an arrow to the knee. Literally.

The NPC was out of the norm. He was only Level 120, and Zhang Yang was able to see his HP and Defense value, but not his Attack nor Skills! Zhang Yang had never done the God of War Inheritance before, thus he had never seen this NPC before in his life. Zhang Yang got down the bear and walked towards the garden's edge and spoke politely. "Excuse me, sir. Are you Meka the Warrior?"

"Mm. Warrior?" Meka muttered, his eyes glinted with a burning passion which died down almost immediately. He then shook his head and said, "I am indeed the person you seek for. But, I'm no warrior. I'm just a hermit now. Farming is all I do. I'm no longer fit to be a warrior! Young man, how may I help you?"

"Sir, there's this—" Just as Zhang Yang started to speak, there was a loud commotion from inside the forest behind the hut. A group of 12 female soldiers marched out and surrounded Meka around the garden.

The female soldiers were all equipped with metal cuirasses that were designed to be 18-SX! The armor was more for censorship purposes than actual protection! Even so, the low-cut design of the metal made them look more like metal corsets. The upper portions of their bodies were completely exposed, leaving more than half of their breasts exhibited to the world to see. Their lower halves were protected only by thin sheets of metal skirts. Perhaps, they were trying to mimic Wonder Woman's costume, except that this was far more erotic and outrageous. One kick, and they would show the

world their huuhaa!

Metal may not come cheap, but isn't there a better way of saving costs!?

[Snowflake Castle Guards] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 17,800

Defense: 100

Skills:

[Entice]: Entices a target, rendering it unable to engage in any actions or movement for the next 3 seconds. Instant. Range: 10 meters

Note: Snowflake Castle's loyal soldiers. Answers only to the Lady Countess Kate Jingle.

"Meka--!" cried the leader of the group, as she stood up front and approached the middle-aged man. "Lady Countess Kate Jingle has requested you for an audience in the castle. We are here to escort you back!"

Ayy! Ever heard of queuing up?

Zhang Yang bit his lip angrily. He was there first and was already engaged in a conversation with him! Don't think that a public service officer could barge in anywhere they want! It's an abuse of power!

Meka shook his head. He continued gardening and averted his gaze away from the female soldiers. "I do not wish to see her. Please leave. You're disturbing me."

"Insolent! Lady Kate has already thrice invited you! It would be going against the high court for rejecting such an invitation. Today, the invitation has been turned into an order. If you refuse to have the audience of Lady Kate, her orders demand us to bring you to her by force, dead or alive!"

The female soldier pulled out her spear and let out a spirited 'hah!'. The other 11 soldiers who were surrounding the garden followed her actions and quickly got into their battle stance. With a unified movement, the female soldiers approached Meka and trampled over his neatly planted garden.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily, followed by a disgruntled grumble. They could have chosen a better timing to talk to Meka, but no! They had to barged in just when Zhang Yang was about ask Meka about the Inheritance Keepsake! Obviously, this was part of the quest's script. The system had made it so that a player will never have a smooth-sailing quest. Now that the situation has developed to this extent, Zhang Yang completely forewent reasoning. He slid across the ground with {Charge} and crashed into the leader of the group. He intended to get them out of the way and proceed with the quest.

Felice morphed into her Dragonhawk form and blasted the group with {Pulverizing Flame}, dealing 3,000 fire damage every second! Zhang Yang adjusted his position during the commotion and activated {Blast Wave}. His attack had struck all 12 soldiers and had stunned them for 4 seconds, providing enough time for Felice's {Pulverizing Flame} to tick by at least 4 times to deal a total of 12,000 damage!

When the stun effect ended, Zhang Yang had regained enough Rage, Rage that he used to cast {Horizontal Sweep}. The powerful slash had dealt more than 8,000 damage to everyone. With less than 6,000 HP left, all 12 female soldiers were defeated at the same time. However, they were not instantly killed. They fled with only 1 HP remaining. Perhaps, the system had turned them unkillable?

"Wretched fool! You dare to attack the guards of Lady Kate? You shall be obliterated! Thousands shall hunt you down till the end of time!" cried the leader of the soldier group as they fled.

Felice was not satisfied. She soared into the sky and shot down towards their direction. However, after 10 seconds or so, she flew back with a solemn face. "They had something magical; some sort of barrier was protecting them! I cannot deal any damage..." Felice looked so cute, trying her best to serve Zhang Yang. He then patted her head gently.

With the god-mode granted by the system, there was no way for them to be killed. Obviously, they would be an enemy that Zhang Yang would have to deal with later in the quest progresses.

"Young man, I see that the spirit of youth is brimming in your soul!" said Meka, though it did not sound like a compliment, especially when the short skirmish had not affected his mood. He readjusted the crops that had been destroyed and continued to water the plants on the far side of the garden.

Zhang Yang sighed and followed him closely and took out the ancient axe. "Mr. Meka. I have spent days and nights searching for this Keepsake and had ventured around the world to ask of its origin. No one could tell me anything about it! However, I heard about a man. A man who had experienced countless wars and battles, who could possibly explain the origin of this Keepsake. Perhaps, it could be you?"

Meka did not raise his head. Instead, he continued to water the crops around him. He only shifted his glare from the corner of his eyes and was shocked immediately. He dropped the watering can in his hand and exclaimed out loud. "The Fallen Axe of the God of War!"

Zhang Yang put up a faked surprise reaction and gasped. "Mr! You do know about this axe!"

Meka realized that he had given his interest away, and was too late to not get involved about it. Reluctantly, he nodded. There were still traces of surprise in his eyes.

"Mr. Please tell me about the axe!" said Zhang Yang eagerly.

Meka frowned and contemplated for a while. "The axe's origin is

something that everyone has agreed not to speak of, for it has unimaginable power! I cannot simply indulge you in its secret for naught! Perhaps, you can do something for me and I'll tell you about the axe's great secret after you have fulfilled my requests.

There is no free lunch in the world; everything comes with a price! Even something as trivial as information!

Zhang Yang nodded his head and asked. "I'm honored. If you have any last wishes, I'll be more than happy to grant them for you."

Meka turned solemn with a slight trace of anger. "Young man. I do not have any last wishes. I'm not going to die just yet."

Zhang Yang laughed awkwardly and said, "Wrong choice of words...Sorry!"

Meka turned his gaze to somewhere far away and with a thousand-yard stare, he spoke. "I was once a brave warrior. There was nothing that I could not kill. I have slain dragons, monsters, castle lords, demons, and many other entities that posed a threat to the human world. Every single day, there would be countless noblewomen who come asking to be my lover. Sigh...what a drag... I almost lost count of every single woman that I had shared a bed with, but it had to be more than 20,000!"

Zhang Yang felt a cold shiver down his spine. Even if he was born as a studhorse stallion, doing it just once a day would already be 365 times a year. 20,000 "shots" would take roughly 54 years to



fire. Just how much "ammo" does he have!? Or rather, how big was his balls!

Meka expressed a nostalgic emotion. "I had an arch enemy. He hated me, but he could never win a fair fight against me. Hence, he sent a woman to approach me. She made a fool out of me! Back then, I was rather famous for doing it a lot. Whenever someone comes to me asking for it, I would never reject it. However, the sly b\*tch made me impotent!"

The middle aged man slammed both his fists against each other and said, "She planted a poison in my body, making me losing my manhood! I'll be d\*mned for my own actions. My strength, my prowess, all originates from my manhood! Ever since I lost my ability to pleasing a woman, I was no longer the same man."

Zhang Yang stared in disbelieve. This famous man, a man who had won countless wars, remained undefeated, was that all because he had an insatiable lust?! Did he have a massive raging boner as he killed and slew his enemies?! What sort of raging pervert would do such a thing!

Zhang Yang tightened his face as hard as he could, to resist the urge to laugh like the little brat usually did.

"After I had lost my powers, I had to move out of my hometown. To avoid becoming the laughing stock, I've chosen to live the hermit's life." Meka continued, after sighing.

"However,...the shadow always exists wherever the sun shines.

No matter where I go, trouble will always find its way to me. Just as I had settled here, the Lady Countess Kate Jingle had already taken a liking to me and had decided to invite me to her castle! Naturally, I had to reject her. If I was still as capable as before, I would never reject such an invitation! I would have already \*\*\*\* and \*\*\*\* her brains out!"

Zhang Yang felt a cold shiver down his spine. Awkwardly, Zhang Yang diverted the topic back. "Sir. What is it that you would have me do?"

Meka looked at Zhang Yang with excitement in his eyes and said, "I have been a recluse for a while, but I have done some research. I've found the means and methods of removing the poison from my body! Young man, I've now lost all my battle power, and I am not able to engage in any battles. That is why I am asking you to collect a few materials for me! When the deed is done, and my manhood is restored, I shall tell you the tale of the Fallen Axe of the God of War."

‘Ding! Meka has a quest for you: Materials to Treat an old Wound. Will you accept it?’

Accept.

[Materials to Treat an old Wound] (Difficulty Level: A)

Description: Meka had requested you to search for ingredients to heal his old wound that had robbed him of his manhood. The materials are as follows: Rhino's Horn (The thicker, the better.

You may find a large number of Rhinos in the Iron Bull Valley in the west). Wolfberry Flower Stem (The longer, the better. You may find Wolfberry Flowers in the Poison Shroud Swarm to the North). The Tiger Penis of Tiger King Anusuba (The Biggest d\*ck should belong to the Tiger King Anusuba. You may find Anusuba at the Blood Mist Camp located in the East).

Completion: Rhino's Horn 0/200 Wolfberry Flower Stem 0/50  
The Tiger Penis of Tiger King Anusuba 0/1

Thicker...Longer....D\*mn, this old man, the desire to restore his manhood is strong!

Zhang Yang nodded his head at the man and said, "Sir. Wait for my good news. I shall return, soon enough! Felice, off we go!"

Zhang Yang hopped on the flying serpent and soared to the west. After a short flight, Zhang Yang came down to the Iron Bull Valley. There were many types of species of the bull, such as the bulls, cows, wildebeest, and also the largest among them, the rhinos. Many of them were merely normal tier. Unfortunately, Zhang Yang's hunting targets were the elite tiered White Back Rhinos!

[White Back Rhino] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 130

HP: 1,300,000

Defense: 1,400

Melee Attack: 9,110 – 11,110

Skills:

[Stomps of War]: Shakes the earth, deals 5,000 Natural damage to all targets within 3 meters. Causes knockback - 10 meters away from the caster and slows down the target's movement speed by 50%. Lasts for 10 seconds.

[Charge]: Charges to the target. Stuns the target for 5 seconds. Range: 3 – 10 meters.

[Horn Attack]: Attacks the target with a sharp horn. Deals 100% melee physical attack. Has a small chance of dealing 3 times the normal attack.

Note: The strongest entity in the Iron Bull Valley. Occasionally consumes meat to sharpen its teeth.

"Let's whack'em Felice!" cried Zhang Yang, as he dove down from the sky. When he was 10 meters away from the rhino, he jumped down from Whitey Jr. and charged at the rhino that was 3 meters tall and 8 meters long.

Needless to say, having a battle mount grants two major advantages. The first being the life sharing passive skill that increases the maximum HP. The second, having an increase in

movement speed. For Zhang Yang, since he had the skill {Beast Taming}, he could dismount anytime he wanted to and get on the mount again whenever his HP is getting low. Since Zhang Yang was a melee attack class, he had no need to move around, especially since the opponent is a monster. They would not move around like a player would, but instead, they would blindly attack the players head on. Hence, movement speed was not all too important for Zhang Yang. However, during mounting, many skills would be rendered unusable. After all, being mounted did restrict a great deal of the rider's movements.

Zhang Yang swung his sword and dealt 3,420 damage. Zhang Yang first landed {Cripple Defense} since he had not yet fully mastered {Eagle Eye}. Landing a full charge of {Cripple Defense} would be the highest priority, especially to those with high Defense.

Compared to Zhang Yang, Felice was much stronger. Her {Fire Missile} had easily dealt more than 20,000 damage to the rhino, turning it into a towering, black figure of soot!

"Gauun!" The best awoke from being stunned and growled to the high heavens. Its stomped the ground angrily and charged towards Zhang Yang with its horn faced down.

{Block}!

‘-981!’ {Block} reflected damage.

‘-4,974!’ {Shield Bash}!

After two attacks, the rhino's aggro was locked onto Zhang Yang. Ignoring the airborne Felice, the rhino was determined to gore Zhang Yang.

Wham!

The rhino stomped the ground with such force that it had sent out a white, electrical current that spread all around. Zhang Yang felt a slight tingle, with a damage text popping up on his character. He was immediately pushed back to 10 meters away and felt that his feet were quadruple their normal weight. As the ground was flashing with electrical current, Zhang Yang's movement speed had greatly suffered.

{Stomp of War}!

Fortunately, the skill would only affect targets that are on the ground. Both Felice and the flying serpent were completely unaffected by the attack and was attacking without stopping. Fire missiles and poisons spits were constantly splashing on the rhino's massive body.

Shush!

The rhino kicked its hind legs out and took off like a jet, ramming against Zhang Yang with its sharp horn, stunning him for 5 seconds.

{Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang retaliated immediately by smashing a guaranteed critical hit of {Destructive Smash}!

‘-17,802!’

The rhino took a sudden burst of damage and was enraged. Its entire character glowed with a red hue and it charged towards Zhang Yang again. This time, the attack that was dealt to him was massive.

‘-20,537!’

{Horn Attack} 300% damage!

What a strong burst of damage! The attack could even instantly kill a Gray-Silver tiered tanker!

# Chapter 491: Gathering the Materials

---

After all, Zhang Yang was not a mere Gray-Silver Tier tanker. He had a full set of Violet-Platinum Tier equipment! Furthermore, those were not some random pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment, cobbled up together into one set! Zhang Yang had a complete set of equipment! How would it be possible for a mere Elite Tier monster to suppress him!

Zhang Yang began to use his 'Supporting Attacks'. He smashed his shield against the monster aggressively! Although the body mass of the White Back Rhino was huge, the system of the game does not differentiate the toughness of the monster based on its appearance. Only the numbers corresponding to the statistics and attributes would be taken into calculation. Therefore, when Zhang Yang bashed his shield against the monster, the Level 130 Elite Tier monster felt like it was hit by a train, because Zhang Yang's Strength was much higher than its own. As Zhang Yang's 'Supporting Attacks' kept staggering it, it could not even use normal attacks on him!

Zhang Yang did not even need to use his {Block}. That way, he could reserve his {Block} for the rhino's {Battering Horn}, which would no longer harm him. Zhang Yang blocked all the skill attacks of the monster with his {Block}, one after another. The damage output of two persons and a Serpent was really outstanding. In about just a minute, the huge 'fellow' had collapsed right in front of Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang quickly went up to the dead body of the monster and began to cut the rhino's horn off, and then he placed the 'huge and thick' horn in his inventory.



Moving on.

So Zhang Yang started ‘poaching’, and continued to slay as many rhinos as he could. He would always remember to cut the horns off, as that was his initial objective, which was to collect the [Rhino Horns]. Fortunately for him, the area had a large number of White Back Rhinos. He merely took four hours to collect all 200 [Rhino Horns]. Then, he quickly rode atop Whitey Jr. and departed for his next destination --- the Venomous Swarm.

It was a forbidden, hostile land that would give people the creeps. Unidentified grayish gas gushed out from the swarm, clouding the air, making the entire place very eerie. The moment Zhang Yang set foot into the shroud, he was inflicted with a ‘Poisoned’ status.

[Poison Shroud]: Inflicts 2,000 Nature Damage to the target every 3 seconds. Lasts until the target leaves the effective area of the {Poison Shroud}.

His damage absorption could now absorb a total damage of 2,228, and with another 20% of his damage immunity, he would absorb anything that did less than 2,785 points of damage! Meanwhile, Felice had over 4,000 magic resistance points in her Dragon-hawk Form. This {Poison Shroud} could cause 1 damage on her every second. It practically did nothing to her at all!

Other players would only be committing suicide in this swamp. But, the ‘Poison Effect’ of the place barely even bothered Zhang Yang and Felice. It was as if the two of them were casually walk in

their own garden, behind their house, and of course, Whitey Jr. was strolling along, just as comfortably!

Zhang Yang let out the little [Herb Foraging Familiar]. The little familiar gobbled up the 1,000 gold coins and went off into the woods to work. Zhang Yang had no idea at all if [Lycium Stem] was considered as a kind of [Herb] or not. But since there was no harm in trying, why not let the little familiar go out for a walk and work at the same time? This was still a Level 100 map after all. The little guy just might bring back a large number of valuable and rare [Herbs] from this Level 100 map!

Zhang Yang also happened to be a practicing Herbalist. So, he activated his skill {Herb Search} to locate available [Herbs] in the area. All available [Herbs] within an area of 100 meters would show up on his map, with him as the center point of it. However, after entering the Level 100 map, his map would only show the location of the [Herbs] available in the area, but no longer showed the names and details of the [Herbs]. Zhang Yang would have to go closer and use his skill - {Observe} in order to read the details and attributes of the [Herbs].

Soon after, Zhang Yang began to see a flashing dot on his map. Before he could get down from Whitey Jr., the flashing dot of light had suddenly disappeared. Zhang Yang understood immediately. That was the [Herb Foraging Familiar] doing its work, as promised. So, Zhang Yang turned towards another direction, as he wanted to avoid clashing into the 'working field' that his [Herb Foraging Familiar] covered.

In no time at all, Zhang Yang found another new flashing dot on

his map. So, he quickly patted Whitey Jr. and went towards it. When he arrived at the location, he only saw a weird-looking plant by the upside of the swamp. The stem of the plant was pitch black in colour, and a pale-blue flower bloomed right on top of the stem.

He used his {Observe} to take a closer look at the plant. This was the [Wolfberry Flower] that he had been looking for, all the while!

Hiss!

The moment Zhang Yang got down from Whitey Jr., a weird-looking monster suddenly emerged out of the pond nearby and charged right at him! This creature had the head of a snake, the body of a turtle, and the tail of a deer along with four legs and claws of a leopard! Apparently, this monster was guarding the [Wolfberry Flower]. The moment it revealed itself, the monster opened it's mouth wide and attempted to bite Zhang Yang.

[Turtle-Snake Chimera]

Level: 125

HP: 1,250,000

Defense: 1,300

Melee Attack: 5,598 - 6,598

## Skills:

[Poison Infection]: A certain rate of inflicting poison effect on its current target. The target would be inflicted with an additional 2,000 Nature Damage every 15 seconds. The effect can be stacked up to 5 times.

Pang!

Zhang Yang quickly raised up his shield and activated his {Block}. The Turtle-Snake Chimera bit into the solid shield and almost lost it's teeth! Zhang Yang laughed out loud and began to swing his sword at the Turtle-Snake Chimera.

This monster did not only know how to bite. The four sharp claws were also its weapons. It would raise up it's claws and slash at Zhang Yang at random times, giving Zhang Yang no time to predict and guard against it's claw attacks! In just a brief moment, Zhang Yang was already inflicted with five layers of {Poison Infection}! Unfortunately for the monster, five layers of {Poison Infection} could only damage Zhang Yang by 10,000 damage, and it only damaged Zhang Yang once every 3 seconds. So every time the effect of {Poison Infection} kicked in, Zhang Yang was only inflicted with 2,000 damage, which was not even enough to break through his defense!

"Hahaha! Noob tank! My cousin and I received a Main Story Quest! We would get a reward of +2 Levels when we complete the quest! So, right after this quest, we would be able to enter the Chaos Realm! Finally!" Just when Zhang Yang was in the heat of battling the Turtle-Snake Chimera, he suddenly received a voice

message from the little brat Wei yan Er.

He smiled to himself, saying, "How could you go behind my back and take a Main Story Quest without me! You wound me!"

"Can't help it, we already got the quest after cousin sister saved a perverted old man from death. We tried to do a Quest Share with the others but the system did not allow us to do so! So, noob tank! You must look for two [Flying Mounts] for me and my cousin, as soon as possible!" Wei Yan Er squeaked shrilly.

Zhang Yang frowned and he said, "It's not so easy to find one [Flying Mount]. And you want two? There are a large number of [Mounts] on the ground though. Why don't I help you change for a better one?"

"You liar! How else did you get a [Flying Mount] so soon upon entering the Chaos Realm!" Wei Yan Er snarled.

That was really pure luck! Luck does not come every day!

Zhang Yang shook his head resignedly and said, "Alright, I will try to find two fine [Flying Mounts] for you and your cousin."

After he agreed, the little brat Wei Yan Er was finally contented. Then, she hung up and went straight to her Main Story Quest.

Zhang Yang started scolding himself silently. Based on the speed of regular leveling up, the second player should only be able to

enter the Chaos Realm in about 10 days more or so! But Zhang Yang had forgotten to take into account the Main Story Quests, the Hidden Quests that would reward players with additional levels! There might already be other players in the Chaos Realm by now!

The real 'World War' was about to explode!

After a series of aggressive fighting, the Turtle-Snake Chimera was finally slain and it went limp before Zhang Yang's sword. The monster dropped a few pieces of [Snake Meat] and [Level 5 Turtle Shells]. The [Snake Meat] could be used as an ingredient for cooking, while the [Turtle Shell] was one of the materials required to make a Defensive Armor piece. So, any player with the profession of Tailoring, Leather Work, or Smithing could make use of them.

Currently, only Zhang Yang had managed to acquire a [Level 5 Turtle Shell]. If Zhang Yang took it back to The Little Merchandise Shop, there would definitely be a bunch of crafting type players swarming around his shop, fighting for the materials!

After clearing the monster from that area, Zhang Yang picked up the [Wolfberry Flower] and succeeded in collecting his first [Wolfberry Flower Stem], bringing him closer to getting his quest done. Surely the NPC would be getting closer to restoring the former glory of his dick!

Getting back on Whitey Jr., Zhang Yang proceeded forward. He slew many Turtle-Snake Chimerae, collected many [Wolfberry Flower Stem] and quite a number of [Level 5 Turtle Shells]. He was earning another small fortune here!

One hour later, the [Herb Foraging Familiar] had returned to him with quite a number of [Herbs]. Zhang Yang took a look and realized that there were no signs of any [Wolfberry Flower Stem]. Although the Profession skill {Herb Search} could locate and indicate the location of [Wolfberry Flowers] on the player's map, this type of flower was a specific quest item, and no such [Herb] existed in the entire game for general usage. That was why the [Herb Foraging Familiar] could not locate any of the [Wolfberry Flowers].

Well, it's logical if one stayed calm and thought about it. If the [Wolfberry Flower] really was a type of [Herb], then only Herbalists could pick them up. If that was true, wouldn't this particular quest be too unreasonable? Wouldn't players have to remove their initial Profession Skills, and switch to being a Herbalist in order to be able to pick up the [Wolfberry Flowers] for the sole purpose of this quest?

Two hours later, Zhang Yang had collected a total of 50 [Wolfberry Flower Stems]. He had finally collected enough of the second material for the quest. Only the [Tiger Penis] has yet to be collected!

The Serpent was soaring through the sky as they made haste for Blood Mist Camp. After about half an hour of flying, Zhang Yang had finally arrived at this god forsaken terrifying land, where the name was self-explanatory.

The Blood Mist Camp was the lair of bandits. Among them aren't just the human, there are also orcs, dwarfs and even elves! These

living beings ended up here because they had done terrible things, things that are never to be forgotten and forgiven! So they are basically devils in flesh that seek refugees in Blood Mist Camp.

But that is not Zhang Yang's destination. What Zhang Yang seeks is that Tiger King around that area!

As the entire area is covered in trees, Zhang Yang was forced to land, unsummon Whitey Jr. and summon Whitey out. Then, he rode on Whitey, across the thickset jungle, searching for the Tiger King.

"Leave your woman and your gold, then we shall consider sparing your life!"

Suddenly, Zhang Yang heard a loud voice and three bandits revealed themselves, leaping out from the bushes beside him. They blocked the path before Zhang Yang. Then, two more bandits jumped right out and block the path right behind Zhang Yang, cutting his escape route.

"Just shut the f\*ck up! We kill the man and take the woman back to warm our beds!" another bandit was getting impatient. So he took up his mace and swung it at Zhang Yang's head.

Right before the mace was able to reach Zhang Yang, Felice raised up her lance very quickly and pierced the chest of that bandit. As she pulled her lance out from the bandit, fresh blood oozed out right from the hole. With a closer look, Zhang Yang could see that the lance had actually left a large hole, right in the



middle of the bandit's chest! Poor bandit, he could not even react! He could only stare at Zhang Yang and Felice with his eyes wide open before he collapsed onto the ground.

--- how could a mere bandit match the power of Felice?

The remaining 4 bandits were shocked to see their 'comrade' died right in front of their eyes, but they drew their weapons in anger, nevertheless! They began to launch their assaults towards Zhang Yang and Felice. Other than monsters with higher intelligence, normal monsters would act according to the aggro system of the game. They will not flee to save themselves, even if they knew that they were grossly outmatched.

So Zhang Yang and Felice worked together and fought back. Without much problem, they took the 4 bandits out as if they were just breathing! Zhang Yang managed to pick up some coins and a few [Inscribed Cloth] from the dead bandits. There was another black piece of [Order]. Zhang Yang took a look at the description and realized that the [Order] was actually an item that would trigger a quest! But, Zhang Yang's current priority was to locate and obtain the God of War Inheritance. So he had no time spare for insignificant quests. Therefore, he placed the [Order] right into his inventory. If he ever finds time to spare, he would probably go about finishing it. If not, then he would simply throw the piece away later.

The jungle was full of bandits lurking around in every corner. Zhang Yang had already encountered another group of bandits after walking for a brief moment. Although these bandits did not pose any threat to him at all, it was still highly annoying to be

stopped in your tracks like that!

But, when he walked into another territory, nothing came out to him for the next three minutes! Nothing! No monsters, nor bandits jumped out at Zhang Yang!

In an instant, Zhang Yang realized that he was either out of the bandits' turf, or he had already stepped into the territory of the ferocious Tiger King that he had been looking for. That would be why the bandits dared not ambush him in this area!

The answer to his question was revealed a brief while after he walked for a short distance. There were a couple of large rocks right in front of him. A tiger with a snowy-white body was resting on top of one of the rocks. This tiger was not a normal tiger. It had a pair of golden wings on it's back!

## Chapter 492: Gathering the Materials

---

After all, Zhang Yang was not a mere Gray-Silver Tier tanker. He had a full set of Violet-Platinum Tier equipment! Furthermore, those were not some random pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment, cobbled up together into one set! Zhang Yang had a complete set of equipment! How would it be possible for a mere Elite Tier monster to suppress him!

Zhang Yang began to use his 'Supporting Attacks'. He smashed his shield against the monster aggressively! Although the body mass of the White Back Rhino was huge, the system of the game does not differentiate the toughness of the monster based on its appearance. Only the numbers corresponding to the statistics and attributes would be taken into calculation. Therefore, when Zhang Yang bashed his shield against the monster, the Level 130 Elite Tier monster felt like it was hit by a train, because Zhang Yang's Strength was much higher than its own. As Zhang Yang's 'Supporting Attacks' kept staggering it, it could not even use normal attacks on him!

Zhang Yang did not even need to use his {Block}. That way, he could reserve his {Block} for the rhino's {Battering Horn}, which would no longer harm him. Zhang Yang blocked all the skill attacks of the monster with his {Block}, one after another. The damage output of two persons and a Serpent was really outstanding. In about just a minute, the huge 'fellow' had collapsed right in front of Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang quickly went up to the dead body of the monster and began to cut the rhino's horn off, and then he placed the 'huge and thick' horn in his inventory.

Moving on.

So Zhang Yang started ‘poaching’, and continued to slay as many rhinos as he could. He would always remember to cut the horns off, as that was his initial objective, which was to collect the [Rhino Horns]. Fortunately for him, the area had a large number of White Back Rhinos. He merely took four hours to collect all 200 [Rhino Horns]. Then, he quickly rode atop Whitey Jr. and departed for his next destination --- the Venomous Swarm.

It was a forbidden, hostile land that would give people the creeps. Unidentified grayish gas gushed out from the swarm, clouding the air, making the entire place very eerie. The moment Zhang Yang set foot into the shroud, he was inflicted with a ‘Poisoned’ status.

[Poison Shroud]: Inflicts 2,000 Nature Damage to the target every 3 seconds. Lasts until the target leaves the effective area of the {Poison Shroud}.

His damage absorption could now absorb a total damage of 2,228, and with another 20% of his damage immunity, he would absorb anything that did less than 2,785 points of damage! Meanwhile, Felice had over 4,000 magic resistance points in her Dragon-hawk Form. This {Poison Shroud} could cause 1 damage on her every second. It practically did nothing to her at all!

Other players would only be committing suicide in this swamp. But, the ‘Poison Effect’ of the place barely even bothered Zhang Yang and Felice. It was as if the two of them were casually walk in

their own garden, behind their house, and of course, Whitey Jr. was strolling along, just as comfortably!

Zhang Yang let out the little [Herb Foraging Familiar]. The little familiar gobbled up the 1,000 gold coins and went off into the woods to work. Zhang Yang had no idea at all if [Lycium Stem] was considered as a kind of [Herb] or not. But since there was no harm in trying, why not let the little familiar go out for a walk and work at the same time? This was still a Level 100 map after all. The little guy just might bring back a large number of valuable and rare [Herbs] from this Level 100 map!

Zhang Yang also happened to be a practicing Herbalist. So, he activated his skill {Herb Search} to locate available [Herbs] in the area. All available [Herbs] within an area of 100 meters would show up on his map, with him as the center point of it. However, after entering the Level 100 map, his map would only show the location of the [Herbs] available in the area, but no longer showed the names and details of the [Herbs]. Zhang Yang would have to go closer and use his skill - {Observe} in order to read the details and attributes of the [Herbs].

Soon after, Zhang Yang began to see a flashing dot on his map. Before he could get down from Whitey Jr., the flashing dot of light had suddenly disappeared. Zhang Yang understood immediately. That was the [Herb Foraging Familiar] doing its work, as promised. So, Zhang Yang turned towards another direction, as he wanted to avoid clashing into the 'working field' that his [Herb Foraging Familiar] covered.

In no time at all, Zhang Yang found another new flashing dot on

his map. So, he quickly patted Whitey Jr. and went towards it. When he arrived at the location, he only saw a weird-looking plant by the upside of the swamp. The stem of the plant was pitch black in colour, and a pale-blue flower bloomed right on top of the stem.

He used his {Observe} to take a closer look at the plant. This was the [Wolfberry Flower] that he had been looking for, all the while!

Hiss!

The moment Zhang Yang got down from Whitey Jr., a weird-looking monster suddenly emerged out of the pond nearby and charged right at him! This creature had the head of a snake, the body of a turtle, and the tail of a deer along with four legs and claws of a leopard! Apparently, this monster was guarding the [Wolfberry Flower]. The moment it revealed itself, the monster opened it's mouth wide and attempted to bite Zhang Yang.

[Turtle-Snake Chimera]

Level: 125

HP: 1,250,000

Defense: 1,300

Melee Attack: 5,598 - 6,598

Skills:

[Poison Infection]: A certain rate of inflicting poison effect on its current target. The target would be inflicted with an additional 2,000 Nature Damage every 15 seconds. The effect can be stacked up to 5 times.

Pang!

Zhang Yang quickly raised up his shield and activated his {Block}. The Turtle-Snake Chimera bit into the solid shield and almost lost it's teeth! Zhang Yang laughed out loud and began to swing his sword at the Turtle-Snake Chimera.

This monster did not only know how to bite. The four sharp claws were also its weapons. It would raise up it's claws and slash at Zhang Yang at random times, giving Zhang Yang no time to predict and guard against it's claw attacks! In just a brief moment, Zhang Yang was already inflicted with five layers of {Poison Infection}! Unfortunately for the monster, five layers of {Poison Infection} could only damage Zhang Yang by 10,000 damage, and it only damaged Zhang Yang once every 3 seconds. So every time the effect of {Poison Infection} kicked in, Zhang Yang was only inflicted with 2,000 damage, which was not even enough to break through his defense!

"Hahaha! Noob tank! My cousin and I received a Main Story Quest! We would get a reward of +2 Levels when we complete the quest! So, right after this quest, we would be able to enter the Chaos Realm! Finally!" Just when Zhang Yang was in the heat of battling the Turtle-Snake Chimera, he suddenly received a voice

message from the little brat Wei yan Er.

He smiled to himself, saying, "How could you go behind my back and take a Main Story Quest without me! You wound me!"

"Can't help it, we already got the quest after cousin sister saved a perverted old man from death. We tried to do a Quest Share with the others but the system did not allow us to do so! So, noob tank! You must look for two [Flying Mounts] for me and my cousin, as soon as possible!" Wei Yan Er squeaked shrilly.

Zhang Yang frowned and he said, "It's not so easy to find one [Flying Mount]. And you want two? There are a large number of [Mounts] on the ground though. Why don't I help you change for a better one?"

"You liar! How else did you get a [Flying Mount] so soon upon entering the Chaos Realm!" Wei Yan Er snarled.

That was really pure luck! Luck does not come every day!

Zhang Yang shook his head resignedly and said, "Alright, I will try to find two fine [Flying Mounts] for you and your cousin."

After he agreed, the little brat Wei Yan Er was finally contented. Then, she hung up and went straight to her Main Story Quest.

Zhang Yang started scolding himself silently. Based on the speed of regular leveling up, the second player should only be able to



enter the Chaos Realm in about 10 days more or so! But Zhang Yang had forgotten to take into account the Main Story Quests, the Hidden Quests that would reward players with additional levels! There might already be other players in the Chaos Realm by now!

The real 'World War' was about to explode!

After a series of aggressive fighting, the Turtle-Snake Chimera was finally slain and it went limp before Zhang Yang's sword. The monster dropped a few pieces of [Snake Meat] and [Level 5 Turtle Shells]. The [Snake Meat] could be used as an ingredient for cooking, while the [Turtle Shell] was one of the materials required to make a Defensive Armor piece. So, any player with the profession of Tailoring, Leather Work, or Smithing could make use of them.

Currently, only Zhang Yang had managed to acquire a [Level 5 Turtle Shell]. If Zhang Yang took it back to The Little Merchandise Shop, there would definitely be a bunch of crafting type players swarming around his shop, fighting for the materials!

After clearing the monster from that area, Zhang Yang picked up the [Wolfberry Flower] and succeeded in collecting his first [Wolfberry Flower Stem], bringing him closer to getting his quest done. Surely the NPC would be getting closer to restoring the former glory of his dick!

Getting back on Whitey Jr., Zhang Yang proceeded forward. He slew many Turtle-Snake Chimerae, collected many [Wolfberry Flower Stem] and quite a number of [Level 5 Turtle Shells]. He was earning another small fortune here!

One hour later, the [Herb Foraging Familiar] had returned to him with quite a number of [Herbs]. Zhang Yang took a look and realized that there were no signs of any [Wolfberry Flower Stem]. Although the Profession skill {Herb Search} could locate and indicate the location of [Wolfberry Flowers] on the player's map, this type of flower was a specific quest item, and no such [Herb] existed in the entire game for general usage. That was why the [Herb Foraging Familiar] could not locate any of the [Wolfberry Flowers].

Well, it's logical if one stayed calm and thought about it. If the [Wolfberry Flower] really was a type of [Herb], then only Herbalists could pick them up. If that was true, wouldn't this particular quest be too unreasonable? Wouldn't players have to remove their initial Profession Skills, and switch to being a Herbalist in order to be able to pick up the [Wolfberry Flowers] for the sole purpose of this quest?

Two hours later, Zhang Yang had collected a total of 50 [Wolfberry Flower Stems]. He had finally collected enough of the second material for the quest. Only the [Tiger Penis] has yet to be collected!

The Serpent was soaring through the sky as they made haste for Blood Mist Camp. After about half an hour of flying, Zhang Yang had finally arrived at this god forsaken terrifying land, where the name was self-explanatory.

The Blood Mist Camp was the lair of bandits. Among them aren't just the human, there are also orcs, dwarfs and even elves! These

living beings ended up here because they had done terrible things, things that are never to be forgotten and forgiven! So they are basically devils in flesh that seek refugees in Blood Mist Camp.

But that is not Zhang Yang's destination. What Zhang Yang seeks is that Tiger King around that area!

As the entire area is covered in trees, Zhang Yang was forced to land, unsummon Whitey Jr. and summon Whitey out. Then, he rode on Whitey, across the thickset jungle, searching for the Tiger King.

"Leave your woman and your gold, then we shall consider sparing your life!"

Suddenly, Zhang Yang heard a loud voice and three bandits revealed themselves, leaping out from the bushes beside him. They blocked the path before Zhang Yang. Then, two more bandits jumped right out and block the path right behind Zhang Yang, cutting his escape route.

"Just shut the f\*ck up! We kill the man and take the woman back to warm our beds!" another bandit was getting impatient. So he took up his mace and swung it at Zhang Yang's head.

Right before the mace was able to reach Zhang Yang, Felice raised up her lance very quickly and pierced the chest of that bandit. As she pulled her lance out from the bandit, fresh blood oozed out right from the hole. With a closer look, Zhang Yang could see that the lance had actually left a large hole, right in the

middle of the bandit's chest! Poor bandit, he could not even react! He could only stare at Zhang Yang and Felice with his eyes wide open before he collapsed onto the ground.

--- how could a mere bandit match the power of Felice?

The remaining 4 bandits were shocked to see their 'comrade' died right in front of their eyes, but they drew their weapons in anger, nevertheless! They began to launch their assaults towards Zhang Yang and Felice. Other than monsters with higher intelligence, normal monsters would act according to the aggro system of the game. They will not flee to save themselves, even if they knew that they were grossly outmatched.

So Zhang Yang and Felice worked together and fought back. Without much problem, they took the 4 bandits out as if they were just breathing! Zhang Yang managed to pick up some coins and a few [Inscribed Cloth] from the dead bandits. There was another black piece of [Order]. Zhang Yang took a look at the description and realized that the [Order] was actually an item that would trigger a quest! But, Zhang Yang's current priority was to locate and obtain the God of War Inheritance. So he had no time spare for insignificant quests. Therefore, he placed the [Order] right into his inventory. If he ever finds time to spare, he would probably go about finishing it. If not, then he would simply throw the piece away later.

The jungle was full of bandits lurking around in every corner. Zhang Yang had already encountered another group of bandits after walking for a brief moment. Although these bandits did not pose any threat to him at all, it was still highly annoying to be

stopped in your tracks like that!

But, when he walked into another territory, nothing came out to him for the next three minutes! Nothing! No monsters, nor bandits jumped out at Zhang Yang!

In an instant, Zhang Yang realized that he was either out of the bandits' turf, or he had already stepped into the territory of the ferocious Tiger King that he had been looking for. That would be why the bandits dared not ambush him in this area!

The answer to his question was revealed a brief while after he walked for a short distance. There were a couple of large rocks right in front of him. A tiger with a snowy-white body was resting on top of one of the rocks. This tiger was not a normal tiger. It had a pair of golden wings on its back!

## Chapter 493: Tiger King Anusuba

---

The tiger was magnificent in every manner, except for one thing. Its size. The thing was the same size as a tiny kitten!

Zhang Yang could not help but begin doubting. There is that age-old saying - size does not matter. Yet, how would that middle-aged uncle accept something of this size?

But wait, this was not the Tiger King related to his questline! It was a [Flying Mount]!

[Winged Tiger Cub] (Violet-Platinum Flying Mount)

Level: 0

HP: 50

Note: Can be sealed.

A Violet-Platinum [Flying Mount]! If it already looked like this as a cub, how would it be as an adult?! A white tiger! A rare specimen indeed! People are going to swoon over this mount!

Zhang Yang held off the urge to take out his own [Sealing Leash], and sent a voice message over to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, "When are you guys going to wrap it up?"

"Hehe, what's wrong Silly Yu, you miss me already?" Witchy Snow began to tease Zhang Yang as usual.

"Well, we're about to complete it! Just give us more time to slay one more boss! We will be able to turn in the quest after that!" at least Wei Yan Er got straight to the point.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "I just discovered a Violet-Platinum [Flying Mount]. I'm giving you 30 minutes to come over here now! If you cannot make it, then I shall use my own [Sealing Leash] on it and take it for myself!"

"No! No! Don't you dare do that!" Wei Yan Er immediately lost it and screamed, "Wait for me, you must! Humph! Stinky noob tank! If you dare snatch away my [Flying Mount], I will kill you! And then I'll kill you more!"

"Silly Yu, you are indeed really lucky. You actually found another [Flying Mount]! And a Violet-Platinum Tier [Flying Mount] at that!!"

Being the first to enter the Chaos Realm, of course, Zhang Yang would be able to take it all. Everything here was still original and untouched. These were 'virgin lands'. Nothing in this realm have been tainted or touched by any player! Furthermore, Zhang Yang had been wandering around the Chaos Realm for almost 20 days! All things considered, it was a rather reasonable rate at encountering a [Flying Mount] in the entirety of the Chaos Realm!

Zhang Yang nodded as he said, "Hurry up, then. I don't think

there's anyone else around here yet, but it's not yours till you get it!"

The two ladies nodded and they quickly proceeded with their quest. Now that they were already Level 98, as long as they complete their Main Story Quest, then they should be able to claim the reward and reach Level 100 to enter the Chaos Realm. Furthermore, Zhang Yang simply needed to activate his [Party Summon Order] to get the two ladies over to his location immediately.

Although this little tiger cub was one Tier higher than Whitey Jr., it would merely be the case of having more DPS on his personal gang of companions. The gains were almost negligible. Handing it over to Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue would be a huge jump in power, however! After all, the Chaos Realm was just too vast, and the topography of the map was extremely complex. Without a [Flying Mount], players would be facing endless obstacles.

"Rawgh!"

Zhang Yang was getting bored, getting into a staring contest with the cub, while waiting for the ladies to arrive while keeping an eye on the Winged Tiger Cub, when he suddenly heard a thunderous roar that shook the heaven. Then, a fearsome looking tiger, which was the size of a small mountain, appeared right in front of the Winged Tiger Cub. This ferocious looking tiger dropped the prey that was in its mouth, a musk deer, onto the ground the moment it saw the Winged Tiger Cub!

The Winged Tiger Cub immediately let out a joyous mew and ran



at the small mountain with a purr. On the other hand, the huge tiger stood proudly with its chest raised up. The two large eyes of the tiger were focused on the Winged Tiger Cub like two large lanterns, emitting out a green glow, turning knees of onlookers into jelly.

[Tiger King Anusuba] (Violet-Platinum, Beast)

Level: 128

HP: 12,800,000

Defense: 3,300

Melee Attack: 18,739 - 20,739

Magic Attack: 10,731 - 12,731

Skills:

[Tear]: Tears into the target, inflicting 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage, chance of dealing Double Damage.

[Pounce]: Pounces on the target, interrupting the attack or spell chanting of the target, stuns target for 3 seconds. Range: 30 meters.

[Metallic Slash]: Uses the tail to whip on the target, inflicting 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to all targets within the effective range of the {Metallic Slash}.

[Frost Arrow]: Sends a Frost Attack towards the target, inflicting 150% Magic Attack in the form of Frost Damage. Instant activation. Cool Down: 2 seconds. Range: 3 - 40 meters.

[Berserk]: When HP is reduced to 10%, Anusuba will obtain the Strength of 'Berserk'! Additional 50% damage and additional 200% Movement Speed.

Note: The Conqueror of the Blood Mist Camp, the one and only King! According to legend, Anusuba had once forced itself upon a wounded female dragon!

After reading the side note of the boss, Zhang Yang could not help but frown. No wonder Meka wanted its [Tiger Penis] so badly! This ferociously looking tiger had actually forced itself upon a female dragon! The organ responsible for it must have some serious power! Obviously, the little cub over there was the 'end product' of its brave deed for 'getting on top' of the female dragon! What a lewd, hard-boiled beast!

Zhang Yang began to estimate the approximate attack power of the Tiger King, as his 'Supporting Attack' loses its effectiveness against a boss. He would only be able to rely on his {Block} in order defend himself. The normal attack of the boss would still damage him by approximately 11,700 after taking into account the Damage Immunity effect of his equipment, and the boss would attack once in every 2 seconds. Even by activating {Block} once every 6 seconds

to block the damage done by the boss, the DPS of the boss from only its normal attacks would still be about 3,900 damage.

Other than just its normal attacks, the boss also had other skills like {Tear} and {Metallic Whip}, which increases it's DPS by up to 5,000 damage! Furthermore, Zhang Yang only had a total HP of 141,200 the moment he mounts Whitey. That would mean, that he had to go head on with the boss for 30 seconds!

To take down this boss without any backup at all, Zhang Yang would have to work together with Felice with perfect timing.

Although the boss also had a ranged attack, it only had a maximum range of 40 meters. Felice could definitely grab hold of the boss's aggro and fly up further into the sky, out of range. As long the boss is not a flying type, then she should be able to kite the boss around, theoretically.

According to the game's system, if the target with the highest aggro is not within the range of attack, then the monster would attack the next highest until the original target gets within range. This makes it possible for two players to play tag with the boss.

However, it wouldn't be that easy and simple to kite a boss. This boss had ranged attacks! If Zhang Yang puts too much distance between himself and the boss, the boss would automatically send {Frost Arrows} flying towards Zhang Yang from afar! More importantly, Zhang Yang's {Block} was ineffective against Magic Attacks like {Frost Arrow}! So, he had to maintain a distance that was not too close that it would swipe at him and devastate his HP, nor one that was so far that it would immediately launch a {Frost

Arrow} after it turns around from Felice!

After making some calculations, Zhang Yang finally came up with an idea on how to battle the boss. To battle a boss that requires him to move around so much, the Mythical Turtle would not be an ideal choice. So, he decided to go all out with Whitey. He patted Whitey and said, "My friend, let's do this! Felice, attack from midair!"

"Alright, big brother!" Felice nodded as she began to transform into her Dragonhawk Form.

Whitey let out an intimidating roar as it charged towards the Tiger King. The aggro range of Anusuba was vast, it had already detected the approach of Whitey about 30 meters from it. After detecting that it's territory had been encroached on, it let out a thunderous roar, opening up it's mouth, and frost began to form right in front of it's mouth! The frost formed into a shape of an arrow which flew towards Whitey.

Zhang Yang laughed, abruptly dismounting Whitey!

‘-1,738!’

The {Frost Arrow} went smack into Whitey. Although the (Frost Arrow} dispersed into frosty air as it crashed into Whitey, making Whitey shake its fur like a wet dog, the attack had only damaged Whitey by less than 2,000 damage.

--- {Icy Built}, 90% damage immunity to all Frost type attacks!

Unfortunately, {Icy Built} would only activate when Whitey is being mounted. Or else, Zhang Yang could have mounted Whitey to gain this effect as well! By then, he would have become unstoppable against the boss!

‘-4,212!’

Zhang Yang flung a {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss, followed with a {Charge}, colliding heavily into the boss. (Non-lethal skills do not activate the universal cool down period)

With a flick of the [Sword of Purging Devourer], Zhang Yang struck the boss! But, because normal attacks would be reduced by the Defense points of the monster or the boss, Zhang Yang had only inflicted the boss with a damage of 2,909 points.

Anusuba could not endure the pain, as it let out a thunderous roar. It chomped its mouth down at Zhang Yang. With its mouth wide open, a strong stench hit Zhang Yang in the face like a Mack Truck.

"What the f\*ck!" Zhang Yang almost lost consciousness as he ‘tasted’ the smell straight up from the mouth, "Which immoral game designer thought of making everything so realistic?! Do they want players to actually die?!"

Well, evidently, a Tanker must not only excel in getting himself a

powerful set of equipment, or to excel at evasive maneuvers, or to have perfect timing of skills, a Tanker must also be able to endure hell in all shapes and sizes! Zhang Yang believed that 7 out of 10 Tankers would have fled from the stench! None of them would have been able to unleash even half of their potential with that stench bothering them!

Felice giggled at his predicament. Her damage output was consistent, as she launched {Fire Missile} after {Fire Missile}, charring the great tiger!

After smacking 5 layers of {Cripple Defense} onto the boss, Zhang Yang started getting to work, channeling his damage output onto the boss at his fullest. Whitey had joined in on the ‘party,’ as it slashed the boss with its powerful, sharp claws.

As calculated, under the combination of normal attacks and the {Metallic Slashes} of the boss, the HP bar of Zhang Yang was already at the bottom after a mere 40 seconds! He had lasted a few seconds longer than expected, because he had taken a bottle of [Healing Potion (Grade 7 Transmutation)]. After he lost a certain amount of his HP, he dismounted Whitey and let Whitey activate it’s {Wild Recovery} to recover 50% of its HP. Then, he got back onto Whitey to regain another 20,000 HP!

After activating all of his life-saving Skills, the {Berserker’s Heal}, the {Shield Wall} and the {Last Vigor}, Zhang Yang managed to hold on for another 2 minutes.

At that moment, all of his life-saving Skills were still under cool down! So, he quickly activated {Shadow of the Void} to disengage

from the boss battle. He ran to one corner and started taking his [Snacks] to heal himself up. Felice came straight down from the air and transformed back into her Humanoid Form. She activated her {Absolute Defense} and started an epic slugfest with the boss!

After Zhang Yang healed himself all up, he immediately rejoined the battle.

With activation of {Absolute Defense}, Felice acquired a 99% damage immunity, making her almost invincible! Unfazed, she held her ground against the much larger boss, not even bothering to defend herself from its strikes. She activated her {Blazing Dragon's Spear} and {Dragon's Spear Barrage} repeatedly, inflicting the Tiger King with massive amount of damage! It was so infuriating for the boss that it kept roaring towards the sky in rage!

Another 2 minutes passed, and the {Absolute Defense} of Felice was over. Felice quickly transformed back to her Dragonhawk Form and flew back into the air, keeping a distance in between herself and the boss. Although she was struck by two {Frost Arrows} as she regained distance, it wasn't really much, considering the fact that she had hundreds of thousands of HP.

Having no means of reaching Felice, the Tiger King immediately turned towards its secondary target, Zhang Yang, and began to attack him!

At the same time, the cool down periods of Zhang Yang's {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} were over. Zhang Yang could now focus on going all out on the boss for another 2 minutes!

6 minutes passed, and the HP bar of the Tiger King was now only 50%! But Zhang Yang only had one last shot on his {Rearm}! At that moment, Felice began to cooperate with Zhang Yang in kiting the boss around as she kept coming down into the aggro range of the boss, luring the boss over her, before she got back out from the aggro range of the boss again and sent the boss back to Zhang Yang. The process was repeated multiple times, making the boss look like an idiot, giving Zhang Yang some time to breathe properly and wait out for the cool down period of his Skills.

At this stage of the battle, their DPS had started dropping. The two of them kited the boss around, like two kids playing with a kitten, for tens of minutes! Finally, they managed to reduce the HP bar of the boss down to 10%.



## Chapter 494: Two Skill Books on the House!

---

This was the crucial 10% stage. Anusuba was beginning to get extremely agitated! Its entire body began to radiate in a bloody red, glowing light. The boss looked as if it had just taken a dip in a blood tub! The two glowing eyes of the boss started releasing chilly vapors. The foul stench from its mouth grew even stronger, suffocating Zhang Yang to the point that he almost smashed his face into the ground!

Still, this Tiger King was actually is brave enough to stick its penis into a female dragon! Now that it looked like it's on heat for mating, its entire body was smoking! The movement speed of the Tiger King was boosted so extensively that Felice was no longer capable of kiting it anymore. Whenever she landed on the ground, the boss would suddenly phase through the air, appearing in front of Felice. right after releasing a {Frost Arrow}, followed by a violent chomp of its jaws! Its movements were so fast that Felice was not able to react in time! With just a few attacks, it had already brought Felice critically close to death!

Zhang Yang was shocked, but quickly recovered when he understood the situation that they were now in. Without any hesitation, he quickly took a bottle of [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] and activated his {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}, followed by his super Skill {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!

‘-14,000!’

‘-14,000!’

...

The boss was instantly inflicted with a series of high value damage! The Tiger King was so terrified by the bombardment of those Skills that the hair all round its body were stood up on end, causing it to look like a hedgeshog!

"Rawgh!" Anusuba turned around swiftly and chomped down on Zhang Yang.

‘-19,764!’

An extremely high value of damage was inflicted on Zhang Yang! One single hit from the boss had taken away one-fifth of Zhang Yang's HP!

Never, ever trifle with a berserking boss!

Zhang Yang found no reason to hold back anymore, so he activated his {Rearm} - followed by his {Shield Wall}. Now, all of his skills were no longer on cool down period. Time to earn a living!

10 seconds later, he activated more of his emergency skills! A second activation of {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, followed by a second {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}, and together with the assaults from Whitey, about 400,000 HP of the boss was reduced. Finally, Zhang Yang managed to hook over the aggro of the boss onto him. A battered Felice came down to the ground, joining in the fight, no longer having to worry about herself.

{Shield Wall} had been activated, {Berserker's Heal} was also activated, followed by his {Last Vigor}! Zhang Yang even activated his [Heart of the Death Knight] just to stay alive. His HP bar was decreasing at an insane rate!

Fortunately for him, there was not much HP left on the boss. Furthermore, Felice had transformed herself into her Humanoid Form and had activated her {Dragon's Spear Barrage} and stunned the boss for 2 seconds long! That gave Zhang Yang a 2-second gap to breathe and finally, he managed to slay the Tiger King before his HP was reduced to zero!

Phew!

Zhang Yang let out a breath of relief. But actually, even if he really had died just now, he could still transform himself into a zombie, as he had already taken a [Zombie Potion] before he had set out to search for the Tiger King. Then, he would still have 30 seconds more to slay the boss! But, he would not have gotten any experience points if he were to slay the boss as a zombie. Furthermore, the durability of his equipment would drop by 10% after he dies. Repairing his equipment would require quite a substantial amount of money!

After taking [Snacks] together with Felice to heal up their HP bars, Zhang Yang turned to the Winged Tiger Cub to check on it. What he saw was the little cub tearing flesh and munching on the dead deer. It was enjoying the meal as if nothing had happened just now. It did not seem to care about the death of the Tiger King.

Well, these type of [Flying Mounts] had limited Intelligence, unlike the Battle Companions who had actual 'Independent' personalities and thoughts of their own. Furthermore, if one were to look at things realistically, this was still a cub, so it could be excused for not understanding everything that had just happened before it. The only thing that it cared about was its stomach!

Zhang Yang got back on his feet and he took up his [Sword of Purging Devourer], prepared to 'harvest' the [Tiger's Penis].

Tsk ---

After seeing how 'magnificent' the Tiger King's [Tiger Penis] is, Zhang Yang could not help but cry out of embarrassment. Well, as people say, to fall just slightly behind the best was still better than the worst. But, to compare a human's proportions to a beast's, of course, there would be a shockingly huge difference! It's like comparing your tiny little penis with some penis from another dimension! This [Tiger Penis] looked like a freaking Nuclear Warhead compared to a human penis! No wonder the Tiger King was able to 'finish things up' inside the female dragon!

After putting the bloody penis in his Inventory, Zhang Yang

turned on his voice communication device and ask, "Witchy Snow, little brat, how long more do you ladies need?"

"We're almost there! Almost there!" Han Ying Xue replied hastily.

Anusuba had dropped a total of 3 equipment. One was a pair of blue-green greaves, another was a crimson red ring, and last but not least, a pair of completely white cloth boots. Other than that, the boss had also dropped two [Skill Books]! That came as a pleasant surprise to Zhang Yang.

The greaves and the rings were both Level 120 Yellow-Gold equipment, so Zhang Yang placed them into his inventory straight away. As for the pair of cloth boots, he took some time to look at its attributes. It was a pretty decent item.

[Enigmatic Prophet's Boots] (Violet-Platinum, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +16

Vitality: +423

Intelligence: +274

Spirit: +121

Equip: Increases damage and healing effects by 2%.

Equip: Increases Maximum Mana Points by 540 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

Special: - 20 Required Levels.

A once-in-a-blue moon rarity!

The best thing about this pair of boots were not its attributes, but the Special that reduces the required level by 20!

Upon entering the Chaos Realm, the level gap for maps were getting wider, like the Dayu Rainforest, which is a grinding map for Level 110 - 140. So, it would be so inappropriate for a bunch of Level 110 players to actually wait at least 9 to 10 months, while they grind themselves up to Level 140 in order to equip the Level 140 equipment that they had acquired from slaying Level 140 monsters and bosses! That would be a mental torture for the players!

Therefore, some equipment with these types of Specials would drop occasionally. Most of the time, the Special would have a reduced '20 Required Levels' so that players could get to them slightly earlier. Of course, such equipment would be rare.

For instance, these [Enigmatic Prophet's Boots] would be one of the Rare equipment that had such Specials on them! As for the two other equipment, they did not have such Specials on them. So,

players would have to wait until they reach Level 120 before they can equip them.

Such Rare equipment with such specialties would usually be sold at sky high prices! If a Violet-Platinum equipment without such a Special could be sold at the price of 100,000 gold, then a Violet-Platinum equipment with the said Special could sold at three times the gold!

Well, the main reason would be, after players reach Level 100, they would require at least 10 days to Level up once. So the Special would allow the players to equip the Rare equipment - 200 days earlier than anticipated, which would greatly help the players!

So, after he passes this equipment over to Han Ying Xue, the healing capability of that witch would be heavily upgraded. Also, when she completes the quests for the [Milkmaid Deity Inheritance (S-Tier)], then she would become the true Queen of Healers of the entire world!

Zhang Yang continued to look at the remaining loot on the ground. He moved on to the two [Skill Books]. One of the [Skill Books] had a golden, hardcover, while the other one had a violet hardcover. He smiled vaguely and said, "Felice, which skill do you think I should learn?"

"The skill on the violet one!" Felice immediately responded without having the need to think.

"Why?"

"Violet-Platinum Tier is better than Yellow-Gold Tier!" Felice told Zhang Yang her reason.

Zhang Yang frowned, intrigued, for little lady did have a dry sense of humor! He laughed and picked up the [Skill Book] with the violet hardcover to have a closer look.

[Skill Book: Molten Armor]

Use: Teaches you {Molten Armor}

Required Class: None

Required Level: 100

A skill that required no classes? Zhang Yang could vaguely remember that he had heard about such a skill before, but he could not recall where and when he had heard about it. Without thinking any further about it, he immediately learned the skill.

[Molten Armor] (Level 1): Forms an armor of flames around you. When you are attacked, the fire armor will reflect Fire Damage equivalent to the caster's level back at the attacker. Lasts until the skill is automatically canceled. The Fire Damage reflected will increase, based on the level of the Skill. The Fire Damage would be doubled for every additional Skill level.



Zhang Yang was currently Level 103, so he would be able to reflect 103 Fire Damage back to the enemies whenever he is struck. Although the damage wasn't particularly high, it was still a Passive Skill! It . It won't affect the attack interval and shared cooldown of Zhang Yang either. It would really be a waste to not accept this 'free' passive damage reflect ability!

It would only get better when Zhang Yang is being surrounded by a group of monsters, he would be able to inflict 103 Fire Damage back at all of the monsters attacking him, without the need to even move a finger! Well, as the reflecting Fire Damage accumulates over time, the total damage that is reflected back at the monsters would be surprisingly good as well! Furthermore, when Zhang Yang improves this skill up to Level 10, he would be able to reflect 1,030 Fire Damage back at his enemies whenever he is struck, making him even more powerful!

There was no harm at all in getting more Skills, as there were no limits. The game said nothing about it. Best learn the skill before anything else.

After that, Zhang Yang picked up another [Skill Book] to have a look.

[Skill Book: Frost Strike]

Use: Teaches you {Frost Strike}.

Required Class: Warrior, Knight, Thief.

Required Level: 100

Another Skill Book that he qualified for! Naturally, Zhang Yang learned the Skill without thinking.

[Frost Strike]: Unleashes a single, powerful Melee Attack onto the target, inflicting 100% Melee Attack of Frost Damage and 100% additional Magic Damage, freezing the target for 10 seconds. The target would not be able to do anything or move within the 10 seconds. This freezing effect would also take effect on Boss type monsters. However, there is certain rate that the freezing effect would fail to initiate. Requirement: Melee Weapon. Cost: 50 Rage Points. Cooldown: 1 minute.

Zhang Yang lost his words for awhile. A Melee Attack that has Frost Damage, with an additional Magic Attack? Judging by those percentages, this Skill would already be a game-breaker! Furthermore, this Skill could actually 'freeze' targets, which was as good as 'Stunning'! And it actually worked on bosses!

Well, damn! Zhang Yang was really getting along now!

He could not help himself but laugh on his own. Felice felt a little uncomfortable looking at Zhang Yang laughing all by himself. She worriedly muttered, "Big brother, you really look silly!"

Although Han Ying Xue had informed him that they were almost done, nobody should ever take the words of the witch seriously. Zhang Yang waited until he was so bored, that he 'seduced' Felice, in a way, into playing Scissors, paper, stone with him. The winner

would receive a kiss.

Unexpectedly, the little lady agreed! By the end of it, she had kissed Zhang Yang so many times that his face was full of her pink kiss marks! Zhang Yang could not help but to sigh. The game developer had made this girl so lively!

2 hours later, Zhang Yang had finally received a joyful voice message from Wei Yan Er, "Noob tank, summon us over now! Quickly!"

Zhang Yang activated his [Party Summon Order], and with a shoof, the two ladies finally appeared beside Zhang Yang.

Now that both of them are finally Level 100, Zhang Yang could finally summon them in the Chaos Realm with his [Party Summon Order]. The moment the little brat appeared, she jumped and down, looking left and right, like an impatient monkey asking for its treat, "Noob tank, where is my [Flying Mount]?"

Zhang Yang pointed straight towards the direction of the little Winged Tiger Cub which had just finished its delicious meal. It was resting on a large rock with its belly facing the sky, having its belly tanned under the sun, "There!"

The little brat immediately let out a cheer as she took out her [Sealing Lease] straight from her inventory and threw it at the little cub.

Even though she failed several times, but her luck was considered pretty good, as she did not even have to make ten attempts at it. Now, she only needed to level up this beastly little cub, and she would become much stronger than ever!

Wei Yan Er decided to grind up the level of her new [Flying Mount] in that area, and she also dragged Han Ying Xue along to accompany her as well. As Zhang Yang had nothing else to do, he passed the [Enigmatic Prophet's Boots] over to Han Ying Xue before he departed back to Meka for the quest rewards.

But before he could even get close to Shuhada Lake, he was already ambushed by the snipers of Snowflake Castle. So, it took him more than 2 hours to break his way through before he finally landed on the side of the little cottage of Meka.

"Er... have you... collected all three materials?" Meka looked at the face of Zhang Yang, full of hope. Well, this was about his penis after all. It was something Zhang Yang could empathize with.

As Zhang Yang took the three materials out from his inventory, he wondered to himself that if he ever quits 'God's Miracle' in the future, would he end up an old medic in the military, treating infertility?

"There is hope! There is hope after all!" Meka looked over the materials with gratitude, as tears dropped down across his cheeks.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Heal the Recurring 'Problem'. Acquired 500,000 experience points!’

Meka was already running into his little cottage, as he babbled on, "Young man, I need to concoct a potion and save my peni... urgh... to clear the poison out of my body! So while I am at it, I must not get any disturbance. So, please keep watch over the door for me and let nothing get in my way at restoring my peni... eherm! My former glory!"

‘Ding! Meka has a quest for you: Not to be disturbed. Will you accept it?’

What to do? Of course, he would accept it!

[Not to be disturbed] (Difficulty: A-rank)

Description: Meka is currently concocting a potion to cure himself from the poison he claims to be in his body system. The potion will be able to bring back his peni... eherm! Clear the poison from his body! But, concocting the potion requires time and Meka must not be disturbed at all. Or else, the process would be interrupted, and unforeseen circumstances would arise! Warrior, guard the door and let no one enter the little cottage!

Completion: Protect Meka while he is concocting the potion to cure himself 0/1

So the difficulty for this quest was A-rank. Zhang Yang would have to prepare for a rough ride ahead!

The ground suddenly began to tremble.

Suddenly, Zhang Yang heard the galloping sound of the horses over from the direction of the rainforest, approaching his location at a high speed. In just tens of seconds, he could already see hundreds of white, handsome horses approaching from the distance. Female knights sat atop each of the horses, their hips angled with a mix of sexiness and grace! Their ornate, finely crafted, shining plate armors exposed a great deal of flesh at the all-too-important, juiciest areas, and each of the women was a coquettish beauty in her own right.

[Snowflake Castle Knights] (Elite, Humanoid(Female))

Level: 125

HP: 1,250,000

Defense: 1,300

Melee Attack: 8,381 - 10,381

Skill:

[Soar]: Dive bombs at a target, inflicting 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage. Can interrupt the chanting progress of the target.

Note: Snowflake Castle Knight Corps, they are extremely powerful combatants!

Zhang Yang took a deep breath. These were not just extremely powerful combatants, they were ridiculously powerful, terrifying enemies! Hundreds of elite Tiered monsters stood right before his eyes! Fortunately, these female Knights were all Melee type monsters. Or else, Zhang Yang would have to lay down his arms, wash his neck nicely and prepare himself for the Knights to chop his head off!

He started backing off, until his back was against the surface of the door that he was supposed to guard, and quickly contacted Han Ying Xue and said, "Witchy Snow! Come over here and heal your big brother!"

As Felice has been calling him 'big brother' for the past few days, Zhang Yang had accidentally used the word 'big brother' on Han Ying Xue without realizing it.

Han Ying Xue humphed and said, "Dummy, do you really think that your qualified be my 'brother'?"

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh sleazily as he said suggestively, "I'm afraid that you might even call me something better than that, over and over again, when we 'repeat' that thing!"

In such regards, he had an abundance of experience. Before Yu Li had tasted the pleasure of the activity, she looked just like a decent teacher. But after being ravaged by Zhang Yang aggressively, she

was left screaming like a little b\*tch!

"Bust tart! You're going to die!" Han Ying Xue was not as pure as the little brat Wei Yan Er, so of course, she got the point immediately. She immediately turned red and scolded Zhang Yang.

Shoof!

A stream of white light appeared. Han Ying Xue had activated her [Lover's Charm] appearing beside Zhang Yang.



## Chapter 495: Hold the Peni... eherm, Door! Hold the door!

---

Upon seeing the hundreds of female Knights before them, Han Ying Xue lost her tongue for the moment, before she recovered and said, "Silly Yu, why couldn't you just lure a small number of monsters every time you summon me?"

Zhang Yang shook his head as he said, "Nonsense! If I'm only fighting a small number of monsters, why would I even need your help?"

"You ruffians! How dare you go against the will of Snowflake castle! In the name of the Countess, we shall kill you all!" a female Knight with a pair of extremely outstanding boobs shouted, as she waved her sword and directed it at Zhang Yang! Instantly, the hundreds of female Knights right before Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue started their charge.

As this was going to be a Defensive Battle where the door drew the line, Zhang Yang had already summoned out the [Mythical Turtle], which stood by his side, guarding the door of the little cottage. Meanwhile, Felice had already transformed into her Dragonhawk form as she started taking off.

Currently, the [Mythical Turtle] was Level 103, and had a total of 65,420 HP on it! That amount was actually more than the HP of 90% tankers at the current stage of the game! With a thick shell and a super healer like Han Ying Xue supporting it, it would be able to guard the door as easily as it breathes!

Zhang Yang let out a battle cry as he met their charge. With his {Blood Rage} activated, he acquired 30 Rage Points instantly. With a flick in his sword, Zhang Yang sent out a {Blast Wave} out front, as his attack spread out in a conical area, stunning all the female Knights within the effective range of the skill. Each of the female Knights within the effective range was inflicted with a damage of 877!

The replicated effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] was triggered repeatedly and inflicted the horde with a few more rounds of damage. The area blew up with numerical values of damage.

Felice was bombarding the horde by activating her {Pulverizing Flame}. Streams of blazing flames were splattered upon the monsters, inflicting them with massive damage! The monsters were inflicted with 3,000 damage in every second! The entire battlefield was blazing in a sea of flames. The scene was magnificent!

However, the HP of these elite Tier monsters were just too long. Although the damage was as high as hundreds of thousands damage, it was still not enough to instant-kill them. It would require a few rounds of equally damaging combinations before they die!

Thud! Thud! Thud!

The forces had already forced their way through the flames, and

they were approaching Zhang Yang at a high speed! They were charging towards Zhang Yang, their spears pointed straight at him as if they were in a jousting contest, with their lives at stake!

As there was a super healer like Han Ying Xue supporting him, Zhang Yang courageously faced the oncoming spearheads!

[Mythical Turtle] was a Violet-Platinum [Mount]. It had the advantage of being a higher Tier [Mount]. Zhang Yang also had a full set of Violet-Platinum equipment. Of course, he would be much more powerful than these monsters! The [Mythical Turtle] and Zhang Yang were both far superior to the female knights. With these two ‘dams’ standing in front of the door, there was no way that these Elite monsters would be able to ‘break’ through the turtle-man ‘dam’!

Grounded combat had its limits. They could not maneuver in three-dimensional combat like how it would be between warplanes and submarines. For instance, [Mythical Turtle] and Zhang Yang currently had their backs against the door. So, they would only have to face the assaults of the monsters from one direction, the front! Furthermore, the battle horses were massive, so only 4 of the Elite monsters could attack Zhang Yang and [Mythical Turtle] at the same time. The rest of the monsters could only line up for their turns behind their comrades, standing idly!

Of course, the damage of four elite monsters was nothing that Han Ying Xue couldn’t heal.

Other healers would be able to perform just as well initially, but they would run out of MP in no time. They would be overwhelmed

by the sheer numbers! It was different for Han Ying Xue, because she had {Divine Soul}, a Skill that reduces the MP consumption of all her healing skills by 75%! Furthermore, she was a highly skilled professional player, with a superhuman level of MP management, gained through her experience from hundreds of impossible battles. Well, practice makes perfect, and Han Ying Xue had lots of it, being a veteran member of Zhang Yang's crazy little party! This level of healing was a piece of cake for her. As long as she has enough [MP Potions] on hand, she would be able to keep up, all day long!

That did not seem to be necessary, as the monsters were finite in numbers! The AoE attacks of Zhang Yang and Felice are extremely powerful and effective! In not more than 10 minutes, the HP bars of a large number of monsters had been emptied out, and they collapsed onto the ground, one after another.

Han Ying Xue quickly said, "Quickly, summon Yan Er here, now! Look at the number of monsters here! She will definitely earn quite a lot of experience points here!

Tsk! This witch was treating the little brat better than him!

Zhang Yang took his [Party Summon Order] out. Well, it had already been more than 2 hours already, since he last used it. The little brat instantly appeared right before Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue atop her flying tiger. Fortunately, she had materialized at a less chaotic corner at the side of the house, away from the thick of battle. If she had appeared in the midst of those deadly knights, she would have been immediately shredded to pieces!

As they were currently in an indoor environment, the mount of the little brat was unsummoned automatically, and she fell straight onto the ground on her butt. She rubbed her butt in anger.

"Noob tank! I hate you!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Hurry up then, get us out of here then, so that you can summon your [Mount] and get its levels up!"

Still, the monsters were blocking the way out by the door, how could Wei Yan Er get out of the indoor environment? She steeled up her heart, took out her axe and started swing it at the roof of the house like a mad girl. She actually took out the entire roof of the house! After that, the system indicated that the area was no longer an indoor environment! That little brat actually managed to summon her [Mount] again!

That actually worked?

Zhang Yang shook his head in amazement, only this little brat would be crazy enough to come out with such ideas and follow through! This time, her wild idea had actually worked! Zhang Yang was left speechless, as he did not know what to say at all! Well, let's hope it doesn't affect Meka's progress in any way. If this NPC ever gets interrupted and something goes wrong, he might end up having a weird penis! It might become the joke of a life time when he goes into the 'battlefield' again, if ever!

As the little brat had resummoned her [Winged Tiger], Zhang

Yang could now see that it had already reach Level 42. It was so much bigger compared to the time Zhang Yang last saw it. The body was fully covered in snowy white fur, and its wings were like the wings of a bat, no, in fact, they were actually the wings of a dragon! It looked most magnificent and attractive!

Zhang Yang had also mounted atop his [Mythical Turtle], and the two of them worked together, blocking the monsters at the entrance of the house.

The [Winged Tiger] suddenly opened up its mouth wide, and spat out a blazing breath of dragon breath! It waved its head to the left and right, allowing the dragon's breath to sweep across the area in a conical AoE, burning every monster there with a damage of 2,000!

Zhang Yang was startled, "Little brat, your 'baby' does AoE attacks?"

"Of course it can!" Wei Yan Er was feeling proud and happy. She only had a Gray-Silver Tier [Mount] before she got her [Winged Tiger]. Now that it was such a jump in Tiers, she was in cloud nine! She quickly posted the skill description of her 'baby' onto the party channel.

[Flame of the Dragon Breath]: Releases Dragon Breath at the targets. The attack spreads out over a conical area, inflicting 2,000 Fire Damage to all targets for every second. Lasts for 10 seconds. Instant activation. Requires channeling. Cooldown: 30 seconds. Cost: 100 Focus Points.

This skill was highly similar to Felice's {Pulverizing Flame}. It was just slightly weaker, and that's nothing to be ashamed of when Felice is involved!

With two [Mounts], two powerful players and one superb Battle Companion, the firepower of this little gang had already surpassed that of a full party of 10! In just a couple of minutes, another large group of monsters crumpled to the ground! Golden lights flashed through the body of the [Winged Tiger] as it continuously gained more levels!

After more than an hour, the entire army was wiped out, and the area was peaceful once again. The [Winged Tiger] had actually shot up to Level 67! It was even faster than the speed of a rocket!

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er quickly went out to 'clean up' the ground. The number of loots these hundreds of monsters dropped were substantial! The ladies were so attracted by the glittering coins that were lying all over the ground where they have slain the monsters!

Before Zhang Yang even has the chance to breathe properly, the sky was suddenly darkened, as if a dark cloud had formed over their heads. Zhang Yang looked up to see what was going on. That was the moment when he realized that they were in deep trouble. He saw the underbellies of a large number of Griffins hovering above him. More female Knights sat on the back of each Griffin. The Griffins let out shrill screams in unison as they descended swiftly towards the little cottage! The female Knights started to fire sharp edged arrows as they descended!

What the f\*ck!

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes in exasperation, "Little brat! Look at what you have done! You've taken out the roof, and now, we are now sitting ducks! They can just keep shooting at us like stationary targets! Whose side are you on?"

Wei Yan Er moved her eyes around innocently and she giggled, "I'm still young and naive, you said it yourself, so I don't know anything about this! I'm innocent!"

Zhang Yang felt a vein popping. What movies has she been watching, recently? How could she come up with such a low standard excuse! As they were still in combat mode, Zhang Yang could not switch mounts, so Felice was the only one who could battle in midair. However, despite her immense power, she would still be crushed by their sheer numbers!

In aerial combat, it was a dogfight. Combat would take place at 360 degrees. Every single monsters on this fleet also happened to be ranged monsters. So, thousands of monsters could actually fire their arrows at a single target altogether. Even if Zhang Yang were to activate his {Shield Wall}, he would still be instantly-killed on spot!

Well, Zhang Yang would never forgive himself if he allowed Felice to die in such a manner, so he quickly led the 3 ladies into the cottage.



Fortunately for them, although the little cottage was tiny, it was divided into three distinct sections. The first section was the front living room, the second was the main living room, and last but not least, the third was the bedroom. Meka was concocting his potion in the bedroom. Well, this wasn't exactly a tiny cottage, afterall!

Normal monsters have limited intelligence. Although Zhang Yang and the ladies were inside the little cottage, none of the monsters came down to tear off the roof. Instead, the monsters landed on the ground and squeezed in through the door towards Zhang Yang and the ladies.

But, that was not it. The first living room was quickly being filled up! Other than the Griffin riding Archers, there were also Spellcasters and Warriors types gushing into the little cottage. Zhang yang was most bothered by the appearance of a single Priest in a white robe!

That Priest was healing up the monsters, undoing all the efforts of Zhang Yang and the ladies!

The HP bars of the Elite monsters were just too long, giving the Priest enough time to heal the Elite monsters back up before Zhang Yang and the ladies could kill the monsters. The Priest would also use AoE Skills that would heal 4 to 5 monsters, and sometimes even 10 monsters at the same instant! Her presence had completely halted the deaths of the army! Zhang Yang and the ladies were forced to huddle up together!

Fortunately, this quest was not about slaying monsters, it was to buy time for Meka.

But a little while later, the real challenge was revealed!

A beautiful lady, dressed in a very fancy dress made her way into the little cottage. She held a black staff in her hand. Her golden hair reflected the pale sunlight, and her lovely blue eyes were fixated on them. She had a great figure. Her chest ‘boomed’ out, and so did her rear. It was so perky that her booty buttocks formed the perfect shape of a peach. Whenever she took a step, the thin fabric would stretch and crease around her buttocks, revealing the atomic shape of her atomic buttocks, which would awaken the passion within the hearts of everything that loved women!

[Countess Kate Jingle]

Level: 135

HP: 40,500,000

Defense: 5,560

Magic Attack: 19,521 - 21,521

Skills:

[Thunder Flash]: Strikes the target with the power of thunder, inflicting 150% Magic Attack in the form of Nature Damage to all targets nearby. Instant activation. Range: 40 meters. Cooldown: 2

seconds.

[Thunderous Annihilation]: Summons thunder and inflicts Nature Damage to all targets within the area of 40 X 40 meter square area. Lasts for 30 seconds. Instant activation. Requires channeling. Cooldown: 3 minutes.

[Lightning Shield]: Summons a shield made of lightning to shield the caster, reflecting 10,000 Nature Damage back at the attackers. Lasts for 1 minute. Instant activation. Cooldown: 2 minutes.

Note: Countess of the Snowflakes Castle. Her words are absolute and are not to be disobeyed!

# Chapter 496: Meka and the Countess

---

This Countess is a level 135 Mythical Boss, and her level is already 32 levels higher than Zhang Yang's level! The damage he inflicts on the boss would be restricted by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game! That was just unfair! Zhang Yang and the ladies would not be able to channel their damage output efficiently, because of the Level Gap Suppression function of the game!

Furthermore, this is not just some Yellow-Gold boss! This is an actual Mythical Tier boss!

Zhang Yang had not forgotten the day when he had to struggle against the Spectre b\*tch from the Imperial Heaven's Empire who had been dead for thousands of years! It had been so tiring! Compared to that encounter with that boss, although they had one more Violet-Platinum Tier [Mount] and a Battle Companion with higher Tiers with them this time, they were still far stronger than they are now.

Why? They had been given full sets of Mythical Tier equipment before they engaged in battle with that Spectre b\*tch! Even with all those 'power ups', they were still having difficulties in battling that boss! They were actually close to being defeated, themselves! Now? There were only the 3 of them here. This would be mission impossible for them!

Well, all they can hope for now is that Meka finishes concocting his potion as swiftly as possible, and quickly fixes his penis! Then, he can swoop into the scene and save Zhang Yang and the ladies by defeating the entire army with his newly revived penis! Or else,

they are going to die.

"Kill them all." the Countess gazed upon Zhang Yang and the 3 ladies as she gave the command to attack - in a very cold and merciless tone. In an instant, countless arrows were released, and countless circular magic formations were formed right above the sky, releasing a bombardment at Zhang Yang and the ladies.

However, the little cottage played its role there and then, with its diminutive structure. Most of the attacks landed onto the walls and bricks of the little cottage. The bombardment of the magic attacks and the arrow shootings were so strong that the entire cottage was trembling, to the point that the walls were beginning to break off, brick by brick!

Boom! Boom! Shoof! Shoof!

Under heavy fire from the monsters, holes started filling up the wall. Shoof! Shoof! Shoof! Instantly, countless arrows flew in from the sky. Many magic attacks had been mixed into the arrow attacks, greatly increasing the chances of them being hit!

Zhang Yang and the ladies quickly took a few steps back further into the little cottage. After just a short while, they had found themselves at the very end of the little cottage, the bedroom!

Meka was still squatting on the floor, by the side of a small furnace. While this middle-age man was still throwing the materials into the furnace with care and love, he was sweating all over his face. He was so focused on what he was doing that he did

not even realize that Zhang Yang and the ladies had entered the bedroom!

"A bunch of imbeciles!" the Countess snapped coldly, as she began to walk towards Zhang Yang and the ladies impatiently.

"Please, forgive us!" the monsters fell to their knees in fear.

The Countess did not even look at them as she raised her right hand up and pointed her staff at Zhang Yang. Buzz! A bolt of blazing white lightning flew at Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang quickly took a few steps forward and met the lightning strike head-on!

{Thunder Flash}! Not only could it inflict damage to its primary target, it could also leap over to the next closest targets. Zhang Yang did not want Wei Yan Er to suffer from the leaping of the bolt, so he ran out of the range!

‘-42,214!’

A large patch of burn mark was ‘stamped’ onto the middle of Zhang Yang’s chest, as he was inflicted with a very high amount damage. A large chunk of his HP bar was lost! That attack was not as powerful as he had expected, judging by the attack power of the boss. Because of the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, every single hit from the boss had a chance of dealing double damage!

"Silly Yu, the damage of this boss is too much! I can't heal you up in time!" Han Ying Xue knew her own healing capabilities very well. She could only heal Zhang Yang by 7,000 HP per second. That amount of healing would not be able to balance out with the damage the boss was capable of putting out.

Furthermore, this attack came solely from the boss. If those Elite monsters decide to join in, how long would this party last, then?

"Just buy me some time! My quest doesn't require me killing this boss. All I need to do in order to complete this quest is to delay enough time for that uncle over there to finish with his 'work' and 'stand up'!" Zhang Yang told the ladies.

"I don't think that buying time is any much easier than killing the boss!" Han Ying Xue refuted.

Zhang Yang laughed it off. If they could manage in keeping the boss occupied and delay some time, then, they would naturally stand a chance to kill the boss. But, Zhang Yang had no idea at all on how long would Meka take in order to complete his potion. A minute? Two minutes? Or is it ten minutes? Or twenty minutes? If it's just one or two minutes, it was possible for Zhang Yang to hold on, if he activates all of his super skills and life-saving skills. But to hold on for at least a twenty minutes? They might as well abandon the quest now!

Zhang Yang stepped up and barricaded the entrance of the little cottage with his body. As for Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Felice,

and last but not least, the [Mythical Turtle], they went straight into the last room of the cottage and remained there. Since that they could not slay the boss, they might as well buy as much time as possible.

Buzz! Buzz!

The boss activated her {Thunder Flash} over and over again on Zhang Yang, and inflicted a substantial amount of damage on him. He would turn into a roasted chicken at this rate! Surges of flashing thunder kept slamming into his body, and Zhang Yang could even smell his own charred flesh!

Wei Yan Er was really heartless as she was laughing at Zhang Yang instead of pitying him. Felice was so angry to see her laughing at her 'big brother'. She could not take it anymore as she raised up her lance and pointed straight at the little brat, attacking her to the point that the little brat was screaming for help!

{Berserker's Heal}, {Shield Wall}, {Last Vigor}! Zhang Yang had activated every single Skills that he has. He had even activated the ultimate life-saving skill of the [Titan Wall]! However, under the oppressive assaults from a Level 135 Mythical Tier boss, every effort that Zhang Yang put in were all washed away. He was only postponing the inevitable!

Zhang Yang could not help but let out a sigh after the boss had struck through the shield of the [Titan Wall]. Just when all hope was lost, and he was about to give in to the boss, he suddenly heard a series of laughter coming from behind him. Meka suddenly leaped up from the floor. Boom! With his slim and athletic body,



he broke through the roof with brute force and landed right outside the little cottage, like a god descending down to the earth from the heavens!

[Meka] (Mythical, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 140

HP: 42,000,000

Defense: 5,920

Melee Attack: 25,191 - 29,191

Skills: ???

Note: The reinvigorated penis... eherm! The reinvigorated Meka!

"Hahaha! Kate! Didn't you want to see me badly? I'm here, as you asked for!" Meka was monstrously powerful. He did not even need a weapon! He punched his fist into the air and instantly, a visible stream of air flow radiated out from his punch, across the surroundings! Bam! Bam! Bam! Every single one of the Snowflakes Castle's female Knights was sent flying off by the powerful airflow emitted out from Meka's fist! The armor and clothes on their bodies were shredded, revealing the scent of spring across the surrounding.

This delinquent middle-age man then let out a howl like a wolf and gave another punch into the ground. That punch was extremely powerful and concussive, that the ground was cracked as it trembled! Waves that were tens of meters tall were formed from the impact of the punch, as well across the Shuhada Lake! Mighty waves were beating the shore and the scene was powerful and dynamic!

--- Finally, Zhang Yang had witnessed that wretched man's handsome and yet perverted heroic posture, with his penis rejuvenated!

"Meka! I have heard of your name across many lands! Come and fight me!" the Countess challenged Meka in a cold tone.

"You want a battle with me? Then let's have a battle that you will never forget!" Meka let out a roar in excitement as he charged towards Kate. Boom! Boom! Boom! His hands were blazingly fast. Zhang Yang and the ladies could not even see them coming! All of them were kicked right out from the little cottage. Right after that, torn pieces of clothes were flung right out from the little cottage.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

The sound of clashing did not stop as the entire cottage shook violently!

Zhang Yang, "..."

Han Ying Xue, "..."

Wei Yan Er, "Wow! These two bosses are battling so vigorously that the cottage is shaking!"

The cottage shook continuously for one entire hour before it stopped. After a brief moment, the Countess came out from the cottage, her clothes torn and askew, her eyes lost in tenderness and love. After she half mumbled, 'Back to the castle', she led her army and went straight back to her castle.

Another brief moment later, they finally saw Meka stepping out with a lightness in his feet, the pent-up expression on his face no longer there.

Han Ying Xue shivered as she quickly asked Wei Yan Er to leave with her, "Yan Er, let's go and grind up your Winged Tiger!"

After the two ladies left, Zhang Yang went up to Meka and asked, "Mr. Meka, so tell me, what's the story behind this axe?"

"Young man, I shall never forget about the things I promised you!" Meka nodded as a gentle wind blown by. His blonde hair was flowing in the wind and the man's mature charm had been exponentially raised.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Not to be Disturbed, acquired 5,000,000 experience points!'

Meka turned solemn, as he looked into a far distance, trying to reorganize his emotions, and then he began to say, "According to legend, for god knows how many tens of thousands of years, the gods in the heavens had a great war! The war was nasty! Even the gods could not avoid death. Only they know how many of the powerful gods fell on that day!"

He paused a while before he continued to talk, "These gods, well... even though they had fallen, but their souls and wills were not extinguished! They were searching for humans who were worthy of inheriting their godly power, offering them to extend their lives in a new form! The axe that you obtained earlier on is the weapon that the gods have used before during the war. You can locate the places where the gods fell, get the god's acknowledgments, and inherit the god's godly power!"

"Use your heart to feel the power within this [Axe of the Fallen], and it will guide you towards the right direction!"

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: The Search for Meka, acquired 100,000 experience points!’

A mere reward of 100,000 experience points? Zhang Yang could not help but to shake his head again and again. He took out the Inheritance Keepsake of the God of War and when he touched that axe once again, Zhang Yang instantly received a notification from the system.

‘Ding! You have found out about the hidden story behind the axe. By the guidance of Meka, you have used your heart to feel the power within it. Somewhere within it, you heard a vague voice

saying, "Go to the Camarro Islands! Go to the Camarro Islands!"

So, the next stop is the Camarro Islands!

Zhang Yang used a [Teleportation Scroll] and traveled back to Morning Town. After the cool down period for his [Party Summon Order] was finally over, he summoned Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er over to his location. Then, he linked their [Teleportation Scrolls] onto the Teleportation Circle in Morning Town for their convenience.

The little brat was very eager to ride on her [Flying Mount], so she went off with the [Winged Tiger] to grind it's level up. On the other hand, Han Ying Xue was not as energetic. She got Zhang Yang to identify her [Enigmatic Prophet's Boots] before she headed down the streets for a casual walk. After that, she went off to see that blind little girl Luilina and went straight to Winst Castle to gaze upon the view of the Chaos Realm from the top of the palace.

Zhang Yang summoned out the Serpent and headed straight towards the Camarro Islands.

In order to unseal the second seal on his [Sword of Purging Devourer], Zhang Yang was required to locate the [Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang]. However, after weighing the importance between the quests, naturally, getting the [God of War Inheritance] would be his main priority. Whatever side quests or minor quests that come after that would have to wait until he gets his hands on the [God of War Inheritance].

After flying in the sky for about 4 to 5 hours, Zhang Yang had finally entered the area of the Camarro Islands. It was a grinding map ranging from Level 100 to Level 130. Like the ten barren seas, it was a large ocean dotted with small islands.

# Chapter 497: Inheritance Trial

---

Zhang Yang took the Inheritance Keepsake of the God of War out of his inventory. The axe suddenly became ‘alive,’ and freed itself from the grip of Zhang Yang. After that, the axe radiated and turned into a stream of light, and it began to fly off.

He quickly patted Whitey Jr., and the Serpent soared to the sky and chased after the light.

Although the light was traveling quite swiftly, it would stop after a certain distance, as if it was waiting for Zhang Yang to follow it. That way, Zhang Yang would not lose track of it.

Although this small axe got the chance to rest, however, Whitey Jr. was giving its all, flying at its top speed, just to keep up with it. Whitey Jr. was so exhausted that its two beady eyes were swollen with tears. It would turn around to look at Zhang Yang, trying to look pitiful, pleading Zhang Yang to let it stop and rest for awhile.

Zhang Yang laughed and patted the head of the Serpent, then he said, "You can do it, Whitey Jr.. In future, I shall get a white snake to be your lifelong companion! White snake, green snake, and only [Xu Xian](#) is missing!" Zhang Yang tried to crack a joke, based on the Chinese Odyssey titled, ‘Legend of the White Snake’.

"So, who is this Xu Xian, big brother?" Felice was not carrying anyone, and on top of that, she had exceptional stamina! There was no sign of tiredness or fatigue on her face. Furthermore, she could simply sit on the back of Whitey Jr. whenever she feels like

taking a break. So the most unlucky one in this situation is Whitey Jr..

"Erm... Xu Xian is a physician. His sister-in-law is the captain of the officers in town, something like a modern day government servant. Well, with a good family background and a decent job, he managed to win back a fair and beautiful white bride as his wife, and also got another energetic and hot green girl, as a bonus!" Zhang Yang began to talk nonsense as he started to tell Felice the story of the 'Legend of the White Snake'.

Felice was listening to the story with a very focused mind. Unconsciously, she stopped flying on her own as she slowly transformed back to her Humanoid Form and sat on the back of Whitey Jr.. Poor Whitey Jr.. another weight was added on its back, as more tears flowed from its small beady eyes. After she was done listening to Zhang Yang's story, Felice could not help but to wonder as she patted on the body of Whitey Jr., "Whitey Jr., you can turn yourself into a beautiful white bride, can you?"

Whitey Jr., "..."

After soaring through the sky over a certain distance for 2 hours straight, the flying axe had finally landed on the ground. With a loud and tremendous clash, it cleaved through a thick and sturdy rock and went right through.

Zhang Yang landed on the ground together with Whitey Jr. as he made his way down from the back of the Serpent. He walked up to the axe and grabbed the handle with both hands. Then, he began to put his strength into pulling the Inheritance Keepsake of the



God of War, out of the rock.

The moment he pulled the axe out of the rock, a very powerful magnetic force came over and pulled the axe away towards a new direction.

This is basically a deserted island where there is no sign of men at all, not even beasts or Spectres! Zhang Yang got on the back of Whitey Jr. and followed the axe.

Not long after, Zhang Yang found himself standing at the entrance of a cave. This cave was not as deep as he had expected it to be. It was only approximately 30 meters deep in. Zhang Yang activated the Appearance Effect of his [Titan Set Armor], and his entire body began to glow. He proceeded deeper into the cave, displeased about how he glowed like a walking lighthouse.

Although the cave was not deep in, it was vast and spacious. The ceiling of the cave was at least 30 meters above from the ground and the width was about 20 meters wide, at the least. Rather than a cave, this was more like a horizontal crater. It was as if a giant had punched the muddy ground with all his might!

Zhang Yang stopped by a gigantic corpse which lay at the deepest part of the cave.

The gigantic corpse had already decayed into a mere skeleton, lying against the wall of the cave. It was about 7 meters tall. Furthermore, this skeleton was completely gold in color, as if it was a masterpiece, made of pure gold!

However, some parts of its left chest had been broken off, apparently, the owner of this skeleton was killed by a blow through its chest.

Boom!

The axe in Zhang Yang's hand began to radiate a heavenly light of seven colors, and the light was absorbed into the giant skeleton!

Crack! Crack! Crack!

In front of Zhang Yang's own eyes, the skeleton started moving! After stretching, as if it was just waking up from sleep, it got to its feet and stood gloriously in front of Zhang Yang. Suddenly, the axe tore itself out of Zhang Yang's grip, and flew straight into the grip of this gigantic skeleton! Instantly, invisible waves were blown across the surroundings, followed by the sound of huge tidal waves bursting and rumbling across the ears of Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang heard a sound coming from behind him and he could not help but to turn around to have a look. What he saw was a huge tidal wave as high as hundreds of meters tall, moving fast and strong across the sea, outwardly into the distance!

Holy mother of lord! This is one amazingly overpowered being here! It had been dead for so long that only the skeleton remained, but it is still capable of stirring up such impact by raising a hand up! How cool and overly powerful is that!

Zhang Yang stared at the skeleton as he tried to read its details.

[Ares, The Fallen God of War] (???)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Defense: ???

Attack: ???

Skills: ???

Note: One of the hapless gods that had fallen during the War among Gods.

No matter how high the level of the bosses are, they would still inform players their levels, through their information description, just like the Celestial Tier boss that Zhang Yang encountered when he was still back in the newbie town. Even though there were about 300 Levels differences between the level of the boss and the levels of the players, Zhang Yang and the other players could still see the Tier and the level of the boss, at the very least.

But this Fallen God of War did not show any other information, other than its name! This is most likely due to the fact that this is

an actual god, which is even higher than the Celestial Tier!

"Mortal ---" the skeleton began to talk in a very deep voice. Although the voice of the boss was not loud, the air around him was thrown about. Miniature tornadoes were beginning to form, one after another as the strong winds collided with each other. Such is the divine power of a god!

If this boss ever slammed its palm down, even a Celestial boss would most probably be instantly killed!

Zhang Yang's mind was in a mess as his mouth started moving politely and uttering idle pleasantries to the 'god' right before him, "God of War, I have heard tales about you! I have gone through many challenges to collect all of your [God of War Inheritance Fragments], and I have traveled a great distance to locate you with only one goal, to obtain your Inheritance!"

"Haha! Mortal! You are very direct, and I respect that!" the gigantic skeleton began to laugh and the air was thrown up again, causing the ceiling of the cave to tremble and the rocks and stone to fall from the ceiling. Even the rocks in the surroundings were rumbling! It was as if the cave would collapse at any time!

He nodded and said, "Since that you have acquired my Inheritance Keepsake, of course, you are worthy of obtaining my Inheritance! However, before that, you must pass my trial! It only proves that you are only fortunate enough to stumble across every single fragment of my Inheritance Keepsake. In order to become my successor and inherit my power, you must have a boundless 'Courage', the 'Bloodlust', and of course, a wise mind with

‘Determination’!”

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "Then, show me your trials, and I shall complete them all to prove to you that I am indeed worthy!"

"Very well. My remaining power is limited. It is only enough for me to reveal myself for a brief moment. In no time at all, I shall return to silence and continue to rest in darkness for eternity!" the voice of Ares continued to rumble across the surroundings of the cave.

Zhang Yang could not help but frown deeply. This ‘god’ knew that he was running out of time, yet he does not know how to cut the crap and save more time! But, this ‘god’ had been in the dark, without any chance to talk or even breathe for tens of thousands of years! It was quite understandable, all things considered.

"The first trial shall test your ‘Courage’!”

Ares raised a finger pointed it at Zhang Yang from where he stood. A stream of colorful light began to engulf Zhang Yang entirely.

Zhang Yang only saw a blinding glare in front of him as he squeezed his eyes shut. After he reopened his eyes and regained his vision, he found that he was standing right at the top of a bottomless cliff! There was no way for him to back away from the side of the cliff! There was only a bridge, with a width of less than half a foot, right before his eyes. The bridge was connected directly

to the peak of a mountain, at least 1 kilometer away from where he stood!

The wind was howling in between the mountains making the bridge very shaky and unstable. It was like a long snake. Looking down the endless pit below the bridge would definitely give quite a punch to a person's mental state. Some people might just turn away the moment they see that bottomless area below that bridge!

Even though Zhang Yang knew that this 'scene' was in virtual reality, his heart was still pounding madly, as if his heart was about to beat through his chest and fall out! Well, this is perfectly normal, as normal people would have felt the same. If anyone dares say that this is nothing, then that person must be mentally sick!

'Ding! You accepted the first trial from Ares! You must reach the other end of the bridge within 20 minutes. The timer will start the moment you set foot on the stone bridge. You can only fail 3 times, or you shall never be able to complete the quest for the [God of War Inheritance]!'

What the hell!

Zhang Yang tried to summon the Serpent with his mind, but he immediately received a notification from the system straight away, saying that he cannot summon a [Mount] in this area! Not just that, he could not even summon Felice out! It totally cut off any options for Zhang Yang to cheat in this trial!

Zhang Yang took a deep breath and he aimed properly at direction he was supposed to go. He suddenly closed his eyes tightly and charged forward in a hush!

Thud thud thud!

He had nothing on his mind at that moment, other than trying to make sure he was running perfectly straight!

According to an average movement speed of a player in the game, a player can move 10 meters every second. It meant that a player could run over 1000 meters in 100 seconds! To be able to finish walking on a stone bridge that is no wider than half a foot from one end to the other end is already not an easy task, even without a limited time frame. Currently, Zhang Yang was only given 2 minutes to complete the task!

Well, since he really has to do it in order to pass the trial, he simply squeezed his eyes shut and thought about nothing as he kept running forward!

Isn't this trial all about 'Courage'? Well, running across a thin, long bridge, with his eyes closed, is considered a very brave move in itself, right? Of course, Zhang Yang would only dare to try such a stunt in the game.

The wind was howling into both of his ears, however, Zhang Yang was not affected at all. He ignored everything, the only thing he cared about at that moment was the time, as he ran forward. He did not dare to even open his eyes a little. He knew that if he ever

takes a peek down on the bridge, it would definitely send him tipping down to 'hell'.

50 seconds... 80 seconds... 100 seconds... 110 seconds!

Zhang Yang opened his eyes, and found himself on the other side of the bridge. He had arrived at the other end of the stone bridge on the peak of the mountain!

‘ Ding! Congratulation, you have passed the first trial!’

The scene around Zhang Yang suddenly blurred and changed into another set of scenes. Now, he was put into an ancient arena.

"The second trial will test you your 'Bloodlust'!"

The deep, cold voice of Ares was spread across the entire arena.

‘Ding! You have accepted the second trial from Ares! Within this period of time, you shall forget every single skill you have and you shall not be able to use any items from your inventory. What you are required to do is to kill without mercy until you have defeated every single enemy in the arena! Please take note that you would have to restart this trial if you are killed. Furthermore, you can only die 3 times, or else you shall never be able to complete the quest for the [God of War Inheritance]!’

Cling! Clang! Cling! Clang!



The metallic door at the other end of the arena began to open up as metallic chains pulled the door upwards. A muscular man, with a giant hammer over his shoulder walked into the arena and let out an intimidating roar. Without even a simple greeting, he charged straight towards Zhang Yang, swinging his hammer!

The moment he entered the arena, all attributes of Zhang Yang were reduced to zero, and all the equipment he had on him had disappeared! He was basically a naked man, wearing only a diaper to cover his 'vital' spot! However, there were countless weapons lying on the weapon rack at the sides of the arena. So, he quickly made his way straight to the weapon rack and picked up an axe and a shield. Then, he began to go head on with the hammer guy.

The damage calculation in the arena is very different. All characters did not have HP bars to indicate whether they have high HP or low HP. A variety of methods could be used to kill the opponents. You can just take off the head, or cut off the hands of the opponents and let them bleed to death. Everything was just like the real world! There was nothing related to the system of the game, at all.

Zhang Yang let out a thunderous roar as he slid across the ground and through the two legs of the muscular man. While he was at it, he lifted the axe in his hands and the entire axe went straight into his crotch! Blood spilled all over the ground as the man spilled his blood and guts! It was disgusting! After he staggered around for awhile, the man collapsed onto the ground and died.

Cling! Clang! Cling! Clang!

Before Zhang Yang could even take a deep breath, the metallic door was once again pulled upwards, and a one-armed middle age man with a slender frame walked right out. This time, the opponent only had a knife on his only arm, the right arm. The man would spin around with his knife sporadically. The knife would glint, sending a terrifying thrill that was made even more intense by the cold, chilly air around the arena, every time he struck!

Zhang Yang was overwhelmed by his own will to kill at the moment. He walked to the dead muscular man that he had killed previously and pried the axe out of the man's ruptured guts.

As he was picking up the axe, that one-arm man was already beginning to charge at him with large strides. With the knife in his hand, Zhang Yang could feel the knife rushing for his throat!

Zhang Yang would be dead, if the man gets him by his throat. Everything in the arena was so real, that there was no HP or MP, or any sort of attributes involved anymore! Every game knowledge Zhang Yang had was now meaningless! Well, Zhang Yang had pretty decent fighting skills in real life. By the time the knife almost reached his neck, Zhang Yang had already raised his shield and blocked the attack!

However, before Zhang Yang could even begin to fight back, the one-arm man had already turned the other way around and struck Zhang Yang with another blow! He was moving fast as lightning!

The sound of the knife clashing with the shield was heard over

and over again.

Zhang Yang could only keep raising his shield around to protect the frontal part of his entire body as the one-arm man continued moving his knife around in such an agile way! Zhang Yang did not even dare lower down his shield!

What the hell! What amazing skill!

Zhang Yang endured it for a little while more, and suddenly, he moved his arm all of a sudden and bashed his shield right onto the face of that one-arm man. Blood spilled out from his mouth, as the one-arm man staggered a few steps back. But, as his veteran appearance suggested, he immediately righted himself and charged back towards Zhang Yang while waving his knife about!

Ting! Ting! Ting!

In a battle of swords, the shorter the weapon you have, the more danger you are exposed to. The one-arm man was using a short knife, so he was moving extremely fast, so much faster than Zhang Yang's heavy axe! Every single cut he attempted on Zhang Yang was very close to the throat and chest of Zhang Yang! Zhang Yang could feel his murderous intent blazing.

Sliced!

Blood was spilled across the air as the chest of Zhang Yang was sliced! A wound that was about one foot long instantly appeared

on his chest! The wound was so deep that his bones were slightly exposed!

"Argh!" Zhang Yang was angered by the cut as his killing instinct kicked in! With a sweep kick that knocked the man's legs out from under him, the one-arm man fell straight to the ground. Before he could even get back on his feet, Zhang Yang had already taken his head right off with the heavy axe in his hands!

A slaughter fest has begun!

Cling! Clang! Cling! Clang! The metallic door was opened up once again, opponents with murderous looks came into the arena, one after another, to challenge Zhang to death.

After all, only one would survive by the end of these battles! Of course, Zhang Yang would not allow himself to be slaughtered by other while he does nothing. He gave it his best to survive waves of battles, taking off heads of his opponents one after another! So much blood was spilled onto his body to the point that he looked like he just had a bloodbath! There was no way of telling whose blood was whose anymore!

The monsters that died here did not disappear as well. The bodies were piled up, to the point that the entire arena was flooded with blood, severed limbs, and mangled corpses! The scene was spectacularly bloody!

It was an endless killing spree, and Zhang Yang wasn't even aware that the blood had flooded the arena, up to his ankles! The

blood was so thick that it took him a lot of effort to move his legs!

1. Xu Xian: the lover of Bai Suzhen (human form of White Snake) in the folk tale of 'Legend of the White Snake'.

# Chapter 498: The True Ordeal

---

The massacre was endless!

Zhang Yang had lost count on how many opponents he had slain! However, both sides of the arena were piled up with countless bodies, and the very air itself was shrouded in red mist!

In this arena, the passing time would be much slower than the time in the game. Because Dream Technology has managed to adjust the in-game time and the real time to the ratio of 3:1, they would have no problem adjusting it further, here!

Zhang Yang felt that he had been killing for an entire month, already!

Whenever he battled one opponent during the day, he would have one night to rest it off, before he would encounter another new opponent the next day. Zhang Yang figured that he had probably 'overnight' for over 30 times! Finally, he was teleported out of the arena!

Although he reacquired all of his equipment, and all of the blood on him had disappeared the moment he left the arena, however, a month of restless killing had taken a toll on his psyche. There was a murderous look on him, and his eyes looked dead and empty. Some might even wet their pants by simply making eye contact with him!

From the depths of his heart, he was furious at the game's

developers. Such a quest was too much! Making one participate in such a mass slaughter could really change a person's soul and plant the seed of evil in it! He recalled that the [God of War Inheritor] in his previous life was an American who had a thirst for killing! Having gone through this part of the quest now, he believed that it wasn't really the true nature of the American. After all, he must have passed the trial after killing so many people, and it had affected him so much!

Even though he felt as if he had stayed in the arena for over 30 days, it had merely been a few hours on the 'outside' world of the game. At least he did not feel any thirst or hunger after he completed the trial.

"The third trial will test your 'Determination'!"

The deep voice of Ares boomed across his ears, and the scene in front of Zhang Yang changed again, this time, he found himself by a lake! The water of the lake was so crystal clear that he could see the bottom of the lake. The moon was high in the sky, its reflection clearly seen on the surface of the lake.

At one end of the lake, there was a heavenly beautiful woman dipped in the pool. Her fair, naked body was reflected under the pale, clear moonlight, it was an immeasurably mesmerizing scene!

The woman appeared to be at the age of 24 or 25 years old, the age where humans would be at their prime, and women would be at the height of their beauty. Her body shape was lined with perfect grace, her skin as white as polished jade, with the water sliding off its flawless surface! Her fair neck was graceful and long,

and her folded arms that were wrapped around her flat stomach ‘unintentionally’ lifted her full, heavy breasts up, and two light, strawberry-yogurt pink circular tips jutted out of the mountains. Her slim, hypnotic waist could only be matched by her round, perky buttocks. Her two long thighs were so fair that they appeared to be an illusion - blurry to the eyes! Her perfectly shaped body formed an hourglass that was lacking in neither symmetry or proportions.

When it comes to Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, and Yu Li, they were truly beautiful creatures. However, humans are never perfect. There would always be some flaw. But, the body of the woman right before Zhang Yang’s eyes is the definition of perfection. There were no flaws, at all! Every inch of her fair skin was perfectly sculpted!

Zhang Yang could not take his eyes off this surreal image!

‘Ding! You accepted the third trial from Ares! Warrior, you must guard your soul! To defeat you, the enemy will use all sorts of schemes and conspiracies that exist in this realm, including Seduction! Ares will never want a person without a stout heart to inherit his legacy and power! So warrior, you have only once chance to prove yourself within these 30 minutes! Don’t mess it up and make yourself look stupid!’

Zhang Yang could not help but to feel embarrassed. Although he had overcame the ‘one month’ of killing and slaughtering, he was now in an extreme need to ‘release’ his stress! What better way to let it all lose in one climatic, spurt of love and passion?!



But, Zhang Yang was not so silly that he would mix up the game and reality together! He was not so ‘hungry’ to get a hard-on while looking at a virtual character! At worst, he could just ram into Han Ying Xue’s room and ‘teach’ the witch a good ‘lesson’! Well, the witch might even get into it and have fun with him!

So, is this trial a bonus for him, then?

As for the beautiful woman bathing by the side of the lake, it seemed that Zhang Yang did not exist in her eyes. Even though they were just tens of meters away from each other, the woman had not even spared a glance at Zhang Yang. She did not even turn her head over towards the direction where Zhang Yang was standing. However, when Zhang Yang saw the information right above her head, he could not help but to feel shocked!

[Lachesis, The Goddess of War] (???)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Defense: ???

Attack: ??

Skills ???

Note: Represents the Goddess of War, the existence of this Goddess trembles over the gods in the divine realm!

What the f\*ck! He actually got a chance to feast his eyes upon the scene of a Goddess of War bathing with his eyes! Looks like this Ares is not all stout of heart either! Of all women in the world, he actually picked the Goddess of War to be the projection for his trial object! It seems like he had a thing for this Lachesis, back then!

"Come... come!"

Low voices were suddenly heard by the ears of Zhang Yang. The voices were more like moans, and the voices were so seductive, attempting to rob Zhang Yang of his senses, making him lose grip of reality! It was a difficult sensation to explain, so let's take an inappropriate example. It's as if a person is feeling an urge to urinate while dreaming, but a part of his subconscious is strongly suggesting him not to.

Zhang Yang was feeling that way, all the time, as he stood over there. A strong seductive force was trying to lead him into walking forward! But he seemed to remember that he needed to complete the quest! He knew that everything would be over if he ever walks towards that woman!

It was like being awake, and not being awake at the same time! It was the unexplainable sensation of drifting across a fantasy!

At the same moment, a blazing white light suddenly burst right out of the chest of Zhang Yang. Felice actually broke through the

restriction of this area and materialized as Zhang Yang's Battle Companion!

The drifting feeling was instantly removed from his body as Zhang Yang instantly regained his senses! Although the woman in the lake was extremely beautiful and seductive, it was really difficult to actually shake Zhang Yang's will. A normal man would only look at a poster with a pretty sexy girl on it, and feast their eyes upon it, instead of charging towards the poster with their erected penises.

"Felice! How did you manage to come out?" Zhang Yang was really curious on how Felice broke through the restriction of the area.

Felice was gazing upon the beautiful woman in the lake with a confused expression on her face as she was muttering, "Big brother, I feel like I know her! But no matter how hard I try to remember, I just cannot recall who she is!"

After listening to her, Zhang Yang suddenly realized that features of Lachesis actually looked just like Felice's!

Could it be, that Felice is actually the daughter of Lachesis?

To think that Felice is already as powerful as a Mythical Tier, with 4 seals still holding her back, would she become as powerful as a Celestial Tier being, if all 4 seals are unsealed away? This actually makes sense for such a powerful existence to have a Goddess of War as her mother!

Meka did say that a war erupted over thousands of years ago. Lachesis might have fallen during that war, while Felice got away from it, most probably because of the seals! Anyway, this is just a game, any designed story in the game by the designers would do, as long as it makes sense.

"Big brother, why do I feel like crying right now?" Felice turned around and looked at Zhang Yang, as tears began to roll down her cheeks. She looked really sad at the moment.

Zhang Yang quickly pulled the little lady into his arms as he said, "Don't cry. I'm here for you."

With the appearance of Felice, this supposedly extremely difficult trial had become extremely easy. Zhang Yang hugged the little lady for half an hour and passed the third trial very easily.

This time, he was not transported to another special scene. He found himself back in the middle of the cave he found Ares. Right in front of him was the gigantic skeleton of Ares, lying against the wall again.

"Very well. You have passed the first three trials. So, let us move on to the next phase. The true ordeal is about to come at you!" the deep voice of Ares was thunderous, "You have the 'Courage', the 'Bloodlust', and the 'Determination'! But those are not enough! You must also possess a certain level of Strength in order to proceed with the Inheritance of my power! Or else, you might just be crushed by the fragments of my rampant power!"

"Furthermore, the vitality of my soul is nearing it's limit. I must recharge my soul in order to prolong my pitiful existence. So, warrior, go on and slay a Black Dragon named Anubask, and bring me back the blood of that giant lizard! Pour it on me when you return! With the nourishment of the dragon's blood, my soul should be able to cling on to this world for another one or two years!"

Right after Ares finished his words, he sat right back to the corner of the cave by one of the walls and continued to pretend to be dead.

'Ding! Ares has given you a quest: The True Ordeal, accept or decline?"

... can he really choose not to accept this?

[The True Ordeal] (Difficulty: S-rank)

Description: Ares wants you to kill the Black Dragon Anubask and obtain the [Black Dragon's Blood] to prolong the vitality of his soul. Warrior. The Black Dragon Anubask is extremely powerful. You better be prepared! Bring along a thousand, no, ten thousand players before you head for the boss! The Black Dragon Anubask is rumored to be found by Crimson Flames Peak in the area of the Land of the Flaming Rocks.

Completion: Slay the Black Dragon Anubask 0/1, acquire the Black Dragon's Heart 0/1.

Slay a black dragon?

Zhang Yang felt a group of muscles twitching below his left eye. The Land of the Flaming Rocks is a Level 120 - Level 150 map, and Ethereal bosses start appearing in the map, starting from Level 140! He was very positive that this Anubask must be an Ethereal Tier boss at the very least! If he ever encounters any Ethereal Tier boss with his current equipment, he should rejoice if he even gets to walk away in one piece! To even think about slaying a Black Dragon is totally absurd!

Unless Zhang Yang invites Queen Serena over to aid him on this. Slaying a Level 150 Ethereal Tier boss would definitely be easy and enjoyable if he ever takes on the dragon boss, together with an Ascended Tier NPC that wields the heavenly [Meteor Sword] by his side. Or else, he would really need to recruit a large number of players before he can take down an Ethereal boss!

In his previous life, Zhang Yang had mobilized all his entire guild members from his previous guild - Clear Water in order to obtain the Inheritance from the King Kong boss. After they had been launching their assaults without any pause for one day one night straight, they finally took down that King Kong boss!

But the only Lone Desert Smoke members who can enter the Chaos Realm at the moment are Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. The rest have not even reached Level 100 yet. Although they already have a tanker, a healer, and a DPS player already, it would still be a joke if the 3 of them went up against an Ethereal boss!

Well, if you intend to sacrifice yourself, at least die a meaningful death!

So what should he do now? Should he really wait for most of his guild members to reach Level 100 and enter the Chaos Realm, before he heads out for the Black Dragon Anubask?

Furthermore, Zhang Yang had already accepted a Main Story Quest where he is required to gather 3 different kinds of materials, back from when he was Level 10. One of the materials required would be the [Black Dragon's Heart]. He had already acquired the [Horn of the Mythical Unicorn] previously. So if he can just get his hands on the [Black Dragon's Heart], he would only need to locate [Book of the Damned] before he can finally complete that quest!

After all, he has the [Friendship Jade] which allowed him to disguise himself as a Spectre and infiltrate deep into the lair of the Spectre to steal the [Book of the Damned] with ease. Well, it would mean that he can finally complete that quest that he accepted ever since he was Level 10 within a short period of time right, after he gets his hands on the [Black Dragon's Heart]!

# Chapter 499: Black Dragon Anubask

---

However, it was actually not impossible to slay the boss at the current moment. It would only require the support of powerful items such as the [Forbidden Scroll]!

Zhang Yang could not help but let out a breath of sigh as he began to think about the insufficient number of good cards on his deck. If only he could get a large number of [Forbidden Scrolls], then he should be able to crush this boss without any problems. Unfortunate for him, being the first to enter the Chaos Realm, Zhang Yang had only managed to obtain one [Forbidden Scroll] ever since he stepped foot into this realm. It seems that the rate of dropping of this item is extremely low. So, hoping for players to sell out a rare item like the [Forbidden Scroll] isn't going to cut it.

Zhang Yang could not simply put aside the [God of War Inheritance], even momentarily. He was so fixated that his heart screamed for him to somehow find a way to finish the quest. After giving thoughts on how to proceed with the quest, he finally decided to travel over to the Land of the Flaming Rocks to check on how powerful the boss can be. If he really stands a chance to tank against the boss, then he can just summon Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er over to aid him in battle! Zhang Yang was so determined to slay the boss, no matter on how great the cost is! As long as he can slay that dragon, every effort he puts in would be worth it!

After he made his decision, Zhang Yang summoned Whitey Jr. and headed straight to the Land of the Flaming Rocks.

Although the map of this Land of the Flaming Rocks is just a



Level 120 - 150 grinding map, there were 4 maps in between the map of Land of the Flaming Rocks and the map of the Camarro Islands. In other words, the distance between these two maps would still be very far and wide. Whitey Jr. Was once again 'tortured' to flying across the maps. When they arrived at the map blazing with volcanic lava, Whitey Jr. looked like it was about to die of tiredness.

The level of Zhang Yang was way too low for the map. The moment he landed on the ground, it was like a naked beautiful woman stepping into the lair of dirty swines! The monsters were already charging towards him, 40 to 50 meters away while they were 'howling' as if they had just spotted their prey. Poor Whitey Jr., without being spared a second of respite, was forced to go airborne again to leave the swarm of monsters behind.

Though the ground was definitely hostile, the sky was not much safer. Flying birds, with no indication of their levels, flew towards Zhang Yang, one after another as they began to launch their attacks on Whitey Jr. and himself.

Although the Level Gap Suppression function of the game is effective, making Zhang Yang's attack power drop and the damage he receives to increase a lot, but it was still a simple task for Zhang Yang to slay normal monsters. The only difference was that their HP bars were a little longer. It only felt like battling an Elite Tier monster of his level!

Zhang Yang took out every single monster that came in his way as he headed for the Crimson Flame Peak.

The moment he entered the area of the Crimson Flame Peak, where lava flowed everywhere across the ground, Zhang Yang stopped encountering those annoying birds, and that concerned him a little. Obviously, he had entered the territory of that foul Black Dragon, Anubask. No living creature in that land would dare to provoke or disturb the dragon. None would even dare to move within it's radar!

In no time at all, Zhang Yang had located a gigantic black dragon by the west side of the peak!

This black dragon was at least 300 meters long. Those dragons that the Knights of the White Jade castle rode upon were merely the size of baby dragons when they are to be compared to the size of this black dragon! Its body was fully covered with dark and black scales. Each of the scales were as large as the size of a cover lid of a well. The dragon looked very fierce and intimidating!

At that moment, the black dragon was still lying on the ground, having a nap. The two nostrils of the dragon were even wider than an underground sewer, as breaths of fire were coming right out of the nostrils, heating up the ground below its head, to the point that the ground was blazing red! Even hard rocks across that area were cracking up!

The dragon curled it's massive body up as it slept. Its tail is at least about a hundred meters long. Even though it was just asleep, the massive body of the dragon was already intimidating enough as it is!

[Black Dragon Anubask] (Ethereal, Dragon)

Level: 150

HP: 450,000,000

Defense: 9,950

Attack: ???

Skills: ???

Note: According to legend, the Black Dragon Anubask was once the Battle Companion of the Hell's Lord, Chigallor. Filled up with Evil force by Chigallor himself, this dragon has an eternal lifespan, just like the gods! However, during the War, Anubask was severely wounded, and has yet to fully recover still.

A difference of 47 levels! Zhang Yang could only see the level, the HP amount and the Defense of the boss. As for the attack power and the skills of the boss, Zhang Yang could only see a bunch of question marks.

So it appears that this dragon was there when the great War happened!

No wonder Ares had mentioned the name of this dragon as a specific target! It seems that during the great War among the gods, the God of War and the Hell's Lord must have been enemies, and

this black dragon must have chewed on his penis for a couple of times to be able to piss him off so much that he would still remember the name of this dragon, thousands of years after he has fallen!

There was one problem... this is a Level 150 Ethereal Tier boss! To be able to take down such powerful boss, Zhang Yang must at least reach Level 120, in order to disable the Level Gap Suppression' function of the game! Although it sounded like a simple 17-level difference between Level 103 and Level 120, it's really not an easy task to grind from Level 103 to Level 120. Without any quest rewards that would reward Zhang Yang with levels, it would take up approximately 170 days just to grind 17 levels to reach Level 120!

170 days is a freaking half a year!

Furthermore, this freaking boss has over 450,000,000 HP! Zhang Yang frowned so intensely that his face almost started cramping up! Zhang Yang could still remember clearly, that the King Kong boss in his previous life only had a total of 45,000,000 HP. Both bosses were Level 150, however, the difference in both of their HP amount was like day and night!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, the entire guild of Clear Water had been mobilized when they were battling the King Kong boss, and it took them a day and a night of non-stop fighting before they narrowly defeated the boss. It was a close call, as they had almost failed to defeat the boss! At the current stage of the game, although Lone Desert Smoke is the strongest guild there is in the China server, but the timing is not right. Most of the members of Lone Desert Smoke were still around Level 90. It would take up to 3 to 4

months at the least, before all of the core players of the Lone Desert Smokes can enter the Chaos Realm!

Before Zhang Yang set his eyes upon the mighty boss, he still had some ideas in his mind, and looked around the terrain to see if he could exploit it in any way to kill the boss in a cheap, but effective manner. After thoroughly scouting the area, that didn't seem feasible.

Boom!

Just as Zhang Yang was about to give up on slaying the dragon, a stream of white light suddenly gushed out of his chest as Felice appeared right in front of him, as if she had lost control over herself.

The little lady stood on the back of Whitey Jr. as she stared at the Black Dragon Anubask with her eyes blazing with hatred and rage, "Big brother! I think, I have seen this large, crawling lizard from somewhere before! I just can't find the reason why I hate it so much! I feel like tearing this lizard into pieces!"

Zhang Yang was a little moved by her words. He always had been suspecting if Felice is the daughter of the Goddess of War. The Goddess of War was among those who had fallen during the great War, and she had somehow managed to protect Felice! Furthermore, this black dragon must have engaged with the gods during the war, so there is a big possibility that Felice have seen the dragon before. Well, this dragon might even have something to do with the Goddess of War's death! Then the rage and hatred that Felice has towards the dragon would be understandable!

"Big brother, I can't hold it anymore!" Felice let out a roar and turned into her Dragonhawk Form. Then, she charged straight towards the boss.

Zhang Yang was freaking out! Although Felice might at least be a Mythical Tier Battle Companion, however, even with her 4 seals removed, and as a Celestial Tier Battle Companion, it would still be impossible for her to defeat the boss! No matter how powerful she gets, she would never have the HP to outlast a boss. For instance, Felice only has about tens of thousands of HP, just like a player with a full set of Mythical Tier equipment. It is totally incomparable to the amount of HP of a boss!

Well, it is a suicidal act for a battle companion to charge towards the boss without any backup!

Zhang Yang tried to unsummon Felice back into the Battle Companion slot in his inventory, but failed to do so! The little lady was disobeying his orders, and Zhang Yang could not do anything about it other than to watch!

"Well, do or die!" Zhang Yang let out a battle cry and he patted Whitey Jr. and charged straight towards the boss. He had promised that he would take care of Felice for as long as he is able to. Even it was just a promise that he made to a virtual character in a virtual game, Zhang Yang did not want to go back on his own words.

Felice descended down to a position that was about the height of

30 to 40 meters above the Black Dragon Anubask. Then she suddenly transformed herself back into her Humanoid Form, as she raised her lance up and stabbed it straight down the head of the black dragon.

As an Ethereal boss, the aggro range of Anubask is very vast, as expected. It had already detected Felice as she was approaching it from above. It opened its eyes and scrambled to its feet, opening its mouth up wide as it flung out a blazing dragon breath towards Felice!

{Sacrifice}!

Zhang Yang did not even bother to check if he could use the skill on a Battle Companion. Without thinking, he had already thrown his skill right onto Felice and activated his [Heart of the Death Knight], entering a state of invincibility.

Boom!

Although the boss attacked after Felice did, the dragon breath attack had reached Felice first, as it was a ranged attack. A blazing blast of dragon breath collided into Felice as the flames engulfed Felice entirely! But Zhang Yang did not see any 'Immune' word appearing on top of him. It seems that the skill - {Sacrifice} cannot be used on a Battle Companion!

However, Zhang Yang did not see Felice in the Battle Companion slots of his inventory!

--- When a Battle Companion dies, the Battle Companion will receive a penalty of -1 level and returns back to the Battle Companion slot in the owner's inventory. The Battle Companion can only be summoned again after 1 hour.

Since he could not see Felice in the Battle Companion slot, that would only mean that Felice was still alive!

Hoof!

A human silhouette broke right through the blazing dragon breath and appeared right in front of the head of the black dragon! A lance plunged straight into the head of the dragon!

‘-2,428,201!’

20,000? 240,000? Zhang Yang rubbed his eyes and took another look at the numbers... What the f\*ck! It's more than 2,420,000 damage!

What is this? A cosmic Explosion? Super Saiyan Felice? Or did the Buddha possess her momentarily and unleash a heavenly strike! Zhang Yang tightened his grip on Whitey Jr. as hard as he could, as he was stunned to see that amount of damage done to the boss!

"It's you!" Black Dragon Anubask spoke in a thunderous voice, "You actually survived! How can you be not dead?!"



Felice let out another cry and swung her lance around agilely like she was dancing in the wind. Her powerful stabs could actually penetrate the super thick scales of the dragon! Her strike had left a large cut on the dragon! The blood of the black dragon was oozing out of the open cut, like a spectacular fountain! Zhang Yang felt excited, as he saw the dragon's blood oozing out like that! Well, it was not because he was sadistic or what, it was simply because that blood was exactly what he needed for the quest! As he could not go up and collect the blood at the moment, as it was engaged in a battle, he could only watch all the blood oozing into the surroundings, seeing how the blood had gone to waste, just like that.

‘-602!’

‘-710!’

‘-582!’

Naturally, the boss would not just stand there and let others slaughter it up! Immediately, the dragon opened up its mouth and began to launch its attack aggressively. However, none of its attacks had inflicted Felice with damage that is more than 1,000!

{Absolute Defense}!

Felice had activated her super damage immunity Skill. She was basically invincible for the next two minutes!

This little lady over there is definitely in Story Mode! Or else, she would not have inflicted a damage that is higher than a million! However, it's actually normal, after Zhang Yang had given some thoughts on it. There had been no Battle Companion System in his previous life. Well, Felice did not appear before in the game in his previous life. He could only imagine how important this 'NPC' is now!

‘-7,128,921!’

A stream of blazing light flashed across the lance of Felice, and Zhang Yang knew exactly what it was! It was her {Blazing Dragon's Spear}! However, this {Blazing Dragon's Spear} of Felice had just inflicted over 7 million damage on the black dragon! That was not just an awesome amount damage, that was heavenly!

"Why is this happening? How can this be happening?" The black dragon boss was roaring thunderously, as it endured the divinely powerful attacks of Felice. The initial amount of 450,000,000 HP was decreasing gradually at every passing second!

300,000,000!

200,000,000!

100,000,000!

Zhang Yang could felt the intense beating of his heart, that he lost his breath for a moment there. If Felice can continue to channel such a high damage output onto the boss, then it was possible for her to slay the boss within the 2-minute effective period of her {Absolute Defense}!

# Chapter 500: Glare of the Death God

---

Is this mighty and powerful Ethereal Tier boss about to be slain Battle Companion who was 50 Levels underneath it?

Zhang Yang could not help but to feel giddy and lightheaded! But after seeing the HP bar of the boss dropping lower than 20%, he was very certain that it was not his eyes playing tricks on him, everything that was happening was the real deal!

Zhang Yang did not act like a clueless animal, nor did he become hot-headed and charged right towards the boss --- although he actually thought of doing it initially, that was just his emotions taking over for a second, because he could not watch Felice charging up to a powerful boss, getting herself killed!

In the game, it would not matter how powerful the mounts or the Battle Companions are, once the player who owns them dies, the mount and the Battle Companion would disappear as well. So, the best way for Zhang Yang to help Felice is to find a suitable spot and make sure that he survives!

Although the Black Dragon Anubask appeared helpless against the assaults of Felice as it could only damage Felice by up to 600 to 700 damage every time it struck her, that was only because Felice had already activated her {Absolute Defense}. The basic attacks of the boss is actually reaching up to 60,000 or 70,000 damage!

Furthermore, open world bosses also have powerful AoE attacks! Hence, if Zhang Yang had charged up to the boss, that would get

himself killed for nothing, instead of helping her!

Felice struck harder and harder as the battle went on. It was like she had really held a grudge against the black dragon for thousands of years! Every single attack from her lance took away millions of HP. She looked cold, as if she had turned into another person. She was silent and calm, steely and focused, as she bombarded the boss with her assaults. That was no longer the naive and cute little lady that Zhang Yang knew.

The roars of the Black Dragon Anubask were so loud that it shook the sky, and the clouds dispersed into the surroundings of the sky! However, it could not do anything against Felice! Its HP bar was still decreasing rapidly from 80,000,000 to 50,000,000! Then, it dropped further down to 20,000,000 within seconds!

Little Felice was truly soloing the boss, as if she was an equal boss!

"I give up! I'm willing to serve you! Please, don't kill me!" well, those who can live long normally would definitely be afraid of death. Anubask no longer had the pride of a dragon, as it began to lower down its head and tried to express his allegiance to Felice.

If little Felice actually accepts the black dragon's allegiance and allows it to serve her, then would the boss become her mount by the end of it? Zhang Yang could not keep his imagination from running wild. Furthermore, this mount would be a legendary dragon that had actually served Hell's Lord back in time! If there were seals on the dragon to be unsealed, then, wouldn't this boss become a Celestial Tier mount by then?

However, Felice was not moved by its offers by one bit as she continued to wreak havoc upon the boss with her lance, as hard as she could. Her assaults became even more aggressive than before! The tip of her lance was ignited with blazing flames as she swung her lance towards the boss. The scenery was like doomsday pouring down from the sky, as flames flowed down from the heavens and scorched everything on the ground! If there are any life forms in the vicinity, they would definitely have been killed by the merciless bombardments from Felice as well!

Sigh. So much for getting a Celestial Tier mount. Zhang Yang could not help but to sigh resignedly.

10,000,000 HP left!

4,000,000 HP left!

"Rawgh!" Anubask continued to roar in misery as it began to unfurl its wings, getting ready to flee into the skies. But it was interrupted by a throw of Felice's lance, that went straight through its body! That hit took out the last chunk of HP bar of the boss! There it goes! The great Black Dragon Anubask had fallen! Its massive body crashed heavily into the small peak of a mountain close by. Its body was so huge and heavy that it had crushed the small mountain in half! A substantial amount of blood was gushing out from the wounds and cuts on the body of the black dragon, flooding the entire mountain with red!

Felice let out a roar that shook the surroundings. Green veins

started flowing across Felice's head, spilling down her face like a waterfall, as she was pushed back in the direction she had been facing, like the recoil of a gun. Her voice broke through the air and crushed the part of the mountain that was within the range of 10 kilometers in front of her!

It was terrifying!

After she was done with the long roar, Felice suddenly closed her eyes and fell straight from the sky, crashing into the ground.

Zhang Yang quickly unsummoned Felice back into the Battle Companion slot in his inventory with his mind. Then, he stared into the Battle Companion slot in his inventory and saw Felice lying quietly as she hibernated. Her face was extremely pale as if she had strained herself too much. She was comatose.

Zhang Yang tried to summon her, but he received a system notification immediately. Felice was currently hibernating, so he would have to wait for another 72 hours before he can summon her out again.

Well, Zhang Yang had two questions that needed immediate answering when he gets back to that old, deceased God of War, Ares. Firstly, he wanted to know if Felice is really the daughter of the Goddess of War, and secondly, did the black dragon ever slay the Goddess of War. Well, if that's true, then that hatred Felice had for the black dragon really did push her to the point that she had a Cosmic Explosion and totally tortured an Ethereal Tier boss!

Just as he was having these thoughts to himself, Zhang Yang suddenly realized that he had not received any experience points or rewards after the black dragon had been slain! Furthermore, the system also did not notify him with any sort of message about him acquiring the First Clear for an open world Ethereal Tier boss!

Are you kidding me? So, after all the terrible things that Felice went through killing the boss, everything was for nothing? Nothing at all?

Zhang Yang quickly patted Whitey Jr. and went around the dead body of the boss. If he really can't get anything from this, he is really going to cry out loud, for god's sake!

The dead body of the dragon was massive. One lap around the dead body of the dragon was about 1 kilometer far already! Furthermore, Zhang Yang could not walk too fast as he needed to carefully scan the area for any sign of loot. Fortunately for him, Zhang Yang managed to find a few items right below the belly of the dragon.

Looking closer at them, there was a [Skill Book] with a green hard cover, a heart that was the size of a fist, and last but not least, a 'blood ball' that is also the size of a fist, Zhang Yang could clearly see the blood within the 'ball' flowing about.

Without thinking much about it, Zhang Yang immediately took the 'blood ball' into his hands.

[Black Dragon's Blood] (Quest Item)



Description: The fine blood that is collected directly from the [Black Dragon's Heart]. Although the amount is not that great, it contains the full power of the black dragon when it was still alive. It's concentrated! It is the true essence of the dragon's blood!

Phew! After all that, the quest had finally been completed! Compared to getting the [God of War Inheritance], Zhang Yang did not even care about the absence of equipment in the drops. At his current strength, he could just go ahead and farm for good equipment when he has time to spare.

The next item was the heart.

[Black Dragon's Heart] (Quest Item)

Description: The heart of the Black Dragon Anubask. It has incredible power. However, only the highest Tiered Spellcaster is eligible to use it.

Zhang Yang could not help but burst into joy. Well, it was like hitting a double jackpot in one go! Now that he already got the [Black Dragon's Blood] and the [Black Dragon's Heart], he only needed to look for the [Book of the Damned] in order to complete that Main Story Quest that he had accepted when he was still Level 10!

Zhang Yang then reached over for the last item, the [Skill Book]. Although this Ethereal Tier boss will just be another cheap plucking when it is thrown to a higher level map, it was still the

indisputable overlord of this map. Therefore, the loot it drops would definitely be great!

In the game, bosses would only drop extremely rare items during the first few kills by the players. The loot did not include equipment but only [Skill Books], [Aura Books], and [Forbidden Scrolls]. Equipment would become obsolete as time passes, but skills wouldn't! Skills would only get stronger as players do.

When normal bosses are slain for the first few times, the level and equipment Tier of the players should be around the same level as the bosses. Some of them might even be a little lower than the level of the bosses. Therefore, the system would reward the players with great items and equipment whenever they manage to slay the bosses. However, if the players come back and slay lower leveled boss after reaching a much higher level and getting more powerful equipment, then the system would recognize it as an act of oppressing the bosses instead of challenging the bosses. So, naturally, the loots dropped from the dead bosses would be much 'worse'.

Therefore, the bosses slain would only drop super rare equipment and items in the 'First Clear' and 'Second Clear' rounds. The purpose of setting the game to work like this is to reward players who would actually stand up among the crowd and challenge the difficulty of the dungeons. When players already have the power to oppressively take down the bosses, those bosses would be raped over a thousand times. So it is natural that they would no longer drop good equipment and items.

This is also considered as a 'First Clear,' as Felice was the first

one who actually took down this boss. So, this [Skill Book] definitely has a powerful skill written in it, in order to be worthy of Felice's effort! Because other than the two quest items, only this [Skill Book] dropped from the boss.

[Skill Book: Glare of the Death God]

Use: Teaches you the {Glare of the Death God}

Required Class: No restriction

Required Level: 100

Note: A skill that the Hell's Lord passed down to the Black Dragon Anubask himself! This Skill is tremendously powerful.

A Hell's Lord's Skill!

Zhang Yang could feel a shiver down his spine. He quickly tapped the book against his chest and learned the Skill without saying another word.

[Glare of the Death God]: Stares at a target with the Glare of the Death God, inflicting damage to the target for 10 seconds. There is a 10% rate of triggering Instant-Death on the target. This skill will have certain rate of failing when it is applied on Boss monsters. The Instant-Death effect will be replaced by another effect, whereby there is a 10% rate that the target will lose 1% HP, which can only happens 10 times in a row, at most. The lasting effect will

be reduced to 5 seconds when this happens. The effect can be canceled out, but the level of the player that breaks the effect must be higher than the level of the caster. Cooldown: 60 minutes.

This Skill is indeed worthy to be a Hell's Lord's Skill! It is awesome!

Although 10% rate is not high, it was still a negative effect. So once it is placed onto a monster, every other hit would have 10% chance of triggering the effect! It would definitely be very practical to put the negative effect of this Skill onto a player! With this negative effect randomly triggered, the targeted player will be left with only 1 point of HP left!

Unless the player has godly reflexes or can immediately activate skills that can make him invincible over a short period of time, or a healing skill that can instantly heal him up, the player would be killed in a single hit!

Although the effects of the {Glare of the Death God} could be canceled out, the level of the player who breaks the effect must be higher than the level of the caster! That's hilarious, who can actually catch up with Zhang Yang's level now?

Zhang Yang could only laugh. With this Skill, he will not falter when going up against powerful bosses!

After picking up everything, the dead body of the black dragon disappeared. Zhang Yang could not help but feel a little greedy this time. It would have been so much better if only the boss drops a

few more [Skill Books] or a few pieces of equipment...

Zhang Yang rode on Whitey Jr. and traveled back all the way to Camarro Islands. When they had finally arrived back at the entrance of the cave, this poor Serpent was so tired that it spat out white foam of bubbles by the end of its mouth. Zhang Yang walked right into the cave where the giant skeleton of Ares lay.

The moment when he took out the 'blood ball', the Inheritance Keepsake for the [God of War Inheritance], the axe that Zhang Yang brought to Ares, immediately floated up into the air. Suddenly, it flew straight towards the 'blood ball' and cleaved into it! The [Black Dragon's Blood] started pouring out, however, not a single drop was wasted. Every single drop of the blood was absorbed by that axe.

"Ah ---" a groan of relief was heard across Zhang Yang's ears, Ares stretched his skeletal arms as he got back his feet, "Mortal, you took way too long with that, I am very disappointed with you! However, seeing that the amount of [Black Dragon's Blood] that you brought back can at least prolong my life for another 3 years, and that you actually managed to slay that huge, disgusting lizard, I shall grant you another chance!"

What the hell? Zhang Yang had never stopped or taken any detours after he accepted the quest! He went straight to the objective of the quest, and Felice went all out and basically instantly killed the boss! After that, he had wasted no time at all and had headed back here straight away! So what the f\*ck was that all about when Ares said he was still too slow?

It seems that this f\*cking God of War would still say the same words even if Zhang Yang could instantly teleport there, instantly kill the boss, and instantly teleport back here!

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: The True Ordeal, acquired 20,000,000 Experience Points! Duration: 12 Hours 34 Minutes 29 Seconds. Rating: Perfect. Reward: Shortening on the Linking Quest.’

What a substantial amount of Experience Points! That’s actually awesome! What that sweetened the value of the reward even more was the shortening on the Linking Quest! During Zhang Yang’s previous encounter with the King Kong boss in his previous life, he had lost count on the number of times he had been running around, literary, just to complete some simple quests for the Linking, and had wasted so much time before he could actually confront the boss for real! And the main task to end the Linking Quest was actually slaying the King Kong boss!

If he could really cut short the chain of quests, that would definitely be a great help to him!

Ares paced on it’s skeletal feet, back and forth in the cave for a couple of times before he started talking, "Very well. Go on and slay another 3 monsters that disgust me, and then you shall be able to inherit my godly power! Sigh. I had never realized that the heavens and the earth are so wonderful when I still possessed immortality. Now that my end is nearing every single day, living is truly a happiness that everyone should cherish!"

‘Ding! Ares has given you a quest: The Last Hurdle. Will you

accept it?"

Well, this is already the last 'hurdle,' as stated in the name of the quest, only an idiot would decline the quest offer!

Zhang Yang quickly selected 'Accept' and brought up the quest list to take a closer look.

[The Last Hurdle] (Difficulty: A-rank)

Description: Ares wants you to slay 3 fellows that he hates, deeply. Then, you shall acquire the Final [God of War Inheritance]! However, warrior, you must be aware. These 3 fellows must be slain by you and your hands alone only. So no matter whether it's your alliance friends or your enemies, as long as they enter the aggro list of the monsters listed, then they will not be your kill anymore.

The first boss is the Aegolous the Gargoyle King. This boss is the claw for the God of Darkness! Slay him! Aegolous is currently located at the Ancient Stone Peak in the land of Grandu Ice Ridge.

The second boss is the Nine Head Hydra Geopolo. This boss is the follower of the Death God! Slay him too! Geopolo is currently located at the Valley of Serpents in the land of Siccory Mountains.

The third boss is the Fire Element King Laguana. This boss is the servant of the God of Fire! Slay him as well! Geopolo is currently located at the Valley of Myriad Snakes in the land of Siccory

Mountains.

Completion: Slay Aegolous the Gargoyle King 0/1, Slay Nine Head Hydra Geopolo 0/1, Slay Fire Element King Laguana 0/1.

Slaying bosses all by himself? Zhang Yang let out a long breath. Fortunately, he now has the {Glare of the Death God}. He also had support from Felice and his mount. The chance to slay a powerful boss, all by his own, is definitely looking much better than before. Furthermore, the difficulty of this quest is just A-rank. Those bosses should all be Yellow-Gold Tier.

Now that Felice has crossed his mind, Zhang Yang quickly asked, "My respected God of War, do you know the Goddess of War personally?"

"Of course, the Goddess of War is the prettiest woman in the God Realm. Everyone knows her! Sigh. Unfortunately, she also fell during the great war among the gods. She was caught in the crossfire between the Hell's Lord, the God of Vengeance, and the Devastator!" Ares was feeling angry and sorry for the Goddess of War at the same time.

"Then, did the Goddess of War ever had a daughter?"

"Haha! The Goddess of War had never fallen in love with any of the gods in our realm, so it is impossible that she would have any daughters!"



"Huh?"

"However, she did have a sister, the Goddess of Hope, Fraybe!" Ares was staring at Zhang Yang through the two holes of his eye sockets on his skull and said, "Warrior, enough with the talk, and get on with the quest!"

Right after that, the skeleton walked up to the corner of the cave again and went back to sleep!

Although Zhang Yang wanted to inquire further details about Fraybe and Lachesis, since Ares was no longer responsive to him anymore, then, it should mean that Ares would not wake up until he completes the quest.

So Zhang Yang took out a [Teleportation Scroll] and tore it off. In just an instant, he was teleported over to Morning Town.

Zhang Yang had chosen the Grandu Ice Ridge as his first destination because he had already built the Teleportation Circles in Morning Town and Winst Castle. Since he could travel over within 10 seconds, obviously, he would choose that destination as his first choice.